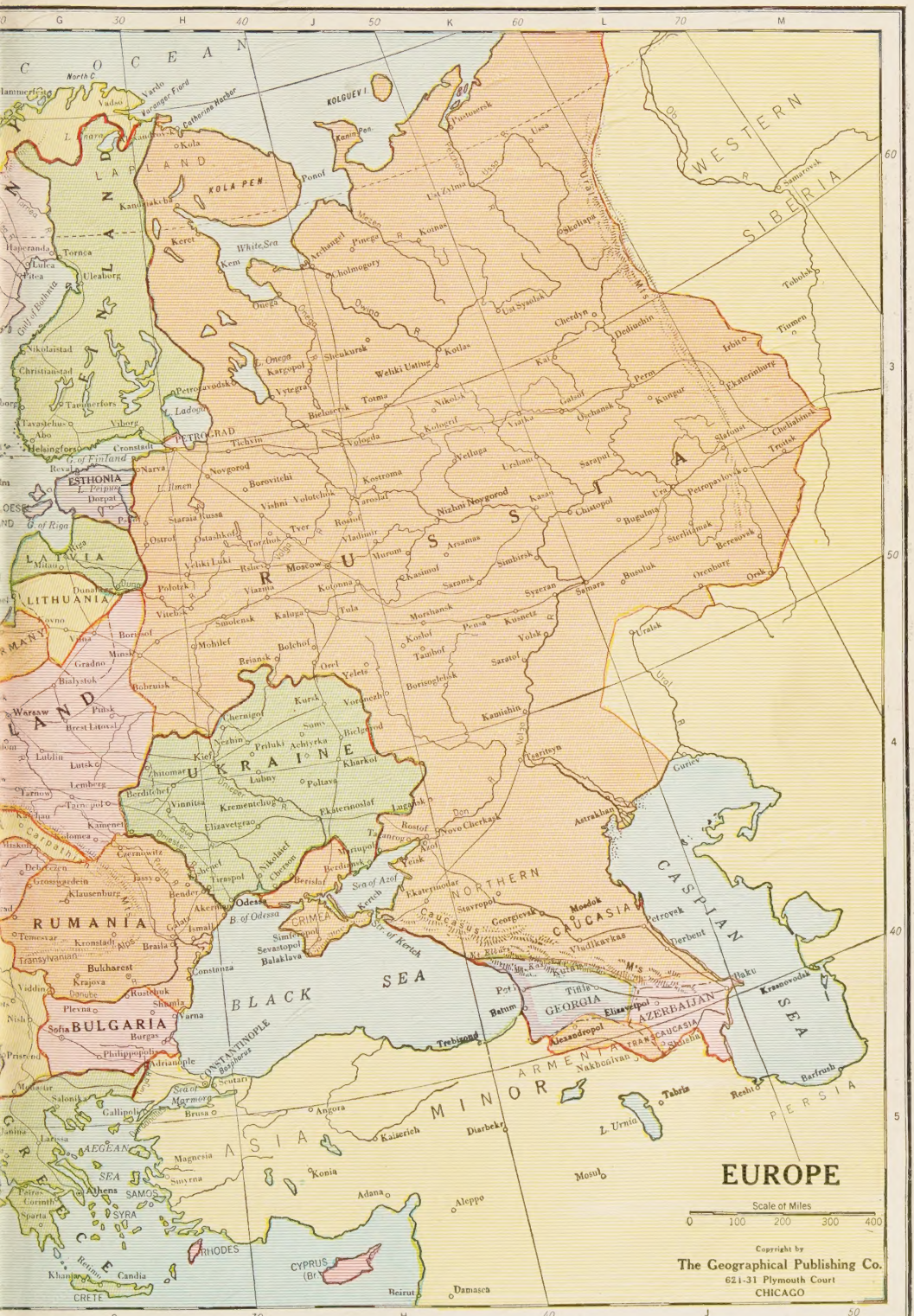
Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/fifteenhundredye0000juli

ICELAND
Str. of Denmark
North C.
Reykjavik
Akureyri
Thistill Fiord
C. Langanes
Mt. Hecla
Vatna Jokull
Dyupivogr
ARCTIC CIRCLE
FAROE IS.
Den.
SHETLAND IS.
ATLANTIC OCEAN
NORTH SEA
NORWAY
Christiansund
Trondhjem
Bergen
Christiania
Stavanger
Egersund
Arendal
Skagerrack
Gothenburg
Helsingborg
Malmo
Copenhagen
BORNHOLM
DENMARK
BALTIC SEA
SWEDEN
Stockholm
Helgoland
BRITISH ISLES
SCOTLAND
Orkney Is.
Thurso
HEBRIDES
Moray Firth
Inverness
Aberdeen
Dundee
Firth of Forth
Edinburgh
Glasgow
Belfast
Londonderry
Sligo
Galway
IRISH FREE STATE
IRELAND
Dublin
Liverpool
Manchester
Sheffield
Hull
Newcastle
Irish Sea
I. of Man
Leeds
WALES
ENGLAND
Birmingham
Cardiff
Bristol
Plymouth
Lands End
St. Georges Channel
Queenstown
Waterford
Limerick
Cork
LONDON
Southampton
Portsmouth
ENGLISH CHANNEL
Str. of Dover
Channel Is.
NETHERLANDS
Amsterdam
The Hague
Rotterdam
Antwerp
Ostend
Bruges
BELGIUM
Brussels
Lille
Calais
Boulogne
Dunkerque
Havre
Caen
Rouen
Amiens
Versailles
PARIS
Rheims
Queenstown
Brest
Rennes
Le Mans
Nantes
St. Nazaire
Orleans
Tours
Anger
Troyes
Nancy
Strasbourg
Karlsruhe
Mannheim
Frankfort
Nurnburg
Cologne
Coblenz
Aachen
Dortmund
Hanover
Bremen
Hamburg
Lubeck
Stettin
Kiel
Brunswick
Magdeburg
Berlin
Posen
Kattowitz
Dresden
Leipzig
Chemnitz
Breslau
Prague
Bohemian Highlands
CZECHOSLOVAKIA
Budweis
Pressburg
Munich
Augsburg
Ulm
Stuttgart
Basel
Zurich
Innsbruck
Linz
Vienna
AUSTRIA
Graz
Laibach
Klagenfurt
Villach
Udine
Trieste
Fiume
Agram
Banjaluka
Zara
Sarajevo
Spalato
Ancona
Perugia
Pescara
Foggia
Bari
Brindisi
Naples
Mt. Vesuvius
Taranto
Cosenza
Str. of Messina
Palermo
Messina
Mt. Etna
SICILY
Catania
Syracuse
Girgenti
Valetta
MALTA (Br.)
IONIAN SEA
ADRIATIC SEA
TYRRHENIAN SEA
Genoa
Milan
Turin
Parma
Modena
Bologna
Ravenna
Florence
Leghorn
Pisa
San Marino
Monaco
G. of Genoa
G. of the Lion
Marseille
Nice
Toulon
Montpellier
Nimes
Perpignan
Toulouse
Carcassonne
Grenoble
St. Etienne
Lyons
Clermont
Ferrand
Limoges
Poitiers
Bordeaux
Dijon
Besancon
Basel
Zurich
Lucerne
Berne
SWITZERLAND
ALPS
Geneva
FRANCE
BAY OF BISCAY
C. Finisterre
Ferrol
Corunna
Oviedo
Santander
Bilbao
San Sebastian
Biarritz
Gijon
Vigo
Oporto
Coimbra
Aveiro
Leon
Burgos
Vitoria
Pamplona
Valladolid
Salamanca
Zamora
Ciudad Real
Caceres
Merida
Badajoz
Elvas
Evora
Beja
Setubal
LISBON
PORTUGAL
SPAIN
MADRID
Toledo
Talavera
Guadalajara
Cuenca
Albacete
Lerida
Tarragona
Barcelona
Gerona
Andorra
Castellon
Valencia
BALEARIC IS.
MINORCA
MAJORCA
IVIZA
Palma
Alicante
Murcia
Cartagena
Almeria
Granada
Jaen
Lorca
Jerez
Cadiz
Seville
Cordova
Sta. Maria
Huelva
Palos
Faro
Tavira
C. St. Vincent
Str. of Gibraltar
Tangier
Gibraltar (Br.)
Ceuta
Malaga
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
Str. of Bonifacio
CORSICA
Bastia
Ajaccio
SARDINIA
Sassari
Oristano
Cagliari
ELBA
Algiers
Oran
Melilla
Fez
MOROCCO
AFRICA
ALGERIA
Constantine
Tunis
TUNIS
Sfax
Gabes
Tripoli
Benghazi
Derna
Alexandria
Cairo
Suez
Port Said
Jaffa
Jerusalem
Beirut
Damascus
Haifa
Tiberias
Nazareth
Amman
Aleppo
Mosul
Baghdad
Basra
Persian Gulf
Kuwait
Bahrein Is.
Muscat
Aden
Red Sea
Mecca
Medina
Jidda
Hodeida
Sanaa
Mocha
Perim
Str. of Bab el Mandeb
Massawa
Asmara
Kassala
Khartoum
Omdurman
Wadi Halfa
Abyssinia
Addis Ababa
Harar
Somaliland
Berbera
Gulf of Aden
Socotra
Muscat
Oman
Arabia
Nejd
Hejaz
Asir
Yemen
Hadramaut
Rub al Khali
Sahara
Libyan Desert
Nubian Desert
Egypt
Nile
Fayum
Assiut
Luxor
Assuan
Kharga
Dakhla
Siwa
Jarabub
Cyrenaica
Tripolitania
Fezzan
Ghadames
Ghat
Ghadames
Gafsa
Kairouan
Sousse
Sfax
Gabes
Tripoli
Benghazi
Derna
Alexandria
Cairo
Suez
Port Said
Jaffa
Jerusalem
Beirut
Damascus
Haifa
Tiberias
Nazareth
Amman
Aleppo
Mosul
Baghdad
Basra
Persian Gulf
Kuwait
Bahrein Is.
Muscat
Aden
Red Sea
Mecca
Medina
Jidda
Hodeida
Sanaa
Mocha
Perim
Str. of Bab el Mandeb
Massawa
Asmara
Kassala
Khartoum
Omdurman
Wadi Halfa
Abyssinia
Addis Ababa
Harar
Somaliland
Berbera
Gulf of Aden
Socotra
Muscat
Oman
Arabia
Nejd
Hejaz
Asir
Yemen
Hadramaut
Rub al Khali
Sahara
Libyan Desert
Nubian Desert
Egypt
Nile
Fayum
Assiut
Luxor
Assuan
Kharga
Dakhla
Siwa
Jarabub
Cyrenaica
Tripolitania
Fezzan
Ghadames
Ghat
Ghadames
Gafsa
Kairouan
Sousse


EUROPE
Scale of Miles
0 100 200 300 400
Copyright by
The Geographical Publishing Co.
621-31 Plymouth Court
CHICAGO
RUSSIA
WESTERN SIBERIA
ARCTIC OCEAN
NORWAY
SWEDEN
FINLAND
LAPLAND
KOLA PEN.
KOLGUEV I.
NOVAYA ZEMLYA
WHITE SEA
BARENTS SEA
PETROGRAD
ESTHONIA
LATVIA
LITHUANIA
POLAND
PRUSSIA
GERMANY
RUMANIA
UKRAINE
CRIMEA
BLACK SEA
BULGARIA
CONSTANTINOPLE
Bosphorus
Sea of Marmora
AEGEAN SEA
GREECE
CRETE
RHODES
CYPRUS
ASIA MINOR
ARMENIA
GEORGIA
AZERBAIJAN
CAUCASIA
NORTHERN CAUCASUS
CASPIAN SEA
PERSIA
Sea of Azof
Sea of Aral
Moscow
Petrograd
Warsaw
Odessa
Sevastopol
Constantinople
Bucharest
Sofia
Smyrna
Athens
Konia
Adana
Aleppo
Damascus
Beirut
Mosul
Tabriz
Baku
Tiflis
Batum
Trebizond
Angora
Kaiserieh
Diarbekr
Astrakhan
Saratof
Samara
Orenburg
Ufa
Perm
Ekaterinburg
Tiumen
Tobolsk
Omsk
Tomsk
Irkutsk
Yakutsk
Vladivostok
Kharkof
Kief
Odessa
Rostof
Novo Cherkask
Ekaterinodar
Stavropol
Vladikavkas
Petrovsk
Derbent
Krasnovodsk
Ashkhabad
Merv
Bokhara
Samarkand
Tashkend
Orsk
Chelyabinsk
Troitsk
Kurgan
Tiumen
Yekaterinburg
Nizhni Novgorod
Kazan
Simbirsk
Penza
Tula
Kaluga
Smolensk
Vitebsk
Minsk
Brest Litovsk
Lemberg
Tarnopol
Kamenetz
Volsk
Uralsk
Guriev
Kamishin
Tsaritsyn
Voronezh
Kursk
Orel
Bryansk
Tambof
Riazan
Moscow
Tver
Yaroslaf
Kostroma
Vologda
Archangel
Onega
Petrozavodsk
Helsingfors
Abo
Tornea
Uleaborg
Happaranda
Vikinlaistad
Christianstad
Tammerfors
Vihorg
Ladoga
Narva
Reval
Pernau
Riga
Libau
Mitau
Dunaburg
Wilna
Grodno
Bialystok
Pinsk
Lublin
Lutsk
Zhitomir
Berditchef
Vinnitsa
Kremenchug
Ekaterinoslaf
Elizavetgrad
Nikolaief
Kherson
Tiraspol
Bendery
Akkerman
Ismail
Kishenef
Jassy
Czernowitz
Kolomea
Stanislau
Debreczen
Grosswardein
Klausenburg
Temesvar
Kronstadt
Braila
Galatz
Constanza
Rustchuk
Shumla
Varna
Plevna
Sofia
Philippopolis
Adrianople
Burgas
Viddin
Krajova
Transylvanian Alps
Carpathians
Dniester R.
Pruth R.
Danube R.
Dnieper R.
Don R.
Volga R.
Ural R.
Ob R.
Kama R.
Oka R.
Caucasus Mts.
Ararat Mt.
Elburz Mts.
Kara Kum Desert
Kizil Kum Desert
Aral Sea
Caspian Sea
Black Sea
Sea of Azof
Sea of Marmora
Aegean Sea
Gulf of Bothnia
Gulf of Finland
Gulf of Riga
Gulf of Archangel
Gulf of Onega
Gulf of Kalgueff
Gulf of Kerch
Gulf of Odessa
Gulf of Smyrna
Gulf of Salonik
Gulf of Corinth
Gulf of Khania
Gulf of Candia
Lake Ladoga
Lake Onega
Lake Ilmen
Lake Peipus
Lake Urmia
Lake Van
Lake Aral
Lake Baikal
Lake Balkash
Lake Issyk
Lake Tchany
Lake Tchad
Lake Tchaldyr
Lake Tchudskoe
Lake Tchudskoe
Lake Tchudskoe

FIFTEEN HUNDRED YEARS OF EUROPE

By

JULIUS E. DEVOS

1924
Printed and Published
by
THE O'DONNELL PRESS
621 PLYMOUTH CT.
CHICAGO

Copyrighted, 1924
By
Julius E. DeVos

Dedication

AS A TRIBUTE OF THE RESPECT, REVERENCE AND LOVE
WHICH THE MILLIONS OF AMERICANS HOLD FOR THE
CHAMPION OF TRUTH, JUSTICE AND MERCY
THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED WITH HIS
EMINENCE'S PERMISSION.

TO

D. J. CARDINAL MERCIER
ARCHBISHOP OF MALINES,

BY

THE AUTHOR
JULIUS E. DE VOS

Judgment of Dr. Frederick Starr

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO.

Dear Father DeVos:

I have looked through your Fifteen Hundred Years of Europe with some care and I am much pleased with it. Your triple treatment—panorama, monograph, chronicle—is novel and seems likely to be useful. The book contains an enormous amount of material conveniently arranged for consultation by the busy man. The *index is copious* and, of course, of high importance in a book of this kind. I think the style in panorama and monograph is simple and attractive without loss of accuracy. I think, too, that the book breathes a spirit of *broadmindedness and liberality* which is not always found in histories. I hope Fifteen Hundred Years will receive a hearty welcome.

With sincere regard,

FREDERICK STARR.

Appreciation by Dr. James M. Murray

There is an inexorable justice reigning among nations as well as among individuals. There is a persistent law of history that no predatory power has ever succeeded in subduing the universe and that no nation, however small, has been crushed completely and extinguished forever.

The history of Europe is there to show that every scheme to subjugate the world has failed and turned against the empire that hatched it, and brought it to ruin.

There must be a Supreme Being who watches over the nations as well as over the individuals. For a blind destiny or material determinism could not establish and maintain that equity that always asserts itself. For might would easily overcome right without a Superior Being watching over the affairs of men.

History, to the master mind has ever been the most wonderful vindicator of an Eternal Providence and plan. The Providence is ever perfect, sublime and adorable; the plan necessarily including a creature or a set of creatures of as variegated characters, temperaments, passions and graduated intelligences as there are individuals, natives and peoples. The great plan in intelligent creation therefore will ever offer a double aspect, one phase of which seems to give to the creature the power to judge, from the eternal law and from the eternal light, even amid darkness and passion, what is really the idealistic truth, goodness and beauty to be sought, aspired after and maintained in this world. The other phase as seen in aspirations, thoughts, acts and plans with their execution actuated by subjective will power, intellect-darkening passion and temporal, materialistic aims and ends. The strangest and most wonderful fact of history is that its wonderful plan though contorted by this subjectivism in the intelligent creature, seems eventually to work out the design of Divine Intelligence in its regard in the very acts intended to defeat its sublime purpose. The "Patres nostri peccaverunt et non sunt" (Our fathers have sinned and no longer exist for it) of the faithful prophet as well as the sayings of sage and pagan historian concerning the fruit and effect of evil, proves for ages and ages the strangest, almost anomalous power of history to point out, maintain and vindicate a plan. That plan is nothing other than the eternal desire on the part of man's Creator for the perfection, or at least the effort and struggle after perfection, on the part of his creature; and if on the part of his creature, for the same reason, for his peoples and nations. If they offend, if they sin against, if they

wantonly, maliciously or even ignorantly offend against this plan they will as surely suffer as they suffered who heard that awful threat "morte morieris" (thou shalt die the death). It cannot be otherwise, the infinite justice, sanctity, providence and words of a Supreme Being demand it. His word is as immutable as the very principles governing his communication with his creatures. In the great economy of history therefore, empires nations and peoples must be considered as the agencies. An account, a terrible account, must be rendered by the agencies before a tribunal of justice that regards not years, ages or centuries The judgment is usually sooner or later seen in the strongest reaction against excess, against the eternal plan.

To historians who remembered not these facts the history of Europe during the last six years is an appalling revelation. These historians look in vain for the causes of the almost instantaneous outburst of passion, hatred and revenge among men and nations apparently a short while before closely united in the bonds of friendship and intercommunicational commercial relations. They will look in vain. A nation is not moved against a nation to such pitches of horror by the offences of an individual—the offences of a day, week or month. A deeper study of such a depressing horror must be made. That study must be made from a date when nations began to form themselves into groups with aspirations, hopes, plans and determinations for their own advancement, prosperity, life and ambitions.

Note carefully these very aspirations and then mark their advancement and the means of their advancement in Europe during fifteen hundred years, and the terrors, horrors and contradictions of the last few years will appear in their historical light and significance.

In a plain, simple, convincing style the author brings his reader from fact to fact, leaving to the same reader the deduction he must draw from their enunciation. There is a beautiful spirit of fairness and generosity prevailing throughout the work; there is a notable absence of bitterness and recrimination. After all, history is too sacred to be used as a mere weapon of punishment when punishment has been meted out. It is rather an ever present living inspiring announcement and warning. These are the sentiments we have taken from the perusal of the work of the author.

James M. Murray, C.M., A.M., Ph.D.

De Paul University, Chicago,

Opinion of a Business Man

We of this age are so much absorbed in the problems of the present and the future that we have little time for a consideration of the past, although we realize that a consideration of the past is essential to a proper solution of the problems of the present and the future. The busy man of today has little taste and no time for the reading of the ponderous tomes of history.

As works of literature they have lost their appeal to an unliterary age. As purveyors of information they lack the conciseness and brevity demanded by an age whose motto is "Make it snappy."

Father DeVos' book comes at a time when the need for historical information in a condensed and easily readable form is most insistent.

It has an especial appeal to the busy man who wants to know the facts without elaboration and without argument—who studies history for practical ends and not merely for academic interest.

A perusal of this work will refresh in a surprising manner all he has ever learned—will teach him many facts which he has never known—and will remove his perplexities on many obscure and doubtful points of history.

J. Ambrose Gearon.

Criticism by a French Savant

Mr. Jules Bois, a distinguished author, was struck by the novelty and the lucidity of "1500 Years of Europe." He made a thorough study of the work, and wrote a long criticism of the same, which forms a remarkable essay on Democracy and constitutes a large pamphlet in itself. It ought to be read in full. A few extracts are given here. Jules Bois says:

"The author speaks with clearness, perspicicity, and in accord with much trustworthy evidence. His book resembles by its interest, a good novel. You find it difficult to tear yourself from it once having begun it. It is a striking, living, impassioned foreshortening of fifteen centuries of Europe. From the beginning of the Middle Ages to 1920, are intermingled, in this book, conflagrations of races, rivalries of peoples, ambitions of great men, the boiling over of societies in creative ferment, the ebb and flow of ideas and beliefs. We are spectators of the immense international tide flooding Europe. We can discuss view-point, with the author and not always agree with him; but his book, to appropriate an expression of Montaigne's is "un livre de bonne foy," (A book of faith.) His learning, never pedantic, abounds with lessons which compel us to ponder and wonder, and yet which are, by their very brevity, the more forceful. In reading the pages of this work, it occurred to me to pause now and then and allow myself to follow for a moment the train of reverie. How glittering and substantial the thoughts swarm from these pages, like birds in a forest traversed by a motor at full speed!

"This is also in some wise a universal history flashing on the screen of our brain, after the method ultra-modern of the 'movies,' portrait-images, panoramas persistently conjuring up essential features and suppressing tiresome and contingent details. I dare say that the searchlight thrown upon each epoch, each institution, and showing characteristic conditions and principal events, comes to us from a sympathetic and synthetic focus which is the mind of this learned Belgian priest, Jules de Vos, a marvel of vibrancy and vitality."

THE PLAN

PERSPECTIVES OF EUROPE

Being familiar with the races and powers of Europe, the author has endeavored to present panoramic views of their history.

Several Aspects

A peculiar method is adopted. Broad sketches of the people and their deeds are given without attention to names or dates. Extensive monographs are added fully describing races, events, institutions and personages, which dominate their times. A chronology is made up locating the events and personages in their proper place and time. It is a series of chronicles which may look like a repetition of the sketches or a table of contents, but which is more than that. It is a systematic record of past events; it is the history of the peoples of Europe, given in the shortest possible way; to distinguish it from the sketches and the monographs; it is marked as chronicles, and ordinarily it is printed in small type. Genealogical tables of the principal dynasties offer more perspectives of European history.

Of All the Powers

Not only the dates of the main monarchies are given, but also of the fiefs, principalities and houses, that made their mark in Europe. Some of these were more powerful than the central dynasties, which arose from among them. Often the main policy of a country cannot be understood without the knowledge of the elements that composed it: e. g., the division of the Saxon possessions in 1180 cannot be understood without the knowledge of the configuration of the map of Germany at the time.

THE ADVANCE OF DEMOCRACY

No World Master Yet

What is kept continually before the eye is the struggle for liberty and the wane of autocracy, and the growth of democracy. No potentate has ever been

able to make himself the master of Europe for any length of time. Seven would-be world masters attempted to enslave their people and to conquer their neighbors. But these coalesced against them and overthrew them.

Progressive Advance to Self Government

Step by step the people have won a share in the government, until finally they govern themselves in the most advanced countries. First the nobility acquired some rights, then the people or the Commons entered the parliaments with them. Many cities governed themselves.

Revolutions overthrew the tyrannical and plundering potentates. The benefits of representative governments became so visible, that they are being introduced everywhere.

The author wishes to express his thanks to Professor James M. Murray, C. M., A. M., Ph. D. for his suggestions and assistance in completing this work, as also to Attorney J. Ambrose Gearon for his care in revising it and to Miss Adelaide Pullman for her labor in indexing it.

JULIUS E. DEVOS.

List of Maps and Illustrations

Map of Europe ..... Frontispiece
Map of the World ..... Opposite 74

The following illustrations appear facing Introductory Page:

Alfonso XIII, King of Spain—Alexander, King of Jugo-Slavia—Albert, King of Belgium—Albert Memorial, Belfast, Ireland—Arc de Triomphe de l'Eloile, Paris, France—Boris III, King of Bulgaria—Budapest, Hungary—Bank of England, Edinburgh, Scotland—Church of Notre Dame de Paris, Paris, France—Charlottenhof, Potsdam, Germany—Christian X, King of Denmark—Gaston Doumergue, President of France—Frederick Ebert, President of Germany—Ferdinand, King of Roumania—Four Courts, Dublin, Ireland—Gustav V, King of Sweden—George V, King of England—Haakon VII, King of Norway—Dr. Michael Hainisch, President of Austria—M. Valdimir Lenin, President of Russia—Naerojford, Gudnanger Harbor, Sogne, Norway—Mosque of St. Sophia, Constantinople, Turkey—Thomas G. Masaryk, President of Czecho-Slovakia—Petrograd from across the Neva, Petrograd, Russia—Alex Papanastasion, Prime Minister of Greece—East Front of the Parthenon, Athens, Greece—Mustapha Kemal Pasha, Turkish Leader—The Rialto, Venice, Italy—Royal Palace, Stockholm, Sweden—Royal Palace, Brussels, Belgium—A. Stulginskis, President of Lithuania—Dr. K. J. Stahlberg, President of Finland—Seven Towers of Constantinople, Turkey—Sprudel Colonnade, Carlsbad, Austria—Street of Tombs, Pompeii, Italy—Teizeira Gomes, President of Portugal—K. Ulmanis, Prime Minister of Latvia—Victor Emmanuel III, King of Italy—S. Von Wojciewski, President of Poland—Wilhelmina, Queen of Holland—Windsor Castle from the Thames, London, England—General View of Westminster Abbey, London, England.

Clovis and Clotilde, the founder of the Frankish Empire ..... Opposite 64
Charlemagne ..... " 65
Columbus Discovers America ..... " 98
Emperor Charles V ..... " 350
St. Gregory VII, The Valiant Pope ..... " 304
Ferdinand and Isabella ..... " 98
William Gladstone, the Greatest of English Statesmen " 178
Godefroid de Bouillon, King of Jerusalem ..... " 253
Queen Hedwidge, the Maker of Great Poland ..... " 405
Joan of Arc, the Liberator of France ..... " 201
King John Lackland and Archbishop Stephen Langton " 168
Margaret, who united the Scandinavian countries ..... " 126
Cardinal Mercier, the fearless protector of the Belgians " 274
Daniel O'Connell, the liberator of Ireland ..... " 140
Peter the Great, the founder of Modern Russia ..... " 427
Pope Leo XIII ..... " 85
St. Louis IX, the model King of France and Crusader. " 200
St. Leo I, the Pope who stopped Attila ..... " 88
Sobieski, King of Poland, the hammer of the Turks ... " 408

Table of Contents

INTRODUCTION

SECTION I. HISTORICAL TREATMENT..... 1

Study of strange war phenomena. Method. Five forms of presentation. Scope: local, radical, historical.

SECTION II. POLITICAL PRINCIPLES..... 8

Segment I. GENERAL PRINCIPLES:

Five bases of Society and Laws of History.

Sector I. Natural Life. Race Suicide.

Sector II. Industrious Labor—Militarism, Bolshevism.

Sector III. Stable Government.

Need of authority to maintain order. Lawlessness of the barbarians and of the anarchists. Preparedness.

Sector IV. International Justice.

A political axiom. Nationality inviolable.....15

Imperialism versus provincialism.

Large versus small states.

Dynasties.

Colonies.

Sector V. Religion.

Segment II. INTERNATIONAL SYSTEMS OF EUROPE..34

Sector I. Christian constitution of the Middle Ages. Papacy, Empire. Two distinct but harmonious powers, both elective and constitutional. Several monarchies. Feudal system.

Sector II. In modern times: Balance of powers. League of Nations.

PART I.

FIVE HUNDRED YEARS OF TRIBAL LIFE

Panorama: Nomadism of Five Centuries.

SECTION I. CATACLYSM 48

The Fall of the Ancient Order.

SECTION II. NOMADISM AND VANDALISM.

The Migration of Nations. Huns press Slavs and Teutons. Overthrow of Roman Empire, which is conquered by Barbarian Teutons.

First efforts at Reconstruction.

New inroads of Barbarians; Arabs, Normans, Mongolians, the former converted, the latter repelled. Long disturbances in the east.

SECTION III. RECONSTRUCTION FORCES.....56

The Church, the Franks, the Celts, the Byzantines.

Reconstruction work of the Franks, Frankish Empire, 476-843 61

Outlines: The Franks leavened by Christianity, the leaders of the Teutonic nations, gradually fix their countrymen on the soil.

Chronicles: Merovingians 418-752; Carolingians 752-843.

Monographs: Clovis Charlemagne; 53 expeditions to prevent the roving tribes from invading other countries.

PART II.

THOUSAND YEARS OF NATIONAL LIFE

Panorama 76

Differences of the continental and the maritime nations. Western and Eastern Nations of continent.

Four principal races—Main and small states.

843, the normal year for Western Europe. No nation wiped out. Caesarism crushed every time.

FIRST SECTION

Maritime Nations of Southern Europe.....80

Races. Natives. Invaders old and new.

High character of Greeks and Romans combined in empire. Ruin. Only Church and Constantinople survive.

ITALY

Rome the seat of two successive powers. Fall 83: Byzantine Exarahate. 555-774.

Kingdom of Italy 476—of Eastgoths 490—of Langobards 568-774. Franks 774-887.

Papal States 774-1870. Empire.

No master: Anarchy of Iron Age 887-1048.

Both Sicilies 1016-1860. Normans conquer Saracens, Hohenstaufen, Anjou, Spaniards.

Lombard League against Hohenstaufen. Visconti Ducs. Factions Guelfs and Ghibellines.

200 Republics. 6 Commercial Metropoles.

French wars in Naples and Lombardy 1495-1550.

Bourbon and Hapsburg secondo-genitures. Native Dynasties.

Savoy—Sardaigne. Kingdom 1720.

French Revolution. Po Basin allotted to Austria, revolutions against foreign Dynasties for unity 1860. Victor Emmanuel II, king of Italy, conquest of States 1860-70. Alliances, colonies.

IBERIAN PENINSULA

Ancient cultured races. New, wild immigrants from Germany and Africa.

Cordova Caliphate. Dismembered in 10 states 711-1491.

Spain the Crusading Nation. Heroic fight of 800 years. Three new invasions checked.

Christian strongholds. Castile, Aragon, 4 Orders.

Spanish Monarchy 1474. *Ferdinand and Isabella,* 1516. *Hapsburgs,* Charles V. Expansion. Philip II. Defensive. Loss of Holland. Portugal inherited. Political marriages debilitating. Succession war 1701-13.

Bourbons. Aggressive ministers.

XIX Century Revolutions. French storm. Succession troubles.

Portugal 1095-1918. Conquest, discoveries. Spanish rule 1580-1640. Misgovernment. Succession, revolutionary wars.

Navarre 835-1589.

THE BALKAN COUNTRY

Panorama: Specimen of Turkish Misrule 103

Christian and Moslem. Empire isolated. Principalities flourishing.

Heroic defense. League, crusades. Few but heroic champions. Scanderbeg.

Debasing yoke of 500 years. Brutalizing warfare, plundering, enslaving, slaughter.

Emancipation by a century of war: Two liquidations of Turkey.

Chronicles.

Crusades: Four in Balkans, four in Danubia.

Greco-Roman Powers

Empire of Constantinople 1259-1453.

Greece. Province of empire. Revolt 1821. Kingdom 1830.

Albania, Macedonia, Thrace, Dalmatia.

Roumanians. Moldavia, Wallachia. Kingdom: Hohenzollern.

Southern Slavs and Mongolians.

Sloveni.

Croats and Serbs.

Croatia, Bosnia, Herzegovina, Montenegro.

Servia—King of Slavs 1078. 1120-1367 Neman Dynasty. Stephen I 1153. Stephen Dushan 1134-56. Revolt 1810. Rivalry of two dynasties. Murder of king.

Bulgaria. Bulgarians become Slavicized.

Kingdom I 678-971. II 976-1018. III Bulgarian: Wallachian 1185-1418. Three Asan brothers—Mircea Michael.

1859-76, Slaughter 1876, Ferdinand Saxe Coburg 1887.

SECOND SECTION

Maritime Countries of Northern Europe 122

Races. Role in the world.

SCANDINAVIA: INDEPENDENT SEA-ROVERS 124

766-1066, Sea-rovers of Europe and America. Independent; only once united against rivals: union of Calmar 1397-1522. Old Norse spirit foolishly revived in modern times.

Conversion by St. Ansgar.

Denmark 855-1866. Duchies lost 1866.

Norway 886-1918. Part of Denmark, Scandinavia, Sweden. Independent 1906.

Sweden. Division in Goths and Swedes.

BRITISH ISLES: CELTS AND SAXONS

CELTIC IDEALISTS 133

Ireland. Character and institutions of the Irish. Antiquity. Conversion by St. Patrick, 422. Island of saints and scholars. Molestations by Scandinavians, English and Protestants. Free State compromise not accepted by all 131

Civil War.

Scotland—Scotch 489-1707 mixed with Anglo-Saxons. Monarchy against the Scandinavians. English routed at Bannockburn. Uncompromising opposition to England for six centuries 145

Welsh—Wales, 450-1283 150

Bretons—Brittany, 450-1488.

PRACTICAL ANGLO-SAXONS: THE BRITISH EMPIRE 151

Empire of the Sea. While continentals fight, England uses conditions to advantage. Panorama.

Primitive History. Celts and Romans 158

English History. First Era. Nomadic Conditions. Saxon Migration. Scandinavian Inroads. Norman Conquest 161

Second Era, Predatory Policy. Norman and Plantagenet kings. Monograph: Grasping attacks, on neighboring nations, dynastic wars, tyranny and reaction. 163

Third Era, Democratic Policy. I. Formation of Parliament, Charter of liberties, 1067. Monograph: History of Parliament. Formation. Lords and Commons. II. Eclipse of parliamentary freedom. Protestant policy destroys liberty of conscience. Religious and civil persecution for centuries. Revival of liberty. . 167

Fourth Era: Imperial Policy. Colonies, empires, command of the sea 181

Chronicles 182

First period 410. Migratory.

Second period 1066. Predatory. England conquers. Ireland invaded. Scots unite, fight themselves free.

Third period. Democratic struggles.

Fourth period 1307. Dynastic struggles and murders.

Fifth period 1531. Protestantism divides. Persecution of Catholics. Struggle between Episcopalians and Presbyterians.

Sixth period 1648. Colonies obtained during conquests of Louis XIV and European succession wars.

Seventh period 1789. Broad policy builds empires in every continent.

THIRD SECTION

Continental Nations 190

Two Western Powers. French, Teutons. Treaty of Verdun 843, ancient Gaul cut up; Germans expand: source of wars.

Two Eastern Powers: Slavs and Mongolians. Slavs between two fires.

Threatening Islam.

THE FRENCH

Origin and character of the race. Three elements: Celtic, Roman and Teutonic in a happy composite. 195

French Nation. History outlined. 6 dynasties in a thousand years. No robber nation..... 197

First period 843. Wild period. Norman invasions. Succession wars between Carolingians and Capetians.

Second period 1073. Chivalric spirit. Crusades against Mohammedans and anarchists. St. Louis a model.

Third period 1305-1517. Period of centralization. Philip the Fair violates civil and ecclesiastical law; brings popes to Avignon, 1318-1593 Valois dynasty. 100 years war against England: liberation by Joan of Arc. Fatuitous wars in Italy.

Fourth period 1517. Religious strife. Six wars against Hapsburgs. Five religious wars. Catholic League under Guise overcomes Protestant Union under Condé. 1593-1793 *Bourbon dynasty.*

Fifth period 1648. Five wars for world domination. Louis XIV, 1643-1715. Bourbons in Spain but colonies lost. Corruption and extravagance. Monograph.

Sixth period 1789. Era of revolutions. Revolution, Republic, Empire. European wars. Monograph. Republic alternating with monarchy. Struggle against Prussia. Loss 1870. Victory 1914-18.

Chronicles—French Monarchy.

I. *Stormy period.* Norman invasions. Carolingian dynasty overthrown.

II. *Chivalric period.* Crusades. St. Louis.

III. *Centralization period.* Philip the Fair. 100 years' wars with England. 64 years in Italy.

IV. *period.* Religious strife. 5 Wars.

V. *Conquering period.* Louis XIV.

VI. *period.* Revolution. Empire. European wars. Struggle against Prussia.

French Fiefs and Principalities: Chronicles.....234

West and North. Aquitaine, V century 1137. Poitou X—1416. Brittany XI—1491.

Anjou 870-1484. Three dynasties. Anjou princes get thrones of England, France. Naples, Provence and Lorraine.

Normandy 803-1203. Dukes conquer England and west France. Stake in 100 years war.

Vermandois IX 945—*Champagne VI* 1361.

Artois. Somme valley. Picardy part of Flanders till Louis XIV.

Center. Valois Three Dynasties.

Ile-de-France; Duchy of Hugh Capet. Nucleus of Realm.

Bourbonnais. I dynasty. Carolingian VIII century. II Valois. 1342. Two lines. I Bourbon ends in Charles Constable 1537. II Vendome: Henry becomes king of France. Condé 1537-1830. Cousin Louis, Huguenot leader with Montmorency, Coligny and Chatillon.

East. Lotharingia. Carolingians. Country divided in Lower: Belgium and Upper: Lorraine.

Lorraine. I Dynasty, Alsace; II, Anjou.

1508, Division. French Guise 1508-1675. Leaders of Catholics. German Lorraine 1508-1735. Alsace land of struggle. Lost and won.

Burgundy kingdoms: Burgundian then Merovingian Dynasty. 887 Upper Burgundy: Switzerland. Lower Burgundy: Provence united in kingdom of Arles 938-1033.

Duchy of Burgundy 879-1477. I Dynasty. Appanage of France. II Dynasty, Capetian 1032. III Dynasty, Valesian=Flemish 1363-1473; rivals France.

Franche Comté, 1032-1384. Dauphiné 1384.

Provence 926-1481. Venaissin: Avignon 1793.

Languedoc cultured. Ravaged by Albigenses who are reduced by crusades. Toulouse 900-1271.

Free Border States

BELGIUM 249

Nationality: The fiefs of the Netherlands were ever united in spirit, character. Prosperity, crusades.

History 252

Roman period. Valor testified by Cæsar.

Franco-Belgian period. Belgium cradle of Frankish monarchy.

Feudal period. 17 states. Flanders the leader. Progressive counts. Wool industries. Struggle of Communes for franchises. Monograph.

Burgundian period 1364. Concentration. Reunion of provinces under Dukes of Burgundy.

Hapsburg period 1555. Spanish and Austrian. Attacked by French and Dutch.

Kingdom of Belgium 1830. National independence. Liberal policy—commerce and Congo colony. Heroic defense against the Germans in world war.

Luxemburg, a part of Belgium except after congress of Vienna.

Chronicles 275

NETHERLANDS 281

Unconquerable people.

First period: conquest of elements. Seven states.

Second period. Period of glory 1579. Dutch fight themselves free from absentee rulers.

Third period. Struggle for power 1648. Maintain their liberty in face of the mighty Orange house. Great power. Use Belgium for their benefit 1530-1830. Good sea power.

Chronicles.

SWISS REPUBLIC 1299-1918 292

Hardy people drive out the Hapsburgs and are prepared to defend their land. They made a playground of their mountains and managed to live in peace with two religions, several languages and races.

THE TEUTONS

Ethnology. Six nations occupy Roman empire, mixing with inhabitants. Four branches in Germany. Four outside: Dutch, Flemings, Anglo-Saxons, Scandinavians 298

Character. Warlike; love of autonomy.

Monarchy and Empire.

Outlines. 6 dynasties.....302

First period. Stormy times, 834-1024.....302

Carolingian and Saxon houses. Normans, Magyars, Slavs.

Second period. Age of Chivalry 1073-1303.....303

Crusades. Investiture quarrels. Guelf, Ghibelline struggles. Communes. Franconian and Hohenstaufen houses. Hohenstaufen world power. Monograph.

Third period. Centralization 1303-1517.....310

Houses: Luxemburg; Hapsburg.

Hapsburg world power: monograph.

Fourth period. Religious dissensions 1517-1648...320

Protestant League of Schmalkalden, Catholic Union: War of Thirty Years 1618-1648. Division ruin.

Fifth period. Weakness 1648-1789.....322

Unceasing attacks of Louis XIV and last Turkish assaults. Hapsburg succession wars.

Sixth period. Revolutions, 1789-1918.....323

French wars for 25 years—Austria undermined by Prussia, who subdues one rival after another. Hohenzollern world war, 1914-18. Peace conditions. Elements of disorder let loose. Monograph.

German Monarchy—Chronicles 345

German States. Numerous. Chronicles.....356
Four transformations on a large scale.
North Germany 357
Saxony split after Henry the Lion. 1181, Guelfs keep Brunswick which is divided into Brunswick, Hanover and smaller states. *Oldenburg* 1870. *Schleswig*-Holstein 1866.
Tranalsbingian Saxony. Ascanian house. North Brandenburg sold to Hohenzollerns. South given to Misnia House *Wettin* 1423-1547 which divides: Elder Branch *Ernestine* in Thuringia. Several duchies. *Albertine* younger branch in (new) Saxony. Dukes, kings of Poland. Kings of one-half Saxony.
Hohenzollern. In the south, tenth century. In the north 1410: union policy. Primogeniture compacts. Sigismond of Brandenburg marries heiress of Prussia and Cleves. Kingdom 1701.
1730-86, Frederick the Great takes Silesia; sustains seven years' war, 1756-63; begins partition of Poland. Frederick William II, 1786, Frederick William III, 1797-1840. Napoleonic wars. Spoils.
Middle Germany 367
Nassau, German and Dutch branches Gueldren. Hesse: Cassel, Darmstadt.
Bavaria-Palatinate: Franconia. Bavaria on Main and Danube. Guelfs 1055 oppose Hohenstaufen. *Wittelsbachs* 1180. 1294-1777 Palatine and Bavarian lines. Bavaria united 1777. Faithful to Austria, forced into German Empire 1871.
South Germany 372
Swabia: Suevi and Allemanni. Hohenstaufen Dukes. 1370: anarchy, leagues.
Baden XIII century. 1918.
Würtemberg XIII century, 1500. Struggle for liberty against princes. Ulrich I 1495 autocratic: Insurrections.

Austria. Babembergs 983-1246. *Hapsburgs* 1280-1918 Carinthia, Tyrol. Netherlands through Maximilian=Mary of Burgundy. Hungary and Bohemia through Ferdinand II.

Corporate Powers 377

Cities. Imperial Cities. *Leagues:* Hanseatic, Rhine, Swabian.

Teutonic Order 1225 forces the Prussians to accept Christianity. Sways Baltic ports and Northern trade. 1410, crushed by Poland.

Hanse and Order Germanize the east.

Ecclesiastical Principalities. 3 electorates. 24 bishopries persist in the west. Most of the central and eastern ecclesiastical states disappeared at the Reformation.

SLAVS

Sector I. Peaceful character, yet shield of Europe. Widespread, divided and oppressed.....384

Sector II. General March of Events.....388

Yoke of barbarian powers.

Racial struggle against German advance, who penetrate through Hanse and Teutonic Order.

Sector III. Main Groups.

Southern Slavs occupy Balkans in the VII century, westernmost Slavs annihilated, but monarchies of Bohemia and Poland resist pressure. Northern Slavs. Prussians attack missionaries, are reduced by knights.

Eastern Slavs. Little Russians; Ruthenians, Catholics; Ukranians, Orthodox.

Great Russians were formed by accessions.

Sector IV. Monarchies: Outlines and Chronicles.401

Bohemia Premislides, 722-1366. Wenceslaus. Ottocar II. Moravia, Tatra, Silesia.

Luxemburg dynasty 1310-1437.

Poland. Polish Monarchy 840. *Piast* Dynasty. 386-1572. *Hedwige=Jagellon* dynasty, Wladislav II. Sobieski.

Bulwark of Christiandom but Anarchy of Nobility. Partitions: 1773, 93, 95.

Russia. First period. Barbarism and heroism 863-1043. Ruric dynasty, 963-1598.

Second period: appanage period. *Divisions* and *Schisms.* 1043-1222.

Third period 1222-1480. Mongol camp. Cossack Brotherhoods. Yoke tends to unite Russians.

Fourth period. Centralization. 1480. Ivan III drives away the Mongols. Ivan IV autocracy. Start in Siberia.

Fifth period. Romanoffs 1685-1917. World power. Peter the Great westernizes Russia. Czars divide Poland, take Caspian. Relentless advance. Collapse in world war.

THE MONGOLIANS

Character 432

The natives of Europe on the Urals, the Ugro-Finns mild, but rendered fierce by the invading Asiatics. Much mixture with Slavs: nationality sometimes doubtful.

Chronicles: Nomadic empires. Alans.....436

Huns: Empire 376-458. First invasion 376. Second invasion: Attila 430.....437

Avars 546-660. Khazars 198-1016. Bulgars 678-971. Petchenegs 894-1122. Magyars 884-972. Mongols 1224-1480, dominate Russia. Turks 1354-1682.

Settled monarchies 443

1000-1520, *Hungarian Kingdom.* 892-1303, Arpads, St. Stephen. Anjou Dynasty. *European Power* 1342-1525. Intermarriage with Luxemburgs—Bohemia and Hapsburgs the latter succeeding. Barrier against Turks.

Mongols XII-XVI Century 447
Ottoman Turks, 1299-1918 447

THIRD PART

MOHAMMEDAN FANATIC MILITARISM

Panorama 452
Dangers and evils in the Mohammedan system.
Outlines 454
Attacks in three successive periods:
Arabian period. VII Century 458
Rapid conquests in the East; stopped in the West.
Seljukian period. XI Century 459
Theatening advance stopped by crusaders.
Ottoman period. XIV Century 466
First, conquering period 1299-1571. Centuries of relentless attacks. Succession wars, murders. Mohammedan abuses on an immense scale. Terrorism.
Second period, irreparable decline 1571-1919. Rout at Lepanto and Vienna.
Chronicles 475

SOME TABULATIONS

Dynastic Genealogies 481
Alphabetical Index 528

INTRODUCTION

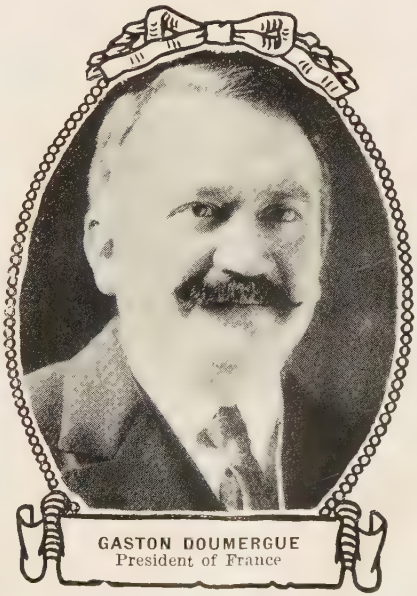
HISTORICAL TREATMENT

LAWS OF HISTORY

ALBERT
King of Belgium

GEORGE V
King of England

WILHELMINA
Queen of Holland

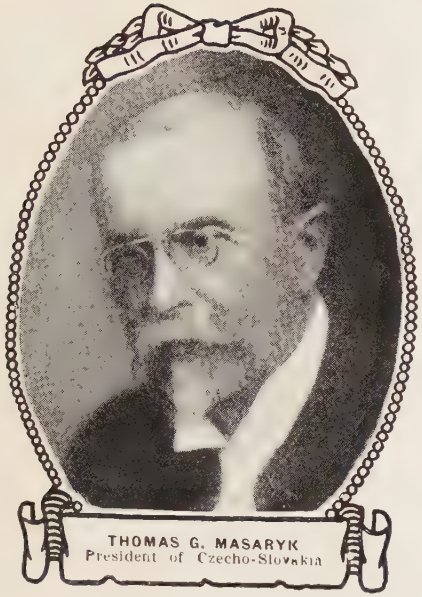


GASTON DOUMERGUE
President of France

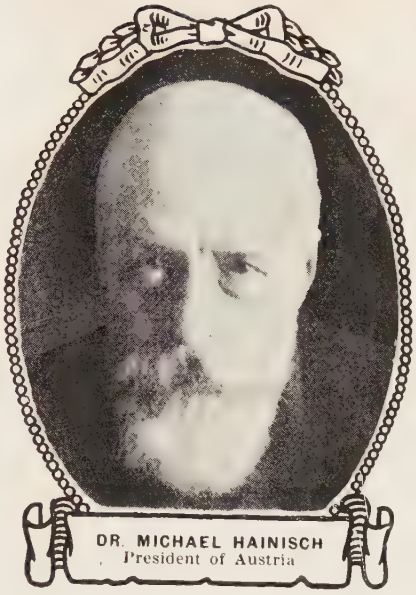
ALFONSO XIII
King of Spain

VICTOR EMMANUEL III
King of Italy

TEIZEIRA GOMES
President of Portugal

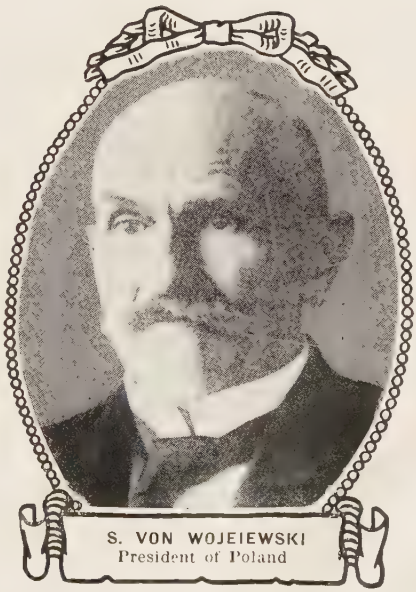


THOMAS G. MASARYK
President of Czecho-Slovakia



DR. MICHAEL HAINISCH
President of Austria

FRIEDRICH EBERT
President of Germany



S. VON WOJCIEWSKI
President of Poland

M. VLADIMIR LENIN
President of Russia

MUSTAPHA KEMAL PASHA
Turkish Leader

ALEX. PAPANASTASIOU
Prime Minister of Greece

A. STULGINSKIS
President of Lithuania

HAAKON VII
King of Norway

CHRISTIAN X
King of Denmark

GUSTAF V
King of Sweden

DR K. J. STAHLBERG
President of Finland

ALEXANDER
King of Jugo-Slavia

K. ULMANIS
Prime Minister of Latvia

BORIS III
King of Bulgaria

FERDINAND
King of Roumania

General View of Westminster Abbey, London, England

Windsor Castle, from the Thames, London, England

Church of Notre Dame de Paris, Paris, France

Arc de Triomphe de l'Eloile, Paris, France

The Rialto, Venice, Italy

Street of Tombs, Pompeii, Italy

Albert Memorial, Belfast, Ireland

Four Courts. Duplin, Ireland

Charlottenhof, Potsdam, Germany

Wilhelmsplatz, Berlin, Germany

Sprudel Colonnade, Carlsbad, Austria

Royal Palace, Brussels, Belgium

Bank of Scotland, Edinburgh, Scotland

East Front of the Parthenon, Athens, Greece

NAEROFJORD, GUDNANGER HARBOR, SOGNE, NORWAY

ROYAL PALACE, STOCKHOLM SWEDEN

Petrograd, from across the Neva, Petrograd, Russia

Budapest, Hungary

Seven Towers of Constantinople, Constantinople, Turkey

Mosque of St. Sophia, Constantinople, Turkey

Introduction

SECTION I.

Historical Treatment

STRANGE PHENOMENON STUDIED

Storms in Europe

About every second century Europe is shaken in its very foundations. What are the causes of these upheavals? They are not only political, but also racial, and they date from the migration of the nations fifteen centuries ago.

Racial and Political Causes

In the sixth century began the westward movement of peoples. German nations conquered the provinces of the Roman Empire and Slavic tribes advanced as far as the Elb and the Adriatic. The German Empire began a war of reconquest of its ancient eastern provinces; which lasts until today. Normans, Arabs and Saracens invaded Europe from all sides; later on came Turks and Mongols. There arose a number of states—which often warred among themselves. Before the world war there existed about fifteen independent European states, and since the war ancient kingdoms have come up again, and asserted their independence. Who are those nations? What right have they to independence? How have the great powers attained their predominance? Why have they failed to permanently subdue the small nations?

Study of the European Nations

Those questions come up every day and are only partially solved, but they are seldom explained in their bearings, causes and effects. We submit a methodical attempt of explanation to these questions. Our subject starts with the beginning of present Europe, to wit:—the races that occupy it, and the political arrangement that prevailed among them; it proceeds by presenting

the story of Europe in a series of historical panoramas. For many it is not a new subject. It simply classifies or recalls what they know or knew. It gives a brief explanation of many questions that continually recur, and of such leading events and personages that stand out and direct the course of history. It handles only the essentials of the problems.

What reasons have we to concern ourselves in the European struggles? There are two cogent motives. The first is that the nations of Europe are our forefathers. The second is that they are among the most progressive nations that have appeared in the world, and offer most valuable lessons for our own conduct.

SEGMENT I. METHOD

Principles

First the fundamental bases of society are expounded both in their natural and Christian bearings.

Perspectives

Secondly a peculiar system of exposition and condensation of the historical facts is adopted. It presents in current historical style, a broad prospectus or panorama of the fundamental features and the turning points of history, like a searchlight thrown upon an epoch or an institution showing the conditions and the principal events.

Enough Data to Understand Europe

These are broad perspectives of the history of continental Europe, given in such a popular way that anyone who reads the book will have a general idea and a solid grasp of the historical struggles of the past and the present centuries.

Chronicles

Then it gives statistics and chronicles which locate nations and personages in space and time. That is done without phraseology, in the form of a table of contents; it is like a synopsis of history. It may tire some readers.

It is not necessary to read these lists to understand the drift of the facts, but it is useful to history, i. e., it gives the duration and enumerates the dynasties of many secondary states that flourished in Europe for centuries and fill the pages of history. That is expressed in a few lines for each.

Tables of Genealogy

Tables of dynastic genealogies place the principal factors of history before the very eyes.

Monographs

Finally there are extensive monographs on the most important races and nations, institutions and personages of Europe which describe the factors and conditions of European life, and give a fair idea of the different epochs of its history. These monographs often complete the panoramic views displayed on every subject.

SEGMENT II. SCOPE

Delimitations

The main subjects of this book are the countries, the races and the nations of Europe. The peoples are studied in their beginnings and their history and made thoroughly known to the reader. Other subjects are added to complete the information about Europe.

Setor I. Geographical Scope

Continental and Insular Europe

Europe is divided in continental, insular and peninsular parts. The chains of the Pyrenees, the Alps and the Carpathians rising in the south divide the northern and southern basins.

Continental Europe stretches between the northern inland seas, the Channel, the North Sea, and the Baltic Sea, and the great chains of the south eastward beyond the Carpathians; and here the continent expands from the Black Sea to the Arctic Ocean forming a plain as large as the rest of Europe.

European Plains

Principal Theater and Stakes of War

The northern plains were the main theater of the war, although battles were fought on all sides on land and sea. They were also the main stakes of the war, especially the western parts. Elaborate sketches are given about these northern countries which were locally most concerned in the war and about the Balkan countries in the south which were also among the principal stakes of the war.

Secondary

Proportional Division Insured Peace

Today the western plains are the rich and strong parts of Europe. They possess an excellent soil and climate which support a numerous population and they have rivers and seas that put them in touch with the rest of the world. Every valley and every harbor is of financial and strategical value. For centuries they had been equally divided between the different powers of Europe, which guaranteed some balance of might between them. Whenever any potentate attempted to conquer some lands of the other princes, there were continental wars to prevent him from overpowering the others.

The eastern or Russian plains are less important, although they, too, constitute capital assets for the control of Europe. The southern or Danubian plains are quite valuable for the sway of the continent and they form a great figure in the start of the world struggle.

Broad Divisions of Work

The divisions of the work are on broad lines and can be found on the general maps of Europe. Let it be stated once for all that the valleys of the Rhine and its companion rivers the Meuse and the Scheldt form the border lands between France and Germany and the home of the free nations of Belgium, Holland and Switzerland; and that the debatable ground between the Slavs and the Germans are the basins of the Elbe, the Oder and the lower basins of the Vistula.

Debatable Grounds

Sector II. Ethnical Scope

Fine Stocks

What gave most of the superiority to the western plains of Europe is the high class of nations that dwell there. In the west live the French people, the mixture of the refined Celts with the sturdy Franks.

In the center live the aggressive and warlike Teutons ever eager to expand, as they did when they divided the Roman empire between themselves. The Franks were one of these conquering nations.

In the east live the steadfast, persistent and agricultural Slavs who fill the countries with their numerous progeny and occupy not only the immensity of Russia, but also have a big share of central Europe.

Mixed with the latter live the Finns, who occupy the Finland Lake regions and the Ugrians who occupy the lower plains of the Danube, to wit:—the Hungarians and the Bulgarians.

Soul of a Nation Imperishable

The soul of a nation is unconquerable and it cannot be blotted out. The more peoples are persecuted, the more they cling to their institutions. If some were conquered, they never gave up their nationality; but they fought themselves free again. If they were politically destroyed, their spirit was not dead, but it arose again; such are the Jugo-Slavs and the Czecho-Slavs, the Ukrainians and the Ruthenians.

Mixtures

Some races have mingled together for centuries, whence were derived mixed nations like the Belgians and the Swiss.

Boundaries Crooked. Approximate Territories Overlapping

Many races overlap one another, and their boundaries cannot be traced by straight lines, or in compact bodies. However, the broad divisions may be laid down as follows: The French occupy ancient Gaul, from the Alps and the Rhine to the Atlantic Ocean. The Teutons eastward, rule from the Rhine to the Oder, the Slavs

from the Oder to the Ural mountains. The Mongols live around the Slavs. The Finns live north and east of them, and also have greatly intermingled with them. The Bulgarians and the Hungarians are south of the Slavs. The Asiatic Mongols fought and camped in Europe for centuries.

Catalogue of All European Races is Given

A list will be given of the branches that dwell or have dwelt in Europe, which will be more detailed in the Oriental parts, because they are less known.

Sector III. Historical Scope

Overthrow of Old World; Building of New One

The history of actual Europe goes back to the overthrow of the Roman empire; the settling of continental Europe by barbarian tribes; their gradual disciplining and civilization under the leadership of the Franks and finally the establishment of a new society of nations according to humanitarian laws and principles. It took five centuries before the barbarian masters of Europe could definitely be settled down and a new family of nations be permanently established. The new peoples of Europe migrated, fought, warred for five centuries before they had established their domain and definitely defended it against any new nomadic powers that tried to take a foothold in Europe.

Then the new nations started their own individual life and lived up to our own time, the space of a thousand years; and achieved that wonderful civilization we enjoy in our days.

Five Centuries of Anarchy and Strife

This sketch is naturally divided between the five hundred years of wild migrations, invasions, conquests, expulsions and endless conflicts during which the new nations of central Europe settled in their actual sites; and the thousand years of peace, work, development and

progress that they passed in their own country and of the national life they lived without interference of other nations.

Ten Centuries of National Life

The first part is short as it is still a general story of races of moving and fighting tribes not yet diversified nor specified into nations. The Franks and the Greeks alone have a national story to tell in those early ages. The other nations have only tribal tales or perpetual struggles to relate.

Stormy Formation

The second part is a history relating how the present nations of Europe took possession of their lands, and formed states some thousand years ago; how they defended their country against all intruders, how some of them were overpowered by ruthless conquerors and for a time lost their political identity, without giving up their nationality, and how the peoples improved their own country and what rank they attained in the family of nations. This part forms the bulk of the work.

National Life Not Extinguished

The third part is a perspective of the onslaughts of Mohammedan militarism against Christian Europe. Meanwhile, there were the threatening Mussulmans, who attacked Christendom for a thousand years. They formed a formidable organization bent on the destruction of true liberty and civilization. They assailed one Christian power after another and overpowered the East. But they were stopped in the west by the Franks and the Spaniards; by the Poles and the Austrians; by the Italians and the Hungarians. The Christians did more than defend themselves: They took the offensive against their relentless enemies in the eight general crusades, and they invaded the Orient, where the nests of the Turks were brooding and from whence they were swooping over the South, and they broke their brutal power.

Islam Onslaughts Could Not Enslave the Nations

SECTION II

Political Principles

SEGMENT I. GENERAL PRINCIPLES

The Bases of Society

Five Foundations

There are five main foundations of society namely: large families, industrious labor, stable government, international justice and sincere religion. There must be a healthy population to maintain a community and industrious labor to prosper. It requires a strong government to keep order among the members of the commonwealth, and the observation of international justice to safeguard the weaker nations. Conscience and religion are powerful incentives to promote those requirements.

Sector I. Natural Life

These principles formulate the laws of history, i.e. the course followed by the events in their natural development.

Man the First Treasure

It is evident that men, women and children are the principal elements of society and form its richest treasures. A growing population is a healthy sign of a strong community and the basis of a promising future.

Natural Life the Basis of Society

The natural life is the foundation of health in the individual and growth in the community. When people live sober and busy lives they obtain the necessaries and comforts of life unless bad laws deprive them of the fruits of their labor.

Sober and Busy Life Builds up

When people cease to labor and to produce and abandon themselves to excesses or crimes they fail to make enough for their extravagance and prepare their own ruin and the ruin of their country. What is most fatal in this matter is that any abuse of nature carries its own punishment. Nature never forgives; but revenges herself against any violation of her inexorable laws.

Violation of Natural Law Destroys

Race Suicide Fatal

One of the saddest violations of the natural law is race-suicide; a pagan practice that undermined the strongest empire of antiquity and is now undermining our most advanced states. It is against that crime that this lover of nature and great statesman, President Roosevelt, raised his voice branding it as murder of children and calling that foul practice "Race-Suicide." Shameless men and women who advocate that doctrine of extreme selfishness, are the greatest foes of mankind.

Branded by Roosevelt

Race Suicide Exhausts the Roman Empire

The magnificent empire of Rome had established a splendid civilization over southern and western Europe and kept at bay the Barbarian hordes hovering around it. But its citizens gave themselves over to luxury and self-indulgence. They ceased to procreate children. Race-suicide set in as a canker that was sure to kill. Not only did they cease to overawe the wild tribes that threatened them, but they enlisted them in their armies of the frontiers, and thus divided the enemies. But that lasted only for a time.

No Latin Soldiers

Barbarians Are Enlisted

Childless Rome Under New Masters

Childless Rome could not withstand the shock imparted by the Huns which overturned all Europe. The unconquerable legions of Rome were only empty shadows. The Barbarians who had walked chained in Rome, who fought in her coliseum were now parading over the forum. The Roman culture was crushed under the ruins of its cities. The Latin peoples remained and leavened the barbarian masters of Europe.

Modern Moloch Devouring the Children

The greatest menace to our civilization today is the voracious Moloch devouring the tender children even before they are born. It depopulates the most civilized of countries. The sturdy Puritans who once filled New England are disappearing from the face of the earth. The prolific Frenchmen, who were as numerous as the Germans a century ago, are now reduced to the half by

Ought to be Proclaimed by League of Nations

the accursed murder of children. The League of Nations is endeavoring to raise barriers against new attempts of imperialism, but it ought to proclaim to the world the eternal principle of nature that race-suicide kills the nation guilty of it and lays it open to attacks. Ordinarily the foes start as equal rivals but if one ceases to reproduce itself it is bound to become the prey of its enemy.

Sector II. Industrious Labor

Laboring or Robbing Nations

There are two ways of acquiring wealth, the first is to make it, the second is to steal it. The peaceful nations create their own riches, the military ones organize, and drill, and then plunder the treasures of their cultured neighbors.

The first way is the only legitimate and lasting one, that exercises and improves men in every walk of life. The latter is simply robbery, that cannot last, and that unfits its adepts to any productive exertion, and renders them incapable to compete on equal terms with their neighbors, and to provide for their own necessities. There comes a time that the peaceful workers organize against the plunderers and punish them for their depredations and subject them to their own authority. Such were the Ottoman Turks, who for centuries wasted and plundered three continents, they knew nothing else but robbing. Now that plundering has been rendered impossible they are inferior to the neighbors they used to rob, and form only a degraded mass of fallen masters, far inferior to their old victims. Militarism may enrich the predatory powers for the time being, but it is bound to degrade them and to ruin them in the end, and to reduce them to the lowest grades of peoples.

The Former Improves, the Latter Degrades

Example of Turks

Militarism the Curse of Everybody Concerned

In our days there have arisen bolder plunderers, who rob in the name of justice, namely the Communists, claiming that everything is common among men. The most selfish among them are the Bolsheviki. They are demagogues, who deceive the people for their own profits; while declaiming against the rightful owners of wealth, they monopolize all wealth and power in their own hands, rob the workers of the produce of their labor for their own benefit, and ruin the country that is cursed by their rule. There never were tyrants as despotic, and capitalists as cruel as the Bolsheviki of Russia, whose leaders under pretext of establishing equality among men, have simply plundered and enslaved their fellowmen, workers as well as managers.

Selfish Bolsheviki

Grasp All Wealth and Power

In their mad course they have destroyed the means of production and caused famines that killed millions of people. Within a few years they have accumulated more ruins, and caused more sufferings than the czars had caused during centuries. Who would work under such conditions? Who would do any more than he must do? Could there be more treacherous foes of labor?

Destroy Works of Production

Sector III. Stable Government

In every society some authority is necessary to maintain order among the members and to protect them against the enemies.

Essence of a Government

Century Dictionary: "Politics is the science and practice of government; the regulation and government of a nation or state for the preservation of its safety, peace and prosperity.

"Political government is the exercise of authority in the administration of the affairs of a state, community or society; the authoritative direction and restraint ex-

ercised over the actions of men in communities, societies or states."

After proclaiming the inborn rights of men, the Declaration of Independence says "that to secure those rights Governments are instituted among Men deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed . . . ."

Necessity of Authority

Power Necessary to Compel the Violent

What is the raison d'être, i. e., the reason for being, of a government? Century Dictionary: "Why has government been instituted at all? Because the passions of men will not conform to the dictates of reason without constraint." A. Hamilton, Federalist No. 15.

"Government exists for the purpose of keeping the peace, for the purpose of compelling us to settle our disputes by arbitration instead of settling them by blows; for the purpose of compelling us to supply our wants by industry; instead of supplying them by rapine."—MACAULAY.

Lawlessness Without Authority

No other proof of the necessity of some public authority with power to enforce its decisions is required than the lawlessness that raged in Europe after the fall of the Roman Empire and that the anarchists propose to inflict today upon our great cities and centers of civilization.

This broad survey of fifteen hundred years proves the necessity of stable governments to maintain peace among the different nations and order in the bosom of every nation and shows the benefits bestowed by a just regime and the misfortunes inflicted by usurpation and despotism.

Nomadism and Warfare for 500 Years

After the fall of Rome, there was no government powerful enough to maintain order among the barbarian tribes of Europe. There commenced a series of endless

migrations and of intertribal wars, which lasted for five centuries, and which kept Europe in barbarism for several generations.

Peaceful Development for 1000 Years

The Franks were the first in Central Europe to restore order among the wild tribes, and to confine everyone of these into fixed boundaries; their successors continued to coerce the savage instincts of roving and warring, and there grew up and developed an orderly Europe, which lasted for a thousand years and produced the great nations that rule the world today.

Intolerable Yoke of Autocrats Overthrown

But when kings or emperors became rapacious or despotic, they inflicted such intolerable evils upon their people that these revolted against oppression and overthrew the despotic rulers amid horrible scenes of revenge and violence.

Demagogic Tyranny; Anarchy as Bad

Petty tyrants made themselves the masters of the governments and exhibited a lust for plunder and bloodshed unequaled in pagan times, such as the orgies of the Reign of Terror in France, and the Bolsheviki in our days in Russia. That is the rule of the violent and the unjust or rather the absence of government in which murderers and robbers have the upper hand. It is anarchy stalking over the land. It is bound to kill itself too, as it exhausts life and wealth, and it becomes so unbearable that the people finally overthrow and trample under their feet the miserable rabble, drunk with their blood.

Lack or Excess of Power

The worst state of society is that of anarchy; wherein the strong individual looks out for himself and terrorizes and plunders his neighbors weaker than himself. It is the Bolsheviki tyranny. The opposite extreme is that of despotism, by which a potentate reduces peoples and individuals under his yoke. It is the Sultan's tyranny.

Definitions

The nature of a government is defined after the actual ruler and controller of the state. It is autocratic if

a monarchy or an oligarchy arbitrarily rules; it is democratic if the people govern themselves. The former is a minority, the latter is a majority government.

The words: tyranny, monarchy and republic, denote only forms of government, and the one may be abused as well as the other by the authorities.

Ideal and Practical Government

The ideal government is that which combines security with liberty, and procures the greatest amount of security with the least amount of coercion. However, such a government is not possible in violent times, and among turbulent people. A strong authority is then required for the maintenance of peace. That is exactly what arose in the Middle Ages and persevered in many parts until our time. It was not an absolute autocratic rule, for it was hemmed in by constitutional restrictions, but it secured order and liberty. It was the best suited for the times. It is now being gradually replaced by democratic governments.

The Best Government Is the One Suited to the Circumstances

Monarchial Form Offers Chance to Tyrannize

A monarchial government may suit the rough and wild nations better, but it is dangerous when it is absolute and autocratic as it places then in the hands of one irresponsible man (or one group of men) the lives and fortunes of the nations — whom he can throw into war by his command.

Autocrats Scheme for Their Own Benefit and Butcher Millions of People

All governments ought to be instituted and conducted for the benefit of the people and not for the benefit of the officials. They ought to be guided by the deliberation of the community and not by the dictates of an individual or a small group of individuals who may govern for their own benefit only and who may throw the country into the horrors of war by a single word of their own. That is the reason why autocracy is so dangerous a machinery in the hands of unscrupulous rulers who have continually

despoiled their people and often sent millions to death without exposing themselves to any danger.

They Are Making the Anarchists

But a reaction is bound to come. After long sufferings the people rise in their might and number to demand justice and to overthrow the tyrants. Unhappily they often fall into the hands of fanatic leaders who commit excesses more destructive than those committed by the absolute monarchs or oligarchs. It is only a few times they had a chance to vent their rage; but they plotted world-wide destruction to avenge the wrong done by too absolute a government.

Necessity of Preparedness

Preparedness Imperative

Among the main functions of the state is the defense of the country against aggressive or restless neighbors. "Surprise the enemy before he is ready" has been the strategy of the latest militaristic powers. Japan's cannons thundered against Port Arthur, the Russian stronghold, when the first stroke of the midnight ultimatum was heard. The Prussian armies were standing before the neutral grounds they were to violate, and when the last minute of the ultimatum had vanished, five army corps started on their march of devastation and conquest. Belgium was not ready, nor was it equal for the onslaught. Neither was France, nor any other power.

Before Militarists

And Anarchists

The anarchists are continually scheming and conspiring in the dark, how to seize for themselves every power and every wealth; and they take advantage of every calamity or war to blind and deceive the people and precipitate revolutions that make them the masters of the community and give them a chance to plunder the same, before the governments or bulk of the population have any time to stop the organized brigands.

Moral

Preparedness is imperative in our days. The first step is a moral one toward an unalloyed patriotism. The love of country should be nourished by the continual teaching of the advantages offered by the land of the fathers and mothers, and the enthusiastic celebration of the great national events and of the glory of the heroes that planned and fought for the country. Our public places ought to be filled with the statues of our heroes and our statesmen and our books and schools ought to recount the ideals that animated those great men, and the natural, delightful lives they led in their homes and their neighborhoods. Such knowledge of these men would stir the youth more than the glory of their military or oratorical triumphs.

Physical

The second step to preparedness is a physical one, an effective national preparation to defend the country. A large permanent army is not necessary, but universal training and equipping are sufficient. Australia and Switzerland are models in this matter. The League of Nations would be a safeguard, but in case of sudden assault it requires time before the league troops can come and there must be a local force to prevent the enemy from entering and devastating the country before the powers can arrive at the spot.

Safeguarded in Europe

Sector IV. International Justice

A Political Axiom

The main question pervading this book is a question of right against might, plain justice against brutal force.

Axiom Independence of Nations

It is received as an axiom among all civilized peoples, that every nation exists for itself, and has a right to set up a suitable government of its own, and that no great power has a right to subdue and incorporate small na-

tions as being necessary for its own progress or existence.

It cannot stand before reason that might, power or number give the right to attack and despoil a weak neighbor, whether an individual or a nation.

Immortality of Nations

During the great war Pope Benedict XV solemnly declared that the souls of nations never die and warned not to try and crush out any nationality as it would revive the stronger on account of the violence done to it.

Two Champions of Right

But the Pope being deprived of military power was not heeded. There arose another champion of international right, the President of the United States, Woodrow Wilson, who emphasized and enforced the same in a masterly way.

Law of Nations Emphasized, Enforced

This great statesman first recalled to Prussian militarism the existing international laws. Then he invited the subject and Teutonic peoples to assert their independence from the cruel lords that led them to slaughter. Finally he threw into the battlefield the lusty giant of the new world who turned the scale and helped to crush the defiant militarists, who were overthrown by their long-suffering subjects and slaves. He coined a new word, "self-determination," that will become the pivotal principle of the future. That does not mean the immediate and forcible application of the right of independence for every nationality. It means the proposition of a new international order that has come to stay, and that will procure liberty to every people in due course of time. If any power ill-treats a part of its subjects it will have to observe the laws of justice or lose them; if it cannot or will not govern them rightly it has to allow them to govern themselves.

Declaration of Independence of All Nations

Cultured Peoples

The principle of the inviolability of nations has guided the cultured peoples of Europe for 1500 years. During the Middle Ages there existed a commonwealth

of Christian states, which has safeguarded the rights of the smaller nations. In modern times the civilized peoples coalesced against the would-be world conquerors.

A Family of Nations

Europe had been organized as a family of nations; not only the natural laws, but the Christian laws were recognized and respected. The principle of international justice was the base of the European commonwealth, and it was observed for a thousand years. Not a single nation was forever wiped out of existence.

"Might is Right"

Only seven times were there predatory powers in Europe that attempted to subdue the nations to their sceptre, but they were put down by the combined powers of the times. These powers were English, French, German, Russian and Turkish. It seems hard to classify among the conquerors such great princes as Barberossa, Louis XIV and Napoleon, but they made unnecessary wars which were the very things that tarnished their glory.

Mislead Germany

Machiavelli was the first to assert that states have no moral obligations, and that corporations have no soul and no duties and that they can use force and intrigue to attain their ends. Today there is a large school of prophets of might. The German universities, directed by the autocrats of Berlin, spread the doctrine of brutal force among the German people; and the Kaiser and his Junkers led them to the conquest of the world. Victorious for years, they collapsed suddenly as had all the previous would-be world-rulers.

Chapter I. Imperialism Versus Provincialism

Imperialism

Inflation and Dissection

There are two extremes in the setting of nations: the one is inflation, the other dissection; the one incorporates everything in sight, the other dismembers a state until

it is cut up into insignificant districts. The first may be called imperialism and tends to expand; the other may be called provincialism as it tends to dissolve a country into small communities or provinces; the former is a threatening world power; the other an isolated country.

There are two kinds of empires: one that is broad and beneficent to its neighbors as well as to its subjects, another that is predatory and grasping; the former is a blessing to the world, the latter is a curse.

Beneficent World Powers

Beneficent World Powers

Civilizing Their Subjects

There were world powers of a brotherly nature which greatly benefited the people that came under their sway or influence; because they advanced them in civilization or at least gave them a chance of culture centuries before they could achieve culture by themselves. Such was the Roman empire in ancient times and the Spanish and English ocean powers. This does not imply that the Romans, the Spaniards and the Englishmen did not seek for their own advantages in their wars of conquest; but they benefited the people of their provinces or their colonies. Roman Gaul was five centuries ahead of free Germany in the matter of civilization and remained so for centuries later. In fact, under the Franks she became the leading power of the continent for many generations, being in the west of Europe what the Byzantine empire was in the east. The Franks were the first to restore civilization in continental Europe and immensely benefited all the German tribes that came under their control.

The Franks Restorers of Civilization

Spanish and English

The Spaniards and the English made discoveries and conquests overseas and offered civilization to their colonists.

Predatory World Powers

Military Systems a Menace

There are military powers, mainly organized for conquest. They train for war while others work and study for the betterment of the country or the race. At the critical moment they assault peaceable nations, conquer, subjugate and despoil them. They are a menace to the world. Such were Sparta, the Mohammedans, the late Hohenzollerns.

"Gain" Pretext for Conquest

Pretext Used to Conquer Unwilling Peoples

The wrong imperialism is the one that tends to monopolize all the people of the same language, region, race or religion whether they desire it or not. Such were the Pan-Latinism of Napoleon, the Pan-Germanism of Bismarck, the Pan-Slavism of the Romanoffs, who put forth some pretext to subdue alien people. Not only did these autocrats want to unite under their sceptre what they call their own, which they were not, but they wished to incorporate alien nations and to constitute a power that would control the rest of the world. Seven have tried to establish a world empire and all have been beaten down through the coalition of their indignant neighbors.

And to Dominate World Attempts Put Down By Coalitions

Neither unity of race, language, or religion, nor contiguity of place give the right to invade other countries, nor are these essential elements to constitute a nation.

Provincialism

President Wilson proclaimed for the peoples the right of self-determination, but not of self-destruction.

The President of the United States has not intended to divide the enemy country into tribes and counties, and to create new states that have no other reason for existence than the interests and efforts of their promoters.

Old States Have Claim

A number of ancient and oppressed nationalities have arisen to proclaim their state right and they ought to be

given the consideration of a hearing. Among them a few lay claim to this upon every historical or linguistic connection, in any way related to them. There are a number of new communities that proclaim statehood, to satisfy their own private interests, which would bring Europe back to a tribal condition. There may be more objection by the so-called subjects to the insignificant states that lay claim to them than there was to the empires they formerly belonged to.

There Are New States Without Foundation

What Is Required for Statehood

What constitutes a state? There must be enough people to constitute a public interest and power sufficiently large to secure a place under the sun and to defend themselves against unjust claims of others.

Public Affair

Private and dynastic; sectarian or clannish interests cannot claim public usefulness; they are personal partisan, provincial and separatist, and would cut up and subdivide mostly every state.

No Class Sect Dynasty or Place Interest

Small groups of agitators, malcontents, irreconcilables or provincials represent only private concerns or disgruntled ambitions and small factions and cannot claim the standing of nations. Still there have come to the Peace Conference interested individuals to push their private interests and ambitions before the great world problems to be settled then.

Public Interest and Power

There was a time when small territories were sufficient to constitute an independent state undisturbed by the outside world and self-sufficient in their own products and factories. But the rapid communication between countries far and near has widened the horizon of men and multiplied their wants and desires. They are not satisfied any more in the isolation of a narrow valley bounded by neighboring hills; they wish to roam over

Small Provinces Used to Form Self-Sufficient States

Enlarged Views and Wants

whole countries. They are not content any more with the harvests and outputs of a small country; but they want the products of the world. What was a sufficient number to form an independent community in the Middle Ages is not now any more. Some size, some place on the map is necessary before a community can exist, form a state and live its independent life. Moreover, the whole world tends to concentration and unification; the states have grown larger and the distinction is plain between districts and states. Such divisions would have to federate before they can have any show of self-defense and of participation in the general life of the world. However sweet is local rule and personal liberty, men must sacrifice something to the rest of the world.

States Are Enlarging and Grouping Together

Isolation is a Great Disadvantage

Cause of Dissolution

The provincialism of small potentates or greedy coteries would parcel out fair countries into insignificant divisions, which would render these the ready prey of any army.

It was the selfishness and the lawlessness of Polish nobles which divided prosperous Poland and laid it open to the intriguer and the invader. In a quarter of a century that great country was divided among three powers which trampled it under their feet for a century and a quarter, and which are now threatened with the same dissolution they inflicted upon their unsuspecting neighbor at the end of the eighteenth century.

Class Interests

The syndicalists propose to divide every country into independent communes, which they would completely control, and which then they would federate to dominate all the other classes of citizens. The syndicalists are only representing a band of agitators, and not the bulk of the workingmen, who have moderate and practical views. These who declaim so loudly against the class

system, would establish one much worse than the division existing now.

States Sacrificed to Dynasties

The power of the princes was the foundation of order and progress in the beginning, but in the course of centuries it was often used for the benefit of the dynasty rather than of the people. Centuries were dismembered to give a share to the sons of the ruler.

Dismembered for Inheritances

Divided by Sectarianism

A great source of division is a narrow spirit of sectarianism. It was sectarianism that threw Germany into the Thirty Years' War, and reduced it to a heap of ruins. No country in the world has suffered as much from religious separatism as Germany, which descended to the rank of a second-class power after its religious wars, and did not recuperate its natural rank among the great nations of the earth before two centuries had elapsed.

Chapter II. Large Versus Small States

Question of Expediency

Besides the question of international right, there is a question of expediency whether size contributes to the prosperity and happiness of peoples? A large size is not necessary to prosper as there are many prosperous states that are small. A large state tends more to expansion and big works. A small state leads more to perfection and concentration.

Large States

Favorable to Commerce and Wealth

The union of vast countries offers a large field for industrial and commercial enterprises and gives a formidable power of defense and strong guarantee of stability. Therefore, any rightful extension of territory is a blessing for a country by the free consent of two states or the dynastic union through marriages—although the latter does not create a union of feelings and interests, which,

Peaceable Union a Blessing

however, may be promoted by the arrangement and bring on permanent union.

Conquests Not Lasting

Annexations through conquests are violent and temporary. The bodies may be subjected to the stronger power; but the spirits of the people are not, and will some day vindicate the autonomy of the ancient nation.

Small States

Homes of Initiative

There are small states, free borderlands small in size—having been cut down by neighboring empires—but they are strong in patriotism, highly developed and they exerted an influence far beyond their size in the history of Europe.

There is a series of free peoples extending from the mouths of the Rhine to its sources at the summit of the Alps, who for a long time have maintained their independence, and some of whom have the enjoyment of autonomy today. They are Belgium and Holland; Lorraine and Alsace, and Switzerland.

Borderlands and Battlefields

These lands have no natural boundaries; they are borderlands between France, Germany and Italy and were for centuries bones of contention between those consolidated powers. Belgium in particular was the battlefield of Europe for ages and all these lands were the scenes of innumerable wars during the course of fifteen centuries.

Spirit of Freedom Immortal

The people were animated with an unconquerable spirit of freedom which took the place of natural boundaries and served as defense against the powerful states that surrounded them. If they were conquered or traded off or passed as inheritances to foreign princes, and incorporated into other lands, they never gave up their individuality, but they fought themselves free again. Their very name sometimes disappeared from history for centuries but their spirit always remained alive, and

they arose again to take their places as free nations. It was the very necessity of defending their freedom that gave them that energy and activity that distinguishes them until our own day.

Unconquerable Because Accustomed to Fighting

These people were not even of one race, one religion, and one language; but they were of one aim to maintain their independence at the price of every sacrifice. It is the fallacy of predatory powers to force alien peoples to adopt the language of the domineering power, and to pretend that unity of language, race or worship, is necessary for the existence of commonwealths or justifies annexations. The Prussians wished to divide Belgium in its Walloon and Flemish elements—in order to be able to subdue them sometime; but they only succeeded in welding them more closely together. A dull king of Holland attempted to make the Belgians Protestant, but he lost the very people themselves.

Fallacy That Unity of Language, Race and Religion Are Necessary

Example Belgium

Far from being a drawback; the very mixture of race and languages offers a physical as well as an intellectual advantage as it gives the blood and the ideas of two races. Mixed people are often stronger and brainier than people composed of one element only.

Even mixture of religion—when freely tolerated on all sides arouses a more active spirit in the faithful, as they are forced to practice their religion in presence of rivals, if they wish to survive. Switzerland is an example in the case. Both Protestants and Catholics live in harmony side by side and they are very sincere in their worship. It is true sometimes intolerance arises and persecution rages among fanatics who want to force others to adopt their opinions. It serves only to fan the enthusiasm of the believers who work and fight for their liberty of conscience. That has been seen repeatedly in Switzerland.

Mixture of Religion, No Hindrance

Invincible Patriotism

We are far from condemning the advantages which the union of vast countries offers. But we contend that the small nations surpass them in patriotism, wealth and administration and exert more than their share of influence in the history of the world. The empires serve especially as trade-ways between the different countries.

Excel in Patriotism

When a nation spreads from ocean to ocean, there is little interest in people living 3000 miles away from one another. When people live close together they feel natural fellowship in one another; they are acquainted if not with the places, with persons at least that compose their little land and they feel inclined to defend it to the last foot of ground.

Administration

The government of an ordinary state is easily carried on to the last detail; the officers are known, everything is taken care of. Every resource is developed. Wealth reigns ordinarily in those compact nations. But it exposes them to the cupidity of their neighbors who are jealous of their prosperity.

Achievements in History

These borderlands have played a great role in history. They were the cradle of the greatest dynasties that ruled the continent. Probably the thorough training and the intense life and continual struggle for existence imparted to the founders of these royal and imperial houses that ability that made them rise above their superiors. Although oppressed they did not remain subjects but fought themselves free.

Vicissitudes. Persistence of Liberty

These countries passed through many vicissitudes. In Caesar's time, Belgium occupied the whole country lying between the sea, the Somme and the Rhine. Among the Carolingians (843), Lotharingia or Lorraine extended from the North Sea to the Alps. Lower Lotharingia occupied most of the Belgic territory. Upper

Lotharingia (which kept the name of Lotharingia, contracted into Lorraine) comprehended the land of the powerful houses of the Guise and Lorraine, and Alsace with the free city of Strasburg. Switzerland was part of Burgundy and Swabia and conquered and preserved its autonomy in face of the irresistible Hapsburgs.

Great Influence

Belgium has hardly any larger shoreline than Chicago. The area of Belgium is 11,374 sq. m. The area of the Holy Land is 12,000 sq. m. In Egypt there are only 13,000 miles of farming land. Latium and Attica were not much larger than ordinary American counties. Still those lands played a glorious role in history.

Chapter III. Dynasties

What Rights Have Dynasties

Benefits Bestowed By Dynasties

Most dynasties have begun with the services rendered to the community by some hero; who established order and security in the country or through some genius who developed the resources of the land or brought in trade relations with the outside world. Dynastic successions help to make the transmission of powers smooth and constitutional and in the storms of party strife maintain calm among the contending parties and preserve the peace of the land.

When a Nuisance They May Be Ousted

As long as the dynasties remain benefactors of the public they are legitimate and form an important part of the nation. If they abuse their power to establish an autocracy in the country or to plot for generations for the conquest of neighboring peoples, they become a drawback and a danger to mankind and ought to be brought back to their legitimate functions in order to maintain liberty at all. If that is impossible, they ought

Should Be Done Peaceably

to be dethroned constitutionally and given some compensation for the loss of their ancient rights. There is no necessity of violence against the time-honored family that was foremost in the land for centuries. The orgies of the Terrorists and the Bolsheviki are a disgrace to their authors and show that they are worse tyrants than those whom they endeavored to extirpate.

Dismemberments by Partition

There has existed a preposterous custom to consider the state as a family possession that could be divided among the members of the dynasty, or carried away into other families by marriage. That was substituting the interest of the dynasty to the good of the nation and often brought on wars that lasted for a generation. The Merovingians divided the empire of Clovis in four parts. The Ernestine Wettins divided their countries and subdivided them until Saxon Thuringia was cut up into small principalities, some of which were hardly larger than an American County. If partition between the members of a dynasty was a parceling out; the giving away of whole countries as dowry to princesses marrying into foreign dynasties was simply robbing the original state for the benefit of a neighbor who might become a rival. When the marriage of Eleanore of Poitou with Henry II (England) vested in herself and her husband the feudal rights to the Atlantic seaboard of France; it was to the detriment of that country to have one third of her fiefs in the hands of a rival of the monarchy, the king of England. Some descendants of French princesses married into the English Dynasty; claimed the French throne against the explicit stipulations of the Salic Law thus caused the Hundred Years' War that nearly ruined France.

Dowry

Cause of 100 Years' War

Accretion by Dowry a Public Benefit

The only transaction that a state could countenance and favor is the dowries accruing to the state through

marriages. It is thus that far-seeing courts brought into the main monarchies the surrounding principalities which seemed to be parts of the mainland anyway. The Valesians got Dauphiné and Britanny. The Hapsburgs got most of the neighboring states joining Austria through marriages. Later they got the Netherlands, Spain, Italy, Hungary and Bohemia—most all through marriages without any bloodshed. The poet expressed this policy of Austria: "Let others fly to arms—thou, happy Austria, marry." "Tu felix, Austria nube."

The Foundation of Austrian Empire

However, if the acquisition of new territories was beneficial to the original state; it was often-times detrimental to the country from whence they were wrenched and those territories themselves. Dynastic unions or personal unions—which join together under one ruler people antagonistic in their nature and in their history, or lying far away from one another—cannot be made happy, unless the people are shown common interests, powerful enough to compensate for the lack of racial, historical or local unity.

Marriages May Unite Antagonistic Peoples

When there is question of nationalities, community of interests is the only solid bond that will hold together dissimilar or disparate peoples.

Chapter IV. Colonization

Rights and Benefits

Europe has become a colonizing continent, and now sways most of the other continents. By what right?

Barbarians Should Have Plenty for Present and Future Needs

As to the rights of the savages and the Barbarians, they have an absolute claim to all the grounds that are necessary for their actual welfare and future expansion for centuries to come. But they have no right to exclude from the surplus the majority of mankind that finds no land to work and seeks a spot under the sun where to

Should Not Exclude the Majority of the Race

make a living. The Almighty did not create the earth for a playground of savages, but for fields to be worked by the children of man.

Moreover, barbarians often have forfeited every right by the violence they inflicted upon their neighbors.

Weaker Ones Fall in the Struggle for Existence

The decline and extinction of savages coming in contact with civilized people is a sad tale of human competition in the struggle for existence. However, it is not a universal fact, and the aim of the colonizers should be to rear the barbarians up to a better standard of living.

Mostly Through Selfishness of the Whites

When the natives are not benefited but hurt, hindered and delayed in their progress, it is not the fault of colonization, which is a means of advance and culture, but rather the personal fault of the agents of colonization, who lose sight of the natives, think only of themselves, and ruin or exterminate the aborigines to get their lands.

Means of Penetration

There are only a few ways of accelerating the civilization of the barbarians; to-wit:—trade, colonization, conquest and evangelization. Of all these, evangelization is the mildest and mightiest of means to thoroughly civilize a people.

Evangelization

Colonization

Commerce and colonization is the second means. It was the means that spread the advanced life of the Phoenicians and the Carthaginians, the Greeks and the Romans around the shores of the great inland sea of the Mediterranean, which thus were made extensions of Tyre and Carthage, Athens and Rome.

The Partition of the Backward Races

The modern partition of the world's inferior or subject races by the peoples of Europe is not for the sake of subduing them, but for the sake of elevating them, and eventually making them good customers for their trade. It is more for the sake of markets than for the sake of domains that Europe has divided the backward

Is for the Sake of Markets

countries of the universe, and spends immense sums of money and devotes the devices of its best statesmen in order to bring those countries to a high fertility; and thus to benefit the natives, raising them from a precarious living, to an abundance of the good things of the world.

Not for Conquest

It Improves

In this sense colonization is the extension of European culture and living, to peoples that have been kept down by the secular oppression of the selfish Mussulmans or autocratic rulers. Instead of curtailing the liberty of the natives, it affirms it, and gives them a chance to advance like other people of the universe.

It Brings the Blessings of Europe to World

Colonization Systems Contrasted

There is a great deal of discrepancy in the estimates about the different systems of colonization, caused mostly by the bias of writers on the subject. That does not change either methods, or results. There is a broad undeniable fact that in spite of the slanderous tales of their enemies, the English were the most powerful, and the Spanish the most beneficent of colonizers.

Disputes About the Merits of Colonizing Nations

There is no question here about the motives and the methods of the English or Spanish monarchies; far less of their agents; but the question is about the results of their colonizing system. On the whole they benefited the backward or enslaved countries which they colonized or administered. America is an exemplification of colonization.

Beneficent Results

Latin America

Public opinion has been misled with regard to the colonization of America by Spain and by England. The former is described as a backward, the latter as a progressive movement, probably because the Latin American Republics are not as flourishing as the United States. However, that feature does not bear upon the humanitarian side of the colonization with regard to the Indians,

Wrong Opinion About the Results of Spanish Colonization

who after all were the people mostly concerned in that colonization.

Which Preserved and Developed the Indian Race

What was the outcome of the English and the Spanish colonization in America? Who preserved, and who Christianized the Indians? The Spaniards. In Latin America there survive 20,000,000 of Indians, besides a great many half-breeds. In English America, the United States and Canada, there survive only 400,000 Indians who are rapidly dying off.

Full Citizens Equal to the Whites

The Latin American Indians are full citizens of the different states they live in and enjoy equal rights and opportunities with their white neighbors. There is not that race distinction between the white and colored people that often disgraces the United States. The Indians are

Eligible to the Highest Office

eligible to the highest offices, and when elected they are obeyed like any other man.

Porfirio Diaz

Porfirio Diaz, who was the president of Mexico from 1876 to 1911 with a single interruption which was required by the Constitution, was of mixed blood and he was the only one capable of maintaining order in Mexico, which was continually disturbed under his predecessors and his successors.

Those who expect to find the same push and grit in the Latin Republics as there are in the Anglo-Saxon commonwealths, forget that the bulk of those Republics is composed of colored or mixed races; to wit:—Indian and Negro, often mixed between themselves, and with the Whites.

Southern Indians not Mild

Some are thinking that the southern Indians were milder than the Northern ones. Such is not the fact. Many of the Southern Indians were man-eaters, who waged war to procure human victims, which they devoured at their great festivals. The very name of Cannibal, i.e. man-eater comes from the Caribs or Canibs, of

the West Indies, who were passionately addicted to the barbarous custom of man-eating. So were many of the Indians of South America. The missionaries that ventured among them were taking their lives in their hands, as white flesh was toothsome to those Indians.

Cannibalism Even in Mexico

In the city of Mexico 80,000 human victims were sacrificed every year to the War god, and when yet warm devoured by the eager multitude. If the Spaniards had not stopped those human holocausts, the Mexicans would have been exterminated in a few centuries.

Race Preserved Organized Nations

It is to the credit of Spain, not only that the Indians have been preserved, but that they have been organized on equal footing with the white men in Commonwealths of great future. Every Sovereign state of Latin America is a credit to the humanitarian spirit of the Spaniards.

Sector V. Sincere Religion

Religion An Incentive to the Observance of the Natural Laws

The fifth basis of society is morality, especially when founded upon religion. From the remotest antiquity till our own day the people who had a conscience observed those natural laws just mentioned which form the foundation of society and thus they build up lasting and prosperous nations: we may say that religion is the greatest incentive to virtue and to the observance of all the requirements to render the nation stable and powerful. The treatise on religion forms a special and large part of the Panorama of mankind.

Made a Department of the State

That is so true that the Chinese and the Japanese turned towards the State the respect and love due to the deity, and thus formed State religions, whose main devotion is to the State, and whose supreme duty is to sacrifice themselves for the wellbeing of their country and their rulers.

SEGMENT II. INTERNATIONAL SYSTEMS OF EUROPE

Sector I. Constitution of Medieval Europe

Reconstruction Difficult

The reconstruction of Christian Europe was a long and painful work naturally subject to many relapses into barbarian violence. Those who find fault with it do not realize the difficulties of the times. There was

Taming of Wild Natures

nothing less to attempt than to tame the wild nature of the new masters of Europe, to curb their passions; to subject them to law and order and to accustom them to labor. The nomadic habits and the independent nature of the barbarians was diametrically opposed to labor and civilization. Hunting and fish-

By Christianity

ing were their pastime, their pleasure and glory. Still they became accustomed to work and order. The church tamed their wild natures.

Within two (500-700) centuries she had won the tribes settled in the old empire of Rome and during

Conversion of Nations

the two following centuries she converted the Germans who had remained on their native soil (700-900). Finally before the year 1000 most of the Slavs and

Civilization

the Finnis were Christianized. The Church inculcated the Christian virtues to those savage children of forest and prairie and a new society arose upon the ruins of the old one.

Distinct but Harmonious Powers

The Christian society was governed by a spiritual and

Spiritual and Temporal Powers

a temporal head, who though entirely different in their functions and prerogatives were completely one in their aim and influence and gave to each other an effective co-operation. When rights were violated, there arose violent struggles for their maintenance and defense.

The Popes were the spiritual heads and the Emperors the temporal heads of the new confederation and commonwealth.

The Papacy an Arbitration Power

Papacy Arbitration Power

Recognized as the spiritual heads of Christendom the Popes exercised an unbounded spiritual power; they also enjoyed a limited temporal supremacy of jurisdiction for the settlement of disputes between the different nationalities. It was rather a power of arbitration by which they averted a number of wars and maintained peace in a barbarous world. That very jurisdiction involved them in many wars undertaken for the enforcement of justice and the protection of innocence and weakness. That there crept in abuses and that there were mistakes in the exercise of this exalted power is natural enough, but these did not destroy the peaceful influence of the papacy in those warlike times.

The Empire Not Autocratic

Establishment of a New Empire

One of the most beneficent actions of the Papacy was the re-establishment of the Roman Empire or rather the creation of a European Empire. In the year 800, Pope St. Leo III, the ninety-ninth successor of Peter, crowned Charlemagne emperor of the Christian world, and without the shedding of a drop of blood established an empire which lasted for a thousand years and was the keystone of the new Commonwealth. When several Christian states had arisen and were warring against one another, Otto the Great, King of Germany, was crowned by the Pope as the head of the Holy Roman Empire of the German Nations. "The Bishop of Rome exercised an immense influence over the empire and the kingdoms which arose within its shadow and he was re-

Keystone of Federation of States

garded by princes and peoples as their father and their judge. He created a new order of things, assigning to each potentate his place in the political world and controlling by law the movement of each to maintain the general harmony." (T. Kenrich.)

Empire Declines

Restored for Otto I and Rulers of Germany

The empire so brilliantly inaugurated by Pope Leo III under Charlemagne—ruling all the German nations, rapidly declined in the stormy times of his feeble successors and disappeared all but in title. But in 962 it was restored by the Popes under Otto I the Great, the respected head of the east Germans, and finally it was vested upon the vigorous kings and emperors of Germany as the Holy Roman Empire of the German Nations, who showed themselves worthy of the honor by maintaining the established order of Europe.

The Empire was not an absolute nor a universal nor even an hereditary power. It was restricted to two countries; it was circumscribed by the feudal rights and it was subject to election at every death of a kaiser.

No Universal Power

The domain of the Emperor was not universal, nor even European, but it was limited principally to Germany and secondarily to Italy. The establishment of the German empire did not subject to its power the independent kingdoms that rose all around it. The emperor

Nor Political Ruler of Europe

enjoyed among them a primacy of title and honor, but not of power or jurisdiction. He would not have been tolerated as a master but was accepted as first prince of Europe. His real function consisted in being the right

Protector of Papacy

arm of the Pope; his defender against other powers. In fact, he was the most dutiful servant of the Popes and enforced the public rights of Europe during these times.

While Other Princes Would Sway It

There were kings that endeavored to control the Popes for their own political ends. Philip the Fair brought into and settled the papacy in France in order to sway and

direct its policy; which brought a division into the church lasting thirty-seven years. The Pope was far enough from the emperor to be free from physical control.

No Arbitrary, But Constitutional Power

The power of the emperor was not absolute, but constitutional, being hemmed in by the rights and franchises of princes and peoples, and limited by the provisions of the feudal system which guaranteed inviolable rights to vassals.

Empire Not Hereditary but Elective

His office was not an hereditary power but an elective office. Every emperor had to be elected by a court of prince electors, composed first of seven then of nine electors. It was not necessary to choose a son or a member of the reigning dynasty; but any Christian prince might be chosen. Ordinarily a prince of the reigning family was preferred if any were available. When a dynasty became too powerful or too aggressive, an obscure prince was chosen who would be willing to perform his office in enforcing the laws and protecting the rights of all without interfering in the affairs of any fief. After the fall of the autocratic Hohenstaufen, the electors chose foreign princes as emperors who never appeared in Germany, in Germany the princes reasserted their privileges and set up over 100 principalities.

Potentates Shunned
Weak Princes Preferred

Average One Reigns Century
Hapsburgs Four

There were seven imperial dynasties—the average lasting about a century. To this there is a notable exception in the Hapsburg dynasty which reigned about four centuries on account of their mildness and diplomacy. Although they possessed the means to grasp absolute and universal power, they have not done so. This is one of the reasons that their rule lasted so long.

Legitimate Emperors Peaceful Rulers

There were fifty-two legitimate emperors—there were only four cases in which rivals were raised up against them, which is a marvelous result among all the vicissitudes of ten centuries. The great majority of the em-

perors were faithful servants of the people and of the church and rendered innumerable services to society. The autocrats and the disturbers were the exception.

Electoral College

With the extinction of the Carolingian line the kingship of Germany became an elective monarchy. There was an electoral college ordinarily composed of seven members taken from the most distinguished members of the hierarchy and the nobility. The Golden Bull of Charles IV gives their official charter and defines the number, the rights and duties of the Electors. There were seven electors—three ecclesiastical ones, to-wit: the Archbishops of Mainz, Treves and Cologne; there were four lay electors; to wit: The princes of Bohemia, Saxony, Brandenburg and Palatinate. They were not the princes of the four principal nationalities; to-wit: Saxony, Franconia, Swabia and Bavaria, but the principal officers in the imperial palace; to-wit: the Arch-marshall, the Duke of Saxony; the Arch-steward, the Count Palatine; the Arch-cupbearer, the King of Bohemia, and the Arch-chamberlain, the Marquis of Brandenburg. At one time the princes of Hanover and of Bavaria were among the Electors, although the latter soon merged with the Palatine Electorate.

Three Archbishops, Four Court Officers

Not the Four Principal Rulers

Sometimes More

Important Function: Good Choices

The electors had a most important office as they chose the ruler of the Christian empire. In general they made good choices as most all the emperors elected by them were good rulers, hence the empire lasted about a thousand years. That means that their choice ruled a thousand years and their ideas of justice and right prevailed during ten centuries; an exceptional long time in the life of empires. Considering the enormous interests involved in the choice, the turbulence of the times, the rivalry of the princely families, the contentions of the

religious professions, the work of the German electors was a wonderful and beneficent one as it safeguarded security, order and liberty in Europe during thirty-three generations.

Election Troubles Few

There were only a few double elections and a few disputed choices—which limited the succession wars to a small number in so complicated a system as the German Empire.

Safeguard Official Recognition by the Pope

During the Middle Ages there was an efficient check put upon the emperor-elect; to-wit — the approbation of the elect by the Popes of Rome. As the emperor was not only the political ruler of Germany, but also the temporal leader of Christendom, especially with regard to Germany and Italy, he was to be acceptable to the spiritual head of the Church, nor could he exert the wider function without his official recognition. No unworthy or unqualified candidate would be accepted by the Pope—consequently none such was elected.

Deposition of Domineering Emperors

There was still another safeguard for liberty; the right of deposition by the Electorate or the Papacy. If an emperor broke the constitution, or endeavored to domineer, or threatened to establish an absolute or a universal power, he was deposed and another prince was given the sceptre. In that case the Electors pointed out the infractions of the law, and proceeded to elect another emperor. The Pope then demanded the autocratic ruler to relax or to amend; when all means of redress had been exhausted, the Pope pronounced the sentence of excommunication against the faithless emperor and released his subjects from their oath of allegiance to him.

Ordinarily these proceedings restored regularity. When the autocrats were resourceful princes, there were long and bitter wars which invariably ended in

the extinction of the dynasty of the would-be absolute master. Those struggles were exceptional, but from them we know about the much decried unmaking of emperors. Of the regular functioning of the system we know little. Still it kept the empire of Germany together for a millenium and consequently had a great share in the progress of Europe. It secured the benefits of electing worthy and efficient supreme officers of the central power in remote and turbulent ages—a boon which we regard as one of our modern safeguards against usurpation and tyranny.

System Beneficent

Checked by Official Nobility

Checks were put upon the violence of the landed nobility by the creation of a knighthood and a peerage. The knights were the sworn champions of the weak, the widows and the orphans. The official nobility enforced the interstate laws.

And Rising Communes

Franchises were granted to the burgesses of the communes, who were thus enabled to withstand illegal exactions on the part of the landlord.

Farmers Were Serfs

Attached to the Land but Well Provided

The people working the lands were called villains, i.e., farmers, because they were to work the farm (villa) for the freeman, or nobleman. For a long time they remained in serfdom. They were attached to the land to work it for the benefit of their masters, at the same time deriving a livelihood for themselves and their families. They were protected in their lives and their rights. Ordinarily they were treated well and remained with their masters and were in more comfortable circumstances than many farmers of Europe are in our days.

Other Constitutional Powers

Other Monarchies

The other powers of Continental Europe were also constitutional monarchies—hemmed in on all sides by

the franchises of the feudal states. The rule of the French kings was a mild one, that of the Polish kings was weakened by the excessive prerogatives of the nobles.

Those monarchies were hereditary, which would prompt the kings to administer them for their improvement, as it was their interest to promote the welfare of a people that belonged to them.

Hereditary Kings Work to Improve Their Holdings

The holding of the power being permanent, the dynasties were not inclined to enlarge it by oppression and confiscations, as they were the rightful owners of the monarchy. In France they administered their realms in a fatherly way for the benefit of the people as well as of themselves.

The period of constitutional governments lasted until the renaissance, which brought back the pagan ideas of autocratic kings. From the fifteenth century the potentates began to trample under their feet the rights of the people and of the church, and to usurp supreme power. With the rise of Protestantism, the princes enlarged their power, as they assumed to regulate the consciences of their subjects. This absolute rule brought about the French Revolution, which was a reaction against it, and spread all over continental Europe.

The Renaissance and the Reformation Brought Back the Autocracies

Feudal System

The special feature of Europe from the ninth to the fourteenth century was the feudal system. Lands were granted under condition of personal service during war and peace. These were called fiefs. The superior granting the land was called the suzerain, the inferior receiving it, a vassal.

Feudal System Landed Nobility

The nobles exercised an independent authority in their several domains. Fortified in their castles, they controlled their whole neighborhood; they rendered

Order Maintained; Liberty Safeguarded

justice and coined money. This system of local jurisdiction gave the authority to those who were able to maintain order in the country. It also prevented the foundation of an absolute monarchy which would have checked the development of the national character of the different peoples composing the state. But it left it possible for the landlord to oppress his subjects and to attack his neighbors if he chose to do so, which often happened.

Abuses of Power Checked

With our ideals of democracy, we may feel inclined to underestimate that society in which the people had not a full share of its rights. But the people were not oppressed nor overburdened with work and they were protected in their personal rights. That constitution was the outcome of the conditions and of the culture of the times, and probably the most suitable under the circumstances. It was preparing the way for the rule of the people we enjoy today.

The Conditions Were Not Ripe for the Rule of the People

Sector II. Modern Political Arrangements

The Renaissance weakened the medieval constitution and the Reformation overthrew it.

The Papal power of arbitration was lost. The people endeavored to establish a new power of protection for the weak nations, but were not fully able to do so. The system of balance of powers grew up by which the main states of Europe combined to prevent any one from overpowering the others. But that system finally rested on brute force and some potentates attempted to overthrow it.

Efforts to Establish New Peace Systems

During the present terrible conflict Pope Benedict XV and President Wilson watched every opportunity to relieve the sufferings of the war, and to help the prisoners and the women and children. They sought to formulate peace proposals, which substantially coincided. But they

failed. It is in such desperate struggles that the benefits which an arbitration power can bestow upon mankind are fully appreciated. It was then that President Wilson proposed a League of Nations to stop wars in the world.

Autocratic Monarchs Centralize Powers and Attack Their Neighbors

When the Christian spirit declined, at the time of the Renaissance, the kings commenced to claim and to exercise the absolute power of the pagan emperors, and the religious wars of the reformation gave them a chance to enforce such claims and to rule the souls as well as the bodies of their subjects. After centralizing in their grasp all the powers of their country, they threw covetous eyes upon adjoining lands and endeavored to crush their weak neighbors under their yoke. A system of balance of power was then devised by which the nations combined in such groups as to secure their safety against ambitious potentates that fought for the empire of the world. For the last four centuries they have succeeded in frustrating the imperialistic schemes of the Napoleons and the Williams that threatened the liberty of mankind.

System of Balance of Power

Must Down the Predatory Spirit

Although the autocratic power that tore up treaties and broke every international law has been beaten and crushed, its predatory spirit is not entirely extinguished; it will take generations to live it down, and the liberal powers that succeeded in breaking the ring they were forging around the other people, will have to remain united and armed, until these maddened warriors have consented to regard the rights of others to be as sacred as their own.

League of Nations

There was proposed a League of Nations for the maintenance of peace. It was Wilson who formulated and negotiated that progressive international arrangement.

The system proposed is altruistic and may be prema-

Seems Premature

ture. Great opposition has been developed in the United States against certain of its stipulations. It was not expected that such a far-reaching system would work at once; but it will come through some time.

But May Be Insufficient for Modern Civilization

Some Federation Necessary

Far from being too idealistic, the Wilsonian plan may not go far enough on account of the new inventions which favor the ways of communication, multiply the means of conquest and destruction, create new needs of society and offer new comforts of life for all the children of men. Not only a *League* but a *Federation* of nations will be required to satisfy the aspirations and to conjure the perils of nations ald and new; ancient and newborn; which now claim their place under the sun and which need the products and the trade of each other. In 1919 the writer made a tour through little Belgium and neighboring states, harassed through custom annoyances and boundary delays, and also a tour through the United States from ocean to ocean, unhampered by any obstacle; and is convinced more than ever of the advantages of political union and of its necessity in modern life. A federation may be far off but it is possible.

Unification the Aim of Several Systems

Universal domination was the dream of the Napoleons and the Williams; universal graft and tyranny is the scheme of the Bolsheviki for their own class. Why could not the sane and just men and nations form a universal or at least continental federation to protect every right?

What interest have we in Europe? Why should we espouse her troubles?

Our Interest in Europe

First, Europe is the land of our forefathers and deserves our sympathy. The United States is a new Europe, free and peaceful. She has solved the problems of the old world. Secondly, Europe has helped us in our greatest needs; in the very foundation of our liberties. The Pilgrim Fathers brought self-government in the Mayflower. Lafayette, the friend of Washington, helped him to win our independence.

PART I

500 YEARS OF TRIBAL LIFE

PANORAMA

Nomadic Life of Tribes

In the fifth century of Our Lord an irresistible flood of Barbarians broke loose over Europe. Warded off westward by the empire of Constantinople, they overwhelmed the empire of Rome and divided its fair provinces.

Barbarians Take Empire

There set in, all over Europe, a general migration movement which lasted for centuries. Six German tribes conquered the Roman Empire. The remaining Germans advanced to the Rhine and Danube countries, which the conquerors of the empire had vacated. The Slavs moved into the former domains of the Germans and reached the Elbe. The Mongolians took their place and reached the Black Sea. These tribes fought over these territories for five centuries.

Westward Movement in Europe

The powers that survived the barbarian flood, and became the instruments of reconstruction, were the Catholic Church, the Greek and the Frankish Empires and the Irish Nation. Their activity and influence will be explained in the account of the various institutions and nations throughout the work.

Few Surviving Powers

The wild forces were so strong that it took five centuries to tame them.

SECTION I
Cataclysm

THE FALL OF THE ANCIENT ORDER

"Pax Romana" Had Given Modern Comfort

The Roman Empire had established peace and security throughout the length and breadth of the Mediterranean world, and it maintained during five centuries a wealth and comfort as great as what we enjoy in our own days, and that in face of barbarian populations that surrounded and coveted its flourishing provinces. Imperial Rome with her sister cities were like citadels of strength and culture in the different parts of its domains. Its legions stationed on every point of danger were overawing the enemies and keeping them far away.

Empire Like the Sun of the Firmament

The Empire appeared to the ancient world as the sun appears in the firmament. It seemed as necessary for the maintenance of life and civilization as the star of day is necessary for the maintenance of life and light on the earth.

Eclipse of Civilization for Five Centuries

When the Empire was overthrown, there was an eclipse of civilization that lasted for five centuries. A flood of barbarians overwhelmed the magnificent provinces of the ancient Empire and turned them into whirlpools of ever-shifting and ever-contending nations where nothing permanent could be established. There elapsed 500 years of nomadism or warfare, before the last barbarians were settled down and compelled to respect the boundaries of their neighbors.

SECTION II
Nomadism and Vandalism

NEW RACES

Europe a Whirlpool of Nations

After the fall of the Roman Empire, Europe became for centuries a whirlpool of ever-shifting and contending

peoples, where nothing solid and permanent could be established. In the fourth and fifth centuries there took place the migrations of the barbarian tribes, and hardly had they settled down (A.D. 814) when the inroads of still fiercer savages began, which lasted for two more centuries.

As final outcome of those migrations, the principal races settled in Continental Europe were of Latin and French, Teutonic, Slavic and Mongolic stock. Generally speaking, the French element occupied the west; the Teutonic, the Rhine and Elbe basins, and the upper basin of the Danube; and the Slavonic and Finnish elements, the Oder, Vistula and Danube regions and most of Russia.

Definite Sites of Main Races

The differences of races and languages are natural foundations for differentiation in nationalities. They are permanent features that will cling to a people and always return when fought or oppressed; but unity of race or language is not necessary for the welfare of the people. For the mixture of races makes progressive nations such as the Swiss, the Belgians and the Americans. But the despotism of race over race, tyrants over people, undermines society, and prepares a reaction that is bound to destroy despotism and autocracy. The rule of enlightened powers over countries that have not emerged from barbarism, or are plunged in anarchy, is neither injustice nor enslavement, but a help, and a preparation for self-government.

Races Lead to Nationalities

Mixtures, However, Are Advantageous

Foreign Powers May Be Uplifting

THE MIGRATION AND WARFARE OF TRIBES

In 376 A.D. the Huns of Mongolia made their appearance in Europe and, like an irresistible wave, pushed the other wild tribes westward. Twenty years later the Roman Empire was split into the Greek Empire of the

Huns Press Slavs and Teutons, Who Ravage the Western Empire

East and the Latin Empire of the West. It was the policy of the Eastern Emperors to ward off the migratory barbarians from the East to the West. The Slavs were driven upon Germany and a deluge of Germans was thrown over the boundaries of the Latin Empire.

Slavic populations were driven by the Huns upon Eastern Germany as far as the basin of the Elbe and the Adriatic Sea. That unsettled German tribes and drove some of them upon the Roman Empire and provoked its overthrow.

Gaul was over-run by a swarm of Vandals, Suevi and Burgundians. Italy was laid waste by several hordes of savages, amongst whom the Visigoths were the most terrible. Their King Alaric was bent on capturing Rome, and beseiged her three times. The first two times he spared her, but he exacted such heavy ransoms that the Romans could not find money to pay it without melting down the golden statues of their ancient gods. The third time he demanded such an enormous sum that it could not be paid at all, and so he captured the queen of the nations, Rome, and plundered her for three days (A.D. 410).

Alaric Plunders Rome

A quarter of a century later Attila, "The Scourge of God," as he called himself, united the Huns into one kingdom and wasted the northern countries of Europe. In the year 451 he set out with 700,000 men to destroy Rome. The frightened population of northern Italy fled into the islands of the Adriatic Sea, where they laid the foundation of Venice. Rome trembled before this destroyer of nations. But the undaunted Pope Leo the Great went out to him in his Pontifical robes as the ambassador of God, and ordered him to return, whereupon the fierce conqueror quitted Italy. The following year he died suddenly; his sons were slain by the Gepidae, and his hordes retired towards the Black Sea. The Huns

Attila Warded Off by Leo the Great

disappeared from history leaving nothing behind themselves but a name synonymous with waste, plunder and slaughter.

Genseric Plunders Rome

The year 455, Genseric, king of the Vandals, came with an immense fleet to destroy the city of the Caesars. Again Pope Leo went out with a procession of his clergy. He obtained the life of the people and the preservation of the monuments; but the city was plundered for a fortnight.

Roman Provinces Finally Conquered and Settled by Teutonic Tribes

In 476 the Latin Empire was annihilated, and its rich provinces became the prey of the German tribes. Great Britain was conquered by the Anglo-Saxons, Gaul by the Franks and the Burgundians, Spain by the Visigoths and the Suevi, Italy by the Ostrogoths and the Lombards, and Africa by the Vandals.

Fights of Tribes

The new masters of continental Europe were wild tribes that fought among themselves for the possession of the best countries. They remained in their tribal organization five-hundred years longer, warring among themselves and invading the neighboring countries. The Slavs were roaming in the vast plains of Russia.

Germans Slavs Nomads

Teutonic and Slavonic Tribes Dispute Eastern Germany

Six German tribes rushed into the Roman empire and the others went toward the Rhine; the Slavs advanced into the eastern territory of ancient Germany as far as the Elbe river and the Adriatic Sea and settled therein. Hence started a relentless struggle between the Germans and the Slavs, the first trying to reconquer their ancient domain; the latter endeavoring to keep it. Behind the Slavs dwelt the Finns, a Mongolic race that also pushed westward and southward and conquered Slavonic lands; but they were partly absorbed by the Slavs and thus some may be considered as mixed Slavs.

Invading Finns Partly Absorbed by Slavs

Destructive Nomads

During several centuries the Germans and Slavs formed no constructive nor beneficent element in Europe; they were rather a destructive force always at war, among themselves or against established order.

Deluge of Barbarians

As the great deluge of old swept over the face of the earth and destroyed everything in its passage, so did the barbarian hordes sweep over Europe and level everything in their mad course. Farms were devastated, castles overthrown, and towns and cities destroyed. The terrified people were overwhelmed by the mighty influx of savages, or fled into the hollows of the rocks or the wilds of the woods. To the west all human institutions were submerged. Just as in the Scriptural narrative, Noah's ark alone escaped the general cataclysm, so now there was but one institution that survived the fury of the barbarian deluge. It was the Catholic Church who stopped the fierce tribesmen in their ravages. She effectually converted them, and transformed them into new men.

In Which Church Alone Survives

FIRST EFFORTS AT RECONSTRUCTION

Wild Nomads Tamed by Christianity

The nomadic habits and independent nature of the barbarians were diametrically opposed to civilization and religion. Hunting and fighting were their pastime, their pleasure and their glory. However, the Church of Christ tamed their wild nature. Within two centuries she had won the tribes settled in the old empire; and during the two following centuries she converted the Germans on their native soil.

THE INROADS OF NEW BARBARIANS

Hardly had the wild masters of Europe settled down, when new and fiercer barbarians invaded the continent from the north, the south and the east.

The Northmen were Teutonic tribes living in frozen Scandinavia; and they were as savage as the wild ele-

ments of their native country. Starting from their dense forests and their stormy seas, they were constantly traversing the waters in their little ships to plunder the coasts and valleys of Northern and Western Europe. They were as innumerable as the swarms of locusts; their light craft often covered the rivers for miles. They destroyed everything in their passage. Their depredations were carried on unremittingly until their conversion in the tenth century. In 911, Rollo, one of their chiefs, obtained Normandy in France, a century later, the Normans conquered England and Southern Italy.

Mongolians Avars Bulgars

Finnish tribes invaded the Danubian countries and established mighty empires, to-wit:—the Avars, 546-660; the Bulgars, 660-1018 and the Magyars, 892-1000. The Avars disappeared from history. The Bulgars established powerful kingdoms and became mixed with the Slavs. But the Serbs resisted them and maintained a purely Slavic empire till 1458.

Hungarians Ravage the Lands

The Hungarians were a Mongoloid tribe from the North of Europe. Called by the Emperors of Greece and of Germany to assist them against other barbarians, they conquered Pannonia, which has since been called Hungary; and thence they made incursions into many lands of Western Europe. They were stopped by the victory of Otto the Great, at the Lech (955) and converted to Catholicity under their King, St. Stephen, in 1000 A. D.

There was still a greater scourge in the Mediterranean Sea, to-wit: — the Mohammedan plunderers who are known as Saracens and make its islands and coasts nests of pirates.

Mohammedan Pirates Ruin Mediterranean Coasts

In Italy they ruined the growing crops and burned the rising towns. Their course could be traced by the flames and smoke arising from the burning places. The

Popes Leo IV, John X and Benedict VIII made a valiant stand against the cruel plunderers. The Norman Robert Guiscard expelled them from Southern Italy a little before the reign of Gregory VII. However, the Mussulmans continued to molest the Christians for five centuries more, attacking them at all points of the Mediterranean, from Palestine to Spain. This tremendous war will be considered in full later on.

People Call for Relief

The invasions were so terrible that the people prayed in their litanies: "From the fury of the Normans deliver us, O Lord." The harm done by the barbarians was so appalling and so general that some historians have styled this epoch the "Iron Age."

Prolonged Disturbances in the East

While the European society was reorganizing in the west under the leadership of the Frankish monarchy and the Roman Pontificate, there continued to be irruptions of hordes of Asiatic barbarians who overturned everything in their passage and kept the east in perpetual turmoil.

Slavs Pushed by Mongolians

First the Slavs were continually harassed by the Mongolians and driven from the fields they were commencing to improve and to cultivate. Then the Mongolians themselves were harassed by wilder Mongols from the east who overturned any beginning they had made so that the country remained wild and desert.

More Centuries Before East Was Settled Down

In the Northeast it took more centuries before the peoples were settled down. The country being devoid of natural defences, remained open to the wandering elements of the eastern expanse of Eurasia. The protecting powers of the west; to wit:—the Empire and the Papacy hardly reached those distant regions which moreover were cut off from the center of Christianity

by the Russian schism. The migrations lasted two centuries more in the east. We may broadly say that Eastern Europe was not fully settled and fixed before the first millenium of Christianity had elapsed.

Middle of the Ninth Century

Epoch of Differentiation

It was about the middle of the ninth century that the different nations of continental Europe began to diversify and individualize themselves in the east as well as in the west. Before that time they were tribes of the Slavic, Finnic or Germanic stocks and associated and separated themselves for a time, but after that epoch they started their individual life never to be united again in one undistinguishable mass.

Five-Hundred Years of Reconstruction

In general five centuries elapsed in Europe after the Roman civilization had been destroyed, before a new world was organized on a solid basis of culture and peace; which has now lasted for a thousand years. Except among the Franks there was little else but warfare; the story of which is sufficiently told by giving the durations of the barbarous powers that arose above the others. A fair sketch is given of the Frankish monarchy, which was the first to emerge from barbarism and became a model for the other new nations and a rampart of defense against the irredeemable barbarians of Islam.

SECTION III

Reconstruction Forces

The Church

Moral Power of the Church

The powers that survived the barbarian flood and became instruments of reconstruction, were the Catholic Church, the Greek and the Frankish Empires and the Irish Nation. The great moral power of reconstruction was the Catholic Church, which was animated with the spirit of Christ and which had absorbed the practical spirit of ancient Rome and used it for the civilization of the rude lords of new Europe. The Papacy was the institution that worked most powerfully to revive the ancient civilization. She found her most efficacious helpers in the Franks and the Celts.

The Franks

Gaul or France Active in the Reorganization of Europe

Among the nations that conquered the Roman empire there was one that took up the spirit of ancient Rome, to-wit: The Frankish nation that soon blended with the advanced people of Gaul, and constituted as it were a new Rome in the midst of a Barbarian world, she took the most active part in the reorganization of the new Europe.

Reconstruction by Franks

In the west the Franks were the first to emerge from barbarism and became the leaders of the other German tribes whom they compelled to respect the rights of men and the laws of nations. They erected an empire that united the Germans for a time and compelled them to keep peace and order. The empire fell, it is true; it was restored by energetic German kings and became the bond of union of the Germanic world.

That empire was instrumental in keeping down the

wild elements that stormed in Europe. Gradually a new family of nations grew up; a new international constitution was evolved in which the laws of nations were clearly defined. The Empire was there to enforce those laws and to protect the weak against the strongest potentates that trampled the laws under their feet.

Constitution of Family of Nations

The first German nation of continental Europe to emerge from barbarism was the Frankish people, who were the first to fully embrace Christianity, which leavened their wild nature. In 491 Clovis was baptized with his whole army. The Franks became the leaders of the Germanic nations and the defenders of Europe against the southern Barbarians, the Mohammedan Arabs and Moors—whom Charles Martel crushed at Chalons sur Marne.

Franks First to Emerge

Defend Europe

The Frankish people after entering the Church became the leaders of the Teutonic race. Charlemagne (A.D. 768-814) united and organized the German nations, and gave an immense impulse to civilization. But his empire was divided after his death, and new barbarians came and to a great extent destroyed his work.

Teutons Led by Franks and United by Charlemagne

In 843 the empire of Charlemagne was temporarily dismembered in France, Italy with Lotharingia and Germany. In 887 it was permanently divided into half a dozen of states. Many new states arose, amid warfare and anarchy. In 962, Otto I restored order in Germany and Italy, and was crowned as emperor of the Roman Empire of the German nations by the Pope of Rome.

Otto I Restores Empire in Germany

It was a center of union and power that lasted for about a thousand years and in middle Europe served as a rampart of the world against the Turks and the Mongols.

In the west, France and Spain remained the bulwark of Europe against the Mohammedans.

The Celts

Celts Northern Europe

For a thousand years, 1400-400 B. C., the Celts had the empire or hegemony of Central Europe from the Danube to the Atlantic Ocean. They mingled with the Iberians. They were pushed by the Germans into Gaul, whence many migrated to the British Isles. Some remained in their tribal organizations for a thousand years longer, warring among themselves and invading the neighboring countries.

Gauls and Britons Romanized

The Celts of Gaul and Britain were conquered by the Romans and became active and valuable citizens of the Great Empire of antiquity. However, Rome herself was submerged under the irresistible waves of the migration of the German nations, who themselves were pushed westward by the Slavs and the Mongols of the East.

Gaels Free

The Celts of Ireland had been strong enough to defend themselves against the great empire of Rome, and the overwhelming deluge of Barbarians. They had pro-

Original Civilization

duced an original and independent civilization of a high degree. Their island was like an oasis of religion and learning in the West. It became the torch of civilization for the barbarian masters of New Europe.

From her little corner, lost in the waters of northwestern Europe, Ireland sent out bands of apostles and doctors that converted the pagan lords of Europe and thus started the new culture we now enjoy.

THE BYZANTINES

Eastern Empire Spared

In the East the Empire of Constantinople survived the barbarian flood and maintained itself for a thousand years in the impregnable fortress on the Bosporus. Constantinople could have been the greatest power of the

No Factor in Rebuilding

times in reconstruction and civilization; but she took little part in the upbuilding of new Europe, and the civilization

of the barbarians that filled it. She contented herself with repelling the inroads of the Barbarians who attacked her not only from Europe but also from Asia. If she had attacked the invaders in their own haunts or at least established along her frontiers such strong lines of fortifications that no enemy could pass, she might have commanded and civilized the barbarians, but she did no more than to repel the enemies who assailed her walls. Her services to Christendom as a rampart of civilization for a thousand years are very great; but they would have been immensely greater if she had thrown herself in the work of civilizing the barbarian neighbors, and thus created a Christian world around herself.

No Fighting Force

Simply a Rampart

The eastern empire was neither a growing nor an aggressive power who forced the Barbarians to settle down and stop invading the civilized countries and who compelled them to receive the missionaries as Charlemagne did with the Saxons. *Byzantium* bought off the threatening Bulgars, Avars and Goths. It sent no missionaries to Russia before the first millenium of Christianity had passed. As to the threatening savages of the south—the Mohammedans—it hardly ever took the offensive against them—and contented itself with warding them off for a time. If it had carried the war into the enemy's country it might have overcome the Barbarians, as well as Charlemagne did conquer the Saxons. In the end the magnificent empire was overthrown by the southern barbarians. It had been only a passive power of Europe with regard to the rebuilding of the same.

No Active Agent in the Rebuilding of Europe

Reconstruction Work of the Franks

Monograph.

THE FRANKS: THE LEADERS OF THE TEUTONS

Franks in Contact With Rome

Most of the history of continental Europe from the fall of the old Roman Empire of the West to the restoration of a new one by Charlemagne may be told in the history of the Franks. They are the one nation that grew on the confines of the Roman empire along the right side of the Rhine from the Main river to the sea, and that occupied the left side and all of Belgium even before the fall of the Empire. They had adopted the policies and strategies of the Empire. Three Franks had been proclaimed emperors of Rome. By embracing Christianity the Franks added a new element of culture and progress.

Re-establish the Western Empire

They had become similar to the Celts of Gaul, whom they conquered and they could at once amalgamate themselves with those Latinized Gauls—thus they represented in themselves a revival of the ancient civilization and they became the Neo-Latins of the North.

The Franks became the leaders of continental Europe for three centuries; they laid the foundation of a new Empire of the west, which was gloriously established by Charlemagne who was consecrated the first Emperor by the Chief of Christendom; after a century and a half of vicissitudes it was finally established in the eastern part of the domains—Germany—while the western part was held by the kingdom of France; the equal in power and influence to the Empire itself. There were a number of secondary powers that arose between and around those main realms, which maintained and led their own national

life and never amalgamated with the main powers. There were also a great number of quasi-independent principalities who also preserved their individual existence and characteristics.

This organization was due as much to the genius of the Franks as to the policy of the Church.

Defenders of Civilization and Religion

Not only were the Franks the leaders in the early reconstruction of Europe, but they were also its defenders. They helped the Romans to check the invading German tribes, and to crush the triumphant hordes of the Huns at Chalons sur Marne.

When the Mohammedan Moors had passed over the prostrate Westgoth of Spain and rushed into Gaul, the Franks stopped their triumphant march at Poiters.

No Immediate Culture But Gradual

This does not imply that the Franks lost their wild instincts and became meek and cultured at once. It took centuries to blot out barbarism. But it simply means that they established orderly governments and became the champions of justice and religion.

Two Dynasties

Two dynasties ruled the Franks—the Merovingian 418-752 and the Carolingian 752-843. When the descendants of Clovis gave themselves over to indolence and delivered the government to their ministers, called the Mayors of the palace, the Carolingians arose to power, and became the Monarchs of France. The deeds of a prominent prince of each dynasty are described.

Chronicles.

I. MEROVINGIAN DYNASTY, 418-752

Four Parts Twice Reunited

Clovis, 481-511=Clothildis conquers the Roman Syagrius at Soissons, the Allemanni at Tolbiae, and the Visigoths at Vouillé; he destroys the other Frankish princes. His four sons subdue Thuringians, Burgundians and Septimania, and fight the Ostrogoths and the Greeks in Italy. Four kingdoms: Metz, Paris, Orleans, Soissons. The youngest Clotaire I unites monarchy, 558-561.

Four parts; three after death of one son: Austrasia, Neustria, Burgundy. Wars between Austrasia (East France) under Sigebert=Brunehilde, and Neustria (West France), under Chilperic =Galswintha. The latter is killed for Frédégonde whose son Clotaire II kills also Brunehilde by tying her to a horsetail. France reunited under Clotaire II and Dagobert, 613-638. **Remnants of Barbarism**

Sluggard King Under the Carolingian Mayors of the Palace

Pepin II., 684, mayor of Austrasia opposed by the other realms gains at Testri; and is recognized as Maire in all the states. **Ministers Govern**

Charles Martel: 714, subdues the Aquitanians, Allemanni, and Bavarians, East Friesians and imposes tribute to the Saxons—beats the Mohammedans at Poitiers, 732.

Pepin the Short, 741—raises and confines Childeric the last Merovingian king. Elected, he is consecrated king by St. Boniface in 752, and later by the Pope himself.

II. CAROLINGIAN DYNASTY, 752-843

Pepin twice conquers the Lombards and gives patrimony of St. Peter to the Popes, 754.

Charlemagne, 768-814, conquers Lombardy, 800, crowned Emperor of the west, wages six wars against Pagan Saxons, (Wittekind), conquers the league of the Bavarians under Thassilo, Slavs, Greeks and Avari among whom he establishes the East Mark (Austria). He drives the Arabs beyond the Ebro. He enacts laws in the Mayfields (Capitularii) sends commissioners to hear complaints and has school in his palace (Alcuin). **Emperor** **Warrior Lawgiver**

Louis the Mild, 814-840, fights and evangelizes the Barbarians. 817, Partition between four sons; three civil wars, deposition but restoration of Louis the Mild. **Political Partitions**

Lothaire I. Emperor, attacking his brothers, is defeated at Fontenay. 843, treaty of Verdun, first dismemberment in three parts. Second dismemberment in 887, in six kingdoms mostly under Carolingian princes; Provence alone being excepted; to-wit: Germany, Italy, two Burgundys, France and Lotharingia.

On account of the dynastic arrangement of the Merovingians, their domain was divided and subdivided and their power weakened.

The unity of the Frankish power after the death of Clovis was sometimes monarchical: three times one king reunited all the Kingdoms; sometimes only national, when several brothers **National Unity Exposed**

distributed kingdoms among themselves. They even divided it eight times in 150 years.

Maintained

The union was always maintained by the co-operation of the Frankish kings in their foreign relations, and by the action of the Catholic Church, meeting in national councils.

SOME LEADING PERSONAGES

CLOVIS

Monograph.

Franks United

The Franks were divided in riparian or River Franks (Rhine) and salic or Sea (North Sea) Franks.

Clovis, leader of the Salic Franks, was only one of the Frankish kings; but he kills in battle or overthrows the other kings and makes himself sole ruler of the Franks, and thus unites all the Franks in one realm.

481-511, Clovis or Chlodwig was only 16 years old but he was a hero: in the battle of Poiters, 486, he conquers Syagrius the last Roman governor in Gaul, whose rule extended from the Seine to the Garonne basin.

Conquest of Roman Gaul

In 493 Clovis had married the Catholic Princess Clotilde of Burgundy. Called by the Riparian King of Cologne, against the Allemanni, he gave battle to them (at Tolbiac). When his soldiers were giving way, he vowed to adore the God of Clotilde if He gave him the victory. He beat his enemies, and the Rhine became a Frankish river. As a result of this battle he was baptized by St. Remi and 3,000 nobles with him. He was the first Teutonic King to accept the Catholic faith. Hence, France is called the eldest Daughter of the Church. St. Eleutherius baptized 11,000 men.

Allemanni

After Victory of Tolbiac Baptism of 3,000 Officers

Fusion Between the Franks and the Catholic Gauls

That solemn conversion to the Catholic faith, the one professed by the Gaulic population, produced a powerful sensation. The fusion between the Gauls and the Franks became possible because both had the same Faith.

STATUE OF [illegible]
(Formerly in the Church of Notre-D[illegible]

CLOVIS AND CLOTILDA
THE FOUNDERS OF THE FRANKISH EMPIRE
481-511

CHARLEMAGNE

Contrast with Goths

But the Goths, who were fanatical Arians, never were accepted by the conquered people and never formed one nation with them and they were overthrown and their name disappeared from history. The Gallo-Romans gladly rallied to the Catholic King. With the object of unifying Gaul, Clovis attacked the Arian kings of the Burgundians and the Westgoths, and said: "It pains me that these Arians occupy a part of Gaul; let us march against them and with the help of God, reduce all the land." He defeated the Burgundians and wrecked their territory (500). He defeated the Westgoths at the bloody battle of Vouille on a branch of the Vienne river, conquered as far as the Pyrenees, but he was prevented by the Eastgoths from driving the Westgoths from Septimania, the seacoast of the Gulf of Lyons, stretching from the Rhone to the Pyrenees.

Reduces the Arians, Burgundians, the Westgoths

Subdues Aquitaine

Conciliating Policy

The Franks leave to the people their property, faith, language and legislation and closely ally themselves to the Catholic faith.

CHARLEMAGNE

Strong Temperate

Character. Charlemagne was tall and robust, commanding in face and figure, an untiring worker, temperate in food and still more in drink; cheerful in temper, steadfast and terrible in battle; gentle, condescending and faithful to his friends. His faculties were harmoniously developed. He was equally great as a conqueror and a lawyer, a social organizer and a promoter of religion and culture. He loved power for the good it enabled him to do, but he was free from personal ambition. The glittering and easy prize of the eastern empire was no temptation to him. He preferred to hammer away at the Saxons, Saracens, Avars in the service of Christ and his church and never unsheathed the sword in a lower cause.

Balanced

High-minded

Beneficent Empire

Descendant of the Defenders of Christendom

Greatness is embodied in the very name of Charlemagne—Magnus, great, being attached to it and forming one word with it. Charlemagne was the flower and the glory of the Carolingian dynasty. He was the worthy successor of Charles Martel who had saved Christendom from Mohammedanism and of Pepin the Short who had defended the church against the encroachment of the Langobardians and he united the German nations under one scepter, thus finishing the work of his illustrious predecessors. But he had no successors able to take up and carry on his great task, and the glory of the house ended with him, and his dynasty disappeared within a century.

He Unites the German Nations Under One Empire

Repaired Youthful Weakness

His youth was not without faults, for he fell in the disorders of the times and had some illegitimate children; he even was inveigled by Desiderius, king of the Lombards, to divorce his legitimate wife, a Frankish princess, in order to marry his daughter Desiderata, whom, however, he repudiated the following year. But later he changed his ways and led a holy life. He married Frankish, Alleman, Swabian princesses, of whom he had seven children. The sons of the Alleman Hildegarde were declared his legitimate successors, to-wit:—Charles, Pepin and Louis, and he associated them in his reign to train them for the government of the great empire he had built up; but the two former died before their father, and the latter, Louis, lacked the energy necessary to rule over that vast and turbulent empire. Louis' sons carried on a series of civil wars during his life.

Marries Wives of Different Races

Weakling Left

Charles a Born Ruler Perfected by Virtue

Seldom has the world seen a king more fitted by nature and virtue for ruling men, and seldom has a born ruler found similar opportunities to display such powers and qualities. To him Providence had assigned the task

His Work Welds the Migrated Nations Together

of consolidating the best results of the migration of the nations, and of welding many discordant elements into a strong Christian commonwealth.

Charles had inherited from Pepin, his father, and Charles Martel, his grandfather, the duty of protecting Catholic Europe from the Saracens, the Slavs and the Saxons, to push the outer defenses of Christendom into territories still sunk in paganism and savagery, to promote the conversion of the new subjects whom he might subdue, and to continue the temporal protectorate over the church and the Holy See, which the Franks had assumed under Pepin the Short. His most difficult task was the conquest of the Saxons.

Summary of Deeds

Fifty-Three Expeditions

In the course of fifty-three military expeditions Charles the Great firmly established his power over Southern Gaul and Celtic Brittany, reached Sicily, Corsica and the Balearic Islands in his warfare against the Arab pirates of Africa, gained the countries around the head of the Adriatic from the Eastern Empire, secured the independence of Venice by a treaty with Constantinople, destroyed the kingdom of the Avars, created a border-belt of Slavonic nations, more or less dependent upon the Franks, on the eastern front from the Baltic to the Adriatic, and united within the Eider the Ebro, the Garigliano and the Raah all the German nations that had remained in their ancient seats, with all the Teutonic tribes on the Continent that had settled on Roman soil, into one Frankish monarchy; yet what made him still greater was that he labored untiringly every year of his reign with resolution and deliberate purpose for the benefit of all classes in his vast dominions.

Subdues Aquitanians

Reaches Greeks

Reduces Slavs

Unites All the German Nations

He attacked the Lombard King Desiderius, 773-787, who was conspiring with his enemies, and was molesting

Langobards

the Pope of Rome, and he conquered Langobardia and annexed it to France 787. He warred with the Saxons for twenty years and ten years longer with the Danes, among whom he advanced as far as the Eider. He reduced Thassilo, Duke of Bavaria, who had revolted and had enlisted the neighboring princes in his revolt, and he abolished the Dukedom, and divided it into counties.

Danes

Avars

The Avars had aided the enemies of Charles who attacked them from 791-799 and established the Avaric Mark, which later became Austria.

Slavs

To secure a boundary line in the rear of the Saxons against the advancing Slavs, who penetrated wherever the shifting of nations offered them a chance, he pushed as far as the Oder, conquered the Slavic tribes of the Elbe and established a Serbian Mark. To complete his work he created a borderbelt of German Margravates among the Slavic tribes to keep the same in awe and prevent further migrations.

Border of Margravates

Expedition into Spain

Charlemagne undertook an expedition into Spain, 778, against Abderrhaman the new Ommiad Caliph. Charles crossed the Pyrenees, subdued the country as far as the Ebro, and received the temporary homage of Moslem Navarese and Basques. A Spanish Mark was established. But on his march back the Basques surprised the rearguard of the Frankish army in the passes of Roncevalles. Here fell the hero Roland, a Frankish Margrave of the Breton coast, celebrated in many medieval romances.

Roland of Roncevalles

WARS WITH THE SAXONS, 772-786

The wars with the Saxons are related in detail in order to show what struggles Charlemagne undertook to tame and settle the Barbaric tribes of his times.

The Saxons were the hereditary foes both of the

Franks and of Christianity. For three hundred years they had defied the power of the Franks and made incursions into their territory. In the Mayfield or general review of the army at Worms, 772, the conquest and conversion of the Saxons was resolved upon as necessary for the safety of the Frankish kingdom. **Antagonism**

Warfare with the Saxons was most difficult on account of the wildness of the country, the bravery of the Saxons and the desperate tenacity with which they clung to their liberty, religion and customary laws.

Compared with the Saxon wars the other expeditions of Charles have the character of episodes. Whilst Charles invaded their territory, built fortresses and manned them with Frankish garrisons, introduced the military and judicial system of the Franks, built churches and founded missionary stations; the Saxons rose as soon as he turned his back upon their country, destroyed his institutions and carried their raids into Frankish territory. Nine times they shook off the foreign yoke and taxed the energy of the inflexible conqueror for twenty years before he had the satisfaction of seeing Saxony submissive and Christian. **The Life Work of Charlemagne** **What He Built Up, They Destroyed** **Rose Nine Times Resisted 20 Years**

The Northalbingians resisted ten years more.

1ST PERIOD. WAR AGAINST SINGLE TRIBES, 772-780

In the summer of 772, Charles undertakes a campaign to punish the invading Saxons and to inspire them with awe. He starts from Worms, storms Fresburg on the Diemal; destroys the Irminsul, a tree or pillar sacred to Odin or Herman near Paderborn and forces the Engrians to give hostages. **Punitive Expedition Against Invaders**

During the Italian campaign, 773-774, Wittekind arouses the Westphalians to revolt. Charles hastens westward, storms the entrenched camp at Sigiburg and **During Italian Campaign Revolt of Wittekind Subdued**

forces the Eastphalians, Engrians and Westphalians to pay homage, to give hostages and not to prevent the preaching of the Gospel. The hostages were educated in Charles' schools. Charlemagne hastens to subdue the revolted Langobardians of Italy; then returns to make a third campaign. His presence cowed the Saxons in submission, only Wittekind refused to submit and fled to the Danes.

The following spring, 777, Charles held a great national diet or Mayfield, of Franks and Saxons, at Paderborn, the heart of the Saxon country.

Revolt After Roncevalles

During the Spanish expedition, the Surprise of Roncevalles was magnified among the Saxons as a disaster. Wittekind caused a general insurrection of the inhabitants and devastated the right bank of the Rhine. They

Subdued

were subdued by the East-Franks and the Allemanni, 781; and by Charles himself who reached the Elbe and

Lands Covered With Forts

punished the rebels. He erected more forts, and organized the country into missionary districts, and imposed tithes to support the church and military service to war against the Slavs.

2ND PERIOD, 782-785

The tithes for the church and the military service made the Saxons rebellious, Wittekind aroused them. Four thousand Franks returning from a campaign against the Serbs were defeated and murdered. Charles

Massacre Retaliated

took terrible reprisals: Four thousand five hundred Saxons declared traitors by their own chiefs, were beheaded on one day at Verdun. Wittekind again aroused the people, 783-785. This severity caused a new war of three years in which for the first time the united Saxon

General Uprising at Osnabruck

strength met Charles in the open field at Osnabruck where he completely routed them. Wittekind maintained

the hopeless struggle for two years more, but finally he lost faith in the power of the gods. He offered peace and asked baptism. With his conversion began the real Christianization of the Saxons.

Wittekind Struggled

Asks Baptism

Local disturbances among the Northern Saxons made Charles undertake another series of expeditions into their country, 793-804. From 796 to 799 the war raged against the Transalbaniens. The peace of Seltz ended the wars.

773-804 Local Expeditions Especially in the North

The internal administration was organized to create order in Saxony. Frankish Vassals were planted in different parts of the country. Saxon nobles were assigned large fiefs in the midst of their kinship and followers.

Vassals to Keep Down the Rebels

Former exceptional laws were replaced by the national customs, codified in the law of the Saxons. The foundation of many bishoprics more than any other measure gave great stability alike to the profession of Christianity and to the political institutions of Charles the Great.

National Customs Restored

The Danes under Gottfried who had constantly aided and abetted the Saxons, were attacked several times, the last time in 810 by Charles himself. They threw up fortifications extending from the Eider to the Baltic Sea, called Dennewirk, 811. But they finally accepted the river Eider as their boundary.

Danes

Conquest Till Eider

A Danish Mark was established in 810. Charles wished to secure the boundary in the rear of the Saxons against the advancing Slavs, who had settled as far as the Elbe basin and even beyond wherever the shifting of nations offered them a chance.

789. He established his power among the Obotrites and the Wilzes, reaching the Oder in parts; in 806 he

Charles Subdues a Line of Slavic Nations

conquered the Sorbs between the Saale and the Elbe; he established the castles of Halle and Magdeburg among them and founded the Sorbian Mark.

Czechs

805. The Carolingians imposed an annual tribute on the Czechs of Bohemia.

Statesmanship

Charlemagne was as great a statesman and an educator as he was a warrior.

Parliaments

Investigations

He promulgated laws to unify the German nations. Every year he held Diets or parliaments, where public questions were discussed. Every year he sent investigators throughout the land to find out the needs and grievances of the people.

Renovation of the Western Empire

The greatest of all the institutions of Charlemagne was the renovation of the Western Empire, which he restored together with the sovereign Pontiff. The year 800, Pope St. Leo III the 99th successor of St. Peter, crowned him the Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire.

Education

Charlemagne revived education in the West. He called the best scholars of his time from Italy, England and Ireland, and became himself their eager pupil. His

School at Palace

palace school was the most famous institution of learning in the West where noble Franks and hostages studied with his own children under his personal supervision.

At Churches

In the episcopal sees and in the monasteries schools were set up, in which rich and poor alike were educated free of expense while the rural clergy were obliged to open schools and to teach gratuitously the children of the poor. Alcuin was the master of Charlemagne, who entertained a long correspondence with him about all subjects. A constellation of scholars were educated in the Charlemagne schools and brightened up the barbaric world.

Charlemagne was a great builder, he erected a magnificent Cathedral at Aachen, and splendid palaces at Aachen, Nimegen and Engelheim; he constructed the bridge over the Rhine at Mainz and the canal joining the Rhine and the Danube.

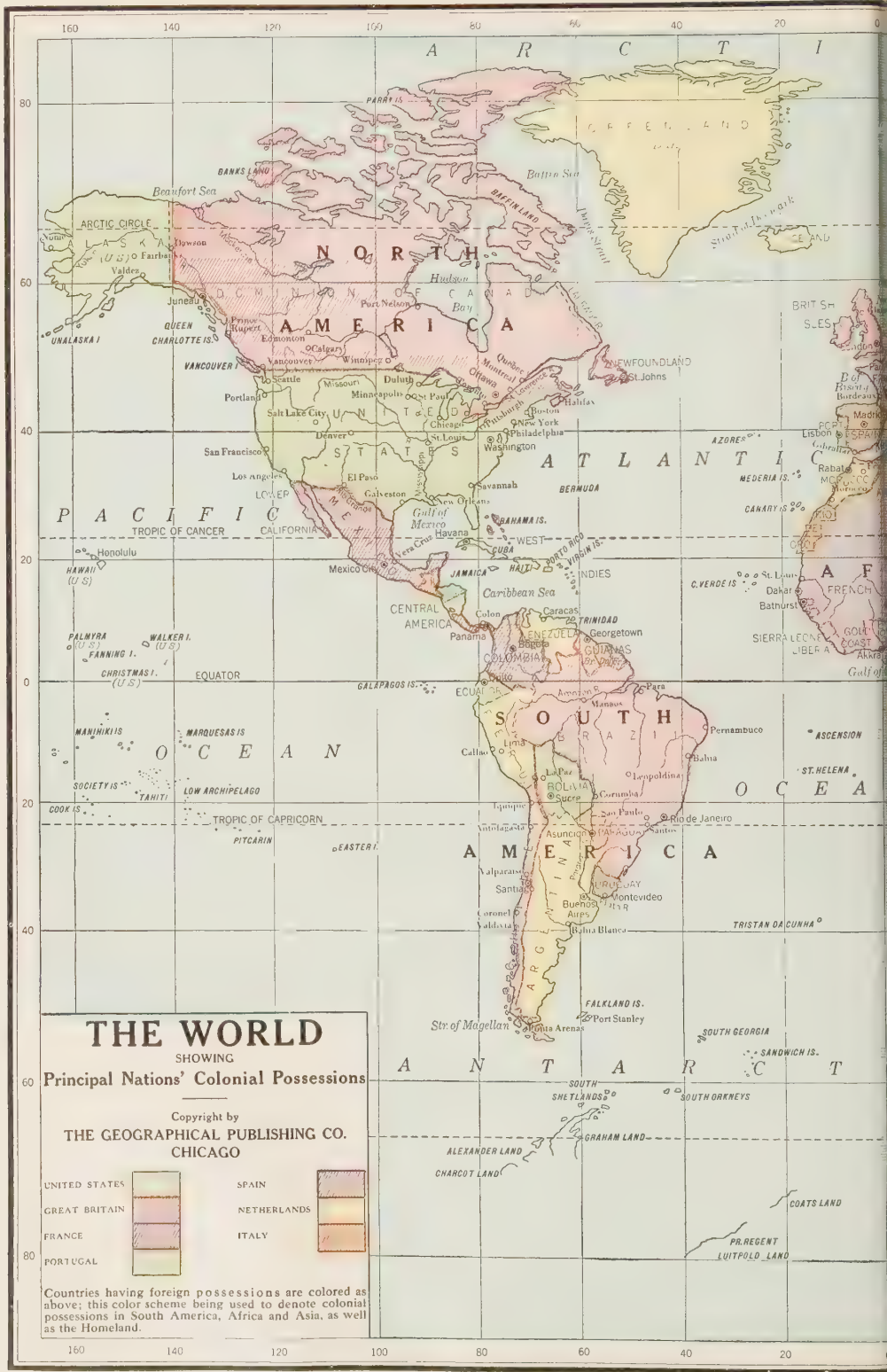
Public Works

Charlemagne was a sincere Christian and zealously promoted religion, he established many bishoprics and monasteries, amply providing for the temporalities of worship.

Promotes Religion

The work of Charlemagne was not lost in the anarchy that followed; his reign erected foundations that were overlaid for a time with ruins, but not destroyed, whereon men continued to build for centuries.

Solid Construction


THE WORLD
SHOWING
Principal Nations' Colonial Possessions
Copyright by
THE GEOGRAPHICAL PUBLISHING CO.
CHICAGO
UNITED STATES
GREAT BRITAIN
FRANCE
PORTUGAL
SPAIN
NETHERLANDS
ITALY
Countries having foreign possessions are colored as above; this color scheme being used to denote colonial possessions in South America, Africa and Asia, as well as the Homeland.
A R C T I
N O R T H
A M E R I C A
P A C I F I C
O C E A N
A T L A N T I C
S O U T H
A M E R I C A
A N T A R C T
Beaufort Sea
Baffin Bay
Hudson Bay
GREENLAND
ICELAND
BANKS LAND
PARRY IS
BAFFIN LAND
ARCTIC CIRCLE
ALASKA (U.S.)
Yukon
Fairbanks
Valdez
Juneau
Prince Rupert
Edmonton
Calgary
Vancouver
Winnipeg
QUEEN CHARLOTTE IS
UNALASKA I
VANCOUVER I
Seattle
Portland
Missouri
Duluth
Minneapolis
St Paul
Salt Lake City
Denver
Chicago
St Louis
San Francisco
Los Angeles
El Paso
Galveston
New Orleans
Gulf of Mexico
Havana
CUBA
HAITI
PORTO RICO
VIRGIN IS.
JAMAICA
Mexico City
Vera Cruz
Caribbean Sea
CENTRAL AMERICA
Colon
Panama
Caracas
TRINIDAD
Georgetown
VENEZUELA
GUIANAS
COLOMBIA
Bogota
Quito
GALAPAGOS IS.
ECUADOR
Amazon R.
Manaos
Para
Pernambuco
Lima
Callao
Bahia
La Paz
Lampoldina
BOLIVIA
Sucre
Corumba
Iquique
San Paulo
Rio de Janeiro
Antofagasta
Asuncion
PARAGUAY
Santos
Valparaiso
Santiago
URUGUAY
Montevideo
Buenos Aires
Coronel
Valdivia
Bahia Blanca
Str. of Magellan
Punta Arenas
Port Stanley
FALKLAND IS.
TRISTAN DA CUNHA
ASCENSION
ST. HELENA
SOUTH GEORGIA
SANDWICH IS.
SOUTH SHETLANDS
SOUTH ORKNEYS
GRAHAM LAND
ALEXANDER LAND
CHARCOT LAND
COATS LAND
PR. REGENT LUITPOLD LAND
TROPIC OF CANCER
TROPIC OF CAPRICORN
EQUATOR
HAWAII (U.S.)
Honolulu
PALMYRA (U.S.)
WALKER I. (U.S.)
FANNING I.
CHRISTMAS I. (U.S.)
MANIHIKI IS
MARQUESAS IS
SOCIETY IS
TAHITI
LOW ARCHIPELAGO
COOK IS
PITCARIN
EASTER I.
NEWFOUNDLAND
St. Johns
Halifax
Boston
New York
Philadelphia
Washington
Ottawa
Montreal
Quebec
Pittsburgh
Chicago
BERMUDA
AZORES
MEDERIA IS.
CANARY IS
C.VERDE IS
Dakar
Bathurst
SIERRA LEONE
LIBERIA
Akra
Lisbon
Madrid
Rabat
BRIT SH ISLES
FRENCH
GOLD COAST
Gulf of
0
20
40
60
80
100
120
140
160

ARCTIC OCEAN
FRANZ JOSEF LAND
NOVA ZEMBLA
Barents Sea
Kara Sea
Nordenskiold Sea
NEW SIBERIA
Alexandrovsk
Archangel
Petrograd
RUSSIA
EUROPEAN
SIBERIA
Tobolsk
Yeniseisk
Pomsk
Omsk
Moscow
Orenburg
Yakutsk
Okhotsk
Sea of Okhotsk
Bering Sea
KAMCHATKA
ALEUTIAN IS.
ARCTIC CIRCLE
Kiev
Odessa
Astrakhan
Caspian Sea
Black Sea
Constantinople
Baku
Tiflis
Khiva
Tashkent
Irkutsk
Baikal
Urga
MONGOLIA
Kobdo
Harbin
Vladivostok
Nikolaievsk
SAKHALIN
KURILE IS.
FAR EASTERN
MANCHURIA
Mukden
CHOSEN
Japan
Sea
Tokyo
Yokohama
Peking
Kiaochow
Seoul
Tientsin
Hankow
Shanghai
CHINESE REPUBLIC
JAPANESE EMPIRE
PACIFIC OCEAN
Smyrna
Aleppo
Damascus
Baghdad
Teheran
Kabul
AFGHANISTAN
Kandahar
PERSIA
Bushire
Kuwait
Lassa
Chungtu
Yunnan
Canton
Hongkong
FORMOSA
BONIN IS. (Jap)
TROPIC OF CANCER
MIDWAY I. (US)
Medina
Mecca
Muscat
Karachi
Delhi
Lucknow
NEPAL
Calcutta
Mandalay
Hanoi
ARABIA
YEMEN
Bombay
Goa (Port.)
Bay of Bengal
Rangoon
SIAM
FRENCH INDO CHINA
South China Sea
Manila
PHILIPPINE ISLANDS (US)
MARIANNE IS. (Jap)
GUAM (US)
WAKE I. (US)
WALKER I. (US)
JAPANESE MANDATE
YAP
CAROLINE IS. (Jap)
MARSHALL IS. (Jap)
GILBERT IS.
HOWLAND I. (US)
BAKER I. (US)
Aden
Arabian Sea
Madras
Bangkok
Saigon
LACCADIVE IS
CEYLON
STRAITS SETTLEMENTS
Singapore
MALDIVE IS
EQUATOR
ABYSSINIA
Abeba
KENIA
Nairobi
Mombasa
Zanzibar
Dares Salaam
TANGANYIKA TERR.
SEYCHELLES
COCOS IS
Padang
BORNEO
CELEBES
NEW GUINEA
BRITISH MANDATE
NEW BRITAIN ARCH
PHOENIX IS.
LAGOON OR ELLICE IS.
TOKELAU (US)
MANUA (US)
SALOMON IS
Batavia
JAVA
TIMOR
Palmerston
Coral Sea
SAMOA IS.
NEW HEBRIDES
FIJI IS.
Townsville
Rockhampton
NEW CALEDONIA
Brisbane
NORFOLK I.
LORD HOWE I.
KERMADEC IS.
Fremantle
Perth
Albany
Adelaide
Sydney
Canberra
Melbourne
Tasman Sea
Auckland
Wellington
Christchurch
NEW ZEALAND
Invercargill
Dunedin
TASMANIA
Hobart
CAMPBELL I.
Madagascar
Tananarivo
MAURITIUS
REUNION
TROPIC OF CAPRICORN
Lourenco Marques
Durban
Elizabeth
INDIAN OCEAN
KERGUELEN
OCEAN
ENDERBY LAND
QUEEN MARY LAND
ADELIE LAND
KING GEORGE V LAND
OATES LAND
BALLENEY IS.
SOUTH VICTORIA LAND
ROSS S.
40
60
80
100
120
140
160
180
0
20
40
60
80

PART II

1000 YEARS OF NATIONAL LIFE

National Life of Peoples

Panorama.

Continental Countries Treated Longer than Maritime Countries

The continental and maritime countries receive a different treatment. The continental countries of Europe played their role mostly in Europe itself, although their influence spread to other continents also. They will be given a complete treatment. The maritime countries of Europe were not principally or solely in relation with the European countries; but they were also in communication with the other parts of the world. Those far away dealings are only mentioned here.

The Maritime Powers

Maritime Nations not Solely in Europe; but Also in Other Parts of the World

The maritime nations of southern Europe were the Italians, the Greeks and the Spaniards. Those of the North are the Celts and Saxons, and the Scandinavians. They have exerted as much influence in other parts of the world, as they have in Europe. Their history belongs partly to other world divisions and therefore the account given of them may be short.

The Continental Powers

Continental Nations

The continental nations of Europe are the French and the Teutons, the Slavs and the Mongolians; the Belgians, the Hollanders, the Swiss, and different Slavic and Mongolian peoples.

Adverse Conditions

Elements of Conflict Retarded Progress

There were many elements of conflict in Europe that retarded its progress; to wit:—the Barbarian nature of its new masters, the continual wars of the feudal lords

and the efforts of the kings to restore the absolute authority of the Pagan rulers. There were wars of succession, especially for the elective office of the empire. There were dynastic wars, such as the one-hundred-years war between England and France. There were religious wars for a millenium between the Mohammedans and the Christians, and for a century between the Protestants and the Catholics. There were racial wars between the Teutons and the Slavs for the last 1500 years.

Political Autonomy

The year 843, the treaty of Verdun made the first delimitation in Europe that remained permanent. It is the initial year that the diverse powers started on their separate careers. For several centuries the governments had enough to do at home without encroaching upon the rights of their subjects, or contemplating the subjection of their neighbors; far from planning the conquest of the world, few dreamed of subjugating any lands of others. The powers of the times, however turbulent, kept their place in the European commonwealth.

Verdun Division Stays

There were six occasions in which the liberty of the nations was threatened by aggressive powers from within: once by the English, twice by the French, twice by Germans and once by Russians. The would-be world conquerors were the Plantagenets, Louis XIV and Napoleon, the Hohenstaufen and the Hohenzollerns, and the Romanoffs. At every assault other European powers coalesced and put down the breakers of the International Order.

There were centuries through which the liberty of Europe was threatened from without by barbarous powers of Asia and Africa, to-wit:—the Mohammedan Arabs and Turks from the south and the Mongolian Pagans from the east. It was a relentless and systematic

Powers Threatening From Inside and Outside Crushed

assault upon Europe that partly succeeded and enslaved many countries for generations.

There arose great powers of defense in the Knightly Orders and the Crusades that kept away the infidels and when the young nations of Europe had attained their full growth they crushed their threatening enemy.

Two Kinds of Powers

Major and Minor Powers

There are four major races that ruled continental Europe, to-wit:—the French and the Teutons, the Slavs and the Mongolians. Besides, there arose a score of other powers either as fiefs of the leading monarchies or as independent states. They had their own national lives and developed special qualities, which contributed to the progress of the world.

No Minor Nations Wiped Out in the West

Maintain Their Liberty

Between France and Germany there arose a number of substantial states that maintained their independence for many centuries, some even until today. They were parts of the erstwhile middle kingdom of Lotharingia lying between Germany and France and for that reason alone they would have had a right to autonomy. It is true they were sometimes incorporated by the larger monarchies, but they would not brook any tyranny and they fought themselves free from the yoke of any autocrats. The love of liberty was the power that united those states in confederations powerful enough to maintain their autonomy. They were the lands of liberty par excellence. Such were the Netherlands and Switzerland. Italy may be counted among the borderlands of France and Germany. In Italy under the very eye of the Pope there arose and flourished over two hundred republics through most of the Middle Ages at a time when in other parts of Europe the people had hardly emerged

Inborn Love of Liberty

Morale of Those States

Italy the Land of Republics

from barbarism and was under the yoke of autocrats. As in ancient ages Greece had been the classic land of liberty and of civilization, so in Christian Europe Italy was the land where men were free and where the arts and sciences flourished as in a garden. The individual character and aptitude of the different nations had a chance to develop themselves without obstacle and without being swayed by the dead level that rules everything in large countries.

Free Development of National Aptitudes

If those people had their autonomy and set up progressive governments, why should they be subject to others now?

Lack of Authority in the East

As to the Slavonic and mixed territories there was rather a lack of central authority, which allowed a great number of quasi-independent principalities to arise around the main Slavic states or even between the very boundaries of those states; that looseness exposed the Slavs to their enemies. In Poland there were powerful quasi-independent houses who often defied the monarchy and finally caused its downfall. In Russia there was hardly any central authority in the beginning of the Middle Ages and in the end the Mongols tyrannized over the country for more than two centuries. When the Asiatics were conquered the Czars established a military despotism that unified the Russians and subjected to their sceptre other Slavs without endowing them with a national unity capable to keep together in any storm that might arise. In fact, the Romanoffs intrigued and fought for Panslavism, not so much for the race, but for their dynasty, and dreamed to make themselves the masters of the other races of the world. Their empire fell to pieces in the tremendous shock of the great war.

Looseness Exposes Slavs to Invaders

SECTION I

Maritime Nations of Southern Europe

ETHNOGRAPHY

The peoples of the Mediterranean peninsulas were not mainly in contact with continental Europe; they were busy with the rest of the Mediterranean world in Africa and Asia; to-wit:—The Arabs and the Moors, the Seljukian and Ottoman Turks. As their history does not solely belong to Europe, it is given rather briefly.

European Contact With the South

The ancient populations had been united in the Roman Empire upon whose ruins new Europe has been built. The Mediterranean natives were aborigines who were related to the Phoenicians and the Berbers; to wit:—The Pelasgians and the Etruscans, the Iberians, the Basques and the Sequanians. Most of them were quite advanced in civilization when the Aryan Greeks, Italiotes and Celts invaded their countries, who in the course of centuries composed the great Greek and Roman populations and built up that wonderful civilization of the Classic world.

Natives

Invaders Old

Recent

New settlers came, to-wit: the Westgoths in Spain, the Eastgoths and Lombards in Italy, the Slavs in the Balkans. There also came fierce Mohammedan intruders namely the Moors and Arabs in Spain, the Saracens in Italy and the Turks in the Balkans.

Italy Plays Many Roles

Italy played more than one role in the history of present Europe. As the seat of the Catholic Church it was the first civilizer of the new nations of Europe and

the chief promoter of the Crusades that stemmed and finally stopped the Mohammedan deluge. As the center of the ancient culture it preserved the same the longest in the West and revived it the earliest through the Renaissance. As part of the Roman Empire of the German nations it had a decided influence in the life of the whole continent, and was often mixed up with its struggles and its advances.

Spain

It was Spain and Greece that directly struggled for centuries against these implacable foes of Christendom. Through a warfare of eight centuries, Spain drove back the Arabo-Moors into Africa.

Greece

The Greek Empire of Constantinople stopped the Mussulmans for as many centuries; to-wit:—the Arabs, the Turks, Seljukian and Ottoman. But it failed to crush them and finally it was overthrown by their fierce assaults. These facts are related while they are bearing on the general life of Continental Europe.

Character of the Ancient Nations

The Primitive Culture

The peninsular populations of Southern Europe were the forerunners of our progress; they were civilized when the rest of Europe was still in a nomadic state. They were especially the Greeks and the Latins. The former excelled in arts and sciences, the latter in government and warfare. The sum total of their advance was garnered together in the incomparable empire of Rome.

Greek Fine Arts and Sciences

The Greeks had developed a culture of their own; where nature and beauty, logic and science were brought to perfection. Aristotle is the master of logic, Demosthenes of eloquence, Phidias of sculpture. The Greeks had passed the narrow limits of their peninsula, and spread their love of arts in all parts of the Mediterranean world.

Romans Practical People Cultivate Useful Arts

Without being a stranger to Greek progress, Rome had devoted herself especially to the practical sciences of life, such as agriculture, government and war. She had subdued and incorporated one after another all the nations living in the Mediterranean countries, the progressive Greeks as well as others, and she was ruling them in an efficacious manner, and she had made of this great congeries of advanced nations one peaceable empire. At the birth of Our Lord, peace reigned in the Roman world and the temple of Janus was closed for the first time after 500 years of unceasing warfare.

500 Years of Paradise

For 500 years the Empire maintained that high state of civilization in the midst of a Barbarian world. Its territories were like a paradise in the distracted universe.

Fall 500 Years of Warfare

But in the fifth century of Our Lord, that admirable structure was overthrown by the flood of Barbarian invasions and for five hundred years all Europe seemed to be a battlefield of nomads.

Few Institutions Survive

The Church Preserves Learning; Restores Order

In the west few institutions survived the general cataclysm: the Catholic church, and the Frankish and the Irish nations. The church kept alive among the ancient nations the light that had shone so brightly, and she preserved letters and books in the south. She helped her eldest daughter, the Frankish nation, to settle down the roving tribes, and bring back order in the continent. She called the Irish to convert pagan Europe.

The Greek Empire a Rampart Against Barbarism

In the east the Greek Empire, protected by its natural defenses, also survived the sweeping deluge and maintained its existence for a millenium. It remained during these thousand years the rampart of Europe against the threatening Mohammedans. But it failed to civilize those barbarians or to crush them and fell the victim of the relentless foe of Christendom.

Italy

Empire of Rome

Who can recall the glory of Rome, the mistress of the body as well as of the soul?

Seat of Model Empire

Rome was the seat of the greatest empire the world ever saw. She had gathered to her bosom all the achievements of antiquity. During five hundred years she had joined the advanced nations of the Mediterranean Sea and accumulated their material and mental treasures.

For Five-Hundred Years Rome Accumulated the Treasures of the Ancients

The philosophy and art of Athens; the industry and commerce of Tyre and Carthage, the imperial laws and even the mysteries and pomps of Memphis and Babylon, the most orderly institutions were brought together in Rome and presented a world as cultured as the whole of Europe was before our lamentable war.

During Five-Hundred Years the Home of Peace and Comfort

During five hundred years mankind had one immense country where the necessaries and pleasures of life could be enjoyed by the masses, while all around it there were wandering barbarian tribes, who hardly paid any attention to the great institutions of the world empire. There were other great powers in the Orient, to wit:—India and China, who had cultures of their own, which, however, could not come up to the harmonious structures of the Roman Empire.

Survival of Constantinople

Rome fell under the cyclone of the barbarian hordes in the fifth century of our era, but her daughter Constantinople was saved through her location from the general destruction and she preserved for a thousand years the glory of Roman life.

Treasures Brought to Italy

At her own fall under the Turkish assaults, many of the ancient treasures of civilization were saved from destruction and brought to Italy, and

Promote Renaissance

mightily promoted the movement of the Renaissance or rebirth of ancient culture, which was started in Europe at the moment that the glories of medieval culture were at their apogee, and the best of both were focussed again in Rome. The laws and institutions of Rome were well nigh perfect and became the foundation and the model of the European nations.

The Nations of Europe Patterned After Rome

Seat of the Model Religion

There was still a higher field of activity for Italy. Rome became the seat of the most progressive among the religions of the world, and for nearly two thousand years, has been the spiritual capital of the most enlightened populations of the universe.

Christendom the Bright Part of the World

It is not our subject to weigh the relative merits of the different systems of morality that arose in the course of centuries. But Christendom shines as a bright spot, a paradise among Paganism, Mohammedanism, Hinduism and Confucianism. Men are trying other systems, but they have founded nothing that has raised mankind in all its phases to a higher degree of culture; we have nothing but good wishes for their endeavors, but we claim that Christianity has produced among the masses the highest development and happiness that has ever been in the world.

Popes the Leaders

The Popes of Rome have been the leaders in the upward movement. They were the pontiffs that sent out missionaries to enlighten the barbarian pagans and to establish among them institutions of training and learning. By a stroke of papal genius the Popes established a commonwealth of nations in the midst of a still nomadic world.

Papal Genius Establishes an Empire of Peace

It is the confederation of German nations, the new Roman empire, which was an elective and constitutional power, that rendered untold services to the race. It

Pope Leo XIII.
The Philosopher
1878-1903

was a loose confederacy, a defense league, 1,000 years before our days.

A Defense League

The Popes were the ones that started those heroic movements of the crusades, which saved the world from the Mohammedan yoke and degradation.

Italy was a part of the Holy Empire, but not its principal seat. However, it had the spiritual leadership of the same, and it had its full share in the development of present Europe.

The Garden of Europe

Art and letters flourished. Over two-hundred republics arose and many throve for centuries. Italy was like the garden of Europe blooming under its soft blue sky.

School of the World

The Italian cities became museums of masterpieces and homes of artists who came to them from all parts of the world and returned to spread their refinement everywhere.

So many notable institutions and states, so many great men, so many noble deeds are crowded in that one land, that they can hardly be touched in this rapid review. No more can be done than sketch the history of a dozen states.

Church History

The glorious role of Rome as the capital of Christendom forms a history apart. See The Three Ages of Progress by Julius E. DeVos.

Chronicles.

FALL OF WESTERN EMPIRE FINISHES ANCIENT AGES

Death Struggle With the Barbarians, 395-476

Stilicho Fights Alaric's Westgoth Invasion

Honorius, 395-423. The energetic Vandal Stilicho chancellor, helps the Greeks against Alaric; but attempts to rule the Orient also. Alaric made governor of Illyria against him makes his first invasion of Italy, 400-403, during the absence of Stilicho. Twice he is beaten by him. The necessity of defending Italy took the defenders of the Rhine and the Alps away.

Other Hordes in the West

Two groups of Barbarians. Eastern wave, 404-406. Under the Eastgoth Radagaise, 200,000 men invade Italy, reach Etruria, are defeated at Fesula. 406-409. Second group, western wave in spite of Franks invade Gaul. The Burgundians settle on Rhone. The Vandals Alani and Suevi invade Spain. 408, Constantine anti-emperor in Britain.

Stilicho makes alliance with Alaric to reconquer these provinces; upon suspicion he is executed as a traitor.

Alaric Sacks Rome

Invasion of Alaric, 408-410. Two attacks on Rome, but ransom. 410 third attack, capture and sack. Ataulf, his successor, marries Placidia, Valentinian's sister. In return he is employed to reconquer Gaul and Spain. Southwest Gaul is ceded the Westgoths. 411 Great Britain is abandoned.

Constantius marries Placidia. 424 usurpating emperor is overthrown by Byzantium.

Valentinian III, 425-55; regency of Mother Placidia: two rival generals. Aetius of Gaul wants also Africa, and deceives Boniface, its governor, about his dismissal. Boniface calls the Vandals, who conquer Africa in ten years; he defeats rival. Aetius necessary general, 430-50, reduces Gauls, enlists all the western Teutons (except Genseric Vandals) against Attila, who is defeated at Chalons, 451. Attila invades Italy, is stopped by Pope Leo, 452.

Agony of Empire.

Genseric Sacks Rome

Outsiders Appoint Emperors

Maximus, 455, kills Valentinian, takes his wife Eudoxia, who calls Genseric king of the Vandals. Capture and sack of Rome. The Westgoths raise Avitus, 455-56. The Suevus Ricimer, 456-72 grandson of Wallia, dethrones and enthrones four emperors, according to their docility. During the Vandal incursions he admits the Byzantine candidate *Anthemius,* who defends himself when he attempts to dethrone him. Rome plundered the third time. A nephew of Ricimer appoints Glycerius, 473. The Byzantine emperor appoints *Julius Nepos,* 473-75, who is unseated by the Germanic invaders.

Third Sack

Orestes raises his son *Romulus Augustulus,* 475-76, who refuses to grant one-third of lands to soldiers, which is promised and granted by Odoacer upon his election as king. The imperial insignia are sent to Constantinople. Official reunion of the two empires.

Middle Ages 476-1517

KINGDOM OF ITALY

Odoacer, 476, is patrician for the Romans. King for the Germans, although an Arian he respects the Catholics, conquers Dalmatia, gets Sicily. He is not supported by one nation, but by remnants of tribes and conquered by the chief of one nation, the Eastgoths.

KINGDOM OF EASTGOTHS, 490-555

Amali Dynasty

Hermanneric on the Carpaths, 340-375, rules over Teutons, Slavs, Finns and Russia, he opposes the Huns and being defeated, starved himself to death. Three brothers, kings, the last Theodemic, sends his son Theodoric as hostage to Constantinople, who is educated there.

Theodoric

490-526. *Theodoric the Great,* sent to Italy by emperor. At the head of the whole nation, 200,000 warriors with their families, herds and household goods carried on 20,000 ox wagons, Theodoric left Moesia in 488, and fought his way through the kingdom of the Gepidae. He crosses the Julian Alps. He defeats Odoacer in three battles, the Verona being the decisive one. He unites both Gothic kingdoms for fourteen years as the national hero of the Goths. He protects letters and promotes civilization.

Cultured King

Struggle with Greeks who reconquer Italy in spite of the valor of kings, Vitiges and Totila.

EXARCHATE OF RAVENNA UNDER CONSTANTINOPLE

555-774

Greeks

Rule all Italy, 555-69. Rule over one-third of Italy, 568-774.

KINGDOM OF THE LANGOBARDS, 568-774

Langobards

The rivals, allies or subjects of the Langobards were the Heruli, the Gepidae.

Nation Migrates

Albion, 568-74, attacks the Gepidae, makes drinking cup of king's skull; marries Cunimond, his daughter, who slays him: he had migrated to Italy with his nation. The country having been depopulated by former wars most of it was easily conquered, although many parts were later reconquered by the Creeks. Co-operation of Avard with Grimald.

Conversion

Arianism is suppressed and the Catholic faith adopted through

Union of Races Theodelinda a Bavarian, the queen of Authori, after his death marries Agilulf, 591-616.

662. Interior struggles.

Attacks on Rome Delivered by Pepin Granted to Pope 712-44. Liutprand takes Ravenna from the Greeks. He and Aistolph 750-58 besiege Rome. Pepin the Short comes to the rescue of the Pope and grants him the city and country. 756-774 Desiderius attacks Rome, is dethroned by Charlemagne, and his kingdom annexed to the Frankish Empire.

TEMPORAL SOVEREIGNTY OF POPES, 750-1870

I. Estates of the Church.

Donation Patrimony of St. Peter. Donations for the maintenance of the church commenced before Constantine the Great, and increased after him. St. Gregory the Great, the largest land owner in Italy, was a real prince.

II. Protecting Power of Rome and Italy.

The Popes the only protectors in the calamities. Example: St. Leo I facing Attila and Genseric saves Rome. The emperors of Byzance abandon the Italians. The law of nature allows to keep what was protected.

Preservation

III. Title of Conquest.

Conquest From Lombards Lombards threaten the papacy, but they are conquered four times by the Franks. 754-774. Many cities in the grant of Pepin. Spoleto and Benevento added by Charlemagne.

South Tuscany 1115. Estates of Mathilda of Canossa in Tuscany. South Tuscany is seized by the Hohenstaufens but gotten back by Innocent III, after a century. Hohenstaufens attack. Rudolph of Hapsburg returns and makes secure Papal states.

New Gifts

Troubles *Iron Age in Rome,* 896-1048.

Marozia tyrannizes Rome. Her three husbands and her son Crescentius rule 932-54, nephew Crescentius III Pope is strangled by Otto III.

1012. *Tusculans Control Rome,* until the overthrow of their castles by the Normans.

1305-1378. Residence of Popes in Avignon, and schism of the West. Restoration by Albornez, 1353-68. Nepotism in fifteenth century culminates in Cæsar Borgia abolished by Julius II, who takes Venice receives Bologne and Ferrara.

Revolutions 1789. French revolution annexes Avignon. Napoleon I annexes part, the whole of Roman states.

Pope St. Leo I.
The Pope Who Stopped Attila
440-461

1849. Roman republic, restoration of Pope Pius IX.

1859. Four-fifths taken by the Piedmonteze, 1870 the remnant.

IV. Title of preservation and improvement. Manning: "No invaders could stay, but Popes returned. Rome destroyed but rebuilt by the Popes." **Improvement**

V. Religious Necessity. (a) Maintenance of world-wide administration requires princely revenues. (b) Prestige and standing of a sovereign necessary to treat with brutal rulers and shrewd diplomats. (c) Infidelity of hostile governments and insults to the Popes. (d) Confidence of nations. Napoleon "authority of the Popes tolerated, if not swayed by rivals." In ancient Rome Pope is independent. **Necessity**

HOLY ROMAN EMPIRE OF THE NATIONS 800-1806. Established for Charlemagne 800, restored in the person of Otto the Great 963.

FRANKISH RULE, 774-887

Security under Pepin and Charlemagne.

NO MASTER: IRON AGE, 886

Anarchy in Italy under weak successors. German and Italian parties. Iron age at Rome.

Italy was parceled out between Lombard dukes, and Greek Governors, acting for their own power, wasted by Magyars and Saracens, had little protection from the princes who were chosen emperors. The only strong men among them were: Emperor Louis II son of Lothaire I, Berenger I, 916-22 of Friuli who calls Arnulf against Gui of Spoleto, and is chosen Emperor himself. **Weak Emperors** **German Party**

Italian party calls first Louis of Provence, who is conquered, promises no further interference but returns, and is captured and blinded by Berenger; second Rudolph II, then Hugh of Provence who marries Rudolph's daughter Adelaide, becomes king of Lombardy. The Tuscan Berenger II, 956-64 and son Adelbert threaten Adelaide who calls Otto the Great. **Italian Party**

BOTH SICILIES. NORMANS

The Sicilies are wasted by the wars between Langobards and Greeks and devastated by the Saracens.

1016. Five sons of Tancred de Hauteville free the country. Rapid success frightens the Italian powers, who ally themselves against them, but are conquered. The Normans do homage to the Pope, 1053, and becomes his ardent champions. The fourth **Conquest by Normans**

Guiscards

son of Tancred, *Robert Guiscard,* 1057-1085, duke of Apulia and Calabria, conquers whole of Naples; with brother Roger wars against the Saracens of Sicily for thirty years. Roger I, 1085-1101, Roger II, excellent.

German Hohenstaufen

Constantia marries Henry VI *Hohenstaufen,* who plans world empire, but is thwarted by the Papacy.

Emperor Frederick II, 1214-50. *Conrad IV,* 1250-54.

Conradin 1267. Mamfred, natural son. Charles of Anjou.

French Angevins

Angevins. Dispute against Durazzas. 1261-1444.

Naples becomes the leader of the Guelphs against the Ghibellines, championed by the Visconti.

Secession of Sicily

Charles I, 1261. Severe, even cruel; provokes the Sicilian vespers. 1296. Secession of Sicily to Aragon: Aragonian dynasty, 1312. Charles II, 1285.

1309-40. *Robert,* excellent. Granddaughter *Joanna I,* 1343-80, had four husbands, murders Andrew of Hungary, who is revenged by his brother, Louis the Great, taking Naples. Excommunicated Joan I, adopts Louis I of Anjou. Charles III of Duras 1380-86 captures him but is recalled to Hungary. His children: Ladislas 1386-1414, Joan II, 1414-35 calls Alphonse V of Aragon against Angevins, then recognizes Louis III, reigning with him, and adopts his brother Rene of Anjou.

SPANISH RULE

1. *Aragonian* 1444, Alphonse I, divides Spanish Italian possessions. Ferdinand I, 1458-94, is attacked by Aragon and Anjou, helped by Lombardy. Claim of Angevin *Charles VIII of France;* expedition and conquest, 1494-96. *Louis XII* with Ferdinand the Catholic, takes Naples, gives his niece Germaine of Foix, kingdom keeps Lombardy.

2. *Spaniards* 1505, *Ferdinand the Catholic.*

FACTIONS

Ghibellines (*Weiblingen*) *Imperialists*: *Pavia, Pisa, Genoa, Guelfs* (*Welfs*) Populists. Papacy, Milan, Florence, Naples.

STATES, CITIES AND REPUBLICS

Ivrea. Twenty-nine miles northeast of Turin, ceded to Savoy, 1248. "Friuli=Forum Julia." North of Adriatic Sea.

950. Otto the Great grants Lombard cities to Bishops; Henry III frees them. Two-hundred republics of which four carry

the trade of the East till the fall of Constantinople and the discovery of the New World. **Commerce**

TRADE CENTERS

Venice, 452-1797. Doges, 697.

Two hundred vessels in first crusade.

Enters Constantinople through the fourth crusade. After the fall of the Latin empire is supplanted by Genoa.

Conquest by sea and by land.

Struggles against Milan and Genoa.

Pisa loses Florence 1222, Sardinia 1390, and is subdued by Milan 1350.

Florence, Arts and banks.

Medici. 1334-74. Lorenz the Magnificent is father of Leo X.

Genoa, the Superb, helps the Paleologi to retake Constantinople, controls Euxine and Eastern trade. Wars with Venice.

LOMBARDY

Visconti. 1312. Imperial vicars; 1395, Dukes subdue Pisa and Genoa. **Northern State**

John Galeaz, expands, conquests lost through minority of the children, retaken by Philippo especially through Francis Sforza.

1450. *Mary Visconti=Francis Sforza.* First son Galeaz is cruel, whose son Galeaz is murdered by second son *Louis Le More,* who is threatened by Naples and calls Charles VIII of France.

Modern Ages, 1517-1918

French wars in Italy, 1495-1559.

Charles VIII, 1495-96 triumphant march through Italy, conquest of Naples and crowning. 1500, Louis XII makes treaty of Blois with Pope and Venice, conquers Lombardy, is invested. With Ferdinand the Catholic he conquers Naples which he leaves to him after his marriage with niece Germaine of Foix. **French Wars**

1508. Insolent Venice occupies the Romagnes League of Cambrai by Pope Julius III, compels restoration.

1510. Holy League between the Pope, the Venetians and Ferdinand to expel the French (foreigners). Milan is taken and given to Maximilian Sforza, but retaken by Louis XII.

Four wars between Francis I of France and Charles V of Spain. 1540, Milan goes to Philip II, Charles' son—1713 again to Hapsburgs.

SPANISH AUSTRIAN ASCENDENCY

Bourbons Hapsburgs

Italy was in full bloom of prosperity and remained so for centuries. So attractive were her countries, that the neighboring powers endeavored to get hold of some parts of it. The French were the greatest offenders in this line, attacking Naples and Lombardy. The native dynasties having died out, or intermarried into other reigning houses, the thrones of Italy were occupied by the younger sons of the most distinguished houses of Europe, who bestowed upon their holdings all the energy of their youth, and soon turned them into national dynasties.

New Dynasties Full of Energy

Austria

Spanish succession war. Milan, Sardinia, Naples to Austria, which exchanges Sardinia for Sicily (1720).

Spain

The two Sicilies are taken by Spain in 1717, which is expelled by Quadruple alliance, retakes in 1733-35, allowed as a second geniture to the Infants of Spain by Mary Theresa, 1745.

1735-59. *Charles III,* called into Spain. *Ferdinand IV,* 1759-1825.

PARMA

Parma and Placentia, made a dukedom for Farnese, 1545.

Elizabeth and Philip V: second son Carl, third son Philip, founded Spanish dynasty in Parma, 1748-1801—Traded off.

TUSCANY

Tuscany Prosperous

Tuscany, 828-1859. *Mathilda of Canossa,* 1076-1115, marries first Godfrey the Hunchback of Lorraine, secondly a Welf, donates estates to Pope.

Secundo-Genitures

Medici, 1378-1733, 1569 become Grand Dukes of Tuscany. 1737 given to Lorraine-Hapsburg, as an Austrian secundo-geniture.

MANTUA, 1328-1708

Conzagua house traces origin from emperor Lothaire. It goes to Austria in 1708, to Italy in 1859.

REPUBLIC OF VENICE

Islands Refuges. Republic under Doges

Republic

A European power, a rampart against the Ottoman-Turks, but discovery of new commercial routes. Yoke of aristocracy, persecutions of the Church weaken her strength. The statesman, Henry IV, put an end to them.

Their attacks on the Pope made enemies and their overpower alarms the Italians who league against her.

FERRARA 1200-1597

D'Este dynasty, Azzo allied to Guelfs. Ferrara annexed to papal States.

Modena 1290-1859, under house d'Este.

SAVOY—SARDAIGNE, KINGDOM OF ITALY

Savoy, 985. Counts. Humbert the Whitehanded.

Dukes, 1416.

Kings of Sardinia 1720, kings of Italy, 1861.

Sardinia, 1736.

Montferrato, 938-1533. 1536 given to Mantua, 1631 divided between Mantua and Turin.

REVOLUTIONS IN ITALY

Carbonari want to be free from Austria and temporal power of the church and to restore national unity.

Revolution in Naples, Ferdinand I, 1818 resigns for Francis I, 1820, who accepts the Spanish constitution until the Congress of Troppeau Laybach condemn revolution. **Naples and Sardinia Kings Resign**

Victor Emmanuel resigns for brother *Charles Felix* 1821-31, who subdues the risings, stops reforms, helped by Austria. Carbonari remove to France. 1831, revolutions of Modena, extended to Rome, quelled by Gregory XVI and Francis I of Naples. **1831 Revolutions**

Mazzini organizes *Young Italy* 1848. Rising in Milan. To prevent the formation of a republic *Charles Albert,* 1831-49 wars against Austria, defeated at Custozza and Novarra by Radetzki, abdicates. **Mazzini** **War Against Austria and Abdication**

1849. *Victor Emmanuel II.* In spite of the concessions of Pius IX, murder of Rossi at Rome, atheistic republic of Mazzini, overthrown by the powers. French garrison at Rome, 1852-70. **Attacks Pius IX**

Cavour 1859, drives Napoleon III to attack Austria: Magenta, Solferino, obtains Lombardy, Cialdini takes Marches and Umbria. Garibaldi, 1862, invades Sicily and Naples. **Cavour**

King of Italy. Alliance with Prussia against Austria, defeat of Custozza, still gets Venetia. During the Franco-Prussian war, occupation of Rome. **Kingdom of Italy**

1878. *Humbert,* for army and navy of great power. 1889, Colony on the Red Sea, but defeat by Menelik. 1885, colony in Tripoli. 1888, penal code, 1893, bank scandals.

1914-18. World War. Italy sides with Allies. Secures all irredeemed Italy, which was still under Austrian rule, to-wit: Trentino, Triest, parts of Dalmatia. Some agitators want still more.

Iberia—Spanish Peninsula

The Nation of Crusaders and Colonizers

A Crusading Nation

The Spaniards were crusaders, not in a few expeditions but in their whole national life for 800 years. They are the ones that drove out of Europe the most powerful and the most aggressive of the Mussulman states; to-wit: the Emirate and Caliphate of Cordova. The Spaniards were successful colonizers. Columbus discovered America and gave them a new world empire. In their colonization of Latin America they made a success as far as the natives are concerned because they brought missionaries who at once Christianized the populations; and thus put them on the road to progress and secured their preservation.

When in 710, their country was subjugated by the Mussulmans, many Spaniards sought shelter in the mountains of Asturia, under the leadership of Pelagius. In 731 Pelagius was made king, and established his capital at Oviedo. The Arabs sent him one of the generals with the sword in one hand and gold in the other. The interpreter was the apostate bishop of Toledo. "You know," said the renegade, "that all Spain has submitted to the Arabs. What can you hope from a few fugitives lurking in the rocks of the mountains?" "We hope," answered Pelagius, "that from these mountain dens will go forth the salvation of our land which you have betrayed, and the restoration of the Gothic empire. Traitor bishop, go back to the unbelieving people in whom you trust, and tell them that we fear not their numbers. After punishing his faithless servants, the Almighty will show His mercy toward His dutiful children."

The Last Christian Champion

Trusts In God and Maintains Independence

The gauntlet was thrown down. Protected by their mountainous country, bands of Goths harassed the Moslems constantly. They resisted an attack of 100,000 soldiers, and from their mountain-tops hurled 60,000 men into the stream Deva. The successors of Pelagius were the warrior-kings of Castile, Aragon and Portugal, and the undaunted knights of St. Iago, Alcantara, Calatrava, Aviz, St. John and the Temple, who won back foot by foot the land of their fathers. Their whole lives were consecrated to the work of liberation, and their deeds equal those of the greatest heroes the world ever saw.

Warrior Kings and Brave Knights Fight 800 Years

In 750 Abderrhaman I founded the Caliphate of Cordova, which became the most brilliant of the Mohammedan states. Cordova, the capital, grew into a city of 1,000,000 inhabitants, and drew to itself the learned men of the world. General Almanzor won sixty-six battles, and being finally beaten, he starved himself to death rather than survive his disgrace. On the Christian side the Alphonsos and the Cid were still greater heroes, and they made such advances that they seemed to be on the point of driving the Mussulmans altogether from their faithful land. But three times the Moors of Africa were called against them, to-wit: the Moravides, the Mohades and the Merinides.

Brilliant Cordova

Invincible Almanzor

Surpassed by the Cid

Three Moorish Invasions Checked

The invasion of the Moravides was checked at the battle of Tolosa (1212) by the Crusade of Innocent III, where Islam received a blow from which it never recovered. That secular warfare caused a military and fierce spirit to prevail in the whole of Spain, even among the Christians, who had to use the same tactics as their enemies. The cruelty of some of the Christian kings and their intestine wars retarded the hour of liberation. But Isabella of Castile by marrying Ferdinand of Aragon, united all Spain. In 1492, Ferdinand the

Capture of Granada

Catholic besieged Granada, the last Moslem stronghold, and reduced it by famine. He then instituted the Royal Inquisition, to protect Spain against the treachery of the Mohammedans still remaining on its soil.

Spain a Queen; Greece a Slave.

Spain Rewarded By Freedom

In the seventh century the whole of Spain had been conquered by the Arabs, who established their strongest Caliphate on her soil. But her children arose like lions and gradually reconquered their land. They carried on an implacable warfare of 800 years for their God and their country, and formed a nation of saints and heroes. At the end of the fifteenth century they drove the enemy from Granada, his last fortress.

Greek Empire Reduced to Slavery

The empire of Constantinople was the natural eastern bulwark of Christianity against Mohammedanism, and could have crushed it in its infancy; or, later on, have held its armies at bay until, with the assistance of the Western Crusaders, it would have driven the new superstition from the face of the earth. But it failed to join the bulk of Christendom in the interminable fight. It refused to second the soldiers of the Cross, who hastened to the rescue; thus it opened the gates of Europe to the fanatical Turks. In 1453, Constantinople was taken, and within two hours, 57,000 Greeks were made slaves. Far then from being the mistress of the world and the home of civilization, it became the slave of Mohammed and the headquarters of barbarism.

Chronicles WESTGOTHIC KINGDOM, 409-711

German Invasions

1st. Invasion of three Germanic tribes, 409, to-wit:—Suevi, 411-585 Northwest. Vandals, Southeast Vandalusia, 529. Genseric crosses into Africa. Alani, conquered by Westgoths.

Unification by Reccared

2nd. Westgoths 507. Kingdom of Tolosa. 415-507 of Spain. 507-711. Elective monarchy: Betica lost to Constantinople. St. Hermenegild is martyred by Arian father. Brother *Reccared* the

Catholic, 586-601; conversion and blending of people. Wars caused by Arian nobles.

MOORISH SPAIN, 711-1491

Growth, 711.

Conquest

Tarik and Musa conquer all Spain except mountains of Northwest where Pelayo makes a stand. Pyrenees crossed—dissensions. Youssouf, 746-55, pacifies them; divides Spain among the Orientals into six provinces.

Monarchy

Last *Ommayad* flees from Orient to Spain; rules.

751-1031, *Cordova, Emirate and Caliphate.*

Abd er Rahman I.

Abd er Rahman

Struggle against Youssouf's sons—best element drawn from Islam and Europe. *Abd er Rahman II,* 821-34, unites Moors and persecutes Christians. *Abd er Rahman III, the Great,* 912-62, promotes arts and sciences. Conquers Morocco and Algiers. Hakim II, 62-72. Persecutes. *Almanzor* stays decline; 52 expeditions—defeated at Medina, he starves himself to death.

Decline.

Ten States

Dissolution of the Caliphate into ten Mussulman states at war against one another.

Three Moorish Invasions, could not subjugate the Christians, but overpowered the Mohammedans.

Moravides from Morocco, 1080. *Mohades* 1146 routed by crusaders at Tolosa 1212. Moors confined to Granada 1250.

Merinides called against Alphonsus X.

Permanent defense by knightly orders guarding the places after which they are called.

Four Knightly Orders

1161. Santiago de Compostella in Galicia.
1156. *Alcantara* on the Tagus.
1158. *Calatrava* on Guaduana.
1168. *Avis* in Portugal.

Conquest and Reconquest—800 Years of Struggle.

Julian calls Arabs against Roderic. 711, rout at Xeres de Frontera. Spain conquered except northwest.

Christian Strongholds Arise

Asturias, 713-910. Pelayo arises in Asturias. 910, Division in three; Austurias, Leo, Galicia. 1030, Castile, 1035-1474 joined by Leo. Navarre, 858-1512. Divided between France

and Spain. Spanish March: Catalaunia, 778-1137. Aragon 730, gets Catalaunia 1137; Valentia 1237, Sicily 1312.

Sancho III the Great, King of Navarre and by inheritance king of Castile. 1035. Divides among his three sons. The Castilian Ferdinand the Great, 1035-65, expands but divides; fifty-seven years of war by Cid, national hero.

States, Castile *Castile.* Uracca marries but divorces Alphonsus VII of Aragon, the victor in twenty-seven battles. 1217, St. Ferdinand 1252-87, Alphonsus X, emperor elect, takes cities.

Pedro the Cruel, 1350. Henry II Trastamare, 1369-90. Scandals of Henry IV, 1454-74. *Isabella* called, 1474.

Aragon *Aragon,* 1267-85, *Pedro III,* Constantia's of Naples claim to kingdom exchanged for Sardinia. Brother called to Sicily against the French. Eleanor=Ferdinand the Castilian, 1412, Naples. 1477-1516. Ferdinand the Catholic marries Isabella of Castile.

SPANISH MONARCHY

Ferdinand the Catholic—Isabella of Castile

Aragon, 1479-1516. *Castile,* 1474-1504

Ferdinand Repels Enemies Ferdinand defends Castile against neighbors and French; 1501-04 gets Naples. 1519, Navarre annexed.

Captures Granada Ten years of wars against the Moors, capture of *Granada,* 1492. Expulsion of Jews. Royal Inquisition.

American Discoveries 1492. *Discovery of America by Christopher Columbus.*

Four voyages, 1492-1504. Papal arbitration between Spain (West), Portugal (East). 100 degrees west of Cape Verde Island's line where no land is touched.

German Empire *Hapsburgs,* 1516. (*Charles I as king*) 1516-56=*Isabella of Portugal.* King of Spain, both Sicilies, duke of Burgundy, 1519, Austria, *Emperor of Germany, Charles V,* (Austria left to brother Ferdinand).

American Empire Conquests in America: Mexico by Cortes, 1518-22, Peru by Pizarro, 1531-32. Chili by Alamagro, 1534-35. New Granada by Quatemado, 1538.

World's wars. Policy of fighting opposition in one country by soldiers of another.

Wars Against Turks Attacks against Barbary Pirates, two Barbarossas and Dragut. Tunis is taken (20,000 slaves liberated) but not Algiers. Wars against Solyman the Magnificent.

Protestants Struggles against Protestantism, which is kept out of Spain.

Columbus Discovers America
1492

Ferdinand and Isabella

Abdication and retreat at St. Yust, 1556-58.

1555-1598, *Philip II,* marries Mary of Portugal, Mary Tudor, 1554. Elizabeth of France, 1559, Ann of Austria, 1570. Spain, Italy, Milan, 1540. Netherlands, Franche Comté war with Henry II of France, 1556-59: victories still cession of Lorraine towns. **Marriages**

Distant Rulers

Residence at Madrid and lateness of measures; revolts overwhelmed by troops of other powers. Philip's piety, energy.

Inquisition keeps Protestantism out of Spain and compresses Moors. Ravages by the pirates and threats of the Turk: crusade of Pope Pius V; Juan of Austria destroys Turkish fleet at Lepanto, 1571. **Turks Crushed at Lepanto**

Philip II supports League in France, religion in Belgium. *William the Silent* revolts, forms the Union of Utrecht, among the seven northern provinces, 1579. **Holland Lost; Belgium Ceded**

Alva, Juan of Austria win. Farnese reconquers and quiets the thern provinces, and drives away foreign princes, called by ormers. Belgium ceded to Albert=Isabella, 1598-1620.

Piracy of England. Invincible Armada to punish Elizabeth, is destroyed by storm, and finished by English, 1588. **Armada Destroyed**

Alva quells insurrection of the Moriscoes. Revolt of Don Carlos—executed.

is here that begin these series of marriages among the est relations, which destroyed the vitality of the Spanish dynasty. They were managed by the Hapsburgs and the Bourbons, who wished to secure the inheritance of Spain, at the extinction of the dynasty. **Debilitating Marriages**

1598-1621. *Philip III,* weak under favorite de Lerma. Insurrection and expulsion of 800,000 Moriscoes, wealth of colonies enervates the Americans and Spaniards, who cease working. **Wealth Enervates**

1621-1665. *Philip IV,* weak king, energetic minister, Olivarez, stirs up the Spaniards, tries to get regular taxes, and regular troops, but the people had been enervated by the gold and silver of America. Richelieu thwarted him by arousing the Catalonians for a republic, and the Portuguese for autonomy. **Olivarez Stirring Thwarted by Richelieu**

English intercept Spanish trade vessels and treasure ships, Dutch attack, 1638; at peace Westphalia: independence of Holland recognized. **English Piracy**

Two wars against Mazarin to defend the integrity of Belgium peace of Pyrenees grants Rousillon and Artois to France and oldest daughter Mary Theresa to Louis XIV. **French Attacks**

1668-1700. *Charles II,* Infant sickly, Regency of Mother Mary Ann of Austria, daughter of Ferdinand III, opposition of Juan, natural son of Philip IV. While Louis XIV was at the apogee of his power and glory, and undertook three wars in Belgium, Charles II was under tutelage of mother. No heirs; rivalry of France and Austria; Charles disinherits the Austrian heirs for French: Philip V takes immediate possession of Spain.

Still Made Heirs

1701-1713, *Spanish Succession War.*

French Successes; Reverses

Charles of Austria cannot expel Philip from Spain, although his allies, Eugene of Savoy and Marlborough win at Hoechstadt Malplaquet and Audenarde, 1708, France negotiates for peace; condition to expel Bourbon, rejected. Marlborough recalled, Austrian candidate elected to Empire. Spain and colonies to Bourbon, Gibraltar and Newfoundland to England. Belgium, Milan, Naples and Sardinia to Austria.

Eastern Provocative Lost to Austria

Bourbon Dynasty: Weaklings, 1700, Philip V introduces French centralization. Second marriage to Elizabeth Farnese. Alberoni carries on two wars for secondo-genitures for the royal princes.

Wars in Italy

1746-56. *Ferdinand VI* avoids French-English quarrels; relieves finances. 1756-88, Charles III leaves Naples; weak and arbitrary.

Bourbon Family Provocative of Wars

1767, concludes the Bourbon family pact, which brought Spain into war with England. American war of Independence: exhaustion of resources.

D'Aranda. 1766-78. Suppresses the Jesuits; prepares the loss of colonies.

Abdication

1788-1808. *Charles IV* weak in face of French Revolution. Alliance with French, fleet destroyed by the English at Trafalgar, 1805. Rebellion of 2nd son Ferdinand drives Charles to Napoleon, who exacts his abdication.

1808, Joseph Bonaparte

1808. *Joseph Napoleon—War of Independence.*

1813. *Ferdinand VII.* Seconded by Wellington. The Spanish heroes inflict the first reverses to Napoleon. Liberals vote the French constitution, which is rejected by the king.

Loss of American Colonies.

XIX century liberal movements and rising helped by succession troubles.

Salic Law giving throne to brother Carlos is abrogated for daughter *Isabella II;* 1833-40.

Revolutions Succession Disputes

I Carlist Succession War, successful until Carlos is betrayed to Espartero.

Revolution, 1868-75. Republic: Prim, Serrano.

1871-73. *Amadeus of Savoy. Second Carlist War,* 1871-76. Balance of parties in power.

1875. *Alphonsus XII,* son of Isabella, marries Christina of Austria.

1885. *Alphonsus XIII.* Regency of mother.

1898. Cuba and Philippines lost in war with United States.

PORTUGAL

Conquests

Burgundian House, 1095. Henry of Burgundy expels Moors, receives Theresa, dr. of Alphons VI, Castile, 1297-1325. *Dennis the Just—St. Elizabeth* favors agriculture, mining and commerce, learning; university of Lisbon; reorganizes Templars as Order of Christ. Family troubles. Natural son, John.

Discoveries, Missions

Avisa House, 1385. *John I,* sons: King Duart, 1433, Pedro, Henry the Navigator, coast of Africa; attacks Morocco. Alphons VI, 1438. John II, 1481 curtails jurisdiction of nobles. *Emmanuel the Great,* 1495-1521. 1487, Bartholomew Diaz, arrives at Cape of Good Hope.

Vasco de Gama doubles Cape, arrives in India, 1497. Cabral arrives in Brazil, 1500. Viceroys of India.

1521-58. *John III.* Modified inquisition, Jesuit missions: St. Francis Xavier. 1558-78, grandson Sebastian perishes in Moroccan expedition. Brother of Emmanuel, Cardinal Henry. Philip II of Spain, son of oldest daughter of Emmanuel.

Spanish Rule

Spanish Rule, 1580-1640. Colonies attacked by English and Dutch, the enemies of Spain.

Prosperity Decline According to Princes

1640-1834. *Braganza House,* John IV defends himself against Spain. Brazil returns to Portugal, 1653. First son dethroned for vices, second Pedro II, 1667-1706 reigns well; keeps out of war till French take Spanish succession. English secure monopoly in Portugal. Missions. Efforts to moderate inquisition. *John V* most faithful king, 1705-50 governs without parliaments. Wealth from Brazil. Joseph I, 1750-77 ruled by impious tyrant Pombal: Nobles and Jesuits persecuted—earthquake. When he falls at death of king, 10,000 prisoners are liberated.

Succession Wars

1777-1816, Maria=Pedro III king: dies early; queen loses mind; John regent flies to Brazil. First son *Pedro,* 1826 resigns in favor of daughter Maria da Gloria, who was bethrothed to

Miguel. *Miguel* king, 1828-34 elected by Cortez.

Saxe D: civil wars. *Maria*=Ferdinand Saxe Coburg Gotha 1834-53. Pedro V, 1853 and brother Louis, 1861. 1889, *Carlos* and oldest son killed. 1908, *Emmanuel II,* driven away by radical revolutionists. 1910-1917. *Radical Republic,* tyrannizes people and persecutes clergy.

Revolution

NAVARRE 835-1589

Navarre was the land of the Basques, who were never thoroughly subjugated by any power. Formed a buffer kingdom between France and Spain. The daughters inheriting the state, transfer it to their husbands: Sancho the Great 1000-1035, ruled also Castile and Aragon.

Heiresses Carry Navarre to Foreign Houses

Aragon connection, 1070-1135.

French connection, in 1234. Navarre passed by inheritance to Champagne. Philippe the Fair, king of France, Evreux, Aragon, Bearn, Albret, Bourbon. Catherine marries John Albret. Their daughter Jeanne marries Anthony of Bourbon; whence King Henry IV, who annexes Navarre to France, 1589.

In 1512 Ferdinand of Aragon had conquered what is now the Spanish portion of Navarre. The kingdom had thus been reduced to a small district to the North of the Pyrenees.

The Balkan Country

A Specimen of Turkish Misrule

Christianity and Moslem

A panorama of the history and the condition of the Balkan peninsula is here presented as a specimen of the curses which Mohammedanism—the Turkish especially — was inflicting upon the victims of its conquests.

The attacks of the Turks are treated in the chapter on the Mongolians. Here is reviewed the heroic defense made by the Christians of the Greek empire and the Balkan principalities and brief chronicles are given of that endless warfare.

The Greek Empire—395-1453

Rampart of Eastern Europe

The empire of Constantinople stood as the rampart of Eastern Europe for eleven hundred years. When the Roman empire was swallowed up by the flood of the northern barbarian invaders, the Greek empire like a dam of rock withstood their push and weight. When the fanatic barbarians of the south, the irreconcilable disciples of Mohammed, arose they commenced to attack the city of the Bosphorus, which withstood all the brunt of their first assaults and continued for eight hundred years to defy their relentless attacks.

Justinian the Great and the Macedonian Emperors restored the power of the ancient empire.

Separation From the Rest of Christendom

The incomparable empire could have crushed the arch-enemy of civilization, had it not separated itself from the rest of Christendom, and thus placed itself alone against the invasions of new barbarian hordes from Asia, who formed as it were a universal flood engulfing everything in their way.

Opposition to Eastern Crusades

When the western Christians undertook the crusades to attack the monster on his grounds, the Byzantines did not co-operate with the Christian offensive, but even opposed and stopped the crusaders. It was an unfortunate calamity which led to a division of the Christian forces, into three empires, to wit: the Latin empire of Constantinople and the Greek empires of Nicea and Trebizond. The Nicean emperors took Constantinople after half a century of struggle. But neither Constantinople nor Trebizond were strong enough to defend themselves against the new Mohammedan foe, the Ottoman Turk, who overthrew them after a century and a half of endless struggles.

Division Into Three Empires

Byzance Alone Against the Turks

The Paleologi, emperors of Constantinople, endeavored several times to unite their country with western Christendom, but they were thwarted by the blind fanaticism of the schismatic clergy, and they had to face alone the blows of the conquering Osmanlis, who subdued the splendid empire and tyrannized it for five centuries.

Oasis of Culture

When the East was kept in barbarism through the brutal warfare of Islam, Constantinople was a blooming garden of wealth and culture. But she was torn by religious disputes and divisions and by succession wars and dynastic revolutions. She was isolated from the rest of Europe and her history belongs more to Asia and Africa than to Europe. Her history is simply chronicled here.

The Balkan Principalities

Mountainous Country Fine Climate Location People

Although the Balkans are a mountainous country, they have a fine climate and form the crossway between the two important continents of the world, and they are inhabited by superior races, which had de-

veloped them wonderfully. The very roughness of the country had forced the inhabitants to exert themselves to the utmost—which made them a very active people. Work always improves and ennobles the worker.

Spurred to Exertion

Besides the powerful empire of Constantinople there existed in the peninsula several flourishing kingdoms and when that scourge of humanity pounced upon them with all its fanaticism and brutality, they were able to withstand the shock for a century, and although subdued they never submitted to the savage invader.

Flourishing States Heroic Resistance

The Balkan and Danubian countries were flourishing during the Middle Ages. The Serbs and the Bulgars were often equal in power to the Greek Empire. They opposed an implacable resistance to the attacks of the Turks in the fourteenth century and thus kept back for a hundred years the advance of the archfiend of Europe.

Heroic Defense

Eight Crusades: Slavs, Poles and Hungarians

The states leagued together and they received help from outside powers. As many as four Christian expeditions for the Slavs can be distinguished. Then stood up the Hungarians, the Austrians and the Poles, who organized four more crusades and who opposed large armies to the Barbarian camp of Islam established in Constantinople, and finally broke its power.

Crisis

The supreme crisis came when Solyman the Magnificent hurled all the power of the triumphant Turks against Hungary and besieged Vienna, but he dared not face the Emperor Charles V, and retreated southward.

Crusades; Wars for Liberty

Among the wars for liberty, the crusades against the Mussulmans occupy the first rank. That is so well

recognized that a war for a noble cause is called a crusade. The Danubian crusades were as daring and as heroic as the Oriental or Spanish ones. There were no less than eight crusades required to save Europe from the abyss of calamities, the Turkish yoke. From 1365 to 1683 the Turks did not cease to attack the Balkan and Danubian countries. The popes Eugene IV and Pius II made supreme efforts to arouse the Christian princes to come to the rescue of their brethren in distress. Only a few responded to the appeal, and still they wore down the relentless foe. The most distinguished among those champions of liberty are John Hunyady, Cardinal Cesarini, St. John Capistrano, Don Juan of Austria, Sobieski, Scanderbeg, and the kings of Serbia, Hungary and Poland, those later ones falling on the battlefield. Prince Scanderbeg of Epirus is an example of these heroic crusaders. Deprived by the Sultan Murad of his paternal inheritance, he made himself master of his capital Croya by a stratagem, and he defended himself for a quarter of a century against all the power of the triumphant Mussulmans, though directed by the skill of Murad, and his successor Mahomet, the Conqueror of Constantinople. Guggenberger—"George Castriota received the name of Scanderbeg-beg-Alexander in recognition of his prowess. For a quarter of a century he baffled the overwhelming forces of the Ottoman Empire. He fought battle after battle with the Crescent, was but once defeated and never conquered.

Eight Balkan and Danubian Crusades

Few but Heroic Champions

Scanderbeg Holds Back the Bravest of Sultans for a Quarter of a Century

Exploits

"In 1450 Mahomet II beseiged Croya, the chief stronghold of Albania, with 160,000 men, but was repulsed with terrible slaughter by the invincible Scanderbeg. Between 1452 and 1461 a number of smaller forces and five great Turkish armies melted away before the vigorous onslaught of this hero. In 1456 he won his

greatest victory of Tamorniza; 30,000 were slain, 1,500 captured and the whole camp taken by the small army of Christians. Two sieges of Croya, in 1466 and 1467, conducted by Mahomet II, at the head of 200,000 men, were complete failures, Mahomet had to draw off, with an estimated loss of from 60,000 to 70,000 men."

Debasing Yoke of Turkish Slavery

Yoke of 500 Years

For five centuries the Balkan populations suffered under the terrible yoke of the Mohammedans, while, by every possible allurement, they were tempted to apostatize. Comparatively few succumbed to the terror of pain or the lure of pleasure. The people never gave up their faith nor their nationality. They kept up their patriotic spirit by the national songs and the tales of their heroic ancestors.

Christians Proof Against Fear and Lust

Heroic Tales

Become Wild in their Warfare

Living in the midst of the brutal Turks, obliged to fight for their very lives, the Christian populations became wild and cruel like their oppressors, otherwise they would not have been able to cope with them. Some are astonished at finding the followers of Christ savage and reckless in their warfare, but that became a necessity in dealing with the bloodthirsty Turks.

Plundering

Besides the exhausting taxes and the plundering expeditions there was a most revolting toll upon every village of the land: that of a quota of boys for the infidel janissary army and a quota of girls for the bestial harems of their masters. Moreover, to keep down the Christians, there was held a big slaughter about every generation. The horrors of the murders in Bulgaria, Syria and Armenia, perpetrated in our times, were not surpassed for cruelty in the history of the world.

Enslaving

Slaughter

Scourge of Moslem Yoke

The Turkish rule was a reign of terror for three centuries. It was nothing but plunder, enslavement and slaughter. Barbarism was fixed upon the country. Such misrule in the teeth of European progress was a crying anachronism and should long have been ended—had it not been for the complication that the liquidation of the sick man's estates might have produced. The world's war had ended that anachronism, but it reappeared again.

Anachronism in Europe

Contrast Ruins of Turks to Restoration by Austria

As a contrast to the ruinous methods of the brutal Turks may be presented the rehabilitation operated by Austria in Bosnia and Herzegovina within a quarter of a century. Using the resources of the empire for the restoration of a country covered with ruins for so long, they restored the natural fertility of the soil and offered the natives the means to cultivate their lands. In one generation the region was made again a fruitful farming country. The independent states had neither the means nor the methods to make such rapid improvements and they had still to fight for their liberty. Yet they too have made considerable progress since they were freed from the accursed yoke of the Moslems.

Unyielding Resistance

Revolt

In 1571 the spell of Turkish power was broken and henceforth the Turks were on the downpath and the defensive. The downtrodden populations that were bent under their yoke, commenced to lift up their heads and broke out in frequent rebellions against their inhuman masters in spite of the fearful revenge that overtook them, and finally in the last century they fought themselves free.

Emancipation, 1804-1918

A Century of Liberation Wars

The emancipation of the Balkan states and the expulsion of the Moslems took place in about a century.

Christians Could Overthrow Their Oppressors Were Prevented

If the Balkan question had been left to the populations the Christians could have expelled their decrepit oppressors in a short time; but European complications were feared at the break up of Turkey. When Russia was ready to finish the Turks in the fifties and the seventies, the European powers stopped them again and again. When Venezilos had united the Christians and completely routed the effete Porte, new intrigues checked the liquidation of the Turkish territories. Even after the victory of the Allied powers, the intrigues were played again among the powers and allowed Kemal Pascha to reinstall the Turk in Constantinople.

New Intrigues

First Liquidation of Turkish Domain

The Servians started their revolt in 1804, but they were divided by dynastic quarrels, which were aggravated by the Turks, and did not get national rule before the middle of the century, when the Bulgarians and Roumanians also got their own princes.

The Turks defiantly slaughtered the Christians in revenge for the gradual emancipation of their slaves. They were stopped by the Russo-Turkish war, 1876-77; beaten by the Russians, they must grant autonomy to the Balkan states. The administration of Bosnia and Herzegovina is given to Austria. Servia wants the leadership of the Balkans, attacks Bulgaria, and is beaten. I. Balkan war, 1912-1913: Liquidation of European Turkey. The Mohammedan region is divided into two territories of about equal size, Turkey and Albania. Greece and Servia have increased their territory by more than 80%—Bulgaria has reached the Aegean Sea, Montenegro, the Adriatic Sea. II.

1912, Second Liquidation of Turkey

Balkan War, 1913, between the Eastern and Western powers of the Balkans, about the spoils of war.

1914-18 *the world war.* Servia is attacked by Austria; Bulgaria and Turkey aligned themselves with the Teutonic powers.

1919 Third Liquidation

Greece was prevented from following her inclination towards the entente allies, which would have given her great influence in the orient. The central powers collapsed which will mean the expulsion of Turkey from Europe.

Chronicles

I. Christian Expeditions and Crusades: 1356-1683

1st Crusade, 1356. Gallipoli was taken, 1354.

Murad I. 1359-88, conquered Thrace, making Adrianople his capital. Urban V preached a crusade. A league was formed between Louis of Anjou, king of Hungary, Voukachine and Ouglliecha, princes of southern Serbia, Tvertko of Bosnia, Sischman, Czar of Bulgaria and Mircea Voivode of Wallachia. The Christians had 60,000 men. Lola Shah with an inferior force surprised them at night and routed them at the Maritza.

Southern Serbians Defeated at the Maritza 1371

1366. Voukachin proclaims himself king of Servia, and opposes the advance of the Turks into Europe. Beaten near Maritza, 1371, he is drowned. His son Marko becomes a subject king, 1371-96.

Bulgaria and Servia Annexed

Both were immortalized as the *heroes of southern Serbia.*

First Conquest in The Balkan Peninsula

2nd Crusade, 1389-1395. Slav princes must pay tribute. Lazar of Serbia and Sischman of Bulgaria renew their confederations with the Bosnians, Herzegovins, Albanians and Wallachians. 200,000 men marched against the Turks, but Sischman was conquered. The Servian crusaders were routed at *Kosovo,* 1389, where Lazar was captured. Murad I was stabbed by Milosh and Lazar was executed upon the body of Murad. His sons, Stephen and Vouk, were made tributary princes of Serbia, by Bajacet, 1389-1402.

League Routed at Kosovo

3rd Crusade, 1395. Bajacet the Lightning wins at Nicopolis.

Hungarian Crusaders

4th Crusade. 1439-44. Appeal of the king of Hungary. 36,000 Hungarian cavalry, 26,000 Hungarian soldiers; 16,000 Roumanian infantry from Transylvania, 14,000 Frenchmen, 6,000 Germans and 12,000 German and Czech soldiers; 10,000 Walla-

chians. At Nicopolis, Charles the Fearless, duke of Burgundy, precipitated the fight before the arrival of the Hungarians. In spite of their bravery the crusaders were routed, the Roumanians made defection, King Sigismund of Hungary resisted a long time and fled. Bosnia, Bulgaria and Roumania hastened to submit; Hungary was devastated.

Nicopolis Fight Precipitated

Danubian Countries Submit

Sultans Murad II, 1421-44. Mahomet II, 1444-1481.

1423. Ulad of Wallachia is subjugated; Stephen II of Serbia renews his homage. Brankovich, his successor, causes a war between Hungary and Turkey—but must pay a heavier tribute to the Turks.

John Hunyady, Voivode of Transylvania, and Cardinal Cesarini in 1442 beat the Turks at Hermanstedt, Vasaig in Hungary. In 1443 he passes into Servia and beats Murad II himself on the Morava near Nish and repels Turks beyond the Balkans. In 1444 he crushes them at Yalovatch. Murad II must sign the Truce of Szegedin—ceding the marches of his empire, restoring to Brankovich all the forts of Servia; and to Ulad Wallachia. These lands are placed under Hungarian suzerainty.

Hunyady Routs Turks Four Times

Hunyady besieges Warna—Murad returns from his convent and with Mahomet II beats the crusaders. Wladislav III, king of Poland; Cardinal Cesarini, and two bishops are slain, 1444.

Crusaders Slain at Warna

5th Crusade, 1454. The crusade stops the advance of the Turks for a quarter of a century. *Scanderbeg,* 1444-67, escapes his prison and gets Croya by device and surprise. He is acclaimed dynast of Epirus, and repels Turkish armies—two of which were led by the Sultan Murad II himself. But Hunyady is beaten at Kosovo; partly through the defection of Wallachia, which was won over by the Turks, 1448.

Stops The Turks for a Quarter of a Century

Fall of Constantinople, 1453, conquest of the Serbian lands, but Scanderbeg resists till his death, 1467. Hunyady and St. John Capistrano repel Mahomet from Belgrade, and d'Aubusson from Rhodes.

Constantinople Falls

6th Crusade, death struggle between Solyman and Europe, 1520-66.

Solyman wages thirteen wars of conquest: Six wars against Hospitallers, Venice and Persia. Seven wars were in Hungary. 1st war, 1524, takes Belgrade. 2nd war, 1526, slays King of Hungary, Louis II, at Mohacs and appoints Zapolya of Transyl-

Solyman's Assault

vania, who is expelled by Ferdinand of Hapsburg. 3rd war, 1539, restores Zapolya, besieges Vienna, repelled. 4th war, allied with France and Protestants, Solyman invades Hungary but retires before Charles V. Ferdinand invades Hungary which he must divide with Zapolya. 5th war, 1542-47. After Zapolya's death, claims all Hungary. 6th war, 1552-62, Hungary utterly devastated. 7th war, 1567. Siege of Szeigeth, death of Solyman.

Staged by Ferdinand

7th Crusade, 1571. Cyprus being taken from Venice, southern powers unite under Don Juan of Austria and crush the Turkish fleet at Lepanto.

Juan Breaks Fleet

8th Crusade. Ceaseless attacks are repelled by Poland, Hungary, Austria and Venice. The last attack was the siege of Vienna where the Turkish army was crushed by Sobieski, 1683.

II. Greco-Roman Powers

EMPIRE OF CONSTANTINOPLE, 395-1453, A. D.

Theodosian Dynasty, 379-457; Arcadius, 395-408—West Goths are directed to Italy. St. Pulcherie rules for brother Theodosius II. Huns bought off. Nestorian and Eutychean troubles. 450, St. Pulcherie marries Marcian, a valiant soldier.

St. Pulcherie Defends

Thracian Dynasty, 457-518—Monophysite schism of Zeno and Anastasius, 484-519.

Religious Disputes

Justinian Dynasty, 518-578—Justin I stops theological strife, builds forts, adopts Slavonic nephew. *Justinian I,* 527-567, opposes Roman to Greek preponderance. II wars exhaust finances and ruin countries. Conquest of Italy, Africa and Spain. Fortifications built but not manned. Roman law collected. Monumental St. Sophia. Byzantine style—public works and industries. Silk. Interference in religious matters. Pagan schools closed. Jews and heretics kept quiet. Popes ordered to Constantinople. *Maurice, 582-602,* beats Avars, dethroned for restoring discipline in army.

Justinian War Loses Culture

610-711, Heraclean Dynasty—Heraclius, 610-41, defeated by Persians and Arabs, beats them, takes Ctesiphon, but advance of Mohammedans. Constans II, 641-68, fights church. Monothelite troubles. VII Council Constantinople convoked by son. 668-82, CONSTANTINE IV POGONAT repels seven years' siege of Constantinople by Greek fire, 669-675. Eight successors kill one another. Justinian II, 685-711, overthrown and mutilated, returns. Celibacy of clery abolished.

Persian Religious Wars

Strong But Image Breakers

Iconoclasts, 726-842; Isaurian Dynasty, 718-802—Valiant Leo III. repels Arabs, restores constitution and army. Breaks images. Constantine V. Irene regent for son, severe, restores images through VII Council (II) Nice. Three emperors break images. St. Theodora regent for son Michael II the Drunkard, restores images—supplanted by her brother Bardas. Intrigues against St. Ignatius. *Greek Schism*—Started by Photius, 866, consummated by Cerularius, 1056, both plotters against the Empire. It is delayed two centuries through Macedonian statesmen.

Statesmen Warriors Philosophers

867-1056. *Macedonian Dynasty, Glorious*—Basil I kills the drunken Emperor, convokes VIII Council Constantinople, restores St. Ignatius, reforms laws, recovers half of Asia Minor and an Italian province. 886-913 Leo VI, the Philosopher, and Alexander, reverses of armies. Studies of Leo and his son Constantine VII. 913-959 marries Helen, daughter of Romanus I, who makes himself and his sons co-emperors for a time. Magyars driven off; Armenia, Mesopotamia taken. Theophanie. =1 Romanus II. =2 Nicephorus Phocas; Syria and Palestine. =3 Zimisces, Syria and Russia. 976-1025, Basil II and brother, Constantine VIII. Basil II fights pretenders, extends to Tigris; conquers Khazaria, Bulgaria, Serbs.

Schism

Two daughters: 1038-54 Zoe raises three husbands to throne. Theodora names Michael VI, who is dethroned by Cerularius the intriguer, who overthrows also the ancient church.

DECLINE OF EMPIRE, 1057-1204

Comneni and Ducas, 1057-1081—Six emperors in twenty-four years. Isaac Commenus resigns for Ducas Constantine XI, 1059. Losses: Latter's widow marries ROMANUS DIOGENES, 1057-71: Three victories, but captured by Turks, blinded by Michael VII. Defeats and revolts.

Treachery Anarchy

Comneni, 1081-1185—Alexis I calls first crusade and hampers it. John II, 1118, takes Antioch from Latins. Manuel II, 1134, hinders the second crusade. Succession murders. Isaac II, Angel, 1185, hinders third crusade, dethroned by brother Alexis III, 1195-1203, Isaac's son Alexis IV, calls fourth crusade both restored. Murders, capture of Constantinople.

Latin Empire, 1204-59

Greek Empires, 1206-1259

Two Empires

Baldwin I captured by Bulgarians, 1205. Henry defeats them, subdues Greeks of Europe, attacks Greeks of Asia. Baldwin III, 37-72, seeks help from Occident.

Latin Principalities — Archipelago, Athens, Morea, Thessalonica.

East, *Trebizond* — Angel Alexis Comnenus.

West, *Epirus and Thessalonica, 1223-46.*

Center, *Nice. Theodore Lascaris* establishes himself in Asia. *John* Vataces, 1222-1255, overthrows Epirotes. Succession tragedies, blindings.

EMPIRE OF CONSTANTINOPLE UNDER PALEOLOGI, 1259-1453

Christian Reunions and Divisions

Michael VIII takes Constantinople—restores the union with Rome which is broken by *Andronicus II,* 1282-1328. Ottoman Turks arise in Asia, Catalan mercenaries become independent in Greece. He is imprisoned by his grandson, 1328, *Andronicus III,* who confides his infant son, *John V,* 1341-91, to John Cantacuzene. The latter being molested by the mother, Ann of Savoy,

Family Troubles

crowns himself as John VI, 1341-55, and marries his daughter Theodora to Urkhan, who avenges him by taking Gallipoli. John VI returns to Rome.

Help of Balkan Crusades

1387. First son Andronic IV, revolts with Murad; is put down by Bajacet I for tribute which is refused by second son. *Manuel II,* 1391-1423, a distinguished ruler. Third Balkan crusade defeated at Nicopolis, 1396, by Bajacet I, who is routed and captured himself, at Angora by the Mongols.

1425. John VII adheres with the clergy to the council of Florence, defends Constantinople, but loses ports of Black Sea. Fourth Balkan crusade repels Murad II from Belgrade, but is beaten at Warna by Mahomet II, 44.

1448-53. *Constantine XII* has only Constantinople which is taken by Mahomet; he perishes on the ramparts.

GREECE

Mixed Races

In the sixth and seventh centuries the Slavs covered every Grecian province with their colonies. In Morea they preserved their independence from 587 till 815.

Although the genius of Greece prevailed at Constantinople, there were many oriental elements entering in the empire. Athens was not any more the center of Greek life. Greece was simply a province of the empire.

At the fourth crusade, 1204, Constantinople was captured by the crusaders and Greece was divided into a number of fiefs held by the Westerners, of which the duchy of Athens was the most prominent and the longest lived, lasting till 1466.

Advantage Not Followed Up

The destruction of the Turkish fleet at Lepanto, 1571, gave the Christian powers temporary advantage which they failed to follow up. However, they held several islands. From 1681-1715 Morea was held by Venice.

Morale Kept Up

The Greek spirit was kept up by the Greek church and the local government that was left to the people; its life was kept up by the trade of the ports. However, the most energetic of the people, unwilling to stand the tyranny of the Turks, took to brigandage and from their mountain lairs waged unceasing warfare against the Mussulman rulers.

The War for Independence, 1821-29

Revival of Letters Success Reverses

The revival of ancient letters promotes the revival of the national spirit. Secret associations of all the prominent Greeks of the world livens it up. They were called Hetaeriae. Ypsilanti starts the revolt in Moldavia. Greek patriots on sea and on land show themselves worthy of the ancient heroes of Hellas. The Porte orders massacres, especially at Chios. The Greeks divide into factions. In 1825 the Porte calls the Khedive of Egypt, Mahomet Ali, who reduces most of the islands. The English sympathize, the French help. The European powers beat the Turkish fleet at Navarino. Greek's independence is recognized in 1830. The great national aim was the restoration of the ancient historic Hellas and there was intense dissatisfaction of the Greeks with existing territorial conditions.

Powers Destroy Fleet at Navarino

Kingdom of Greece, 1830.

Constitutional Unrest

1832-67. *Otto of Bavaria* is averse to the aspirations of the Greeks for self-government and cannot manage the fickle people.

1867. *George of Denmark* wants Epirus and Thessaly. 1897, helps revolted Creta, he is defeated by the Turks, but helped by Russia, who stands for the integrity of Grecian territory.

Venezilos unites the Balkan people.

Two Balkan Wars

I. Balkan War, 1912-13, Turkey is beaten.

II. Balkan War, 1913, about the spoils of the war.

World's War

1916-18. World's War. Through court intrigues Greece vacillates between Germany and England and loses her chances to take Constantinople or get her share of the Greek islands or coasts.

Chance Missed

Area, 25,016 square miles. Population, over 2,630,000.

DALMATIA

Adriatic coastlands—4,940 square miles, 646,962 (1910) people. Ancient Illyrians. Composite. Croatian kingdom in eleventh century.

EPIRUS—ALBANIA (ON ADRIATIC)

Wild Country

The wild mountainous country formed impregnable shelter for the ancient Aryan population. Greeks in ancient Epirus—Illyrians, Macedonians.

Aryan Race

MACEDONIA (IN MIDDLE)

Vardar Basin

Under Turkish division—covered Vardar basin and comprehended the Turkish Vilayets of Saloniki, Monastir and Kosova, 36,000 square miles.

THRACE (ON THE BLACK SEA)

Varying Size

Ancient *Thrace* had various limits—mostly from the Ægean Sea to the Balkans, sometimes to the Danube.

ROUMANIANS

Roumanians Mixed Origin

The Roumanians are the descendants of the Roman colonists, planted in Dacia under Trajan, and mixed up with the native Thracians and new settlers, especially Bulgarians. They were called Welsh, or Vlaques, Wallachians, either because all foreign nations were so called by the Germans (Walloon, Walsh) or from Bulgars—Blaci, with whom they had mixed.

The Wallachians in Forts and Eagle Nests

Their villages are built upon vertigineous precipices, and inaccessible heights. There they fortify themselves; there they fight and they refuse to fight in the plains. They are quick like goats, as they bound over the ravines.

The Roumanians formed part of the third Bulgarian kingdom. They had their own prince and were less oppressed by the Turks than their neighbors, being further away from them.

1848. Both Moldavia and Wallachia rise and drive out the Turkish hospodars, get a protectorate of Russia.

1859. *Union of the two Provinces as Roumania.* They elect colonel Alexander Cuza, who reduces the nobles, and confiscates the vast estates of the monasteries; he is compelled to abdicate. **1859, Union of Two Provinces**

Charles of Hohenzollern Sigmaringen, 1866, is elected by plebiscite but disapproved by powers, except Bismarck, who encouraged him; finally recognized by all in 1869; he marries the princess of Wied, Elizabeth, an author as Carmen Sylva. In Russo-Turkish war, 1877-78, Charles commands; at Plevna he helps take Osman Pasha. Russia forces him to exchange Bessarabia for Dobrudja. **Hohenzollern** **Carmen Sylva** **1877-78 Russia Wins at Plevna**

1888. Nephew Ferdinand of Hohenzollern is recognized as crown prince.

III. Southern Slavs and Mongolians

The principal branches are the Sloveni, the Servians, the Croatians and the Bulgarians.

I—SLOVENI

The Slavs of Carinthia called Vendes in the past, Sloveni now, occupied the Upper Drave and Save region which were taken in part by the Germans.

II—CROATS AND SERBS

Serbs or Croats originary from the Carpathian range. The Croatian tribe of the Slavs invade the northwestern parts of Macedonia and Thrace, and settle in Croatia, Slavonia and Bosnia, 638. The Serbs or Servians settle in the eastern portions of Servia, southern Bosnia, Montenegro and Dalmatia. They receive many favors from Emperor Heraclius, who welcomes them as a barrier against the Avars—and recognize the overlordship of the Greek empire. Servia is divided into twelve zupans or countries subject to a head zupan or Desmica, who also is recognized by the Croats. They become Christians. **Croats** **Serbs Called Against the Avars by the Greeks** **Head Zupan**

Croatia

Budimir, first Christian king of Croatia, Bosnia and Dalmatia, in 874. His kingdom becomes subject to Servia 905, Bulgaria 923. **I Kingdom**

All fall away under the sway of the Greek Empire on the overthrow of the Bulgarian power, 1018. They revolt in 1043. The maritime district becomes independent under Stephen Bogislav, 1039. They plunder Macedonia, 1042, and destroy the Greek army, 1043.

1076 II Kingdom

Croatia again made kingdom by the Pope Gregory VII. Zvonimir of Croatia and Dalmatia is crowned by his legate at Spoleto, 1076. Weak kings. They become subject to Hungary. The maritime cities were disputed between Hungary and Venice.

The Bogomiles troublesome Dualists similar to the Cathari-Albigenses. They were opposed by the Emperor Michael Comnene, 1081-1118, and were exterminated by three crusades of the kings of Hungary, 1228-80.

Bosnia—Herzegovina

1411. Provinces pay tribute to the Sultan.

1528. They become a vilayet of the Turkish Empire.

Maintain Servian Nationality Denied Union With Servia Against Panslavism

In spite of the immigration of Turks, Italians and Germans, the land remained essentially Slavic of the Servian nationality. 1875, revolt provoked by the abuses of the Turkish officials, which starts the emancipation of the principalities in the Balkans. Bosnia is put under Austria, and not allowed to Servia to nullify the panslavist movements conducted by Russia.

Montenegro

French Dynasties

French Dynasties:

1. Of Beaux from Provence.
2. Of Maramount about 1400.

Refuge of Serbians Who Would Not Submit

After the fatal battle of Kosova, 1389, such of the Servians as would not submit, took refuge in the mountains. The story of the country has been one of long fierce heroism till the nineteenth century.

Cedes to Bishop 1515

About 1515 George V, harassed by the Venetians, cedes his rights to the Vladika or bishop of Cettingue. He flees to Constantinople, but embraces Islam and his heirs claim and attack the Black Mountain. There is a terrible struggle of seventy years, followed by an awful Turkish oppression.

Dynasty

1516. Rule of Prince Bishops. Danillo I, 1851-60, secularizes his state, *Nicholas I,* 1860.

Four Wars in 50 Years 1878 Independence

There were four wars in fifty years. After the last, the independence is recognized by the Sultan in 1878. The port of Dulcigno is ceded with thirty miles of seaboard.

Servia

Eastern Western Parts

Servia is divided in two by the Rascia Mountains: the Adriatic side and the basin of the Morava.

Conversion under Vladimir, 870-880, through Sts. Cyril and Methodius, Greek rite. **Conversion**

The Servians were subject for a time to the Empire of Constantinople.

In 1040 Stephen Bogislav expels the Byzantine governor, his son, *Michael,* seeks succor in Rome. Pope Gregory VII gives him the title of Rex Slavorum, 1078. Michael sends his son Bodin to attempt the conquest of the Bulgarians. The Zupan of Rascia, Ulkan, grasps the power and carries on a guerilla warfare. Struggle between Bodin and Ulkin. **Michael** **Opposition of Rascia Princes**

Neman Dynasty, 1120-1367. **Family Struggles**

Bela Ouroch takes royal title, is an ally of Hungary.

Stephen Nemanya, 1153, restores the Servian unity, but has to fight his own brothers—ends Constantinople's sway, 1180. He helps Barbarossa crusade, fights the Pagans and the Bogomiles, builds churches and convents, he becomes a monk. **Stephen Restores Unity**

Stephen II, 1195-1224, consecrated king by the papal legate, and by his brother, the Monk *Saint Sava.* Some kings become monks. **Keeps Between Two Empires**

The Church of Servia becomes independent from Constantinople or Acephalous in the person of St. Sava. **Church Acephalous**

Stephen Dushan, 1334-56. During the civil wars of Constantinople conquers Macedonia and Albania, 1345; he proclaims himself Emperor of the Serbs and the Greeks, conquers Bosnia Epirus, prepares to attack Constantinople in order to expel the Turks out of Europe. He dies. He had given a system of laws and ordinances. Son, *Ouroch,* 1356-57, cannot hold the vassals and is murdered. One of them, *Voukachine,* makes himself the master of the south, but is slain by the Turks, at the Maritza. His son, *Marko,* is left the title of king; celebrated as a great hero. **Stephen Dushan Emperor** **Heroical Struggle**

Civil wars. 1376. The prince *Lazar* is elected king, repels the Turks, 1387, is killed by them at Kosova, 1389. Murad was pierced by Milosh, the Serb king.

Turkish Yoke. The Servians preserved their attachment to land and faith through their national songs, and never recognized themselves as subjects to the Porte. They repelled the Turks at every occasion and helped Austria against Turkey. Plunder became a national custom. In 1690, 37,000 families under the patriarch emigrated into Syrmia and Slavonia under the emperor Leopold I—those emigrants helped their brothers in their struggle **Yoke Never Accepted** **Emigration to Austrian Territory**

of the nineteenth century. After victories of Eugene of Savoy over Turks Serbia was occupied by Austrians, 1718-38.

War of Independence: Two Rival Dynasties, Two Rival Neighbors

War Against Turkey

Risings, 1804-30, *Kara George,* or Black George, revolts, fights 10 years.

Milosh Obrenovich, 1815-39 and 1858-60.

His sons overthrown through the intrigues of the Sultan.

Alexander George, 1842-58, the second son of Kara Georgevich.

Michael, 1860-67, obtains the withdrawal of the Turkish garrisons. Murdered—succeeded by cousin *Milan,* 1868-89, marries Natalie Keshko, the daughter of a Russian colonel; 1876, attacks the Porte without result. 1877, takes Nish, Pirot and advances till Kosova. Title of king, and some territories.

King Wants Hegemony of the Southern Slavs

Servia Wants Hegemony but Has No Leaders, 1885. War against Bulgaria and defeat at Slivitzna. Struggles about constitution under Milan, and son of twelve years.

Quarrels

1889, Alexander I=Drago are murdered June 11, 1903, by the army.

Murder of Rulers

Peter Georgewich, 1903, knew of the murder that was plotted and several powers refused to recognize him. Panslavist plots hatched by Russians.

BULGARIA

The Bulgarians mix so much with the Slavs that they may be classed among the Slavonic peoples. Slavonic becomes the national tongue.

1. *Kingdom, Bulgaria,* 678-971.

Kubrat's second son, Asparach, rules from Dnieper to the Theiss, and from the Carpathians to the Danube over Slavs and Avars. He conquers Thrace from the Danube to the Balkans.

Rivalry With Greek Empire

Relations with Greek empire. Shelter and assist dethroned emperors. Krum expands among the Slavs. Wars against empire; 828 Bogoris converted, King. Simeon, 883-927, loses north Danube to Arpad, takes Adrianople, besieges Constantinople. Decline: Greeks conquer.

II. Kingdom of Achrida, 976-1018.

Struggles Against Greek Empire

Bulgaria regains its independence under Sischman, whose son, Samuel, is made king and reigns at Achrida in Albania, and conquers Macedonia and Thessaly. Struggles against Basil II,

Annexed

and Ladislas; ends in annexation to Greek Empire.

III. Kingdom—Bulgarian Wallachian Kingdom, 1185-1418.

Three Asan brothers extend power. First two are murdered; third, Johannitsa, conquers from Belgrade to the Black Sea; gets title of king from Pope Innocent III, 1203. He captures the Latin emperor, Baldwin, and attacks Thessalonica.

The kingdom was annihilated about 1250 by a horde of Tartars, who occupied the country for about a century.

Annihilation by Mongols 1250-1350

Four centuries of conflict with Turks.

Mircea, 1386-1418, the ally of the crusaders, is defeated at Kosovo and Nicopolis (1396), but routs the Turks at Rovina. *Michael the Brave,* 1539-1601, the national hero, routs the Turks at Calugareni.

Greek Phanariots, 1716-1821, nobles from Phanar, a quarter of Constantinople tighten the yoke of the people.

Tools of Turks

Moldavia had its own princes.

Modern Bulgaria.

Nowhere was oppression more cruel.

1859. 500,000 Circassians are quartered in Bulgaria, to keep the people in check.

1876. Three months of massacres under Nedim Pasha. The Circassians and Bashi Bazouks plunder and slaughter without restraint. 20,000 people are butchered. Russo-Turkish war, 1877-78, the Bulgars fight as heroes.

The Butchery Under Nedim Pasha

1877-78 War Heroism

In 1885 a revolution proclaims the two states one. But Servia wanted to play the leader in the Balkans and attacked Bulgaria, was routed at the three days' battle of Slivitzna.

Union of Two Parts Victory Over the Servians

Alexander of Battenberg, 1879-86, an officer in the Prussian army. Czar Alexander is his personal enemy. The Russians are overbearing.

Ferdinand of Saxe Coburg, 1887.

Stambouloff, prime minister, wants the independence from the diplomatic interferences of Europe; being stern, loses his popularity, is murdered. Ferdinand obtains from the Sultan the appointment of Bulgarian bishops in Macedonia.

SECTION II.

Maritime Nations of Northern Europe

Britain Not the Great Theater of War

The maritime nations of the North are the Scandinavians, the Irish and the British. The former are of Teutonic stock; the second are of Celtic stock, and the third are the Teutonic and Celtic stock; the former predominating.

CHARACTER AND ROLE OF PEOPLES

Ice and Waterlocked Populations Not Backward But Forward

One might think that the nations surrounded by the frozen north, or separated by seas from communication with continental Europe would be hampered in their development, and play only a small part in the history of the world. However, these maritime populations had more than their share in the movements of history; the rigorous climate hardened them, and their sea location put them in communication with all the lands of the globe.

Climate Gave Energy

The northern location gave them hardiness and activity which always and everywhere lead to success.

For three centuries the Northmen roamed over all the Atlantic waters, preyed upon the shores thereof and finally settled in France, England and Italy. They also became the rulers of Russia.

Power Over Europe and World

Before the year 1000 these Northmen had conquered the half of England and when they had blended with the native population of the British Isles, they recommenced their career of conquests and in modern times they subdued the oceans to their sceptre.

Why have the Scandinavians not maintained their supremacy over the seas? First, their British cousins

barred the way. Secondly, the other nations had become strong enough to defend themselves. However, they communicated to the Anglo-Saxons and British that roving spirit to explore every ocean and that ambition to extend their commerce everywhere, which made of them the greatest world power of our times.

EFFECTS OF LOCATION

A maritime location exposes a country to the attacks of pirates and conquerors unless it is well protected. It was thus that Ireland was devastated by the Danes for centuries.

Danger of Invasion

A maritime location leaves a country open to immigration as well as to emigration. If a sea region is thinly settled, immigrants come from afar and help develop it. A mixed population is always a progressive one. When a country becomes overpopulated, the whole world lies open for colonization.

Immigration Brings Mixed Population

Colonization Expansion

The maritime countries offer the greatest opportunity for commerce and for industry and possess many chances of prosperity. That is the reason that there is always progress on the seaports.

Commerce

The isolated location also kept the peoples of the north free from European entanglements and allowed them to make settlements in other parts of the world wherever opportunities offered themselves. Scandinavian princes ruled Russia and the Sicilies. The British preoccupied immense territories in all the continents, which made them the richest nation on the face of the earth.

Isolation Keeps from European Entanglements

Allows England to Conquer Other Parts of the World

The influence that the maritime nations of northern Europe exerted over the world was greater than that of the largest countries of the continent, but it expanded principally in the other parts of the world and therefore does not solely belong to this work.

A World Influence

Scandinavia: Independent Sea Rovers

Climate Renders Them Hardy Aggressive Progressive

The Scandinavians are long headed blonds that form the northern group of the Teutonic stock. The asperity of the climate rendered them hardy, aggressive and progressive. They had to exert all their faculties to make a living in their arctic country. Being frozen in for long winters, they had the time to develop their minds. The Scandinavians grew up in the traditions of the ancient Sagas. Today Scandinavia is the country that has the least illiterates in all Europe.

Remarkable Literature

There is a Scandinavian literature of a high order, religious and epic. In essentials the northern mythology of the Teutons is similar to the southern mythology of the Greeks, but it is told in wild and strong figures inspired by the stormy elements of the country. In the epic literature are preserved the tales of the ancient heroes, and great contemporaneous rulers of the times. These are disconnected accounts of the deeds of the great and good men, and often relate the same story under different forms. They are mostly called Eddas when in poetic form, and Sagas when in prose form—Snorre Sturlson gives a history of the north from the year one to the year 1177 A.D.

Ancient Norse Tongue

Those are mostly in the ancient, common language, called the Norse tongue, which is still used in Iceland, and can be understood by all Scandinavians.

Aggressive Vikings Cover Europe

The Scandinavians are a daring and adventurous race. In the Viking period from 750 to 1050 their boats covered every sea and every river of the continent. In the ninth century their boats entered every harbor of Europe. For three centuries they harassed the British Isles. They

were driven out of Ireland by Brian Boru, 1014, but twice they conquered England. Canute the Great, conquered and ruled Great Britain in his time, 1016-40, and William the Conqueror, in 1066 made himself the master of the whole country and held it definitely.

Mad Expeditions of Thirty Years' War

Such ventures were possible, when the nations of Europe were in their infancy, but they became mad undertakings when they had reached their maturity. Still the Scandinavian kings threw themselves headlong into the Thirty Years War, with the vain hope of becoming Emperors of Germany or rulers of continental Europe; but they ruined their own country, and Gustavus Adolphus lost his life. Charles XII, 1697-1718, was the last hero of Scandinavia, who after beating all the neighboring princes, plunged into the empire of Peter the Great, to build up a continental empire, but he was routed at Pultowa, he had to flee to Turkey, then to Sweden, where he found all northern Europe leagued against him. He is one of the examples of the would-be world conquerors, who by their ambition simply arouse the whole continent against them and finish by losing their very thrones.

Great Northern War

Passion for Liberty Drives the Vikings Abroad

The Scandinavians are animated with an inborn passion for liberty. When Kings made themselves the masters of Denmark, Sweden and Norway, many of their noblemen emigrated because they were unwilling to be subject to them. That was one of the great causes of the naval expeditions that covered all Europe for centuries.

Kings Deposed, Dynasties Overthrown

The noblemen were continually watching their kings lest they should try to rule or enslave them. They deposed a number of them and bound them with solemn oaths to respect their franchises. Many kings were dethroned, and few dynasties lasted a whole century.

Scandinavia Exploited

The lack of union was often very detrimental to the Scandinavians who were exploited by outsiders.

Defended by Waldemar and by Margaret

The Hanseatic League of Germany had acquired the monopoly of the trade in the Scandinavian countries, and they were gathering rich harvests in the peninsulas while the natives themselves could as well have had the benefit of their commerce. Waldemar II of Denmark was the first to attack that monopoly, which was broken up by the union of Calmar, brought about by the greatest of all Scandinavians, Queen Margaret.

United Only Once

It is only once that the three Scandinavian kingdoms, who have so many common interests were united namely by the union of Calmar, 1397-1522. But the union was several times broken up by the Swedes, who were jealous of the power of Denmark.

Chronicles.

DENMARK

885. *Gorm, The Ancient* opposes Gospel.

935. *Harold Blautand,* beaten by Otto I, is baptized. 985, Pagan son *Swend* dethrones him, chased by Swedish king; he returns to Denmark and wars in England.

Canute the Great

Canute The Great, subdues England, conquers Norway, converts Danes; makes a feudal monarchy. Three sons: Harold in England; Hardicanute, in England and Denmark; Swein, in Norway, 1034-36, the latter is dethroned by Norwegian Magnus.

Estride

1047-1414 *Estride,* D, Sister of Canute=Ulf Jarl.

Swein, Nephew of Canute, Five sons, the second was St. Canute 1080-1086. Waldemar I, 1202. Waldemar II, conquers Mecklenburg; Pomerania, Esthonia. Curbs Hansa; rivalry with Hansa. Division among four sons.

1340-75. Waldemar III, unites daughter Margaret with Hako, heir of Norway. Their son Olaf dies 1387.

UNION OF DENMARK, NORWAY, SWEDEN

Union of Scandinavians

1397-1522. *Union Calmar. Margaret=Hako of Norway.*

1397-1412 with distinct administrations. Education of their grandnephew Eric of Pomerania, 1410-40. War against Schleswig for Holstein increases taxes, Eric is deposed. 1440-48

MARGARET
WHO UNITED THE SCANDINAVIAN COUNTRIES

nephew *Christopher* of Bavaria. 1480. Division in Sweden and Denmark.

1448-1529. *Oldenburg Dynasty* in Denmark, Norway. *Christian I of Oldenburg* 1448-80. 1480. John I, unites, leaves Sture regent in Sweden. 1513. *Christian II*, reduces the divided Swedes, promises safety but murders at Stockholm. Protestant, he is dethroned in 1522. Gustavus Wasa takes Sweden. **Oldenburgs**

DENMARK AND NORWAY

Cruelty and apostasy of Christian II, 1512-23 deposed, recalled to Norway, captured, succeeded by uncle. 1523-1814. *Holstein Dynasty. Denmark and Norway.* Frederick II, 1523 protestantizes in spite of his own promises, 1533 Christian III, imprisons the bishops and grants the estates of the church to the nobles, of Copenhagen, Iceland protestantized in ten years. 1588-1648. *Christian IV,* prosperity but intervention in thirty years' war, defeat at Lutter. **Holsteins** **Prosperity Stopped by Thirty Years' War**

Attacks by Sweden, alliance with Holland. The nobility having the church estates, was an obstacle to progress. Burgesses and clergy make king absolute by royal law. Peace and prosperity, Holstein secured by cession of Oldenburg to Holstein Gottorp. **Holstein Acquired**

Denmark alone: *Weakening and Dismemberment.*

Frederic VI. 1808 fleet taken by English, Norway taken by Sweden; Holstein, Schleswig and Lauenburg granted Denmark as parts of the German confederation. **Napoleonic Storm**

1839. *Christian VIII.* The Danish party wants incorporation of duchies with Denmark, but the German party objects. **Duchies: Three Wars Won by Denmark**

1848. Frederick VII. Three wars of the duchies, 1848-53, who could not go to king's niece, but Nicholas of Russia extends the male succession to whole kingdom in London congresses. **Salic Law Extended**

Gluckburg Dynasty 1863. *Christian IX* married Louise, the heir of the old line, 1864. Assault by the two German Empires. Incorporated to Prussia. **Gave Whole to Glucksburg**

Denmark, so long the foremost among the Scandinavian states, was on the point of being absorbed by its powerful neighbor, when the great war saved her from extinction. Modern Denmark is a nation that never harmed anyone, and had the respect and love of all countries.

There was an old cause of dispute between Denmark and the

Duchies of Two Races

German Propaganda

Wars

German Empire about Schleswig-Holstein, the first being mostly Danish, the latter mostly Germanic, both were appanages of the Danish crown, and one and indivisible.

In the nineteenth century German propaganda was carried on to turn the Duchies to the rising sun of Berlin. 1848-53. Helped by Prussia the Duchies made war upon Denmark, but they were beaten by the Danes. In 1864 Germany and Austria attacked and overcame Denmark and Prussia annexed both provinces, absorbing one-third of the little country. They had no right whatever to Schleswig.

NORWAY

Union Christianization

Conquest by Denmark

Harold Dynasty

Wars in British Isles

Crusades Laws

Iceland

Norway was divided among eighteen chieftains. 885-934 Harold I, establishes his supremacy in the land. Many chieftains leave for other countries: England, France. Hakon I, 938-50, Olaf I, 996-1000 returning from England introduces Christianity, which is fought by the Pagans. 1000, Norway conquered and divided between Denmark and Sweden, 1017-30 *St. Olaf II,* finishes the conversion of the country, he unites the land but is slain by Canute the Great, who imposes his son Sweyn, 1030. Olaf's son, Magnus the Good, 1033-47, dethrones him and becomes king of Denmark also, but must divide the throne with Olaf's brother, Harold III, who reigns with him, *founds dynasty 1047-1350,* and perishes at Stamford—Olaf III, 1067, civilizes. Magnus III, 1087, perishes in Ireland.

1103 Sigurd, a crusader, 1257 Magnus VII, the legislator, gives to estates the election of king and grants privileges to the Hanseatic league, also unites Greenland and Iceland. Hakon V, 1299-1319, Ingeborg—Eric of Sweden, 1320-63. Magnus, king of Norway and Sweden, imprisoned by second son Hakon VI, 1365=Margaret.

Union with Denmark, 1379-1814.

Union with Sweden, 1814-1905, agitation against kingly veto, and for separate consular representation.

Kingdom of Norway, 1905.

Prince Carl of Denmark is elected: Hakon VII.

SWEDEN

St. Ansgar received, 993. Olaf a Christian. Struggle between Christian Goths and Pagan Swedes.

Stenkil, D, 1055-1129.

Gothic Swedish Kingdoms

1129, Division between Gothic (south) and Swedish realms: *St. Eric Dynasty* (south), *Swerkers* (north). 1250 *Folkunger Dynasty. Waldemar I,* conquers Finland, gives written law. 1290 Birger kills revolted brothers, Waldemar and Eric, is married to Ingeborg of Norway, is dethroned, he is the grandfather of Haakon, who marries Margaret. 1320-63. *Magnus VII,* immoral, deposed. 1365-89, sons. Nephew Albert of Mecklenburg hated by people—forced to abdicate for Margaret of Denmark who unites the three states.

Union Under Folkungers

Union of Calmar, 1379-1522.

This union continued with interruptions for more than a century, but with constant dissensions and wars between Denmark and the Swedish people. 1470 *Sture,* nationalist, is regent, still *John I,* 1480-1513, unites the Scandinavians again. Christian II, alienates them; secession.

Wasa

Wasa Dynasty 1520-1654, *Gustavus Wasa* revolts, expels the Danes, diet of Westeras confiscates the property of the Church. Murders two bishops; immorality of the people. 1566, three sons; Eric XI, insane, murdered, second, 1569—John III has a Catholic, then a Protestant wife. Catholic son, Sigismund of Poland, legitimate king supplanted by third son of Gustavus, *Charles IX,* 1604, who makes of Sweden a great power for a century.

Power

Foreign Wars

1611, *Gustavus Adolphus* conquers the Baltic provinces from Russia and Poland. During thirty years' war, is subsidized by France, wins at Leipsig and Lech, falls at Lutzen. 1632-54, *Christina.* Oxenstierna continues war; Wrangel and Torstenson with French generals devastate Germany. Award one-half of Pomerania, finances exhausted. Queen convert, abdicates for nephew of Zweybruck Charles X, 1654.

Exhausted Finances

Charles X Conquers Rivals

Bipontine Dynasty, 1654-1742. *Charles X,* Swedish succession war. Charles himself, attacks all his neighbors and conquers them. 1660, *Charles XI,* ally of Louis XIV in the French wars, breaks the power of the nobles. 1697-1718, *Charles XII* and *The Great Northern War,* bold and reckless as an old Norse sea king. Defends himself against Danes, Russians and Poles; imposes Leszcynski to Poland, retakes the lands conquered by Peter the Great, advances into the Russian steppes. 1709 beaten at Pultowa he retires into Turkey, and moves her to war, until

Charles XII Plunges Into Russian Steppes

Faces Coalesced North

Catherine's jewels detach her. Expelled he returns to Sweden alone and finds the north leagued against him, he cedes Livonia to Russia, attacks Norway, falls before Frederickshall.

Aristocratic Rule

1720-1751 *Ulrica*=Frederick of Hesse-Cassel receives throne from aristocracy, which rules again. Hats struggle against Caps. War with Russia, who takes half Finland, imposes a Holstein king.

1751-1818, *Holstein Gottorp. Adolphus Frederick,* powerless. 1771-1792, *Gustavus III,* retakes the power from the aristocrats, attacks Finland. 1792-1809 *Gustavus IV,* wants to help the Bourbons, attacked by Russia loses Finland, dethroned for Uncle *Charles XIII,* 1809-1818, who adopts Bernadotte, Norway is conquered from Denmark, which was approved by Vienna Congress.

Curbed

Sweden and Norway, 1814-1905.

1814-1918, *Bernadotte Dynasty.* Prosperity. *Charles XIV,* 1818. Oscar I, 1844. Charles XV, 1859. Oscar II, 1872.

Sweden alone, 1905.

The Celts on the Atlantic

THE CELTIC RACE

Atlantic Domain

The Celts were the first Aryans to arrive in Central and Western Europe, and they developed mostly in the Atlantic countries, under the genial influence of the Gulf Stream.

Pure and Mixed Celts

There are pure and mixed Celts. The pure Celts, or at least the Celts that maintained their language for a long time are the Irish, the Scotch, the Welsh and the Britons. The mixed Celtic peoples are the British and the French, who were influenced by the Teutonic elements mixed with them, and adopted other languages.

NOBLE CHARACTER

Leisure

It is in the fine Atlantic climate that the Celts acquired those amiable qualities that distinguish them everywhere. Making a living easily, they were not compelled to struggle for existence, and had time to devote to pleasure and to education, and to seek the higher things of life. The Celt is full of good humor, and makes life pleasant. He has a mild temper and a lively disposition, but he is easily raised to anger.

Pleasure

Idealism

The Celt is an idealist. He pursues the beautiful and the lovable before the substantial and the comfortable. He lives more by the mind than by the body. It is the Celts who brought refinement and perfection to the Atlantic. The Celt lives for an ideal and a principle, more than for place or pleasure. He passionately loves his country and sacrifices everything for the land of his fathers. He is a hero undaunted by any danger. Since his conversion to Christianity he is more attached to his religion than to his life.

Live for Land and Faith

Not Practical

But the Celts lack the practical spirit to work for the substantial things of this life, and to organize for the common defense against the enemy. They are passionate and quarrelsome. They rarely could agree and federate among themselves, and thus constitute large Celtic nations formidable to their neighbors. They were not prepared to resist the attacks of tribes that knew how to federate under their chosen chiefs. It was only in the moment of danger that they united and for a short time and they did not combine long enough to reap the fruits of their victories. Thus the Celts never attained a dominant position, nor formed a great empire of their own. That lack of Central authority was a great drawback to the Celts, which exposed them to the machinations of their neighbors. There was no common nation for them, nor any national spirit. The Arverni and Aedui were the leading tribes in Gaul, but they fought against each other and could not unite against the common enemy, who conquered them.

Not Organized

Cannot Build Empires

Lack of Central Power

But Adaptability to Co-operate

The Celts had a great adaptibility to conform themselves to other peoples, whether as conquerors or conquered. They readily adapted the institutions of both nations to the new situation and thus amalgamated in a single nation. If the Celts never had a leading empire, they contributed greatly to the consolidation of the British Empire and formed the larger element in the formation of the French nation.

Mixed Stocks Remain Powerful

Most of the Celts early lost their political independence as the Gauls and the British, but they remained a power in the lands they had owned. The British defended the lands of their fathers, foot by foot against the Anglo-Saxons, who hardly conquered the open western part of the country, while the natives maintained themselves in the sheltered west for many centuries.

British Irreconcilable

What degree of mixture there is now between the Teutonic and Celtic elements is not easy to determine. It is certain that the British had a great share in the formation of the Anglo-Saxon empire and furnished many of its noble and lovable traits. Many Celtic Traits

The Gauls quickly amalgamated with the Franks who conquered their lands, and with them built the leading empire in new Europe. Gallo-Frankish

British Isles

CELT AND SAXON

It was on the British Isles that the idealist Celt and the practical Saxon met in deadly combat, with the result that the former was overcome by the latter through force of arms but conquered him through the fascination of his idealism.

IDEALISTIC CELTS

Ireland

The Oldest Nation of Europe

Although legends and epopees are not intended to give the historical succession of events, they give a truer idea of the facts than a dry history. There may be exaggerations or repetitions in the Irish tales, still these give a real picture of the life of Ireland. Legends Give a Re Picture

The legends enumerate 179 Ardris or Chiefkings of the Milesian dynasty with such precise exactness, that there must be some truth in those dates.

2,000 Years of National Life

The Irish had their own laws, their own judges and their own kings a thousand years before their conversion by St. Patrick and one thousand years after him they had them still but improved by the Christian spirit.

Six Hundred Years of Fight for Liberty

For the last 600 years Ireland has been continually attacked by powerful and brutal England, who robbed her of her very lands and her very children but tried in vain to rob her of her faith. But she has opposed an unyielding resistance, and not only has she kept alive her national spirit and her ancient religion, but she has now acquired the recognition of the democratic world; that she has a right to determine her own government and her own belief.

Ireland had a constitutional government that perfectly suited the interests and the wishes of the people, as its long duration evidently proves. It was the primitive form of government called the patriarchal form, or clan system, so modified as to make a practical regime for sixty-six successive generations.

Primitive System

It is sometimes remarked that Ireland was a country cut up in small family holdings entirely disconnected and often antagonistic. That is in the nature of the Clan system that existed in all primitive organizations. But it was broadened and perfected in Ireland and brought under a common constitution as well regulated as the Holy Roman empire of the German nations during the Middle Ages. That constitution was so appropriate that it raised the Irish race to a degree of culture comparable to that of the Roman Republic, at least in its earliest ages.

Improved

High Culture

The public functions were administered by special classes exclusively devoted to that work—who thus became specialists in their lines. There were hereditary classes of princes and warriors. Priests (Druids) and judges (Brehons), poets (Bards) and archivists. The parallel of the poets is not found elsewhere. Not only were the official records, titles and genealogies preserved with the utmost care, but the deeds of the founders and the heroes and the benefactors were sung by the bards—in poems that equal the immortal poems of Homer in Greece. These institutions are here mentioned as proofs of the excellency of the Irish government during two interminable millenniums.

Specialists for Public Functions

Inspiring Poems of Bards

Far from being more divided and cut up than other countries Ireland was united under one supreme chief or headking, who ruled through four regional kings, and they in turn kept order among smaller kings and chieftains. Only masterminds could organize such separate elements as the clans and keep them united for centuries.

Unity of Government in Spite of Clans

The four kingdoms were Munster, Leinster, Connaught and Ulster. A fifth one was cut off from the others as a mensal land for the support of the ardri and this was called Meath or middle, it was centering around Tara. Although there were officially four main dynasties, practically two dynasties held the hegemony of the island, which was divided in a northern part called Conn's half and a southern one called Mug's half.

Four Kingdoms

Two Principal Dynasties

Conn's half was ruled by the Northern and Southern O'Niels—Mug's half by the Eugenians and the Delcascians.

There was to be an alternate succession to the Empire between Conn's and Mug's branches, but the former kept the ardriship for 500 years.

Clan System of Ireland

Primitive System

"The Clan system is a tribal form of social and political organization based upon kinship of the members. It is like an extension of the family; it is a patriarchal system with land allotted to tribes forever. Its chief features are: (1) The leadership of a chief regarded as representing a common ancestor. (2) The possession of land partly undivided as the common domain of the clan and partly divided as the separate property of its members and their heirs, the clan being the heir of a member who dies leaving no son."—Century Dictionary.

Historical Glimpses

Invasions

The oceanic location of Ireland exposed its beautiful provinces to successive invasions of sea rovers and conquerors.

Iberians

There was a dark haired primitive population akin to the Iberians, whose name has clung to the island, called Irenia or Hibernia by the Latins.

Celts

Celtic tribes invaded and conquered it, before the time of our Lord. Both natives and invaders showed in their wars as much heroism as the Greeks displayed in their heroic period. Their epopees are as grand as the Homeric tales, although they are not known.

Scots Conquer North Britain Which Is Called Scotland

The Scottish tribe of the center prevailed and their name was given to the whole island. In the sixth century the Irish Scots conquered in the north and west of Britain; the ancient name of Ireland clung to the mother island, while that of Scotland was given and clung to northern Britain; the Celtic character and language are still preserved intact in the Highlands.

Idealism

Converted by St. Patrick

The Irish were endowed with such intellectual development and so many virtues that when St. Pat-

rick came in the fifth century they at once adopted Christianity and carried it over all western Europe to the conquering Teutonic tribes who were still heathen barbarians. Ireland became the school of western Europe for three centuries.

Schools

During the seventh century there were 3,000 educational institutions. The principal ones became the universities of the times, having courses of many years. Music and Astronomy were among the ordinary branches of studies. Armagh had 9,000 scholars, Bangor and Clonfert followed closely. The school of Armagh became the intellectual center of western Europe, and it was a busy seat of learning for centuries. Nine times in twenty years it was pillaged by the Vikings.

Universities

Free Tuition, Books, Board, Transportation

Schools were free, not only for the Irish, but also for the foreigners, especially the English. Tuition, books, board and even transportation were given gratis. Ships were carrying the scholars free along the rivers, on the banks of which the great schools were located.

The Greece of New Europe

Ireland became the Greece of Europe, during the Nomadic period of the Middle Ages, when the wild elements had not yet subsided and stormed for centuries afterwards. She held the intellectual supremacy of the continent from the fifth to the eleventh century. Which was longer than any other people ever did.

Treasures of Learning Saved From Danes, and Brought to Continent

When the Danes overthrew the monasteries in the ninth and tenth centuries, they "burned or drowned the books." It was a barbarian pleasure to destroy those instruments of culture. Many monks succeeded in saving those treasures, fled with them to the continent and founded schools in every place. Eighty-three colleges were established abroad by the Irish missionaries, to wit: —thirteen in Scotland, twelve in England, seven in France, twelve in Armorica, (the northwest seacoast of

France), seven in Lorraine, sixteen in Bavaria and fifteen in Rhetia, Helvetia and Allemania. It was an Irishman who founded the university of Paris.

Ireland Plagued by the Danes

Given to the pursuits of peace, the Irish were unprepared to repel the northern races, who captured the mouths of the rivers from 800 onward, and held them for two centuries. At the end of the eighth century began the Norman invasions, which conquered England and other lands; but were resisted successfully by the Irish for 300 years, 795-1014. Their power was broken by Brian Boru at the battle of Clontarf, 1014. The Scandinavians, especially the Danes, occupied cities or built new ones whence they could molest the Irish. Many settled on the coast and intermarried with the natives. Rival Irish kings strove for inland supremacy.

British Crimes and Blunders

Harassed by the English

However, the Normans of France, after conquering England, descended into Ireland, 1172. They were induced to land by an Irish traitor. It was Henry II, king of England, who first entered Ireland, and ever since has England endeavored to conquer the country and, after the reformation, to change its faith. The English made little progress during four centuries, and ruled no further than the Pale.

Martyrdom of Centuries

The great ordeal came with the reformation. English bigotry endeavored to crush out the faith of the Irish. For four centuries Ireland has taken a heroic stand in defense of its faith and its liberty of conscience. There are no people that have fought more for liberty than the Irish people. The country has been planted with English, Scottish and Palatine adventurers, who took the land of the murdered people and terrorized over the remnants of the Irish. But they either were absorbed

by the Irish or died out except in Ulster (Scotch) and in the Pale (English). The greed of the Protestant landlords made every progress impossible and outlanded and outlawed the Irish in their own country.

Protestant Assaults

Protestantism became the torment of Ireland for four centuries. Henry VIII styled himself king of Ireland and proceeded to Anglicize its church, but no English supremacy was established until after the wars of extermination carried on by three English sovereigns, and the wholesale deportation of the Irish and colonization of their land for a century. All the land was confiscated and a systematic plantation of Scottish Protestants was made in the whole province of Ulster. The native population was replaced by Scotch colonists, who were made the owners of the land and the masters of the country.

Extermination by Three Sovereigns

Wholesale Deportations and Confiscations

Spiritual Supremacy Temporal Sovereignty

Henry VIII arrogated to himself the spiritual supremacy in Ireland and girded himself to force the conscience of his subjects. Elizabeth improved upon his tyranny.

Stand of the Irish

The whole nation arose for the defense of their country and their church. They were exterminated as far as possible and replaced by strangers. The leaders made a heroic stand for life and liberty. Shane O'Neil, 1562-76; Desmond, 1574-83; Hugh O'Neil, 1594-1603; Roe O'Neill, 1641-49 rank among the great heroes of the world.

Population Reduced to 1-10

A merciless system of loot and plunder, extermination, deportation and plantation was carried on for a century until the population of Ireland was reduced to 350,000, over whom 150,000 Scottish and English Protestants tyrannized.

Faithful to Stuarts

The first Stuarts participated in the persecution of the Catholics; still those poor victims stood up for them as the legitimate heirs to the throne of England.

The first confiscation took place under Charles I, the second under Cromwell, 1649-59.

Orange Conquests

William of Orange wins at the battle of the Boyne against James II Stuart; he violates the treaty made with Limerick and starts the third confiscation and deportation. A century of agony begins with the Orange Conquest, and brings on a century of national death, 1691-1781.

100 Penal Laws

More than 100 infernal penal laws were enacted that crushed all rights, political, educational, civil and industrial. In spite of such unparalleled persecutions, the prolific race did not die out, and the Irish families multiplied.

Multiplied to Five and Eight Million

When some relenting was allowed in the beginning of the nineteenth century there were 5,000,000, and in the middle, 8,000,000 souls. But the potato blight destroyed the principal crop, and emigration on an immense scale set in, which took the half of the people to America and Australia. At the end of the century there were only 4,458,775 inhabitants in an area of 32,583 square miles, most of which forms fertile lands.

1847 Emigration Took Away the Half

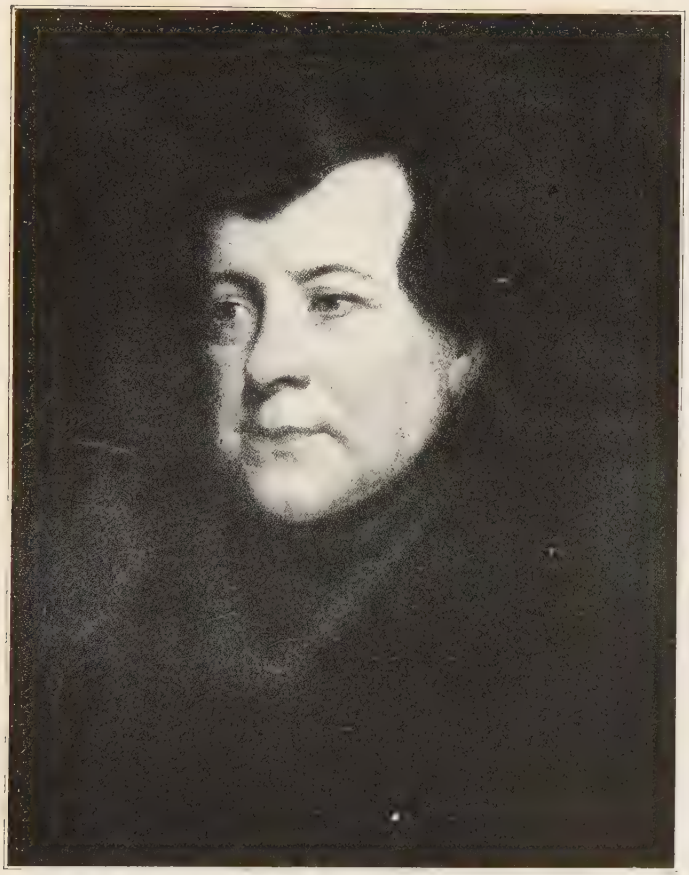
Ireland's Progress Hindered by England

Daniel O'Connell, 1820-1847, was the first to tackle that chain of bondage that enslaved the Irish and he obtained the emancipation of Catholics.

Some Englishmen attribute the backwardness of Ireland to the shiftlessness of the people, the poorness of the soil and the lack of coal and iron mines, the great staples of modern industry. But most of those drawbacks are chargeable to England itself, whose adverse legislation was calculated to deaden every ambition and keeps Ireland's resources undeveloped.

Fertile Soil

The fertility of Irish soils has long been recognized. About half of the island is formed of limestone, whose soils are proverbially rich. The red marls, calcareous grits, slate and igneous rocks have



DANIEL O'CONNELL
THE LIBERATOR OF IRELAND
1829-1847

Lime is Spread by Glacial Action

also contributed fertilizing elements. The fact that the former glacial conditions transported the rocks of many localities and mixed them with other materials, has here, as in England, been very beneficial to agricultural operations. Thus limestone detritus from the central plain was spread over hundreds of thousands of acres outside of it, contributing elements of fertility, which the local rocks did not possess.

Confiscation

Absentee Landlordism

Backward Agriculture

But the confiscations of the land of the Catholic settlers for Protestant absentee landlords gave a death blow to agriculture in Ireland. Instead of owners of the soil, renters tilled it and did it improperly; bad tillage and overcropping reduced its fertility. There rankled a resentment in the heart of the dispossessed native.

Alien Religion

Adverse Legislation

The oppressors imported and imposed an alien worship which the people execrated as a heresy and which still they had to support. During the eighteenth century Ireland was placed under the ban of the English commercial and colonial policy. Ireland was treated as a conquered land, and continued to be thus treated for two centuries, being exploited for the benefit of alien landlords.

The lack of coal prevented the development of large manufacturing, although the numerous waterpowers, latent in its full rivers, could supply many local industries.

Peat of Swamps Substitute for Coal

The lack of coal for domestic use is partly made up by the abundance of "turf" or peat. Owing to the deposits of glacial drift, which have formed dams across the streams, the level interior is so poorly drained that swamps or bogs occupy about one-twelfth of the entire surface of the island. The water in these bogs protects the swamp vegetation from decay, so that such vegetation collects until it forms

a sod, which when dug up and dried makes a fairly good fuel.

Stones

There are fine building stones in the central counties and Donegal, marbles in Galway, Kilkenny, Cork and Connemara.

Another injury inflicted by the English commerce was the locking up of the splendid harbors which are located on the furthest lands of western Europe in order to bring the world commerce to English ports.

Fanaticism Greed and Provincialism

Thus the fanatic spirit of the early Protestants, the insatiable greed of the alien landlords, and the narrow policy of the English merchants, all combined to keep down the sister island, not only to the detriment of the weaker partner, but also to the detriment of the main partner. Religious, financial and racial motives dictated the sacrifice of Ireland, which became a source of trouble and weakness to England itself, alienated its own subjects, who naturally would resort to any means to escape an unbearable tyranny. In times of national crisis and danger, the hostility of an integral part of the kingdom might imperil the very existence of the empire.

Oppress Ireland

And Make It the Sore Spot of the Empire

Misgovernment

It is strange that a power who rules successfully so many parts of the world has not yet learned to govern and to do justice to its sister island. In our time the real statesmen of the empire are trying to repair the wrong done by centuries of oppression.

Home Rule Problem.

House of Lords Amended

The house of the Lords had blocked every measure of redress. The liberal party infused a new spirit in the same, by introducing a new membership—it prepared the passing of the Home Rule Bill, which was passed by Parliament and signed by the king. The great war broke out before it was applied. The enemies of Ireland endeavored to sow dissension among the

Home Rule Passed—Not Applied Before the War Broke Out

Irish, and dissuade them from taking part in the death struggle of Europe.

Demand of Complete Autonomy

Autonomy Demanded

The delays and evasions in carrying out the promises of relief have so provoked the Irish nation that any effort at conciliation may be too late now. What gives the Irish cause formidable power in the world is the presence in the English-speaking lands of 20,000,000 who are originally from Ireland and who have become wealthy and influential in the states they live in and who demand freedom for the country of their origin. Their international standing and influence will in the end compel even powerful England to do justice to Ireland. It is only a question of time.

Free State Fought by Republicans

After long debates a compromise was arrived at between the Irish delegates and the British government. The bulk of Ireland was recognized as a free state associated with England, Canada, Australia and South Africa, remaining under the domain of the Empire. There were uncompromising patriots who would accept nothing but complete independence, and they started a bitter war against the Free State Government, which however was elected by the Irish people. Ulster refused to separate from England.

Valiant Soldiers Fine Women

Persecution has served to make the Irish stronger in their souls, and hardier in their bodies, whom no power of earth or of hell can destroy. Their men are the equal of any soldiers in the United Kingdom. Their women are noted for their beauty and strength, their grace and their open hearted gaiety. The Irish are vehement in language, ardent in feeling and brilliant in repartee. They are born orators and leaders. All that they need is a fair deal in order to shine again as the pearl of the sea among the peoples of Europe.

There are two nations persecuted and exiled that

Irish and Jews Persecuted

fight for an ideal and live for a principle that is dearer to them than life itself. Those nations are the Irish and the Jews. Both have been deported from their own land and dispersed through every climate of the universe. Both have heroically stood up for their God and their country, and now they are admired by the peoples of the world. They have triumphed over their enemies and soon will be among leading nations of the world. The Irish have the number and the health and the love of liberty; the Jews have the money and the shrewdness. Both will exert an irresistible influence in the coming world of democracy.

Triumphant Today

Chronicles.

PAGAN IRELAND: 753 B. C.-450 A. D.

Oldest nation of Europe. Clan system, separative, improved. Empire at Tara. Two halves. Four main kingdoms. Land inalienable. Milesian dynasty. One hundred seventy-nine ardris. Tanist, heir apparent elective within the fifth degree.

Naval expeditions in Britain and Gaul. Niall of the nine hostages, 397-405, captures St. Patrick. Dathy, 406-29 crosses Gaul, marches upon Rome. Irish settlements in Wales, Manx, Argyle, Galloway. It is from the last places that the Irish conquered Scotland.

CHRISTIAN IRELAND: 450-1534 A. D.

Conversion by St. Patrick, 432-465

The cultured Irish raised still higher by St. Patrick. The Bards saved from exile by St. Columbkille. Island of the saints. The doctors, and the apostles. During the seventh century 3,000 educational establishments. Armagh, a university. Schools free. Ireland the Greece of Europe for five centuries. Treasures of learning saved; brought to continent; colleges founded.

II. SCANDINAVIAN INVASION AND DEVASTATION, 795-1014

Unpreparedness of Irish scholars. Fierce pagans. Ruin of convents; building of towns. Scandinavian coalition; broken by Brian Boru, 1014.

III. INTESTINE WARS, ENGLISH INVASION, 1014-1537

Rivalry of four families for ardriship. Seven ardris. A

traitor calls English.

False pretenses to interfere. Councils find only trifles to reform. English conquer in the valleys; the Irish defend the mountains and retake their lands. Small pale left to invaders. English residents are Gallicized. Bruce king 1315.

IV. DEATH STRUGGLE AGAINST ENGLISH PROTESTANTISM, 1537-1829

Climax of tyranny to force consciences. Here a huge failure. Henry VIII spiritual supremacy and temporal sovereignty proclaimed but not effected. Heroic stand of the Irish. Reduced to one-tenth of the population. In spite of former persecution faithful to Stuarts, sufferings aggravated.

Century of agony and despair, 1691-1781. Orange conquest, treachery and cruelty. Third confiscation and deportation.

1760. Secret societies for and against Irish. American and French revolutions enable Grattan to get an Irish parliament. 1780-1798. Population doubled in one generation but reduced to half again through famine, evictions and emigration. Penal laws repealed only under compulsion. Peaceful agitation of O'Connell, 1829-47, violence of Fenians. Obstruction by Parnell. Efforts of Gladstone. Home rule voted, but not put in execution before the war. Sinn Feiners demand autonomy.

Scotland

THE UNCOMPROMISING NATION

First Celtic Then Teutonic Elements

Scotland is a strong and energetic, free and independent nation. It began as a Celtic people and it is mostly Celtic until the present day. The lowlands received a large Saxon and Scandinavian population. Mining and manufacturing attracted more Saxon elements to the middle of the country. The Scottish population is a mixed one partaking of the characteristics of each of the components and having rather the good qualities of each as every mixture of stocks tends to improve the new race.

Mixture Improves Races

Forward Uncompromising

Love of independence; uncompromising resistance to English encroachments; devouring activity and inventive spirit are some of the characters of the Scottish nation.

Quarrelsome

The Irish are often described as a quarrelsome race; but they are lambs compared to the Scots, who never gave in to any one else. The Scots quarrelled and warred among themselves and against every neighbor or power they had to deal with.

Resistance to Every Power, Especially the Church and England

Their interclannish wars; their succession troubles; their revolts against the kings; their secular resistance to English intrigue and violence; their thorough insurrection against the Catholic Church and their struggles against Episcopalianism form the texture of Scottish history.

United and Heroic Struggle Maintains Independence

It is the united and heroic stand of the Scottish kings, lords and people which secured the triumph over the English schemes of conquest. Baliol, Wallace and Bruce are immortal heroes that led the strenuous Scots to the defense of their rights and secured their independence. The victory of Bannockburn is called by the English their great calamity.

Union of Crowns of Parliaments A Century Apart

The Scottish Crown inherited the English Crown in 1614; the Scots were unwilling to be absorbed by their big and powerful neighbor of the south, and opposed for a century the political union of the two countries and they did not agree to it before England had guaranteed free trade and equal rights with her own subjects beside the maintenance of the Scottish laws and religion.

Activity

The poverty of most of the soil and the rigor of the climate required the ceaseless struggle for existence that forms an indefatigable activity. It also developed that spirit of research which is the mother of the most useful inventions that benefited the human race. Universal

education was a law in the Presbyterian church and made of the people an enlightened nation. The Scots are among the most progressive people of the world. **Literacy**

Statistics, Chronicles

Races: *Natives*: Dark-haired Iberians.

Settlers. Light-haired Celts or Scandinavians called Caledonians; (Gael of the dunes), Cymric Celts, painted men=Picts. *Conquerors.* Gaelic Celts from Dalriada in Antrim. Third and Fourth century of our Lord. Three sons of Erc: Loarn, Angus and *Fergus the Great,* 498, finish the conquest of Northern Britain by the Irish, then named Albia, and now named Scotia. *History*: Resistance to the Roman empire which builds two walls; incursions. When the Romans abandoned England 410, the British molested by both the Caledonians and the Saxons, called the latter to fight the former. **Attack on Roman England**

Conversion. St. Columbkill in Iona, 563-97, patron of the bards and of the weak; he establishes a monastic Church. **Conversion**

Seventh century; four kingdoms; Brittons, Strathclyde and Northumberland, Picts and Scots. **History**

Ninth century; kingdom of Scone. Ayacha of Scots marries Ungaria, heiress of the Picts. Union was necessary to resist the invasion of the Normans, 1034-40. Duncan II slain by Macbeth. 1040-57: this able monarch grants lands to Culdees (monks) and goes to Rome in pilgrimage, is slain by Malcolm III, 1058-93 conquers, receives English refugees, marries St. Margaret, pays homage to William the Conqueror. **Kingdom of Scone** **Formed to Resist the Normans**

1073-1314. *Struggle against Anglo-Norman encroachments.* Independence is maintained during the prosperous reigns of the Alexanders. Transition from a Celtic to an Anglo-Norman monarchy, through the settlement of succession troubles through the law of tanistry, requiring the election of the best relative as king. Marriages with English dynasty, 1024-53, David I defends niece Mathilde who is excluded from English throne by Stephen. **Intrigues of England to Subdue Scotland**

French Alliance. Alexander III, 1245-85 refuses to acknowledge the suzerainty of England. **French Alliance**

Struggle for Independence, 1290-1314. Succession contest. Edward I of England, arbiter, appoints king, John Baliol, 1292-96 and exacts feudal homage and service. Revolt of king and **Struggle for Independence**

people, army conquered, king captured. Scotland under English administration, 1297-1303, *William Wallace* revolts with peasants, wins at Sterling but falls at Falkirk, 1306. *Robert Bruce* revolts though surrounded by 100,000 men; he wins at Bannockburn with only 30,000 men. The calamities inflicted upon Ireland by English misrule show the blessings the Scottish heroes won for their country.

Victory of Bannockburn

Bruce Dynasty, 1313-1370. *Robert Bruce* helps Brother Edward to invade Ireland. English kings intrigue, war; French help the Scotch. David II, 1329-70; young, weak, conquered, captured, would give throne for ransom; opposition of nobles.

Turbulence of Nobles, Intrigues of English

Stuarts, 1370-1714. Marjorie Bruce marries Walter the VII. Steward of the kingdom. *Robert II,* 1370-90. Supremacy of the nobility and intrigues of England; trouble during regencies. *James I,* 1406-37, prisoner in England, released, opposes thirteen lawless parliaments. James II, 1447-60; energetic laws; slain; 1488-1513, *James IV*=Margaret Tudor reduces nobles, ally of France, builds vessels, fights Henry VIII, falls at Flodden with elite of nobility. Mary Guise.

Supremacy of Nobles Curbed by James I

Reformation opposed by James V,1513-42, and Mary Guise but promoted through Henry VIII. 1547-72, *Knox* banished, returns in 1559, rouses the country by his fiery denunciations. 1547, *First Covenant,* the congregation of the Lord opposed to the Congregation of Satan, the Catholic Church. 1560, Reformation Parliament sweeps the abuses which the nobility had forced into the church. *Mary Stuart,* 1542, regency, queen 1561-67, widow of Francis II, king of France, was hounded by Knox and oppressed by all, forced to marry, fights, takes refuge in England; a prisoner; executed by Elizabeth, 1587. *James VI,* 1567-1625. Regents Murray shot, Morton executed. *Second Covenant.* Solemn abjuration of Popery and oath to support the Protestant religion, 1603. *King of Great Britain, James I,* imposes Episcopalianism which is maintained by Charles I, 1625-48. Solemn national league to defend the reformed religion, 1648-59. *Cromwell's tyranny.* Scotland opposes Cromwell, is faithful to Stuarts. Charles II crowned in Scotland; invasions by Cromwell and cruelties. *Restoration of Charles II,* Episcopalianism imposed

Knox Denounces, Ruins Mary Stuart

Two Presbyterian Covenants

James VI King of Great Britain 1603

Episcopalianism Imposed

again, Parliament dominated by committees changes national cult, exasperates national spirit. Persecutions similar to the Irish persecutions. In the sixteenth century the Committee of the Articles ruled and parliament met only to register its decisions. In 1621 the king fills it with partisans and thus controls it. In 1690 it was abolished and parliamentary rule prevailed again. James of York executes the laws but he is calumniated on account of his conversion. *James VII,* 1685-89. Liberty of conscience to all, but intrigues of Orangemen.

Parliament Changes Religion Amended

Presbyterian Revolution, William III, 1689-1702. Declaration and claims of rights against Catholics and Episcopalians. Prelacy declared a great and insupportable grievance, Presbyterianism made the established church. The Jacobites revolt in the Highlands, win, beaten, persecuted, massacred at Glencoe. English merchants want monopoly of trade, Scots abandon to them the Darian colony and pass the act of security, to exclude English kings. *Ann* 1702-14. *Union with England unpopular* in Scotland, discussed, accepted 1707 on terms of free trade and proportional representation in the English Parliament. Own laws and church maintained.

Revolution

Presbyterianism Established

First Jacobite Revolt

Union with England Opposed Till 1707

Guelf Dynasty, 1714-1918, *George I.* First Jacobite rising in 1715 under James VIII. Charles Edward, 1745-46: Second Jacobite rising, 8,000 Highlanders victory of Falkirk, defeat of Culloden, Persecution of Highlanders. Internat. Dict: "A disastrous change in the land tenure and population of the Highlands occurred as a result of the gallant participation of the clans in the Jacobite rebellion, 1745-46. The Highland language and customs were suppressed by law and the tribal ownership of land was abolished. As a result, the Lords converted lands into sheepwalks and deer parks, compelling the tribesmen to migrate unless they wished to remain as tenants at will under wretched conditions. These evils were only in part remedied by the Crofters Act of 1860.

Two Jacobite Risings; Clans Turned Into Sheep Ranges

Transformation of the country from an agricultural to an industrial community. Participation in the commercial life of the British Empire. Progress in sciences, finances. Adam Smith, 1776 economist. Poetry, Burns, 1796, Scott, 1832.

Life of English

Wales

League of Cymry against the Saxons; constant war between the two races, 500. Roderic the Great, 843, divides his states between his three sons. 877, Danes ravage Wales; 900 allied to Welsh, they invade England, are repelled, struggle, defeated by Harold, 1053-1065. Conquest by Norman kings and struggle for independence.

Lewellyn, 1246-82. English laws introduced by Henry III, Lewellyn supports the civil war of the barons.

1276, first invasion by Edward; 2nd 1281, Lewellyn falls in battle. Brother *David* defeated and put to death. Wales subdued, 1383. Rebellions, 1315, 1401.

1445. *Owen Tudor* made keeper of the royal parks. Royal marriage of grandson. 1485, Henry VII lands; Welsh flock to his standard.

Literature: Welsh triads, poetic, fabulous. Dimetian and Vendotin codes.

Britanny

The Armorican Celts make against Caesar a league of maritime tribes reaching to the mouths of the Seine and the Garonne. On the conquest of Great Britain by the Anglo-Saxons many Celts fled to the northwest shore of France which later was known as Britanny and Vendee. Bretons, stubborn in their spirit of independence. They struggled against the Frankish kings. Nomenoe 824, accepted countship from Louis the Mild. Geoffrey I has title of Duke, 992. Struggle against Normandy. To gain Henry II of England, Constance is married to Geoffrey, his son; their son Arthur is murdered by John Lackland; his half sister, Alice marries Pierre de Dreux.

New line of Dukes, 1213-1488. Struggle between Charles de Blois and John de Montfort, 1342-1365. Ann of Britanny, 1488-98 is married to Charles VIII. Afterwards to Louis XII. Britanny united to the crown of France. Conserves its own parliament till the French revolution.

Practical Anglo-Saxons

British Empire

PANORAMA

Too Great to Express Under One Name

The British power is composed of so many elements that it is difficult to comprehend them all under one name. The word British suggests the Celtic race, the Anglo-Saxon, the Teutonic contingent, the imperial name, the world empire. The language itself is composed of Celtic and Latin, Teutonic and Scandinavian elements England has taken lands from every continent to make a world empire, and words from many languages to fashion a world tongue.

Maritime Empire no Threat for Continental Nations

It is an empire of the seas and does not contemplate the domination of the free nations of Europe. It is more of a commercial than of a political empire. It is an emporium for the grand commerce of the world. The manifold interests of such a huge organization that enters every continent, require peace. Therefore, the British empire is a great factor to maintain peace and suppress wars in the world. It is also the strongest establishment on earth. The assaults of the two greatest conquerors of modern times, Napoleon and the Hohenzollerns, who directly intended to crush England, have failed and rebounded upon these warriors, who were overwhelmed by the resources of their antagonist, and disappeared from the face of the earth.

Factor of Peace

Unconquerable

Mixture and Struggle of Races

How did that island cut off from Europe succeed in making itself the mistress of the seas? The very mixture and struggle of races, broadened and enhardened the people. There was for seven hundred years a fierce

Consolidation of Isles

struggle for existence between the Celt and the Saxon; then there was the persistent policy of England to round out her power, by the conquest of Ireland and Scotland.

Delayed by Oppression

The group of islands seems to belong together, and would naturally tend to unite if the leaders of England had not treated the outlying states as conquered territory and tried to exploit and enslave them, as will later be explained.

Free From European Entanglements

The isolation of England directed her attention to the sea, and kept her from many European entanglements. While the continental nations were fighting about royal successions, or small provinces, the practical Britisher had his eyes on the best trade-fields in the world, and sent hardy pioneers into them and at every war he was brought into; he made it his aim to acquire points of vantage in the world routes, and to get the most promising colonies that other nations were forming, first, at the downfall of Napoleon.

England Gets Trade Routes and Colonies

England was the mistress of the seas, and she proceeded to send her most venturesome children into the new world to take possession of the best portions of the same. She built up colonies in America, Africa, Asia and Australia, that became powerful empires, and offered her an illimited field for her manifold activities and tremendous commerce.

Possessions Acquired by Diplomacy and Warfare

It is not natural that these world possessions would come by themselves; they had to be conquered and the rights of the nations were not always respected, still the British world empire was not built up by violence, but by broad and fair policy. Diplomacy more than warfare brought nations together under the British flag,

Loyalty of Colonies in World War

the colonies were rather won than conquered, they remained faithful to the mother country in her death struggle, whilst German intrigues used every means to break up the unity of the empire.

It is not to be expected that war is carried on sweetly, without wounding or destroying, but there was no more violence than necessary to create a union among different parts of the world. Did the colonial policy of England justify the conquest? In a discussion of the right of colonization, at the head of this book it is shown that in general, the British advanced the interests of their subjects in over-seas countries.

No Extra Violence

Advance Promoted

Has England the right to keep her colonies from other powers? She has certainly the right of the first holder or possessor, then she does not exclude other nations from trading with her colonies.

Open Colonies

Finally she is the most solid factor for the maintenance of peace in the world. It is therefore, that in the peace conference she was allowed to keep her immense fleet, and appointed to police the seas. It is at enormous expense that she maintains that huge navy, which makes secure the navigation of the oceans.

Ocean Policy

It is not expected that the motives of England were altogether altruistic. Like all other world empires, she sought her advantages in every step she made; but in the end she benefited the subject nations. Colonization is slowly benefiting the inferior or subject or oppressed nations. England is the most energetic of colonizers, although not the best for the natives. With few exceptions, England today forms humanitarian plans, tending to better and advance the world.

Not Entirely Altruistic but Humanitarian

The formation of the empire, and the home policy has many dark sides. The greatest blunder England has committed is against her sister island, which she never understood, nor knew how to manage. A government that can rule distant tribes in every part of the world, cannot win and satisfy her nearest neighbor. It is due to the greed of the landlords that unjustly got the

Misrule of Ireland

lands of the Irish and are unwilling to let them go, and to the fanaticism of narrow bigots, who want to keep down the Catholic nation. That has become impossible in a democratic world. The English statesmen are endeavoring to remedy the sufferings of Ireland. It is only a question of time, when that will be done.

Interior Struggle

Violence and struggle has been the life of the British Isles up to our very centuries. First it was the struggle of races, then the barbarism of the conquerors, then the dynastic struggles for France, and between the different branches of the dynasty, then come the religious dissensions of Protestantism; finally, all those struggles ending in forming one solid aggressive people that conquered and ruled the seas.

Practical People

The one great asset of the British is the practical spirit that directs them in all their undertakings, and prompts them to take advantage of every opportunity to secure and improve their position. The secular intestine wars made the struggle for existence a real one. They were obliged to economize and work and plan to make a living. Exertion became a second nature to them and gave them the empire of the seas.

England

Larned's Logical Outline of English History

Physical Advantages

A FIGHTING, LABORING, TRADING PEOPLE

"The Island of Britain, separated from the continent of Europe by a narrow breadth of sea, which make friendly commerce easy and hostile invasion difficult; its soil in great part excellent; its northern climate tempered by the humid warmth of the Gulf Stream; its conditions

good for breeding a robust population, strongly fed upon corn and meats; holding, moreover, in store, for later times, a rare deposit of iron and coal, of tin and potter's clay, and other minerals of like utility; was occupied and possessed by tribes from Northern Europe, of the strongest race in history; already schooled in courage and trained to enterprise by generations of sea-faring adventure; uncorrupted by any mercenary contact with the decaying civilization of Rome, but ready for the knowledge it could give.

5th-7th Centuries Conquest and Settlement by Saxons, Angles and Jutes

"Fused, after much warring with one another and with their Danish kin, into a nation of Englishmen, they lived, for five centuries, an isolated life, until their insular and independent character had become deeply ingrained, and the primitive system of their social and political organization—their Townships, their Hundreds, their Shires, and the popular Moots, or courts, which determined and administered law in each—was rooted fast; though their king's power waxed and the nobles and the common people drew farther apart.

7th-11th Centuries

"Then they were mastered (in the last successful invasion that their Island ever knew) by another people, sprung from their own stock, but whose blood had been warmed and whose wit had been quickened by Latin and Gallic influences in the country of the Franks.

A. D. 1066 Norman Conquest

"A new social and political system now formed itself in England as the result:—Feudalism modified by the essential democracy inherent in Old English institutions —producing a stout commonalty to daunt the lords, and a strong aristocracy to curb the king.

11th-13th Centuries

"English royalty soon weakened itself yet more by ambitious strivings to maintain and extend a wide dominion over-sea, in Normandy and Aquitaine; and was helpless

A. D. 1215 Magna Charta

to resist when barons and commons came together to demand the signing and sealing of the Great Charter of Englishmen's rights.

A. D. 1265-1295, Parliament

"Out of the conditions which gave birth to Magna Charta there followed, soon, the development of the English Parliament as a representative legislature, from the Curia Regis of the Normans and the Witenagemot of the older English time.

A. D. 1337-1453, the Hundred Years' War

"From the woeful wars of a hundred years with France, which another century brought upon it, the nation, as a whole, suffered detriment, no doubt, and its progress was hindered in many ways; but politically the people took some good from the troubled times, because their kings were more dependent upon them for money and men.

A. D. 1453-1485, Wars of the Roses

"So, likewise, they were bettered in some ways by the dreadful civil Wars of the Roses, which distracted England for thirty years. The nobles well-nigh perished, as an order, in these wars, while the middle-class people at large suffered relatively little, in numbers or estate.

A. D. 1348. The Great Plague

"But, previously, the great plague, by diminishing the ranks of the laboring class, had raised wages and the standard of living among them, and had helped, with other causes, to multiply the small landowners and tenant farmers of the country, increasing the independent common class.

A. D. 1327-1377. Importation of Flemish Weavers

"Moreover from the time of Edward III, who encouraged Flemish weavers to settle in England and to teach their art to his people, manufactures began to thrive; trade extended; towns grew in population and wealth, and the great burgher middle-class rose rapidly to importance and weight in the land.

"But the commons of England were not prepared to make use of the actual power which they held. The nobles had led them in the past; it needed time to raise

leaders among themselves, and time to organize their ranks. Hence no new checks on royalty were ready to replace those constraints which had been broken by the ruin of great houses in the civil wars, and the crown made haste to improve its opportunity for grasping power. There followed, under the Tudors, a period of absolutism greater than England had known before.

A. D. 1485-1603, Absolutism of the Tudors

"But this endured only for the time of the education of the commons, who conned the lessons of the age with eagerness and with understanding. The new learning from Greece and Rome; the new world-knowledge that had been found in the West; the new ideas which the new art of the printer had furnished with wings—all these had now gained their most fertile planting in the English mind. Their flower was the splendid literature of the Elizabethan age; they ripened fruits more substantial at a later day.

15th-16th Centuries

"The intellectual development of the nation tended first toward a religious independence, which produced two successive revolts—from Roman Papacy and from the Anglican Episcopacy that succeeded it.

"This religious new-departure of the English people gave direction to a vast expansion of their energies in the outside world. It led them into war with Spain, and sent forth Drake and Hawkins and the Buccaneers, to train the sailors and pilot the merchant adventurers who would soon make England mistress of all the wide seas.

Renaissance

"Then when these people, strong, prosperous and intelligent, had come to be ripely sufficient for self-government, there fell to them a foolish race of kings, who challenged them to a struggle which stripped royalty of all but its fictions, and established the sovereignty of England in its House of Commons for all time.

A. D. 1603-1688, The Stuarts. The Civil War. The Commonwealth. The Revolution

"Unassailable in its island,—taking part in the great wars of the 18th century by its fleets and its subsidies chiefly,—but with its undisturbed labors at home,—vigorous in its conquests, its settlements and its trade, which it pushed into the farthest parts of the earth, creating wealth and protecting it from spoliation and from waste,—the English nation now became the industrial and economic school of the age. It produced the mechanical inventions which first opened a new era in the life of mankind on the material side: it attained to the splendid enlightenment of freedom in trade; it made England the workshop and mart of the world, and it spread her empire to every continent, through all the seas."

18th-19th Centuries. Science. Invention. Material Progress. Economic Enlightenment

History

PRIMITIVE OR ROMAN TIMES:

THE BRITISH AND THE ROMANS

Ploetz—"Probable: The Britons of historic times were Celts who came to the island from Gaul at two periods. The first invasion was very early, and the invaders were Celts of the Goidelic (Gadhelic) or northern branch. From the testimony of sepulchral monuments it is conjectured that the Celts found two races in Britain: a small dark-haired race, perhaps of Iberian stock, and a large light-haired race of Scandinavian origin.

Origin

First Invasion

The Goidelic Celts conquered without exterminating the previous inhabitants, and held the land many centuries, until a new invasion of continental Celts occurred. This time is was the Brythonic or Cymric Celts of the southern stock, who crossed the channel, probably not

Second Invasion

very long before the expedition of Cæsar, and dispossessed their kinsmen of the southern and eastern portion of the island. Tribes: Cantii, the most civilized; Attrebatii, Belgae, Dammonii, Silures, Trinobantes, Iceni, Brigantes, etc.

Formed Into One Nation: The British People

One Composite Nation

As was their custom everywhere, the Celts had amalgamated with the primitive populations of the island and they had constituted one solid nation. They were a brave people who valiantly defended their independence against the Roman Empire and the Anglo-Saxon invaders.

Roman Conquest and Culture

140 Years Before British Were Subdued

Cæsar invaded Britain 55 and 54 B. C., and Agricola subdued it 78-85 A. D. The latter built a wall of defense against the wild Picts of the Highlands. 121 Hadrian built another wall lower down between Scotland and England. The Romans erected forts and maintained warships along the coast, to defend the country against the raids of the Irish, the Franks and the Saxons. The country was safeguarded as long as the empire remained powerful. The Irish had made settlements in Wales. The enemies recommenced their attacks in 410 with the withdrawal of the Roman troops.

Progress Under Rome

Once conquered by the Romans, the British took to their civilization and became one of the flourishing peoples of the empire. There remain a great number of monuments and relics of that Roman culture in roads, houses, baths, defence walls, altars, ornaments, mosaics, sculptures, bronzes, coins, pottery and various implements.

Britons Resist

In 410 the Imperial troops were withdrawn and abandoned the Britons to themselves and both Irish and Sax-

Oppose One Enemy to Another

ons recommenced their attacks. Although the Britons had become enervated through the long years of peace, they defended themselves bravely. In 411 they beat the Picts and Irish, against whom the Anglo-Saxons were called or admitted; who came and planned to make themselves the masters of the whole country.

Resistance to Saxons Through Centuries

The Britons made a noble, unyielding stand against the swarms of Saxons that filled their country, and wherever there was any shelter they maintained themselves. They entrenched themselves in the mountain fastnesses and maintained themselves there. The Saxon could never penetrate into Wales. The Briton never gave in to the Saxon. When he was driven from one shelter, he chose another to recommence his resistance. Many migrated to Bretagné in France rather than submit to the conquering Saxon.

British Kingdoms

The Britons formed the Celtic kingdoms of Cumbria=Cumberland, Cambria=Wales, Damnonia=Cornwall: (England), and Brittany (Bretagne), France.

Glorious Resistance of Wales

Wales defended itself for eight hundred years against the growing power of England 410-1283. It rebelled until 1401.

Heroic Resistance to the Saxon Advance

The heroic resistance of the Celts has been sung in the cycle and episodes of Arthur the national hero who stopped the Saxons and performed heroic and wonderful deeds. Even he was on his way to attack the emperor of Rome when news came that his wife had been seduced by a nephew, who had also usurped his kingdom. Our hero slays both, although he is wounded himself. These heroic tales composed the main themes of British, Welsh and Armoric literature and did much to keep up and fire the martial spirit of the British while they were driven from their country.

Attributed to the National Hero

English History

I Era: Nomadic Conditions 410-1076

I. Invasion. Saxon Migration

The Teutonic invaders, their character.

Ploetz—"After the withdrawal of the Roman legions (about 410) the Britons suffered severely from the ravages of the Scots (Irish) on the West and the Picts (Gaels) on the North, which they resisted unaided for several decades. About the middle of the fifth century the Britons were overwhelmed from another quarter. Bands of Low Germans from the coast of Europe, west of the Baltic, whose piratical expeditions had long been the terror of southeastern Britain began to settle in the island and conquer themselves homes and kingdoms. That they came at first to aid the Britons against their other foes is not impossible; but little faith, however, can be placed in the story of Vortigern and Rowena.

Pirates

Settle in Land

The invaders came principally from three Teutonic tribes; Jutes, inhabiting the northern part of Denmark (Jutland); Angles or Engles from modern Schleswig, south of the Jutes; Saxons, a more numerous people, living south of Schleswig along the Elbe and westward on the coast. Of the Jutes and Saxons only a portion emigrated; the Angles seem to have gone en masse."

Three Tribes

The race and character of the English were greatly modified, through their struggle against the British owners of the soil; and against new invaders pouring into the country, to-wit: the Scandinavians and the Normans. After long race struggles, the people mixed and fused together and they made a daring and energetic people.

More Tribes

Character—Ploetz—"The invaders were rude warriors, cultivators of the soil, but fond of the hunt and

Character

still more fond of war. They settled in villages, the dwellers in each village being kinsmen, who often gave their family name to the place of their abode. In each village all were united by a bond of mutual protection and responsibility. Around the house-lots and garden-plots, which were for the most part practically private property, extended the common land, the "mark" comprising tilled land, pasture and woodland, which also served to isolate one village from another. The people were divided into four orders: athel, nobles; ceorl, free land-owners; laets, tenants owing service to their landlords; slaves, generally captives taken in war. Whether either of the invading tribes were under kings at home is unknown; their leaders during the invasion were war-chiefs, ealdormen, whose power was frequently prolonged and concentrated by the military necessities of their new conditions, until it became royal and they took the title of king. Each village had its governor and its council, the latter composed of all freemen in the village, each aggregate of villages (the hundred) had its governor and council; the aggregate of hundreds which made up the tribe had its king and its great council (witan), which elected the king, generally out of some one noble family, and was consulted by him. The witan was in theory composed of all freemen of the tribe, but it soon became practically limited to the more wealthy and powerful among them. Each ealdorman, perhaps every man of note, had a personal following of companions (thegns), who had devoted themselves to his services and were supported by him. The development of monarchy caused a corresponding development of this institution. Powerful men were proud to be thegns of the king, and thus the number and power of the king's military household constantly increased."

Settlements

Classes

King

Witan Grand Council

II. Invasion. Scandanavian Invasion and Anarchy 802-1066

Scandinavians Return the Saxon Violence

The Anglo-Saxons had been ruthless and violent in their treatment of the native Celts; but fiercer barbarians invaded their lands, for two centuries, and conquered the best part of it. London was turned into a Danish town. There was a deadly contest as to who would control the state of England; whether it would be the Saxons, settled for five centuries in the land, or the Scandinavians who had devastated the country for three centuries. The chances were about even, as Saxon and Danish rulers alternated on the throne of England, supplanting one another.

Saxons and Scandinavians Rulers Alternate

III. Invasion. Strong Norman Conquerors

Till the Norman Conquest

There finally came a claimant from France, powerful enough to make himself the master of all England, and to defend it against any further invasions. It was William the Conqueror, of Scandinavian ancestry, but of French parentage and training. He brought to England new blood and new ideas, and established the feudal system in all its force, to keep the impatient spirit of the Saxons in check, and to inspire awe to the Scandinavian sea rovers.

A Norse and French Mixture

II Era: Predatory Policy 1066-1485

First Phase: Violent Character of Norman Kings

Norman King Grasping

William the Conqueror was violent by nature, and was rendered savage by the enemies he met or he made. Unscrupulous in his politics, he respected no rights which stood in the way of his ambition. Without any legal title whatever, William the Conqueror plotted and planned to gain possession of England. Seeing the Saxon king, Harold, attacked by Scandinavians on the north, he swooped down upon him on the south, and slew him at the decisive battle of Hastings. He was so tyrannical

that his barons revolted more than once; even his oldest son made war upon him. Violence and rapacity characterized his three sons as well, whose reigns were a succession of attacks upon every neighbor they could overcome, dominate or plunder.

But Efficient

If their rule was despotic and unjust, it was powerful enough to protect the country against outside foes and to maintain order among a people recently subjugated, but full of independent spirits. It suited the times.

Spoliation of the Saxons

Deprives Anglo-Saxons for His Normans

William treated his conquered subjects very cruelly; he deprived the English nobles of their holdings and gave them to his Norman and French followers, who became the supporters of his power and the defenders of his throne. Persecuted nobles arose in revolts against the foreign tyrant. They invariably were beaten and their holdings were confiscated and given to French princes, who were the more faithful to the new regime, that they were part and parcel of it. Although the bulk of the population remained Anglo-Saxon, the rulers were French, and although they were only a handful compared to the English, they formed nevertheless, the leading element, and introduced some of the advanced ways of French culture.

The New Nobility

Fortifications

To overawe the dispossessed people, William I built or garrisoned forts in the principal towns of his kingdom. His nobles also erected strong castles upon their lands, to watch the open country. He gave England a strong central government which established order and concord among the people, and security in the land. A stern government, even a despotic one, is better than anarchy. Peace was finally restored to the long suffering country; agriculture and manufacturing were carried on again and the people regained prosperity.

Strong Central Government Replaces Chaos

Second Phase: Plantagenet Aggressiveness 1155-1485

Plantagenets War on All Their Neighbors

Plantagenet Predatory Wars

Several Plantagenet kings attempted to make themselves masters of Northwestern Europe; but they failed. In the twelfth and the thirteenth centuries they conquered Ireland, Wales and Scotland; but they could not hold the Scots without granting them full equality with the English. As they always oppressed the Irish; they never could bring them under their allegiance. See p. 138.

Failure

They attempted to annex France and for more than a century carried on wars which ended in failure.

I. Predatory Policy in the Isles

Selfish Policy of Kings

It was the idea of many rulers of the Middle Ages that they owned their subjects and their domains and that they could use them more for their own profit than for the benefit of the people.

One of the curses of the English people was the ambition of its kings, who coveted the neighboring countries, or overthrew their rulers to establish their own family, or even themselves on the throne.

Attacks on Neighboring Lands

It was not to better the conditions of the neighboring countries, which were more advanced than their own, but to further their own aggrandizement. They interfered and intrigued in Ireland and entered it in 1170, without any right whatever, and without ever being able to extend their power beyond the east coast. For five hundred years they were the disturbing element in Ireland, setting up chieftains against the legitimate rulers, while the last four hundred years, they treated Ireland as a conquered country.

Ireland

Wales was conquered from the year 1276 to 1284.

Wales

The English kings tried to interfere in Scotland by every means, and to treat it as a fief, but the Scots

Scotland

united and beat them at the famous battle of Bannockburn, 1313. The Scots kept their local independence a century after their king had ascended the throne of England.

II *Dynastic Policy Abroad*

France

As to the holding of French fiefs, and the claiming of the French crown, they were policies for the individual advancement of kings, not for the benefit of the English, far less of the French people. They had more than they could do to govern the independent spirits of England, and they exhausted the men and means of both France and England for their vain ambitions and dreams of conquest. The curse of a hundred years' war to death, between two great countries was due to the dynastic ambitions, which could not be realized permanently, as the French people would never tolerate to be treated as vassals by an English potentate; far less could the two nations be fused into one.

100 Years War for Idle Dreams

Enormous Fiefs

By marrying Eleanor of Poitoo Henry II 1155-85 held western France, which however was lost by his son John Lackland.

Family War In France

The Century War in France, was fought to set on the throne of France English kings, the descendants from the Valois in the female line, which had no political right of inheritance in France. It was simply a family war between the nearest relatives living in different countries. In the fifteenth century the English branches were overthrowing each other and crimsoned the whole land by their own personal quarrels. The reigning legitimate heir was overthrown by the Lancaster branch in 1399, which was supplanted by the York branch in 1461.

Civil Wars in England

The War of the Roses (1453-1485) between the Lancaster and the Yorks was no more than a civil war,

carried on for personal motives, of the interested candidates, and their brothers and sisters. Regicide lost its horrors. Murder and confiscation raged over England as they had raged during the darkest periods of civil wars in Rome.

Murder and Plunder

In 1485, the Tudors seized the throne; they were related to the royal house in the female line. Some of the Tudor princes were as cruel against their nearest relatives, as their Plantagenet predecessors had been.

Tudors Little Improvement

Those useless wars weighed heavily upon the people, but they were not more frequent than in the continent of Europe where they were real national wars, undertaken to defend the integrity or the very existence of large countries.

Simply Dynastic Affairs

The Farmers Protected

The people had no share in the wars, except to help pay the expenses, and those were heavy. They personally could attend to their farms. It is true most of the estates had been confiscated by the Normans, and some of the ancient nobles now cultivated their farms as renters, although their ancient distinction brought them higher up in the course of generations. Most of the farm work was done by Freemen. The farmers were always kept free from these struggles and protected in their work. The English are too practical to neglect farming, the great mother of wealth and prosperity.

Farming Done by Ancient Nobles or Freemen

Agriculture Protected

III. Era: Democratic Policy

Democratic Struggles and Triumphs 1215

What the Englishmen prize above anything else is personal liberty—they secured and defended their personal rights during the Middle Ages; but they were robbed of them by the autocratic kings of the Reformation period.

Encroachment Upon the Liberty of the People

The kings so ambitious to extend their power outside did not fail to extend and enlarge it inside. But the very expenses of the war, the very levies and foreign expeditions, gave the nobility and the freemen the chance to assert their rights, before granting the subsidies and soldiers, who were needed.

John Lackland Mean Murderer

Henry II, 1154-1189, the first Plantagenet, had two sons—Richard Coeur de Lion, 1189-1199, the hero of the third crusade, and John Lackland, 1199-1216. Before starting for Palestine, Richard had raised high taxes for the expedition. His unworthy brother, John, took advantage of this levy to arouse the subjects against his brother; he also imprisoned his nephew Geoffrey, whom the old paternal estates in France wished to have for their duke; but John got a hold of him and had him put to death, so as to inherit the French as well as the

Deprived of French Fiefs

English possessions of his father. The king of France, Philip Augustus, declared that John had forfeited his French fiefs, and confiscated them. John entered a league against Philip, but he was beaten at the battle of Bouvines, and the English possessions in France were lost.

Opposition to Langton Brings Surrender of Kingdom as a Fief

Opposing Stephen Langton, the papal appointee for the see of Canterbury, John Lackland entered in conflict with the Great Pope Innocent III, who interdicted the kingdom, and threatened the king with excommunication and deposition. Moved by fear of losing his throne, John finally yielded, received Langton, and offered his kingdom as fief to the Papacy.

Revolted Nobles

The protection of the Pope saved him his throne. But the enfeoffment of the kingdom to the Papacy awakened indignation throughout England, and the insults and outrages which John had heaped upon his nobles, led to

Compel to Confirm the Ancient Liberties

an open revolt of the barons, who were guided in this step by the patriotic Stephen Langton. The movement

King John Lackland
Archbishop Stephen Langton
1212-1215

was an uprising of the whole nation, determined upon the recovery of their ancient liberties. The tyrant was forced to bow before them, and to sign the great charter of liberties at the prairie of Runnymede, the year 1215.

The Charter of Liberties

Charter's Main Clauses

The provisions of this charter applied to the commons as well as to the nobles and directed that its benefits should reach the lower tenants. The principal clauses of the Magna Charta were:

1. General ratification of all the time-honored liberties.

2. Security for personal freedom: No freeman should be taken, imprisoned or damaged in person or estate, but by the judgment of his peers, or by the law of the land.

3. Regulation of feudal dues and obligations, of national taxation, and of especial assessments, which are limited to three occasions—the ransom of the lord, the knighting of his eldest son, and the marriage of his eldest daughter.

4. Specification of members of the great council, and of the cases for which, and manner in which, it should be convened.

Guaranty

To secure the observance of the charter, the barons exacted that the tower and city of London should be put in their hands as a pledge, and also that twenty-five barons be appointed as guardians of the liberties of the realm with the right to declare war against the king, should he violate his oath. Thus carefully guarded, the great document became the palladium of English freedom. It secured constitutional liberty as an inheritance for the English speaking people in all parts of the world, and it must be considered as the most important concession that a freedom-loving people ever wrenched from a tyrannical sovereign.

Palladium of Constitutional Liberty

Monograph: History of Parliament

I.—FORMATION OF PARLIAMENT

Beginning of the House of Commons

A New Tyrant

Myers—"The reign of Henry III, 1216-1272, John's son and successor witnessed the second important step in English constitutional freedom. This was the foundation of the House of Commons, Parliament having up to this time consisted of a single House made up of nobles and bishops.

"Henry III had become more tyrannical than his father. He had violated his oath to rule according to the Great Charter, had filled the offices of the kingdom with foreign favorites, and extorted money from the people during a famine. The barons flew to arms and defeated and captured him.

Simon de Montfort Starts the Practice of Representation

"Simon de Montfort, his brother-in-law, did that which entitles him to the lasting gratitude of the English people. He issued in the king's name writs of summons to the nobles and bishops to meet in Parliament, and at the same time sent similar writs to the sheriffs of the different shires directing them 'to return two knights' for the body of their country, with two citizens or burghers for every city and borough contained in it.

Burghers Sitting with the Lords

"This was the first time that plain, untitled citizens or burghers were called to take their place with the knights, lords and bishops, in the great council of the nation, to join in deliberations on the affairs of the realm. From this event is dated the birth of the House of Commons, (1265). Formed as it was of knights and burghers, representatives of the common people, it was naturally at first a weak and timorous body quite overawed by the great lords; but destined finally to grow into the controlling branch of the British parliament."

"At first the burghers could only take part in questions relating to taxation, but gradually they acquired the right to share in all matters that might come before parliament. It is probable that the commons first sat in Westminster Hall with the lords, though their votes were kept distinct. But very soon (in the reign of Edward I), we find them gathered in a separate chamber."

Formation in Two Centuries

The English Parliament

The thirteenth century marks the formation; the fourteenth century is notable for the development of the privileges of parliament. In the fourteenth century, England was fully equipped with two representative chambers, who carried on a constitutional government.

Most Famous Assemblage

Save perhaps the Roman Senate, there have never been in the world parliaments that lasted so long, ruled such wide regions, and decided such momentous questions, as the British Parliament.

The Arsenal of Liberty

Parliament

The English Parliament ever since became the rostrum where national and universal questions were debated, with full liberty, great sagacity and fiery eloquence.

Arena

The English Parliament was the mental battlefield where the statesmen came to propose their plans for the welfare of the country; and their opponents scrutinized the new laws in all their bearings, and where the wisest Englishmen in full light of the question made them binding or rejected them.

Battlefield

Arsenal

The English Parliament may be called the Arsenal of Liberty, as it framed the laws to protect the rights of all; its members were the elected and the sworn defenders of liberty.

Essence of Constitutional Government

It contained the very essence of constitutional government. It convened the representatives of every class of the nation to discuss every public question and decide them on its merits. Those continuous debates schooled the Englishmen for public life and prepared them for self-government.

The Two Chambers

House of Commons

Commons: The people especially the common people as distinguished from their rulers or the ruling class.

In the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and in the Dominion of Canada, the lower house of Parliament, consisting in both instances of the commoners chosen by the people as their representatives: *The House of Commons.* It has 670 members.

House of Lords

Lords: A title of honor in Great Britain given to those who are noble by birth or by creation, applied also to peers of the realm of Scotland and of Ireland. The House of Lords is the upper of the two branches of Parliament of Great Britain and Ireland, divided into the lords spiritual and temporal. The full assembly would consist of 3 princes of the blood royal, 2 archbishops, 22 dukes, 23 marquises, 123 earls, 42 viscounts, 24 bishops, 348 barons, 16 Scotch representative peers, and 28 Irish representative peers; total 631.

The Supreme Legislature

Parliament

"The supreme legislative body of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, consisting of the three estates of the realm, namely the lords spiritual, the lords temporal, and the commons; the general council of the nation, constituting the legislature, summoned by the sovereign's authority to consult on the affairs of the

nation and to enact and repeal laws. Primarily the sovereign may be considered as a constituent element of Parliament; but the word as generally used has exclusive reference to the three estates above named, ranged in two distinct branches, the House of Lords and the House of Commons. The House of Lords includes the lords spiritual and lords temporal. The House of Commons consists of 670 members: viz, for England and Wales, 253 representatives of county constituencies (counties or divisions of Counties), 237 of boroughs, and 5 of universities; for Scotland, 39 representatives of counties, 31 of boroughs, and 2 of universities; for Ireland, 85 representatives of counties, 16 of boroughs, and 2 of a university. The authority of Parliament extends over the United Kingdom and all its colonies and foreign possessions. The duration of a Parliament was fixed by the Septennial Act of 1716 at seven years, but it seldom ever approaches its limit. Sessions are held annually, usually from about the middle of February to the end of August, and are closed by prorogation. Government is administered by the ministry, which is sustained by a majority in the House of Commons. Should the ministry be outvoted in the house on a question of vital importance, it either resigns office or dissolves Parliament and appeals to the country."—*Cent. Dict.*

Orders

Numbers

Majority

The precursors of the Parliament were the Witenagemot in the Anglo-Saxon period and the National Council in the Norman and Angevin periods. The composition and powers of Parliament were developed in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries; the right of representation from shires and towns dates from 1265, and the separation of the two houses dates from the middle of the fourteenth century. Parliamentary government was in large measure suspended from 1461 to

History

the middle of the reign of Henry VIII. Prolonged struggles between the Parliament and the crown took place under James I and Charles I, which led to the Civil War and the Commonwealth.

Object of Two Chambers

Check Upon One Another

Besides handling different matters, the two chambers serve as a salutary check upon one another and procure the advantages of a prudent conservatism and a sound progressiveness.

Gradual Democratization of the Government

There were fierce struggles between the conservative Lords and the progressive Commoners with the result that the latter gained continually in power. However, there was no sudden break with the past; but a gradual democratization of the government, with the result that in the United Kingdom the Commons became in our times the main legislative body. This does not mean that the great conservative forces are discarded; but that they divide the powers with the people, and that the British form a self-governing nation. Although the British Isles are called the United Kingdom, they are as democratic as any republic in the world; the royalty forming a salutary balance of power between the contending parties.

Royalty Form Balance of Power Between Parties

II—ECLIPSE OF PARLIAMENTARY FREEDOM

Revival of Autocracy: Religious Tyranny

Eclipse of Parliamentary Freedom

There came a time of eclipse for parliament, the time of the Reformation, in which the reformers tried to impose their will upon everybody else. The Tudors started, and the Stuarts continued to dictate their will in religious matters, and all ended in doing the same thing in temporal matters. Controlling the majority of votes.

by the manipulation of the electors, they made the parliament vote their commands. Having embraced the new form of Christianity, they proceeded to force the conscience of their subjects, and ordered them to abandon their ancient faith for the new one.

Enslavement by Tudors and Stuarts

It was contrary to all existing laws to force a freeman to give up his liberty or his faith; here it was done under pain of confiscation and execution. The Englishmen, so zealous of their liberty, were now bidden to adopt the ideas of their rulers under awful threats. The property, the person, the ideas of an Englishman were protected by the law; but the rulers forced the Parliament to outlaw the Catholics and the Dissenters; to take their property and their life, because they would not conform to their faith of yesterday. Not only did the royal masters, but the republican Cromwell dictate their will to the Parliament and make laws so that they could legally persecute more than the half of the Englishmen. Henry VIII and Elizabeth, Oliver Cromwell and James I, played with Parliament as with a football, and made it adopt and legalize all their schemes of oppression. They used the Parliament only to register their odious acts of persecution.

Attacked by a Servile Parliament

Under the Command of Despotic Rulers

It is true that many members of the Parliament had turned Protestant themselves, for the sake of the ecclesiastical estates which had been confiscated by the Protestant rulers, and were granted to Protestant zealots. As bad as their sovereigns, they found their pleasure and their profit in tormenting and robbing their fellow citizens; it satisfied their hatred and their cupidity. After being subdued and enslaved themselves by autocratic masters, the members of Parliament became the persecutors and tormentors of their own brothers.

Members of Parliament Had Become Radical Protestants

Bulwark of Liberty Becomes Its Tormentor

That bulwark of liberty, the English Parliament, the protector of every right, now became itself an instrument of despotism, and its members grasping looters and blood-thirsty tormentors.

Blind Hatred Against the Catholic Church

What has turned those otherwise liberty-loving men into the scourges of their fellow citizens? Nothing could so pervert and incense men than the irreligious hatred of those who had apostatized from their faith. Railed up by the most persistent calumnies against the ancient church, they dreaded the Pope as the archdespot of the world, the archfiend of mankind, that planned to enslave every human being under his yoke.

Strife Between Parliament and Crown Lasts Till 1689

The ancient and persistent strife between the Parliament and the crown was brought to an end by William III of Orange himself, who asserted in the declaration of rights, the true, ancient and indubitable rights of the people of this realm, such as the inviolability of the person and property of fellow citizens, 1689.

Persecution of Catholics Accentuated

One autocracy, however, remained: The autocracy of the Protestants over the Catholics. There remained one crying despotism in the English constitution, to-wit: The religious tyranny, persecuting Catholics for their conscientious convictions. William of Orange was more guilty than anyone else in that discrimination, which he pushed and accentuated because it supported his claim to the throne of England.

James II Deposed for Granting Liberty to All

King James II, who had granted liberty of conscience to all his subjects, Protestants and Catholics alike, was deposed and his sister Mary and his brother-in-law, William of Orange, were elected in his place. Of course, neither William, nor his wife were ignorant of the Protestant plot against their brother.

William III Invited to Maintain Liberty

It is to the eternal shame of Mary and her sister Ann Stuart to have conspired against their own brother and have driven him from his throne, which they occupied themselves.

For Protestants Alone

It is in vain that William declares to the people of England that he accepts their invitation for the purpose of securing the religious and civil rights of Englishmen. The inconsistency is patent.—King James is driven away because he grants liberty to all; William comes from Holland to deprive the Catholics of their liberty. That glaring inconsistency was accepted in those times, —now it looks like an absurd deceit and a shameful imposition.

Bitter Antagonism to Catholics

Catholics Boycotted

The Englishmen could compose their differences in everything else, except on the Catholic church; they granted liberty to dissenters of every kind, but never to the Catholics. There were fierce disputes between the Episcopalians and the Presbyterians, between the Anglicans and the Puritans, but these seldom proceeded into the brutal plunder, execution or deportation meted out to the Catholics. There is one thing they all agreed upon: to destroy the Catholic church, and to exterminate her members in the British Isles. They all combined against the ancient church; they inspired through England the greatest fear for her political intrigues, and nourished an undying hatred against her children, who were outlawed and exiled en masse.

Excluded from Throne

Exposed to Dynastic Wars

This hostility was officially expressed in the new constitution of 1689 by the exclusion of the Catholic heirs from the throne of England. That unjust discrimination exposed England to dynastic wars, which had so often tormented her in the past ages and indeed caused new uprisings, the excluded Stuarts started insurrections for

a century to recuperate the throne of their fathers, from the foreigners that had seized upon it.

And Inexperienced Rulers

This hostility moreover brought a foreign dynasty in the realm simply because they were Protestants, and not for any particular qualification to reign in England. In fact, the Hanoverian prince who came knew nothing about the customs and even the language of his people, and cut no figure in the realm. It lasted a century before his successors were Anglicized.

III—LIBERAL AWAKENING OF PARLIAMENT

Centuries of Fear

It took several centuries before Parliament could shake off the ungrounded fear of Papal domination, and the foolish and iniquitous legislation against Catholic Ireland. The great Gladstone sincerely endeavored to break down the mountain of injustice piled up in the sister Island, and several times lost his majority on that question of justice to the immediate subjects of the crown.

Mountain of Iniquities

Gladstone's Efforts for Justice

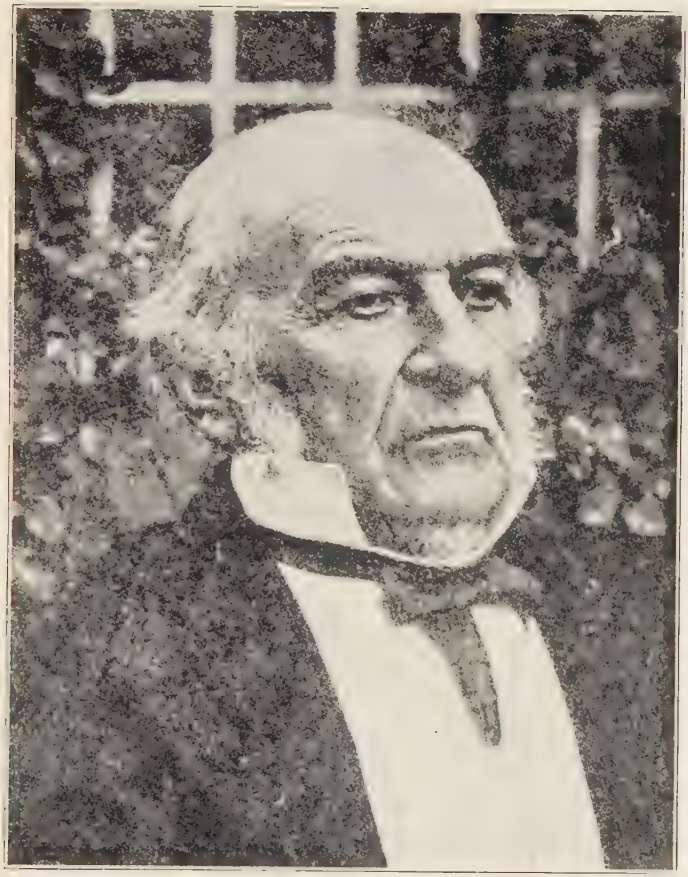
Lords Renewed

The House of Lords was most stubborn in its opposition, and it was renewed in its membership, and the home rule bill was voted before the great war; but it was not put in operation. If justice is not done, it will bring on the ruin of the empire.

Parliament Too Big to Be Stopped by Local Questions

Parliament ought not to be deadlocked on internal questions of justice; for it has world problems to discuss and to solve. It is not any more the chamber of a great state in Europe, but of great states in the different continents of the Universe. It is a world parliament in the sense that it rules parts of every continent of the globe—one-seventh of the land area of the earth, one-fourth of the human race belongs to the British. The world empire is the work of the British Parliament. It is the wise policy of its sensible members, the genius of its great

World Parliament



William Gladstone
The Greatest of English Statesmen
1809-1898

leaders that have united so many peoples under the English flag, all of whom are satisfied and happy under her rule, except the one persecuted sister nation. The greatest proof of the allegiance of the colonies was their loyalty during the savage attack of the German war Lord, who had sent his spies and paid traitors to alienate them from the mother country.

That Is Loyal

Parliament held the peoples together through its policy of justice to the subject or allied peoples. Every people that is wronged by the imperial agents, has a right of appeal to the Parliament, whether the wrong is done by incapacity or by dishonesty. The most noble accents of eloquence have rung through the Westminster halls against Englishmen that abused their power in a subject nation. As a sample of this, fierce indictments is given in a peroration of one of Burke's philippics against Warren Hastings.

A Court of Appeal for Subject Peoples

Fiery Denunciation of Evil Doers

Burke's Peroration of Opening Speech Against Hastings

"In the name of the Commons of England, I charge all this villany upon Warren Hastings, in this last moment of my application to you.

"My Lords, what is it that we want here to a great act of national justice? Do we want a cause, my Lords? You have the cause of oppressed princes, of undone women of the first rank, of desolated provinces and of wasted kingdoms.

Solemn Case

"Do you want a criminal, my Lords? When was there so much iniquity ever laid to the charge of any one? No, my Lords, you must not look to punish any other such delinquent from India. Warren Hastings had not left substance enough in India to nourish such another delinquent.

"My Lords, is it a prosecutor you want? You have before you the Commons of Great Britain as prosecutors; and I believe, my Lords, that the sun, in its beneficent progress round the world, does not behold a more glorious sight than that of men, separated from a remote people by the material bounds and barriers of nature, united by the bond of a social and moral community—all the Commons of England resenting, as their own, the indignities and cruelties, that are offered to all the people of India.

All the Authorities of the Empire

"Do we want a tribunal? My Lords, no example of antiquity, nothing in the modern world, nothing in the range of human imagination, can supply us with a tribunal like this. My Lords, here we see virtually, in the mind's eye, that sacred majesty of the Crown, under whose authority you sit and whose power you exercise.

"We have here all the branches of the royal family, in a situation between majesty and subjection, between the sovereign and the subject—offering a pledge, in that situation, for the support of the rights of the Crown and the liberties of the people,—both which extremities they touch.

"My Lords, we have a great hereditary peerage here; those who have their own honor, the honor of their ancestors, and of their posterity, to guard, and who will justify, as they always have justified, that provision in the Constitution by which justice is made an hereditary office.

"My Lords, we have here a new nobility, who have risen, and exalted themselves by various merits, by great civil and military services, which have extended the fame of this country from the rising to the setting sun.

"My Lords, you have here, also, the lights of our religion; you have the bishops of England. My Lord, you

have that true image of the primitive Church in its ancient form, in its ancient ordinances, purified from the superstitions and the vices which a long succession of ages will bring upon the best institutions.

"My Lords, these are the securities which we have in all the constituent parts of the body of this House. We know them, we reckon, we rest upon them, and commit safely the interests of India and of humanity into your hands. Therefore, it is with confidence, that, ordered by the Commons,

"I impeach Warren Hastings, Esquire, of high crimes and misdemeanors. **Crimes**

"I impeach him in the name of the Commons of Great Britain, in Parliament assembled, whose parliamentary trust he has betrayed.

"I impeach him in the name of all the Commons of Great Britain, whose national character he has dishonored.

"I impeach him in the name of the people of India, whose laws, rights, and liberties he has subverted, whose property he has destroyed, whose country he has laid waste and desolate.

"I impeach him in the name, and by virtue of those eternal laws of justice which he has violated.

"I impeach him in the name of human nature itself, which he has cruelly outraged, injured, and oppressed, in both sexes, in every age, rank, situation, and condition of life."

IV Era: Imperial Policy

Consistent World Policy

The aloofness of England from European entanglements gave her the time to get control of the best parts of the earth which were just being discovered and to build up the greatest colonial empire of the world. If **Aloofness from European Continent**

Influence and Empire in Every Continent

she was drawn into continental wars or politics, she managed to get returns for her expenses in the other parts of the world. The consideration of those conquests and spheres of influence belongs more to the different parts of the world where they happened, than to England alone, and will be treated in other parts of this work.

(*An estimate of British colonization has been given, page 32.*)

Chronicles

I Period—Nomadic Times

I—MIGRATIONS OF SAXONS

Resistance to Anglo-Saxon

Abandoned in 410, attacked by Caledonians, calls Jutes. Hengist and Horsa, 449, who are followed by Angles and Saxons. Struggle of Arthur against Cerdic of Wessex. Two centuries of warfare drive the Britons to Wales and Britanny. They

Four Kingdoms

founded Celtic kingdoms of Cumbria, Cumberland; Cambria, Wales; Damnonia, Cornwall in England and Britanny in France.

Heptarchy Under Bretwaldas

Seven Kingdoms League Under Bretwaldas

There were first nine, and then seven Anglo-Saxon kingdoms. Kent, 454-805. Sussex, 477-725. Wessex, 519-828. Essex 527-823. East Anglia 575-823. Bernicia and Deira united in Northumbria, 600. Mercia, 593-827.

These states were not connected, and were exposed to the fierce attacks of the Celts and the Caledonians. For common defense they federated under a chief called Bretwalda.

The third Bretwalda, *Ethelbert-St. Bertha* is baptized by St. Augustine, 597-604. *Conversion.*

Rivalry

Struggles between three rival states. I. Northumbria, 617. Edwin Christian is slain by the pagan Penda of Mercia, 635-55, who is slain himself by Oswiu, 655-59 and whose son Paeda becomes a Christian. II. 700. Mercia or Middle Anglia. Offa 758-796. III. Wessex kept down by civil wars; 786, Egbert driven away by rival, flees to France, learns from Charlemagne, is recalled.

Monarchy

Anglo-Saxon Kings Egbert

Egbert, 802-37, subdues the other kings, repels the Britons and Danes who waste under his successors; makes feudal mon-

archy. Ethelwulf=Judith, daughter of Charles the Bald of France.

INVASIONS OF SCANDINAVIANS, 832-1066

871-901. *Alfred the Great* conquers Danes: Gothrum at Ethandan, still cedes part of England to the Danes (Danelaugh), he creates a fleet, fortifies the mouths of rivers, translates four books and favors letters. Edward continues work. *Athelstan,* king of the English, subdues mostly all England; gives sisters to European princes. 955, *Edwy,* corrupt, opposes the reforms of Dunstan, which are sanctioned by brother Edgar. His second wife Elfride murders his son King Edward the martyr.

978-1016. Aethelred the Unready marries Norman princess to get help against Danes, buys thirteen years of peace, and as they exact more, exterminates them the day of St. Brice, 1002. Defeated by Swend who conquers England, he retires to Normandy, 1016. His son *Edmund Ironside* retakes south, dies.

Struggles for Supremacy

Danish Supremacy, 1016-1044.

Canute the Great is elected, subdues the island, marries Emma, Ethelred's widow; favors English and trade.

Three Danish Kings

1035. *Harold.* 1039. *Hardicanut.*

1044-66. *Saxon St. Edward, the Confessor* recalled from Normandy, publishes the Saxon statutes: The laws and customs of good king Edward.

Two Saxon Kings

1066. *Saxon Harold,* elected, crushes the Danes at Stamford bridge, but is slain by the Normans at Hastings: conquest.

Harold Hero

II Period—Predatory Conquest, 1066-1215

1066-1154. *Norman Dynasty.* Violent.

William I, The Conqueror. Conspiracy of the nobles; fiefs to Normans, French Language. Census: doomsday book; subdues Malcolm of Scotland, violence of three sons. The conqueror's eldest son, Robert, revolts, obtains Normandy. 1057, William II —Rufus robs churches. 1100, *Henry I, Beauclerc,* usurps Robert's rights, captures him, and keeps him in prison twenty-eight years, and drives away his son William of Normandy. *Struggle of Investitures* against St. Anselm and Pope Pascal II, convention of Bec; liberty of Church and nobility recognized. 1137, nephew *Stephen of Blois* excludes Henry's daughter Mathilde, wife of Geoffrey of Anjou. David of Scotland defends her (his

French Influence

Violent Sons

Succession Wars

niece) by two expeditions. Her son Henry invades and after the death of Stephen's son is recognized. Meanwhile the Barons plunder and fortify their castles.

Anarchy and Plunder by Barons

1155-1585, *Plantagenets.*

Henry II=Eleanor of Poitou was already master or vassal of one-half of western France—wars with France stopped by St. Thomas a Becket. Invasion of Ireland. Struggle against the nobles—St. Thomas a Becket; Constitution of Clarendon, etc., subject the clergy to the king; exile and murder of St. Thomas. Revolt of sons aided by France and Scotland.

Murders Persecution Interdict

Two sons, 1189, *Richard Coeur de Lion* taxes for third crusade; intrigues of brother *John Lackland,* 1199-1216, he fights and kills nephew Arthur, persecutes Langton, (Interdict) nobles who call Louis VIII of France.

As a measure of protection, John submits to the Pope, declares England a Papal fief and leagues with Emperor Otto IV, and Ferrand of Flanders, etc., who are beaten at Bouvines by Philip Augustus, 1214. French fiefs lost.

III Period—Democratic Struggles, 1215

Great Charter of Liberties

1212-15. *Concession of the Great Charter of Liberties* granting liberty in person, limiting taxation, allowing choice of prelates.

1216. *Henry III* favors French, and wife Eleanor of Provence. Violation of charter revolt of the Nobles under brother-in-law Simon de Montfort. 1240-60, Mad parliament of Oxford curtails the royal power. 1264, battles of Lewes and capture of royal family. 1265, Parliament of Simon de Montfort. Beside the prelates and the barons sit four delegates of each shire; two knights from each shire, and two deputies from each city—origin of the house of commons. Montfort and son are slain at Evesham. 1272-1307. *Edward I* repairs through energy and justice; banishes the Jews. He subdues Wales. Arbitrates in Scotland for the succession to the throne, he imposes the oath of allegiance to the nobles, and makes king *John Baliol* subject to England who revolts and is conquered. The Scots revolt under *William Wallace* who wins at Sterling, 1292, loses at Falkirk, 1298; they are freed by *Robert Bruce* at Bannockburn, 1313, *Independence of Scotland.*

House of Commons

Conquest of Wales

Liberty of Scotland

IV Period, Dynastic Wars, 1307-1537

1307-1327. *Edward II,* under courtiers and *Isabella* of France, who kills two English courtiers, governs with Mortimer, imprisons and kills the king, claims France for son Edward III. **Isabella Claims France**

Edward III, 1327-77. 100 Years' War. 1339-1454. First war, success of Edward, Black Prince, but expulsion by Duguesclin, only three cities are left. Wool markets of Flanders whose weavers are introduced in England. The appeals for taxes raise the power of Parliament. **100 Years' War** **Woolen Industries**

1377-1399. *Grandson Richard II,* troubles occasioned by Wycliffe and revolts of the peasants, and by uncles regents: Clarence, Lancaster, York. Lancaster's son Henry deprived of dukedom takes the king, exacts abdication. **Troubles** **Uncle Crowns Own Son**

1399-1461. *Lancaster House.*

Henry IV, 1397-1413, represses the revolted barons: the Percy of Northumberland, and the Welsh; and raises Parliament. 1413-1422, *Henry V,* II War, 1415-54, invades France with Philip the Good of Burgundy, wins at Agincourt, enters Paris, marries Catherine of Valois; recognized as *King of France.* 1422-72. *Henry VI* victories until Joan of Arc delivers Orleans, 1428, and then comes loss of everything except Calais. Dissatisfaction nourished by Richard of York the pretender descendent of (Mortimer) Clarence. **Barons Lowered Commons Elevated** **Henry V** **Catherine Valois** **Suzerains of France**

1453-85. *War of the Roses.* Cousin Richard of York takes king, but is overcome by Queen *Margaret of Anjou* and killed.

1461-83. *Yorks. Son Edward IV.* 1461-83 conquers at Towton, Warwick the King maker the last Baron, restores Henry VI, who with his son is captured and killed by Edward IV, execution of Brother Clarence, accused by Richard of Glocester, who becomes regent for nephews Edward V and Richard and kills them. **Risings**

1483-85 *Richard III.* The nobles call Henry VII Tudor of the youngest branch of Lancaster, who marries Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV, slays Richard III and Bosworth—executes Warwick, the last York, 1499. The barons had destroyed each other. **Dynastic Wars and Murders**

Tudors, 1485-1603.

Henry VII, avarice, struggle with nobles. Margaret and James IV of Scotland, (Arthur) Henry=Catherine Aragon.

V Period, 1531

Protestantism, Return of Autocracy

Divorce Refused; Schism, Persecution Confiscation

1509-47. *Henry VIII.* "Defender of the faith" against Luther 1522, wants divorce from Catherine of Aragon, for Anne Boleyn. 1529 dismisses Cardinal Wolsey, 1531, claims supremacy in the church. 1533, Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury pronounces the divorce. Cromwell exacts the oath of supremacy, issues a commission to inspect the monasteries, which are confiscated and blown up; 1535-38, is executed himself. Henry robs and kills 72,000 people; six wives persecuted.

Heresy Organized

Church Established by Law

1547. *Edward VI,* Seymour; Protector Somerset and Cranmer organize Lutheran Protestantism—a church established by law. Somerset executed by brother Northumberland, who produces daughter-in-law Jane Grey as queen.

1553. *Mary=Philip II* of Spain restores liberty to Catholics, executes none but criminals.

Mary Stuart Murdered

1558-1603. *Elizabeth* makes England Protestant, against Mary Stuart, the legitimate heir, who is driven out of Scotland, decoyed into England, kept in prison, 1568-87, executed by Elizabeth. 1588, excommunication. Attack by the Invincible Armada of Philip II, which is destroyed by a storm. England becomes the mistress of the seas; Drake preys upon the Spanish vessels.

Armada of Spain Dispersed

Persecutions

Fierce persecutions against priests by Cecil; penalties against nonconformists, murder of 30,000 persons. Anglican hierarchy by Parker, thirty-nine articles of faith.

1603-1714. *Stuarts* bring Scotland.

Great Britain 1603

Plantation of Ulster

1603-25. James I. Gun-powder plot inspired to anger James against Catholics; plantation of Ulster, penal laws, Episcopalianism imposed. Absolutism opposed by the Commons. King James' Bible.

Episcopalianism Imposed

1625-48. *Charles I*=Henrietta of France. Opposition of three Parliaments to Buckingham, Strafford, Laud, Episcopalianism imposed in Scotland. Resistance of Covenant Presbyterians, 1629. Taxation without parliament, opposition of Independents. John Hampden (Puritans). Fourth or Long Parliament, 1640-49.

Opposed by Parliaments

Revolution refuses subsidies. Charles fights; defeated by Fairfax and Oliver Cromwell at Marston Moor and Naseby, he flees to the Scots who surrender him. Cromwell drives the Presbyterians from Parliament. Fifth parliament or Rump, condemns the king who is executed.

Puritans Execute King

1649-60. *Republic,* under *Oliver Cromwell,* who convokes Parliament, "Praise God Barebone;" disperses two other parliaments. Subdues Ireland and Scotland. 1652, Navigation act against Dutch; war; defeat of Dutch; Spaniards, and allies with France. Son Richard cannot govern. Monk marches upon London. Charles recalled.

Cromwells Commonwealth

Subdues Ireland Scotland

1660-89. *Restoration—King Charles II=Catherine of Portugal,* prodigal but cautious. Conversion of James and declaration of Indulgence. 1673 test oath; denying the real presence exacted from all officers, 1678. Forged conspiracy of Titus Oates to implicate all Catholics. Whigs oppose king's brother who is upheld by the Tories. 1685-89. *James II,* brother, grants liberty of conscience to all, but the Anglicans raise illegitimate brother Monmouth, who is executed, and two daughters, who were the wives of foreign princes. Three Jacobite risings.

Conversion of Brother James II

Dethroned for Protestant Relatives

Revival of Democracy

Revolution. Authority from King to Parliament, 1689-1702. *Mary=William III Dutch,* must recognize the franchises of England as set forth in declaration of rights (taxation), Presbyterianism in Scotland. Democratic revolution. Thwarts Louis XIV, conquers James II, and French at the Boyne in Ireland, where he persecutes and confiscates in favor of Protestant strangers.

Wars Against Louis XIV

VI Period 1660-1789: Colonies

1702-14. *Ann=George Dane.* Exploits of Marlborough in the Spanish succession war; acquisition of Acadia and Gibraltar —but recall on account of the violence of the Whigs. Efforts of Tories to seat Brother *James II,* but Whigs and Anglicans call a third descendant of James I.

In Spanish Succession War Acadia Gibraltar

1714. *House of Hanover, George I* taken for his Protestantism does not know the language and the customs of his realm, and has no control of the government. Rise of the commons.

Confiscation of Scottish Clanlands

During Succession Colonies Quarrels

1727. *George II,* Walpole strengthens the Germans; loses in the Austrian succession war.

The young pretender, *Charles Edward,* wins twice and marches upon London, is beaten at Culloden. Fighting France in Austrian and Prussian wars, the English conquer Canada, Florida and India (Clives); allowed possession in peace of Paris, 1763. *Pitt* pacifies, increases and organizes the Indian provinces, where the natives had revolted.

Loss of United States Compensated by Conquest of India

1760-1820. *George III,* war of robbed Hindoos, Hyder Ali 1767, Marattas 1780, who are reduced by Hastings; Tipu gained by Napoleon is conquered by Wellington. Ruin of finances. Tax on tea imposed by *North,* refused in America. 1773-83, *American War of Independence;* unequal contest of Washington until the European intervention, 1778—surrender of Cornwallis, 1781, recognition of American independence at peace of Versailles, 1783, loss compensated by Indian Empire, which is consolidated 1782-1800.

Irish Parliament

Irish parliament, trade fostered, population doubled, relief act because of the French Revolution, 1791. Rebellion of the United Irishmen provoked by Castlereagh, fired by French Revolutionists,

Suppressed

failure of Hoche to land, defeat by 150,000 men under Cornwallis—parliamentary union with England.

VII Period, 1789, Imperial

French Fleets Destroyed

Pitt, 1806, sacrifices money and men to prevent Napoleon from founding a universal monarchy; during the first coalition the English seize the Dutch colonies. Napoleon invades Egypt, con-

Trafalgar

quers the Mamelukes, the French fleet is destroyed by Nelson at Aboukir. 1805, Third coalition negotiated by Pitt. Franco-

Peninsular War Expels Napoleon From Spain

Spanish fleet beaten at Trafalgar by Nelson, 1806. Decree of continental blockade. English seize the Danish fleet, expel the French from Portugal, are expelled from Spain by Napoleon himself, 1809, but return. Wellington helps to expel the French from Spain and to beat Napoleon at Waterloo. By treaty of Vienna, England gained Cape Good Hope, Malta, it had Ceylon and Trinidad, 1802, possessed Australia. London becomes the

Second American War Useless

commercial capital of the world. The second American war, 1812-15, was wantonly provoked and useless. King's insanity—regency of son unpopular who wants a divorce from queen Carolina. 1820-30.

George IV. Struggle of John Russell for reform. *O'Connell,* 1809-47 obtains the abolition of the Act of Test, the emancipation of the Catholics, 1829. Whig Canning favors Greece; Tory Wellington abandons her. Conquest of Burmah, 1828-44. *Brother William IV,* 1830-37. Russell's reform bills granted, gives the seat of rotten boroughs to new cities, and puts the tithes upon the landlords. 1834, slavery is abolished. *Hanover* goes to King's brother Ernest.

Emancipation of Catholics

Abolition of Slavery

1837-1901, *Victoria*=Albert Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, Great Ministers, Wellington, 852. Palmerston, 1865. d'Israeli, 1880. Gladstone, 1898. Who made the world power. Democratic reforms. Famine in Ireland, 1846-47. Corn laws repealed.

Great Ministers

I. *Wars: China and India.* (a) Opium wars with China, 1840; Hong Kong, 1859-60; Peking taken, summer palace destroyed. Seaports open, Christianity tolerated. (b) Afghan wars for mountain frontier, 1814-42. Conquered by Roberts. 1878-80 (c) Annexation of Scindia, 1843. Punjab, 1840. Oudh and Lucknow 1857. 1858-59, *Tyranny and Mutiny;* Sepoy rebellion successful until Havelock and Campbell arrive; and transfer the government to the crown. 1877, *Victoria Empress.* Burmah 1858.

Opium Wars With China and India

Mountain Frontiers

II. *Russia.* (a) 1853-56, Crimean war delays Russian conquest of Turkey. (b) Stop to Russo-Turkish war. 1876-77, obtains Cyprus with Asiatic protectorate. (c) Opposition to advances of Russia in Afghanistan.

Stops Russian Advance Towards Constantinople and Afghanistan

III. *Protectorate of Egypt,* 82, Gordon fights the Madhi, is slain at Khartoum, which is conquered in 1898 by Kitchener.

IV. *In Cape* 1879, Zulu war, Boer wars: 1, 1880-81 republics free. 2, 1899-1900 victorious Dutch overwhelmed by numbers.

Zulu-Boer Wars

V. *Ireland* famine, loss of 2,000,000 in twelve years. 1865, *Fenian* outbreak; 1867, attempts against Canada. *Church* disestablishment; 1870, Land act and Land league of Gladstone; 1877-79 famine, home rule party.

Relief Slow Emigration Outbreaks

1901. Edward VII, Diplomat.

1910. George V remains in his own role.

1914-18. World War. Fleet keeps enemy down. Finances support allies. Army rounds off colonies in the East, fleet to police the oceans.

SECTION III

The Powers of Continental Europe

Continental Europe was mainly divided between the French in the west, the Teutons in the middle, and the Slavs and the Mongolians in the east. Beside them there were a score of minor nations around them, such as the Belgians, Netherlanders and Swiss; German and Slavic fiefs or states.

Two Principal Powers of the West

The leading powers of the West were the French and the Germans. However, there always were buffer states between them, which often attained great importance.

Verdun Division in Three States

In 843 the treaty of Verdun divided the Frankish Empire into a Central, Western and Eastern part (Lotharingia, France and Germany) among the sons of Louis the Mild; Lothaire held the center, bordered by the Rhine and the Alps on the East side and by the Scheldt, Meuse, Saone, Rhone in the west, also Frankish Italy. Ludwig held in general the region lying between the Elbe and the Rhine, Charles the Simple had most of Gaul with the Spanish mark.

Ploetz: "The treaty of Verdun was originally merely a family contract made without regard to national differences. In Ludwig's kingdom the German element was in the majority; in that of Charles' the romance element prevailed. Thus, there developed in the course of the following centuries from the East Frankish element the German, from the West Frankish element the French nationality, the kingdom of Lothaire lacked natural

In the West Development of French, German and Composite Nationalities

boundaries and comprised various nationalities and thus contained within itself the germ of rapid dissolution."

Dynastic Division Gave the National Lines

However, that dynastic division became a permanent division of Europe, hence, may be rightly dated the political division of continental Europe of the West. France and Germany formed the leading states and sometimes absorbed the Central land, but there arose between them free states, which after many vicissitudes still subsist. To wit:—Holland, Belgium, Switzerland and Italy. These secondary states were neither French nor German, but composite having the tongues and the qualifications of both.

The Middle Remains Free

France and Germany Should Remain Equal Rivals

There was a fair equilibrium and healthy competition between the Gaul of the French monarchy and the Germany of the Holy Empire that was bound to safeguard the liberty of Europe as long as they maintained their respective extent and influence. There was danger of German predominance when the Empire acquired eastern Gaul and the wars of France became wars of self defense; this arrangement was not a natural one as it cut away peoples of ancient Gaul which had the same customs, ideals and language as the French. Moreover it was not respected by the Germans, who acquired or conquered eastern Gaul which did not belong to them. When France reconquered or won the Rhone and the upper Moselle and Meuse populations she only took back what was ancient Gaulish domain. The eastern policy of Germany was to conquer Slavish lands as will presently be seen.

Teutons Push West and Eastward

Two Main Powers of the East

Slavs, Mongolians

The Eastern part of continental Europe was mostly inhabited by Slavs and Mongolians. They became the rampart of Europe against the Mohammedan and Pagan hordes of Asia.

Slavs

The Slavs were exposed to the direct attack of the Germans on the west and of the Mongolians on the east. Being an argricultural people they were often overpowered by their warlike neighbors. Still they grew in numbers and spread on all sides until today they are occupying the greater part of Europe.

Main Happenings

The history of the East of Europe is made up of the struggle of the Slavs against the Germans on the West and the infidels on the East and Southeast.

Attacks By Germans

The reconquest of the former German territories in the basin of the Elbe and the Oder and the upper Danube which had been occupied by the Slavs was the eastern policy of Germany throughout the centuries. It was called "Drang nach dem Osten."

Assault By Mongolians

Continual invasion of the Slavic countries by the Mongolians of Europe and Asia, to-wit:—the Finns, the Turks and the Mongols form the bulk of the history of the Baltic and the Black Sea basins. It was an attack of organized barbarians (Turks) against agricultural Slavonic people.

Invincible Tenacity

What stands out here is the unconquerable tenacity of the Slavs, who not only survived these perpetual conflicts but increased and multiplied as it were under the fire of the enemy—and who now outnumber the combined populations of their ancient enemies and push ahead into their territories.

Ugro-Finns of European Features

Mongols Turks

The Mongolian races should be distinguished between the European branches, the Ugro-Finns, who resembled their neighbors, the other natives of Europe, especially the Slavs; and the Asiatic invaders, Mongolo-Turks, who were savage and predatory. The former were the Finns, who were struggling with the elements and the people of the North, and the Bulgars and Magyars who settled in the lower Danubian countries. The latter were

the Mongols, who occupied and dominated Russia for three centuries, and the Turks who made a systematic attack, yea, a siege of Europe for many centuries.

Organized Barbarism from Asia and Africa Attack Europe for Centuries

Barbarism Threatening From Other Parts of World

If the barbarians of the North of Europe had been tamed and settled down, there were powers of barbarism in the south and the east organized for the conquest of the world, to-wit:—the Mohammedan Arabs and Turks and the Pagan Mongols.

Mohammedans.

Unholy War of Mohammedanism

The false prophet had declared a holy (or rather unholy) war against the Christian world which many a time threatened the whole Christendom. For a thousand years the appeal to arms for the imposition of the Koran resounded through Asia and Africa and for thirty generations strove to subdue Europe to the yoke of Mohammed and its ensuing barbarism. Religion as well as civilization seemed doomed to destruction. But there was a central power in Europe that knew how to awaken the nations to their common danger and organized that glorious offensive against the Turks called the Crusades and broke their threatening power. They were the Popes of Rome who stood as guards of the Christian world and who aroused the peoples of France and Spain in the west and of Germany, Poland, Hungary, Austria, Constantinople, Servia and Venice in the east. Europe was saved from the direst of calamities and degradations.

Stemmed by Crusades

Guardians of Europe

Pagans.

Wild Hordes Hold Russia Mongol

Another storm broke loose in the Orient; it devastated the immense countries of Asia and crossed into Europe;

to-wit:—the Mongol hordes aroused and organized by Jenghiz Khan—they found a formidable resistance in Russia—which they conquered entirely and tyrannized for three centuries. Poland, Germany and Hungary although vanquished in the first onslaught, were invaded and laid waste, but they drove away the Asiatic hordes and saved civilization.

Driven Out of Poland and Hungary

If culture was restored to Europe and maintained against those mighty powers of Barbarism, it was due to the vigilant policy of the Church and the growing states of Christendom guided by her progressive spirit.

Maintenance of Civilization

Buffer States

There sprung up several buffer states among those races between the Caspian and the Black Seas. Some of these were pure Mongolians, such as the Comans; some were mixed, as the Alans, and some mostly Aryan, such as the Khazars, the latter being a composite of Scythians, Israelites and Mongolians, who withstood all the pressure of the Mohammedans.

A Mixture of Races

The French

MIXED ORIGIN

Elements: Celtic, Latin, Teutonic

The French are mainly Celts—but Celts improved by the Latin civilization, which for five centuries flourished in Gaul as well as in Italy; the Celts were strengthened by the vigor of the Frankish race—thus culture and strength were combined together in the French people, which became the leader of the new nations of Europe.

Happy Composite Combining the Best of Everything

The Franks, a Teutonic nation, gave their name and their energy to the Gauls and the Gauls impressed their ideals upon their conquerors. In continental Europe the French are the representatives of the Celtic race, of the Latin civilization, and of Teutonic energy. They are the blending of the best elements of western and southern Europe. They form a perfect combination of high ideals and practical sense, undaunted courage and noble charity.

In Three Races

It may seem overdone to attribute to the French three elements of the best peoples that appeared on the earth, but it is true their racial foundation is Celtic, their culture Latin, and their ambition Teutonic. The Latins think and feel in the French, the Celts and Gauls live in the French, the warlike Franks act in the French.

Gauls Greatest of Celts

The Gaels are the purest of the antique Celtic race, but the Gauls of France are their most powerful representatives in the modern world.

Before Christ the Celts had an empire of 1000 years' duration in the heart of Europe. The free and strong representatives of that noble race, whose name has about disappeared from geography, are the Gauls of France who for many centuries were the leaders of continental

Europe and in the awful world's war fought for the liberty of the world.

Caesar said, Gaul is divided in three parts and peoples, into Aquitanians, Gauls and Belgians, all are very brave, but the bravest of them all are the Belgians.

Franks the Leaders of Europe

There were several Neo-Latin, or Latin nations, such as the Franks, the Iberians, the Italians and the Roumanians, but the French outshone them all and have replaced Rome in the political leadership of Europe. They seem to have brought back to continental Europe the arts and sciences of ancient Rome.

There were six German nations, which divided the empire among themselves, but it required several centuries before they could amalgamate with the Latin populations. The Franks at once adopted the customs and religion of the ancient populations of Gaul. Clovis was baptized a Christian in 496 with his whole army, and made himself and his people one with his Gaulish subjects, while the princes of other Germanic nations were either irreconcilable heretics or stubborn pagans who fought the church of the nation for generations. The Franks then had a united kingdom, while the other German chiefs did not know how to bring unity to their realms. They were therefore centuries ahead of their neighbors, and became their leaders and their masters.

Franks Unite with Subjects—

Become the Masters of Other Germans

French Monarchy

MILD POLICY

Great Boon When Government is Not Meddlesome

The function of a government is the safeguarding of the security of the state and the maintenance of order in the land and the protection of life and property. It is not the business of the government to interfere in the affairs of the citizens.

One of the greatest boons for a nation is that the government perform its work defending the country, and maintaining order, and does not hamper the liberty of its citizens, but leaves them free in the pursuit of happiness.

Monarchy Mild

This has been the history of the monarchy of France. Owing to the mild rule of the kings and the orderly conduct of the people, France ran for centuries an even and quiet course till the Revolution of 1789 overthrew everything.

During most of the Middle Ages the kings did not interfere in the rule of their vassals, nor meddle with the life of the people.

Till Centralization Sets In

With the Renaissance and the Reformation, the kings began to centralize the powers in their hands and thus they prepared the violent reaction of the Revolution and the institution of the Republic.

Six Dynasties, Some Republics

There were six dynasties in France and in the last century a few republics, to wit:—the Merovingian, 486, the Carolingian, 752, the Capetian, 987, the Valois, 1328, the Bourbons, 1589-1789, the Bonaparte, 1799. In the nineteenth century there is an alternation of Monarchical and Republican governments, the latter slowly implanting itself and growing in solidity.

Loyalty to Dynasties Until Useless

The French people were loyal to the reigning dynasty so long as it remained active and moderate, but when it became inefficient and autocratic they choose for themselves monarchs or rulers fitting the times and the circumstances, and gradually or forcibly got rid of the antiquated princes that encumbered the throne. Succession wars were few and those that happened were due to peculiar circumstances, such as the attachment to the illustrious house of Charlemagne, the rivalry of France and England and the religious dissensions.

Few Succession Wars

In Peace Nation Gets Strong Against Rivals

The French nation is spirited and warlike in its character. Long interior peace did not enervate the people; but it gave it the necessary vigor to defend the country against all enemies especially against the Mussulmans and for many centuries they remained the bulwark of Europe against the hordes of the false prophet.

The Bulwark of Christendom

French No Robber Nation; Only Two Attempts at World Conquest

Nor did the French as a rule encroach upon the territories of other nations. Only twice in their long history did they attempt to establish their power over Europe led on by the greatest men of the times, to wit:—Louis XIV and Napoleon; but they were overcome by the combination of the civilized powers of the world, and the French nation returned to her ancient boundaries as a peaceful but strong member of the family of nations.

The French policy was to round off their holdings and to make themselves secure in ancient Gaul.

The attacks of the French upon neighboring territories were no attempts to conquer the world, but simply efforts to regain territories that had been fiefs of France, and there was some excuse for them, when they were falling into the hands of its rivals. They were wars for unification; not for encroachment.

CHAPTER I

The French Nation

I. STORMY PERIOD—843-1073

Lawlessness

Two causes tended to make this period lawless and even anarchic—the invasion of the Normans that overtaxed the power of the ancient Carolingians; and the struggle between them and the ambitious Capetians, which naturally resulted into a weakening of the central authority. Civil war became permanent in the land. But the church brought some remedy in these wild times to-wit:—the Truce of God and the Right of Asylum.

Truce of God

The Truce of God was an institution for peace, whereby a cessation of all feuds was enjoined by the church during all holy seasons and from Wednesday evening till Monday morning, only eighty days in a year remaining available for warfare. It was started by St. Odilo, Abbott of Cluny, in 1031. The Bishops, gathered at the council of Limoges, placed the ban of excommunication upon those warriors who might dare to trample those salutary laws under their feet.

Right of Asylum

The Right of Asylum was granted in places consecrated to God. When men were seeking to wreak vengeance with their own hands, anyone who was pursued unto death was safe if he could reach a church. There he was considered under the protection of Jesus Christ and no foe dared disturb him in that sacred shelter.

Change of Dynasty

The Capetian dynasty supplants the illustrious house of Charlemagne. If their title was not too clear at the start, they made it good afterward and they became the longest line of kings that reigned in Europe.

II. CHIVALRIC PERIOD—1073-1303

Self Conquest Devotion to Others

A noble spirit of conquest of self and protection of the weak and feeble manifests itself in the knighthood and in the world movement of the crusades. The rulers curb their passions and devote their lives to fight the enemies of God and neighbor. St. Louis IX is the model king and the typical knight.

Saint Statesman and Hero

Louis IX (1226-1270) was a great saint, an eminent statesman and an undaunted hero. Ascending the throne at nineteen, he made peace with all his neighbors. He alleviated the abuses of the feudal system by establishing courts of appeal, and often dispensing justice in person.

In that age crusades were the only means to keep the Turks away from Christendom, thus the king of France provided for the safety of France as well as of Europe by undertaking crusades. He sailed for Africa from where he could easily reach the Holy land.

His Two Crusades

Egypt

He undertook two crusades against the Mussulmans. In Egypt he immediately took Damietta, but he was stopped short in his conquest through the imprudence of his brother and the ravages of the plague, and was made prisoner with his whole army. His calmness, patience and fortitude much impressed his enemies, and Sultan Malek offered him his own daughter in marriage if he would become a Mussulman. Soon after, the unfortunate Sultan was murdered, and one of his assassins tore out his heart and held it up to Louis' face, saying: "What wilt thou give me for slaying thine enemy?" The king turned away his head in silent horror. His majestic silence struck the fierce Moslems with such admiration that they wished to elect him Sultan, and were only pre-

While a Captive Impresses Mussulmans by Majesty and Virtue

St. Louis IX.
The Model King and Crusader
1224-1270

JOAN OF ARC
THE LIBERATOR OF FRANCE
1428-1431

vented by the fear of seeing their mosques destroyed by so great a Christian prince.

Tunis

St. Louis remained four years in the east to assist the Christians of Palestine. He never gave up crusading. In the year 1270 he sailed for Tunis, whose sultan had promised his cooperation. But the plague carried him off.

Contrast

As St. Louis IX had been the blessing of his times, his grandson Philip the Fair started an era of violence and selfishness, to centralize all powers in his hands, and sacrifice the people for his own ambition and profit.

III. CENTRALIZING PERIOD—1305-1519

Encroachment on Constitutional Rights

Some kings attempt to restore the absolutism of the Pagan Emperors and trample under their feet the rights of the church and the nations and of their subjects as well. Other kings respect so little the interests of their people that the half of this period is passed in dynastic wars undertaken for the sole purpose of advancing the power of the reigning houses. It is here that begins the disastrous warfare for the interests of the dynasties rather than for the interests of the nations. There was the Hundred Years' War waged by the kings of England, for the crown of France, to which they had no political right. France was ruined. It was miraculously saved through the heroism of St. Joan of Arc.

Dynastic Wars in France and Italy

Proverbial Rescue

Before the intervention of Joan of Arc, the French cause seemed desperate. After a disastrous reign of an insane king; the English attacked France for the fourth time in the hundred years' war, and their king and queen were crowned in Paris as the sovereigns of France. Defeated and dejected the Dauphin Charles felt helpless and was inactive. Directed by heavenly voices a peasant girl, Joan of Arc presented

Charles

King

herself to the Dauphin and offered to deliver the country; she rescued Orleans the last fortress of the kingdom, and led the king to Rheims to be consecrated as king Charles VII. The heroine was betrayed into the hands of the English and was burnt alive.

The kings of France were hardly free from English assaults, that they inflicted upon Italy, the same evils France had suffered so long. In half a century they undertook no less than twelve expeditions in Italy from Naples to Lombardy and covered the whole country with blood and ruin.

Still Consolidation of Monarchy

Still these wars and calamities turned to the consolidation of the French Monarchy, which emerged from them as the most powerful State in Europe.

MODERN AGES—1517-1919

IV Period: Religious Divisions.

Deplorable Religious Divisions and Wars

The Reformation which divided western Christendom brought division to the hitherto united France; but could not tear that enlightened nation from the ancient faith; although there arose great bitterness between the Protestants and the Catholics. The reformed, called Huguenots, never constituted but a small minority—and ordinarily enjoyed liberty of conscience; still there arose five religious wars of extraordinary fierceness.

Huguenots Not Coerced but Aggressors

The Huguenots are often represented as a persecuted minority, who was denied the liberty to hold their own conviction, and especially to practice them openly. But in fact they were a small and novel faction that wanted to force their opinion upon the immense majority of the nation.

Naturally the Catholics arose to defend their altars and retaliated against their aggressors.

Dynastic Contest

The contest became very bitter, at the extinction of the Valois dynasty, when the Huguenots attempted to force a Protestant king upon their country; namely the Bourbon Henry IV of Navarre and thought by him to impose their new doctrines upon their fellow citizens. But Henry IV was a statesman who wanted liberty for everyone and who sought to reconcile the factions. After mature study he entered the Catholic church, but granted such liberties to the Protestants, that they were satisfied and kept the peace. He was the first of the glorious Bourbon dynasty.

Henry IV Quiets the Factions

V Period: Struggle for World Domination 1648-1789.

Policy of Self Defence

Through political marriages of princes the Netherlands and Spain came into the hands of the Hapsburgs, the rivals of France, which in self defence endeavored to lower their great power. Moreover some countries belonging to French geography were held by the Hapsburgs, and the kings of France endeavored to recover what they claimed to be their own and they ceaselessly endeavored to slice off territory after territory.

Turned Into a Policy of Conquest

Louis XIV Wars for World Domination

When the thirty years' war had weakened the empire of the Hapsburgs; King Louis XIV, was of age to rule by himself, and planned not only to take the leadership of Europe from the Hapsburgs; but also to build up a monarchy that could dominate Europe and the world. Under one pretext or another, he undertook no less than five wars of conquest, to subjugate several countries, and finally he took and he kept Spain in Bourbon hands, but in

other parts he was beaten by the coalition of the powers of western Europe and reduced to sue for peace. The one mistake of Louis XIV was his militarism.

Wars and Extravagances

The great king did not consult his people nor even the noblemen, his natural counselors, to know whether they were willing to make enormous sacrifices for glory and conquest and whether they were able to continue such sacrifices for half a century. The result was that he overtaxed his people and exacted more than they could stand and they prepared a counteraction which overthrew the old regime. Besides the other war expenses Louis XIV and Louis XV piled up palaces, monuments and forts without counting the cost, the expenses were so enormous that they exhausted France for generations.

Profligate Louis XV Adds More Debts

On top of the pile of debt came the profligate expenditures of Louis XV, who did not count nor reckon how posterity would live, saying: "After us the flood!" It was in vain that the saintly Louis XVI endeavored to repair the extravagances of his predecessors. He was drowned by the deluge of blood that engulfed the old regime of France. The people had to be called in to devise means to restore the finances of the country—but they overthrew the ancient regime.

Revolution Overthrows the Old Regime

VI Period: Revolutions. 1789-1918.

I Phase: The Revolutionary Storm 1789-1815

Terrorists

Most all the revolutions are undertaken to restore liberty and equality among men and many are accomplished gradually, as in England or peaceably as in Japan and in China. But the French revolution was violent and cruel because it fell into the hands of rabid

infidels and bloody monsters, who used it to satisfy their hatred of Christianity and their thirst for blood. However, those tyrants could not spoil the whole movement and the result was the opening of a new era of justice and progress, the era of Democracy.

Tamed by Napoleon

It took the strong arm of Napoleon to tame the Terrorists. He made them the tools of his ambitions; he compelled them to fight his wars, he drove them to the end of Europe, and thus he spread the revolutionary ideas all over the continent.

Nothing Gained by Wars

Although Napoleon is one of the most relentless warriors that ever appeared on the face of the earth, he acquired nothing permanent for France, and he was relegated as a dangerous war prisoner to the lonely island of St. Helena, whence there was no escape.

But Peace Imposed Upon the Anarchists

However, he was not a common conqueror, who enslaved multitudes of men for personal ambition. He pacified the wild elements that were raging in Europe and compelled the storms to calm down. He created order in the chaos of laws which the revolutionists had enacted in haste and confusion, and made in his code of laws a system of democratic legislation, which passed into the lives of most of the civilized nations.

II Phase: A Century of Revolutions

PANORAMA

France Chastened Satisfied Within Her Own Boundaries

Out of the terrific storms of Revolution and world war, France emerged chastened and moderated, satisfied with her own country. She had lost most of her colonies, but she was allowed her ancient boundaries. Frightened by the bloody deeds of the extreme autocrats from below and from above, she endeavored to establish a moderate democracy, vacillating between mon-

archical and republican regimes until finally she firmly established a constitutional republic, which has now stood the test of experience for half a century.

Changes of Regimes

Intrigues of Prussia Subsidized Press

Their intense struggle for full democracy, made the French overlook the campaign for world empire secretly carried on in several fields by their new enemy across the Rhine. Prussia had become her rival, and had recourse to a treacherous policy to undermine her enemies by intrigue and espionage. She subsidized the Red papers in order to divide the country; and to undermine it, by their attacks on marriage and faith. Race-suicide was advocated, godless education was promoted—in order to destroy faith and morals. While fully ready she provoked the war of 1870 and wrenched two provinces from France. She was preparing to inflict the final blow to that land of chivalry during the world war, but she was herself beaten down by the civilized nations of the earth.

Losses Regained

Reptile Press Attacks Catholic Citizens Who Save the Country

The reptile press had been clamoring that France was demoralized by the Catholic Church and should be dechristianized. A violent campaign against everything Catholic was carried on, under the secret inspiration of Prussian managers. Laws were multiplied to disfranchise the benighted Catholic citizens. However, when the supreme dangers of the war jeopardized the very life of France; it happened that the bulk of the army were Catholics, and that the generals that won the war were fervent Catholics.

MONOGRAPHS

World Power of Louis XIV

Great in Ancestry and Personality

Louis XIV was born of a Bourbon father, Louis XIII, and a Hapsburg mother, Ann of Spain-Austria,

when those dynasties were in all their vigor. He was animated with a tireless activity, and an insatiable lust for power and fame, and followed an unscrupulous diplomacy. He is surnamed the "Great," because he brought France to the apogee of might and glory.

"I am the State"

Having witnessed in his youth the troubles of the civil war of the Fronde, he was persuaded that he must govern in an absolute fashion regardless of the still existing feudal rights. He assumed all power, saying, "I am the state."

Controls Nobles Catholics Huguenots

The nobles who had been powerful lords in their countries, became court nobles, officers of the palace entirely subject to the king. The Catholic Bishops were compelled to sign "The liberties of the Gallican church," which were slaveries to the king. The Huguenots were deprived of the liberties of worship by the revocation of the edict of Nantes, and the greatest number of them left the country. There had been fanatics that had abused that freedom, and disturbed the peace, but that restlessness could have been curbed by other means.

The Age of Louis XIV

Louis XIV promoted arts and sciences, built up a brilliant court and formed wonderful armies and became the most glorious of the French kings. The Age of Louis XIV is the classic age of arts and letters for France. It is the great Christian age of France, when the brilliant nation was still pious and produced such great men as Bossuet, Fénélon, Bourdalove, Racine.

Court Brilliant Galaxies of Great Men

The court of Louis XIV was the most brilliant of Europe, and became the model of the other courts. There were galaxies of superior statesmen and builders, scientists and orators that graced the palace of the world king. Piles of monumental buildings arose in Paris, and in Versailles—enormous sums of money were used

to improve the barren plains of Versailles into incomparable parks.

Politics Economics Tactics

Louis XIV knew how to govern and to select the best men to carry out his plans; he was seconded by the greatest statesmen and strategists of the times in the building up his stately empire.

The Century Dictionary says:

"The reforms of Colbert, his comptroller general of the finances, swelled his treasury, while promoting industry and economy and those of Louvois, his minister of war, transformed his army into the most perfect military organization in Europe. His desire of conquest and dreams of a French universal monarchy embroiled him in numerous wars in which his arms were sustained by Turenne, Condé, Luxembourg, Catinat, Villars, Vendome and Vauban."

Grand but Ruinous Achievements

However grand are those achievements, they were overdone and began to exhaust the public treasury, and to bring on the implacable revenge of the people in the bloody revolution of the next century.

There are few rulers and conquerors whose glory was so great and whose reign brought more disasters.

Louis XIV Found France Without a Rival

Louis XIV assumed the direction of affairs, at a time when the policy inaugurated by Richelieu and Mazarin made the Bourbons absolute at home and paramount abroad: They had curbed the power of the nobility and subjected it. They had also humiliated the

Austria was Humiliated

the great power of the Hapsburgs by inciting the Protestant princes of central Europe to fight the powerful Kaisers for a whole generation, and furnishing the funds required for that interminable conflict of thirty years.

Five Continental Wars in Half a Century

During a reign of half a century he carried on five great wars to subdue to his sceptre such territories as

would make him the irresistible master of Europe. But his very ambition aroused all the other princes against him, and drove them into continental coalitions to stay his relentless advance and curb his growing power.

Triumphant Advance Then Standstill Rout and Retreat

During the first quarter of a century, nothing could stop his advance. In 1585 Louis XIV was at the summit of his power, and he seemed to be on the road to conquer the banks of the Rhine, and to restore the boundaries of ancient and powerful Gaul. But there came doubtful battles, and even reverses. Fortune seemed to return to him when the Spanish succession came up. He had secured a will of the king in favor of Philip V, his grandson, and he installed him in Spain before his rivals could move. He had extended the power of France over the Spanish peninsula and he cried out "Il n'y a plus de Pyrenées." (There are no Pyrenees any more to stop France from controlling Spain.) But then the reverses commenced. In 1708 the grand monarch felt that he was doomed and he begged for peace or armistice. It was only death removing the other claimants of the Spanish crown, that saved the once irresistible conqueror. It is true that Spain was left to his grandson, but it was shorn of its wealthiest possessions in the Netherlands and in Italy. All the sacrifices entailed by half a century of warfare have not added to the wealth and power of France—which was the indisputable leader of Europe before him.

Philip was Installed in Spain

The Pyrenees Had Disappeared

No One Man Subdued the World

Louis XIV Greater at the Beginning Than in the End

The case of this grand monarch is a striking instance of the extreme difficulty, the utter impossibility for one man to subdue the world to his yoke. With the most powerful armies of the times, Louis XIV began his career of conquest in a continent exhausted by the Thirty Years' War. Still he triumphed only for a time, after wasting his own life and the substance of his own people

to subdue the rest of the world to his power, he finished as a man broken down by reverses.

Peacefulness Would Have Given a Better Share

If Louis XIV had not appeared as a threatening conqueror the powers of Europe would not have arrayed themselves against him as their implacable foe. He might have obtained a more useful share of the Spanish possessions; without fighting all his lifetime; i. e., the Spanish Netherlands and the other powers would not have feared to increase the influence of a peaceful neighbor.

Aggressiveness Arouses the Powers

It is just the danger that the would-be world-conqueror constitutes to his neighbors, that arouses them all and unites them for common defense to prevent the establishment of a world empire.

Endless Warring

In his insatiable lust for power and glory he never ceased attacking his neighbors—warfare was the main occupation of his life, world power his dream. He had recourse to every excuse to attack and despoil his neighbor. He made claim of territories in the name of his wife, to which she had renounced beforehand; he invoked obsolete succession laws, to lay claim on lands to which he had no right and forthwith sent his armies to occupy them without a declaration of war. He established courts of reunion in different cities to search all the lands that had ever belonged to those new possessions.

Plotting Claiming

Belgium the Battlefield

The Belgian provinces were the ones that suffered most from his attacks. They were the principal theater and stake of the half a century of wars.

Sacrifices Bring Ruin and Death

What was the result of all this fighting and scheming? The ruin and death of millions of his own subjects and of his neighbors. The immense sacrifices of men and means imposed by the wars of Louis XIV, impoverished France for centuries and were among the

causes that brought on the French revolution with all its atrocities.

His Genius Could Bless Mankind

If his armies had been sent to colonize the French possessions of the St. Lawrence and the Mississippi Rivers, France might have developed in America an empire equal to that of England, and his genius would have brought nothing but blessings to mankind.

The French Revolution

Sudden Outburst Inside and Outside

The French Revolution is one of the strangest phenomena of history in the sudden outbreak of the French people against their own institutions or savage reversal of their amiable qualities and a terrific attack by the French empire against the whole of Europe. For a thousand years the French had enjoyed such a mild monarchy that there had been no disturbance in the country, nor any dispute or break in the succession of dynasties.

Order and Peace

The people had attained such a degree of culture and politeness that they were the model of Europe in arts and letters and in the amenities of manners. And now all at once they became iconoclasts and savages and delivered themselves unto rapine and slaughter. Not satisfied to level their own country, they swarmed over the whole of Europe leveling all in their passage.

Very seldom had the French monarchs attempted the conquest of foreign countries and now they overwhelm all Europe. The Revolution was an earthquake that wrought permanent and substantial changes in the whole of Europe.

I Period: Revolution

Generous Movement Degenerates in Violence

The French revolution commenced with a noble impulse for liberty, the classes giving up their privileges,

but it soon degenerated into the abuse of the authority newly acquired and the tyranny of the new petty masters and delivered itself to slaughter and plunder. Napoleon tamed the wild elements and harnessed them to his war chariot and used them to subdue the nations to his sceptre. The Revolution was made a pedestal for a new master of the world.

Used for World Conquest

I. Causes.

There were moral, political and financial causes of the French revolution. The main causes were:

Causes Philosophical

1—The impious and anarchic writings of the philosophers which created thirst for destruction and the ensuing impiety and immorality of the nobility which penetrated among the people.

Political

2—The absolute power usurped by the kings which deprived the people of all part in the public affairs and of all share in the government of the country.

Economical

3—The unequal distribution of land and taxes as well as other abuses in the government, but especially the enormous debts accumulated by the ancient regime. The financial difficulties were the immediate occasion that provoked the revolution.

II. A reaction against the old regime.

Reaction Against Absolutism and Waste

The French revolution was a reaction against the despotism and the waste of the ancient regime. Louis XIV had assumed the absolute authority of the Pagan emperors. Without consulting his subjects he had undertaken unceasing wars which exhausted the country and ruined the people for generations. The extravagant court expenses of Louis XIV and Louis XV had emptied the public treasury, the heavy cost of the American war of Independence were new and increasing demands upon the already depleted treasury. There was an enormous

Immense Public Debt

public debt and an immense yearly deficit which amounted to nearly half of the yearly income.

The States General Overthrow the Fundamental Institutions of the Nation

Constitutional Assembly

Since 1614 no parliament had been assembled to discuss the public affairs. The States General were summoned to Versailles to try to find a remedy to the helpless financial condition of the once prosperous country. It was composed of 300 Clergymen, 300 Noblemen and 600 Commons. Upon the motion of the Abbé Sieyès, the delegates constituted themselves into a national or constitutional assembly May 5, 1789, and overthrew the ancient constitution of the nation.

They Can Destroy but Not Rebuild

But the assemblies were led by the extremists who were good only to destroy and not to build up, and many of them became bloodthirsty tyrants. They overturned the old order of things, without being able to establish any new permanent order. They experimented with every system of government and tyranny while chaos settled upon the land. In the course of ten years, four parliaments succeeded each other and every time accumulated fresh and still more frenzied murderers from that impious generation. Anarchy raged in forty-five counties.

Very Cruel Conventionalists

The constitutional assembly of 1789 made a free constitution for which the legislative assembly of 1791 was to enact laws in detail, but its chief achievement was the overthrow of the church and the nobility of France. The national convention of 1793 made an anti-Christian constitution, for which the Directory made new laws without being able to enforce them. Among all those that ever terrorized and persecuted the people, the conventionalists of France were the most savage and the most tigerish.

III. Relapse into the ancient abuses.

It is a strange phenomenon in revolutions that the self-styled liberators, seize to themselves more authority and more revenue than former masters ever possessed.

The French revolutionaries once they acquired power commenced to tyrannize over their fellow citizens; many of them turned into public plunderers and bloodthirsty murderers. With the word of liberty, equality, fraternity on their lips; they fell upon their former fellow citizens, now their trembling slaves. They rioted in theft and bloodshed, and covered the land with ruins. One cannot read the annals of their robberies and butcheries without retaining a long and painful memory of murder and blood.

IV Course of the Revolution

I phase: equality granted; the French revolution

Reaction Violent

The French Revolution commenced in 1789 with a generous movement of the upper classes in favor of the people at large. To remedy financial troubles, Louis XVI convoked the three Estates: the clergy, the nobility and the people. The Third Estate demanded above all the abolition of the tithes and the feudal rights; and 148 clergymen seconded their proposition. In the solemn assembly of the fourth of August, the noblemen and the clergymen renounced all the special privileges, and equal rights of all the citizens were proclaimed. The fullness of "liberty" in the modern sense was thus secured.

We all consider liberty as a natural right of men, but we condemn the crimes committed in its name.

II phase: reign of terror

The Liberators Enslave

The infidels were not actuated by the love of liberty, but by a satanical hatred for Christianity and an irresistible thirst for the blood and the wealth of their fellow-

men. The Revolutionists did not desire liberty, but power. They wanted to overthrow the rights and religion of others, and to establish their own personal despotism and impiety.

A committee of public safety was set up, which imprisoned and beheaded everyone "suspected" of being unfriendly to the Revolution.

Jacobins Arouse Mob to Frenzy

The odious Jacobins, in 1790 established a system of destruction capable to affrighten every class of society. They conspired against every one who had title or fortune, talent or virtue. By fiery discourses they drove the Parisian populace into a more than vandal destructiveness and a more than cannibal cruelty. At their instigation the mob captured the prison of the Bastile and the palace of Versailles and dragged the authorities to prison and kept them there for a day of revenge.

I. Destruction of Religion

Attempt to Overthrow Church

The Jacobins were bent on destroying Christianity. They confiscated all church property, abolished the religious orders. They declared the French Church a national institution entirely independent from the Pope of Rome. They tried to compel the clergy to forswear Rome and to publicly renounce the church, but in spite of all their threats, they could hardly frighten one-tenth into apostasy. More than 12,000 monasteries and convents and 40,000 churches fell under the hammer of the sacrilegious robbers. There was a public debt of two billion francs to be paid. About eleven billion francs were devoured by the nation; that is to say, five times the debt officially incurred; and there was still left an immense deficit, which prepared the way for bankruptcy.

II. Destruction of State

Abolition of Royalty

The National Convention was composed of bloodthirsty monsters who terrorized the people in a fright-

ful way (1793-94). Its first act was to depose the king, bring accusations against him, and condemn him to death. Louis XVI was executed in January, 1793, and his queen and his sister, after months of painful detention. His son was starved to death in prison, and his daughter escaped as if by a miracle. The very ashes of the former kings buried at St. Denis were exhumed and scattered to the winds.

III. Destruction of Civilization

Destruction of Works Science and Charity

The convention seized 750 hospitals, besides all the rest of the patrimony of the poor. They destroyed the monuments of art and science which covered the land and filled the libraries. They even pulled down steeples of churches as if their elevation were contrary to Republican equality. The Council of Paris, considering that "books have done to men very little good and much evil," decreed the burning of the public library.

IV. Destruction of Life

Wholesale Slaughter

A "committee of public safety" was set up, which imprisoned and beheaded all "suspected" persons. Guillotin invented a machine for quick beheading. In Paris

Guillotinade Fusillade

the guillotine was scarcely ever idle. By extraordinary diligence one machine could behead from 60 to 80 persons in a day. The procession of the headman's cart was seen daily.

Flying columns of soldiers went up and down the country and shot down every suspected person. At Toulon, crowds of 200 were shot at a time.

These bloody sports of the infidel hordes were called "the Fusillades."

Lyons resisted; but she was captured, her buildings blown up and the citizens shot and beheaded by the thousands. The blood of the victims so tainted the Rhone

that the laundresses had to go above the town to find clear water for their washing. To save the trouble of carting away the corpses, the guillotine was placed upon a bridge, so that after the execution the bodies fell into the stream, where they served as food for the fishes.

Not only did the monsters of terror slaughter the people; they finished by devouring one another. Danton was beheaded with thirteen of his followers. Robespierre was arrested and, though he shot himself in the jaw in order to escape public judgment, he was brought to the Convention hall and fell with twenty-four other human tigers amid the execration of the crowds.

Mutual Destruction

V. Wholesale Depopulation and Devastation

Three republican armies were defeated. There were 200 captures and recaptures of cities, 700 local engagements and 17 great battles. The convention trembled lest the people should also stand up elsewhere and demand a reckoning for the barbarous crimes committed by its orders.

La Vendée, followed by the rest of Poitou, Anjou and Brittany, arose in defense of their rights. They made a valiant stand against those enemies of mankind —but they were crushed by sheer numbers and exterminated and their land was laid waste. Bloodhounds were trained to trace the fugitives into the inmost recesses of the forests and the caverns; children were crushed under the horses' feet, or thrown with their mothers into glowing ovens. At Rennes many thousands were thrust into boats with openings in the bottom, and thus sunk and drowned in the Loire. This new invention of the infidels for wholesale slaughter was called "Noyade" from the French word *noyer,* to drown.

Destruction of Whole Countries

Rising of Vendéians

Noyades

They destroyed each other and turned the country into a wilderness and the cities into dens of wild beasts

in human form. Thirty bloodthirsty tyrants were able to find 300,000 executioners to murder all who were holy and noble in all France and who were not so fortunate as to succeed in taking refuge in some happier land. In ten years they inflicted as many and as horrible calamities as had befallen the whole of mankind ever since the Flood. In their hands France became a heap of ruins and an immense cemetery. This is the horrible example of the punishment that threatens any people publicly apostatizing from Our Lord Jesus Christ.

VI. Attempts at World-Wide Destruction

Attacks on World

The Revolutionists made war upon the neighboring countries, where the infidels welcomed and assisted them, and they intended to repeat everywhere their impious vandalism. But they were stopped in their mad course. They were unable to preserve peace in France itself, notwithstanding their policy of butchery. All order disappeared in forty-five counties.

II Period: Empire

Napoleon a Unique Figure in the World

Unique for Good and Evil

Napoleon is a personage apart in history for the good and the evil he has done. He had the merit to tame the devouring monster of the Terrorism, and to bring order into chaos.

Cleans Out the Den of Convention

During the Reign of Terror, the Convention was like a den of wild beasts, devouring one another and running guillotines to behead any of their fellow citizens they did not like. When their term of office had expired, they wanted that two-thirds of the new form of government should be chosen from their body. There was general indignation at the perpetuation in power of these bloody tyrants. Bonaparte was given charge of the army, he posted his troops in the church of St. Roch, whence he commanded the

Assembly and soon dispersed its members, and also swept with grapeshot the streets of Paris filled with threatening mobs.

By Coup d'état

It was one of his masterly strokes of polity to disperse antagonistic bodies by coup d'états i. e., sudden strokes taking the enemies off their feet before they knew it.

In order to carry on their wild orgies, the Revolutionaries had destroyed every authority but their own and every institution of order and peace, especially the Catholic Church. When Napoleon became Consul or sole master of France in 1799, he restored the Catholic Church as a means of government and a promoter of morality. The imperial master did not always respect the laws of the church, but at least he restored the church itself, which was of incalculable benefit to France.

Restores Church

Co-ordinates the Crude Laws with the Old Laws

The second distinct merit of Napoleon was to bring order among all the contradictory schemes of government, and crude constitutions and indigested laws, that had been broached by the new theorists of the Revolution. These wild and mad legislators had piled up a conglomerate of laws to reform the world. But there was neither order nor logic in their hasty legislation, and there were moreover many provisions subversive of morality and destructive of society itself. Napoleon undertook to harmonize the liberal laws of the Revolution and the excellent laws of the former regimes. He sought men of exceptional ability to co-ordinate the heterogeneous elements and to express the laws in clear, simple, every-day language, so that the people themselves could understand them. The compilation is called Code Napoleon, and is in the same line as the Code Justinian of the sixth century of our era.

Digest of Laws, Old and New

Evil

Besides the good done to France must be placed the evil inflicted upon all Europe through an interminable warfare of twenty years.

Changing Maps of Europe

The wars are so numerous, the political maps changed so often, the diplomatic moves are so complicated, that they surpass the comprehension and tax the memory of an ordinary man. The history of any century can be told and remembered easier than the history of Napoleon's campaigns.

Bewildering Changes on the Whole Continent

A simple schedule of the activities of Napoleon tires the reader by the multiplicity of wars and treaties, and the bewildering changes in the configuration of Europe. Sometimes the French armies attack at six different points, other times they are fighting in Africa, Asia, as well as in Europe; they invade every land of the continent; they continually overrun Belgium, Italy, Austria and Germany.

Without Any Other Reason Than World Domination

There was no right reason for all those wars. By 1800 Europe had allowed France the large boundaries of the Rhine, by 1805 the powers of continental Europe had been beaten again and again. Still Napoleon continued to attack his neighbors, to change their governments, and to trample their country into dust. His only motive could be to secure the empire of the whole world. For that object he fought till the end of his days, without ever realizing his dream. He did not even keep the kingdom of France, and he was exiled for life on the solitary rock of St. Helena, whence there was no escape.

A Dream Never Realized

Attack Enemies Separately

Napoleon always tried to divide his enemies, and to strike them one after another. By his masterly diplomacy he succeeded often to engage his enemies separately and to administer terrific blows. The powers of Europe did not know what to do to please or appease the insatiable

conqueror, or to stop him in his mad career. Five times they united in European coalitions, and only at the end did they succeed in crushing the implacable enemy.

NAPOLEON'S WORLD WARS

Napoleon Tames the Monsters

For ten years the revolutionary monsters had waged war against all established governments to fasten upon the whole world their savage tyranny. But finally there arose a military master, who tamed these howling tigers, put the yoke on their necks and harnessed them to his war chariots and drove them all over Europe to subdue the continent to his rule. It was a condign punishment for the innumerable crimes they had perpetrated.

Harnesses Them on His War Chariots

The Master of Europe for Twenty Years

Endowed with an incomparable military and political genius, Napoleon soon made himself the master of Europe. For twenty years he routed the coalesced powers on every battlefield and led his invincible troops all over continental Europe. By his sagacious policy he succeeded often in separating his enemies and was able to give them terrific blows one after another. He overthrew the powers that could endanger his world domination and established on their ruins a number of small powers that owed to him their existence and thus were his supports. Republicans had reared republics in the lands they had conquered. The emperor established monarchies for his relations and friends, whom he placed on most all of the thrones of Europe.

Routs Every Power of Continental Europe

Overthrows Rival and Establishes Friendly States

Where He Enthrones His Relatives

Three Powers Unconquered

There were only three powers which he had not conquered; the Church, England and Russia, and he applied all the tactics of military science and all the strategems of diplomacy to reduce them also to his orders. But here he signally failed. The Pope, the moral power of the universe, put the ban of excommunication from the family of nations upon the triumphant

Overcome the Hitherto Invincible Emperor

conqueror; England, the sea power of the world, braved his continental blockade, crushed his fleets and remained the mistress of the oceans. Russia the giant of the north, drew the undaunted warrior into the wilderness, burned Moscow where Napoleon had hoped to find food and shelter. His troops had to flee for their lives and were decimated and nearly exterminated by the inclemency of the elements. When hearing of the papal ban Napoleon had sneeringly exclaimed: "Does the Pope think that his excommunication will cause the arms to fall from the hands of my soldiers?" Strange coincidence. The arms literally fell from the frozen hands of his soldiers.

The Weapons Fell From the Hands of His Soldiers

Relegated in a Lonely Prison

Napoleon, who had ravished the earth so long, was considered so dangerous to the peace of mankind that he was transported as a prisoner to the Island of St. Helena, lost in the ocean.

Violation of Rights Punished

The French Revolution and Wars form one of the most striking examples of the inexorable law of history that the violation of the rights of others is always followed by the punishment of the guilty.

Kaiser William Sneered at President Wilson

In our days the great Kaiser after half a century of preparation for war, expected to subdue Europe and the world by crushing one power after another. He sneered at the statesmen of Washington who recalled him to the law of nations, laughing at our soldiers. The President of the U. S. A. refused to treat with him and now the civilized world and even his own people have cast him off as a ruler.

Now Disowned by the World

Revolutionaries Tyrannize

The Revolution started with an enthusiastic movement for liberty, but it degenerated into a tyranny not found under the old regime. It was crushed by a soldier of fortune who ruled those fanatic liberals with an iron rod and dragged them all over Europe to fight his battles.

That great genius planned to extend his power over the whole earth as he devastated Europe for a quarter of a century. But his genius failed when the powers combined against him and routed him at Leipsic and Waterloo. The result of all these campaigns were piles of ruins covering Europe; millions of lives sacrificed and most of all, the hatred of the victims of the wars and their desire for revenge which is sure to fall upon the criminal authors of such sufferings.

Emperor Subdues Them and Attacks All Nations

Create a Desire for Revenge

CHRONICLES—FRENCH NATION

I Stormy Period

Carolingian Dynasty, 843-987—Capital Laon.

Charles the Bald could not repel the Normans, must grant heredity of the fiefs to twenty-nine vassals, holding themselves the peers of the king. He takes one-half Lorraine, obtains Italy and Empire, 875. Louis the Stammerer. German Charles, who buys peace, deposed 884-87. Capetian Eudes 888-98, defender of Paris. 893-929 *Charles III, the Simple,* opposed by Capetian kings: (Robert 922, Rudolph 923-36) and captured. He cedes "Normandy and part of Britanny" to Rollo.

Normans Ravage. Settled in Normandy.

Last Carolingians

Louis IV D'Outre-Mer, 929. Lothaire, 954. Louis V, 986, dies suddenly in the first year of a stormy reign.

Capetian Dynasty, 987-1328, fifteen *Capetian Kings.* Capital Paris. *Hugh Capet* resists to Normans, defeats and imprisons the legitimate heir Charles of Lorraine, Lothaire's brother, 994-997—Robert I, married to a relative, must quit her. His second wife causes civil wars. The vassals are very independent and quarrelsome and turn the land into a battlefield.

II Chivalric Period: 1073-1305

1063. *Philip I,* under tutors, then flatterers. William of Normandy, the conqueror of England. Divorce from Bertha for Bertrada, wife of Foulques of Anjou. Excommunication, interdict. She retires to a convent. There remained only six faithful cities; but kings promote the communes against the nobility—and therein find their real power.

Invalid Royal Marriages Rebuked Given Up

Crusades Against Infidels

1108. *Louis VI the Fat,* grants liberty to the communes, fiefs to the Bishops and reduces the power of the nobles during their absence to the crusades. He invests William Cliton of Normandy and Flanders, who is expelled by Henry I of England.

1137. *Louis VII.* Second crusade and government of Suger, wife Eleanore of Poitou, Guienne and Gasconge, being related and loose, is repudiated and marries Henry II (of Anjou), who two years later becomes king of England.

1180. *Philip Augustus* defeats Henry II. Third crusade. Divorce from Ingeborg for Agnes. Interdict; submission. After murder of Arthur of England, confiscation of all the possessions of John Lackland; defeat of his allies at Bouvines.

Crusades Against Anarchists

Simon of Montfort leads two crusades against the Albigenses and becomes Count of Toulouse, which his son Amaury cedes to France.

1223. *Louis VIII* reduces the Albigenses by a third and fourth crusade.

1226-70. *St. Louis IX,* a minor. The mother, St. Blanche of Castille, struggles against the Anglophile nobles, and forms her holy son to all kinds of virtues. A fifth crusade subdues the Albigenses, while the council of Toulouse organizes the *Inquisition* to coerce the disturbing element. St. Louis ends frontier quarrels with Aragon and England. He curtails the jurisdiction of the nobles and establishes two regular courts of justice.

All France arose for the defense of the Holy Land, with its saintly king, St. Louis IX, the model of all Crusaders; the heroic saint made every sacrifice for the defence of the faith.

Seventh Crusade to Egypt, 1248; *Eighth* to Tunis, 1270; failed through pest.

1270. *Philip III* fights three wars in Spain for nephews—against Alphonse.

III Centralizing Period: XIV-XV Centuries

1285-1314. *Philip the Fair=Joanna of Navarre* takes away fiefs of Guyenne: Edward I and Flanders: Guy of Dampierre but debases the coin and despoils the churches. He insults and wounds Pope Boniface VIII—who in bulls states the public rights of Middle Ages. The French Pope, Clement V chosen through

Philip is brought through him to Avignon: in XV general Council of Vienna, 1311, he concedes the suppression of the Templars; many of whom are burned by Philip the Fair, the properties of the order being confiscated.

The sons of Philip the Fair—Louis X, Philip V, Charles IV must dismiss the counselors, and reduce the taxes of their father. Their daughters are excluded from the throne by the Salic Law, which excludes women from the throne.

1328-1589. *Valois Dynasty,* nine kings.

1328-1350. *Philip VI* of Valois, grandson of Philip III, the Salic heir, restores Louis of Crecy against James Artevelde in Flanders. The Flemings and Scotch excite Edward III to claim the crown of France.

1339-1454. 100 *Years' War.* First period war, 1339-47. The English win at Sluce and Crecy.

Black Plague, 1348-53. **Invasion of English**

John the Good, 1350-64.

Charles the Bad of Navarre wants two fiefs, stirs up wars against France; joining the English.

Burgundy is given to the king's son Philip the Bold, who had been married to daughter of last Capetian duke of Burgundy and now marries the heiress of Flanders, Margaret.

Second period of war 1355-60. John is conquered and captured at Maupertuis by Edward, the Black Prince. **Civil Wars**

Insurrection of Paris under States General and revolt of the peasants (Jacquerie)—peace, King John released, returns a prisoner, when the conditions are violated.

1364-1380. *Charles V, the Wise.* Summons the Black Prince for exactions. Third period of war, 1369-80. *Dugueselin* wins on land and sea and leaves only three ports to the English, while their fleet is destroyed by the Castilians. 1380-1429. *Charles VI, the Insane=Isabella, Bavaria.* Minority and insanity; regency of three uncles—of brother Louis Orleans who is opposed by John the Fearless, Duke of Burgundy.

Fourth period of war, 1415-54. First the English win at Agincourt; 1417, murder of Duke of Orleans, and 1419 of Duke of Burgundy, whose son Philip the Good joins the English and captures Paris; the English king and queen recognized in France.

1420-1461. *Charles VII, King of Bourges,* sees great things done by others. After two defeats he rests satisfied.

Liberation by Joan of Arc

Joan of Arc, 1428-1431, delivers Orleans, inflames French; Philip the Good rejoins the French. Wars of twelve years and expulsion of the English from the whole of France except Calais. 1448. Reduction of many fiefs. The dauphin, Louis XI at the Burgundian court offends Charles the Reckless. 1461-83. *Louis XI,* astute and treacherous, weakens the vassals, who twice league against him, prevents the formation of Burgundian kingdom. Duke Charles the Reckless, 1467-77, summons Edward IV, who is detached by the wily king; he attacks the Swiss, who beat him at Granson, Morat, and Nancy. Fiefs confiscated but claimed and defended by *Mary Burgundy=Maximilian,* who cedes only Duchy of Burgundy and Artois.

Fatuous Wars in Italy

1483. *Charles VIII*=Ann of Brittany. Regency.

1495-1559, *Italian Wars.* Naples invaded, conquered, lost —expulsion of French by Italian league, 1498.

Widow *Ann of Britanny,* marries Louis XII of *Orleans,* 1498-1515. Four Italian expeditions; 1st, capture of Louis Moro of Milan; 2nd, treaty with Ferdinand the Catholic—Germaine of Foix, conquest of Naples, ceded to Ferdinand. 3rd and 4th wars, Julius II, 1st league of Cambray with Louis against Venice who holds the Roman legations, 2nd Holy League to drive French out of Italy, Milan is lost, but retaken by Louis XII and Francis I, again lost in 1544.

IV Period: Religious Divisions

Five Wars Against the Hapsburgs, 1515-59

Wars Against Hapsburgs

1515-55. *Francis I*—rival of Charles V—wages wars against Hapsburg for Milan.

I. War, 1521-26, Francis wins at Pavia; takes Milan; is captured at Pavia; cedes Milan.

II. 1527-29, Holy League of Pope Clement VII against Hapsburgs, Duke of Bourbon with Germans besieges Rome and sacks it for two months. Milan given to Sforzas.

III. War, 1536, extinction of Sforzas, alliance with Protestants and Turks, truce through Pope Paul III.

IV. War, 1542-44, Vicissitudes, peace Crespy. Milan to Duke Orleans who dies, to Philip II; duchy Burgundy to France.

1555-59. *Henry II.* Receives three Lorraine Bishoprics from Maurice of Saxony and defends them—truce.

V. War. 1557-59, defeat of Coligny at St. Quentin, but capture of Calais by Guise. Peace, Cateau—Cambresis.

Under his three sons intrigues of Catherine de Medici, rivalry of Guise, Catholic League (1576); Bourbons Protestant union.

1559. Francis II=Mary Stuart governs through uncles Guise—1560 Charles IX, Antony Bourbon rules, converted at colloquy of Poissy. Liberty of conscience abused by Protestants.

Five Religious Wars 1562-93

Religious Wars

I to III War. 1562-68, Francis Guise conquers Louis I Condé, is assassinated before Orleans. Huguenots, attempts to seize the king, defeated, still receive concessions. 1572, marriage of Margaret Valois to Henry de Béarn; on St. Bartholomew's night Catherine and Guise kill 4,000 Huguenots; IV, war, 1574-89, Henry III (king of Poland) returns; courtiers drive malcontents to Huguenots, large concessions to them irritate the Catholics, are revoked.

1585. Death of king's brother d'Alencon. V war, 1585-93. War of the three Henries: Valois, Bourbon, Guise. The Guise triumph; two are murdered by the king who in turn is murdered himself; the third Mayenne holds Paris until the conversion of Henry IV.

Great Kings and Ministers

1580-1793. *Bourbons.* There were two great kings among the Bourbons; Henry IV, Louis XIV. There appeared two great statesmen, Cardinals of the Catholic Church, who raised France to the highest rank in Europe, and made her court the most splendid and dignified in Europe, to-wit, the prime ministers, Richelieu and Mazarin.

Richelieu and Mazarin

Henry IV Grants Liberty to Huguenots

Henry IV. 1593-1610. Edict of Nantes grants liberty and four fortresses to Huguenots. Sulla repairs the evils of war and re-establishes prosperity—murder of Henry.

1610-1643. *Louis XIII,* regent Mary de Medici hated and removed, is reconciled to the king by Cardinal *Richelieu,* 1624-42.

Subsidizes the Protestants of Germany

VI. War. 1620-42. Richelieu settles the restless Huguenots by the capture of Rochelle. Breaks the power of the parliament. Subdues the feudal lords to the royal authority, in spite of their alliance with the Huguenots and Spaniards. To humiliate Austria and to raise France, Richelieu subsidizes the Protestants during the Thirty Years' War, which is prolonged by the half through the French generals, Turenne and Condé. The taxes

necessary for those subsidies and wars provoked the revolt of the Fronde after him, which was fomented by Gondi and Cardinal de Retz, defended by Condé and reduced by Turenne.

1643-1715. *Louis XIV.* Five years old under Mother Ann of Spanish Hapsburgs.

1642-61. *Mazarin.* The war with Spain continues until the victory of the Dunes. Peace of Pyrénées 1659 gives Roussillon, Artois, other Belgian territories to France; Mary Theresa, oldest daughter of Philip IV to Louis XIV.

1663-1715. *Personal Reign of Louis XIV, the Great.* Vauban revokes the Edict of Nantes; liberties of the restless Huguenots, who fight in the Cevennes, and emigrate.

Louis excites the Gallicans to formulate the Four Articles against papal authority. Louvois reforms the army, Colbert the finances—arts and letters: Bossuet, Racine.

Five Wars of Conquest met by Coalitions. I war, 1667-68, parts of Belgium and Franche-Comté claimed by devolution. Invasion of Flanders stopped by Triple Alliance of Holland, England and Sweden, which was the 1st coalition, twelve cities in Belgium—Lille; II War, 1672, Invasion of Holland repelled by flooding the country. 2nd Coalition formed by William III; naval losses, victories on land. Franche-Comté and chain of fortified towns in Southern Belgium.

III. War, 1680, Chambers of reunion for historical dependencies of these lands; capture of Strasburg; Alsace-Lorraine. 3rd Coalition feeble.

IV. War, 1668-97; Palatine succession claimed. 4th Coalition; League of Augsburg and in 1689 Grande Alliance, against the insatiable conqueror, Louis XIV and the exiled James II of England. Devastation of Palatinate and victories of marechal of Luxembourg at Fleurus, Steenkerke, Neerwinden, victory of Rocroy by Catinat but defeat of James on the Boyne, and navy at the Hogue; peace of Ryswick; Alsace, Dutch garrisons into Belgian fortresses.

Spanish Succession Wars

V. War, 1701-13. Succession of Spain claimed by Louis of France, Charles of Austria, Joseph of Bavaria; willed to Philip of Anjou who cedes Belgium to Bavaria. "Il n'y a plus de Pyrenées: The Pyrenées do not limit France any more." 5th Coalition, European League, 1701. Charles cannot expel Philip V of Spain—victories, however, of *Eugene Savoy-Marlborough*

at Hoechstadt,—Audenarde. 1708, famine in France, negotiation for peace condition to help expel Philip V, rejected. New defeat at Malplaquet, but recall of Marlborough, election of Charles Hapsburg to the empire.—fear of Hapsburg ascendancy. 1713, peace of Utrecht. Spain and Colonies to Bourbon, Philip. Newfoundland and Gibraltar to England. Belgium, Milan, Naples and Sardinia to Austria. Sicily to Savoy, which is exchanged for Sardinia and royal title in 1720.

Election of Charles to Empire Leaves Spain to Bourbon Philip

Great grandson of Louis XIV, *Louis XV,* 1715-1774. Under regent Duke of Orleans and Cardinal Dubois, attack by Spain seizing Sicily, stopped by Quadruple Alliance; Cardinal Fleury 1726-43, represses the libertines and the Jansenists, sustains Leszcynski in Poland (1733-35), and obtains Lorraine for him, while Spain takes Naples. No results from Austrian war; defeats in Prussian wars by England, who takes Canada and Florida.

European Hegemony and Colonies Lost

Marchioness Pompadour and Choiseul conclude the family pact between the Bourbon courts, to act solidarily in foreign relations give to England the occasion to attack the colonies.

Bourbon Family Pact Does Not Relieve France

Peace of Paris, sacrifice of colonies of India. English get Canada and Florida; French exchange with Spain Louisiana for San Domingo and obtain Corsica. Louisiana is recuperated by peace of Luneville, 1801, and sold to United States, to raise a rival to England. Immorality of Regent and King. "Apres nous le deluge." Voltaire, Rousseau, 1763, suppression of the Jesuits.

Vice and Impiety Undermine the Classes

1774-93. *Louis XVI* tried in vain to restore the finances and to stem the tide of corruption. But the alliance with the United States of America and the large contributions granted to them enormously increased the deficit in the budget and precipitated the revolution. Lafayette greatly assisted Washington. These services were generously repaid in the world's war of our times when the Americans came to rescue France from the claws of Prussianism.

Efforts of Louis XVI

Subsidies to America

VI Period: *The Era of Revolutions*—1789-1890

I PHASE: FRENCH REVOLUTIONARY STORM—1789-1815

CHRONICLES

A—1789—*Constitutional Revolution*

Constituent Assembly. 1789-90. Renunciation of Feudal Rights by the classes and declaration of rights of men.

Constituent Assembly

The mob storms the Bastille and drags the Constituent and the King to Paris. Mirabeau, leader of the Jacobins; suppression of ancient constitution, confiscation of church property, schism from Rome imposed.

Legislative Assembly—1791-92.

Exile and death to unsworn priests and emigrated nobles.

Confiscation Persecution

First Coalition of Powers who take Verdun. Two assaults on the Tuilleries, and September massacres in the prisons of Paris.

B—Anarchistic Revolution

Convention

I. *Government. National Convention,* 1792-95, *Republic Proclaimed September* 21st, King executed Jan. 21st, 1793, Queen in October. Insurrection in Vendee, conquest and loss of Belgium.

Committee of Public Safety in Paris with 44,000 sub-committees in the Communes. Guillotinades, beheading; fusillades, shooting; Noyades, drowning.

The Commune of Paris is the instigator of all those atrocities.

Reign of Terror

Reign of Terror, June 2, 1793—July 28, 1794, under Robespierre. Law of suspects—1285 executions within a month at Paris.

Abolition of Christianity. Overthrow of Christianity, worship of Goddess of Reason, then of Supreme Being—Terrorists split in three clubs; execution of Girondistes (Moderates) Philip-Equality, Danton and Robespierre. Revolt of West.

I. *War.* Ruin of Vendee. Levy of the whole male population. Conquest of Belgium, Holland: Batavian Republic, Fiat or worthless money, famine and ruin, 150 billion assignats, maximum price.

Bonaparte Victorious in Italy and Egypt

II. *Government—Directory,* 1795-99. Five members—White and new terror, incapacity. *War, Napoleon Bonaparte* defeats Austrians in Italy. Rivoli: Treaty of Campo Formio; West Rhine to France, Venetia to Austria, Alpine and Ligurian Republic.

In Egypt Napoleon conquers the Mamelukes. But French fleet is destroyed by Nelson at Trafalgar. The Directory erects the

Republics

Helvetian (Switzerland), Tiberine (Rome), Parthenopian Republics (Naples).

CONSULATE, 1799—EMPIRE, 1804-1814

C—Military Revolution—Napoleonic Mastery

1799-1801. 2nd Coalition and war.

Concordat restores the Catholic religion, victory of Marengo; peace, Luneville extends boundaries to Rhine while Rhenish princes receive ecclesiastical estates in compensation. Electors of Cologne, Mainz, Treves suppressed, replaced by Hesse, Wurtemberg, Baden and Salzburg, Tuscany to Parma. Spain cedes Louisiana to France, which sells it to the United States, to make a future rival of England.

Rhine Boundaries

Ecclesiastical States Given to Deprived Princes

Louisiana

III. *War. Suwaroff Frees Italy.* Election of Pius VII. Eugene Beauharnais Viceroy of Italy.

1805—IV. *War. 3rd Coalition;* French fleet crushed at Trafalgar by Nelson; Alexander I conquered at Austerlitz by Napoleon; peace of Presburg; German Empire turned into Austrian Empire. Germany divided into Kingdoms of Bavaria, Wurtemburg, Saxony —Holland given to Louis Bonaparte, Naples to Joseph, then Caroline=Murat. 1806 *Confederation of Rhine.*

German Empire Divided Into Kingdoms and Austrian Empire

V. *War* 1806 Prussia beaten at Jena. Russia at Friedland. Peace Tilsit.

Kingdom of Westphalia to Jerome Bonaparte, Warsaw to Saxony.

Westphalia

VI. *Maritime War.* Continental blockade of England decreed at Berlin 1806, Milan 1807.

VII. *Peninsular War*—1807-14. Flight of Portuguese, abdication of Spanish King. Joseph Bonaparte, King of Spain, installed by Napoleon, driven out by Wellington, Guerrilla.

Spanish Wars

VIII. *War with Austria*—1809. After Wagram zenith of power, annexation of country from North Sea to Rome. *Excommunication.* Divorce from Josephine Beauharnais for Louise of Hapsburg.

Zenith Decline

IX. *War with Russia*—1812. Invasion, starvation in ruined country, flight backward.

X. *Great War of Liberation.*

1813-14. *4th Coalition. Wins at Leipsic.* The Battle of the Nations. Napoleon Exiled to Island of Elbe.

XI. 1815-16. Return of Napoleon, coalition—War, victories, till Waterloo. Napoleon in St. Helena.

Congress of Vienna. Sacrifices peoples to dynasties, Belgium to Holland, Milan, Parma, Venice to Austria.

Confederation of thirty German states under diet of Frankfort and *Holy Alliance* to secure balance of power.

II PHASE: ALTERNATION OF MONARCHY AND REPUBLIC

1815-30—*Bourbon Dynasty.*

The restoration of the Bourbons was tolerated.

Exposition of Liberals

1815-24 *Louis XVIII* obtains the retreat of the allied garrisons. He cannot lead but must follow the contending parties: Royalists and Liberals. Villele re-establishes Ferdinand VII in Spain. Carbonari make France their headquarters.

Charles X, 1824-30, recalls the Jesuits who were expelled by the Liberals, votes a milliard of francs for the Emigrés who had been deported by the Revolution. Capture of Algiers by Lamoriciere; four ordinances narrow the constitutional charter.

Bourbons Supplanted by Orleans
Conquest of Algiers

1830-48. *Orleans Dynasty.* In July Revolution, Citizen king. *Louis Philip* complete conquest of Algiers, gave outlet to the warlike spirit of the French, but help to Mehemet Ali of Egypt, in spite of quadruple alliance against him.

Revolutionary Activity

Five attempts at his life, transfer of the remains of Napoleon. Two attempts of Louis Napoleon.

1848-52 *Second Republic.*

National workshop under L. Blanc, universal suffrage, religious liberty—Napoleon president—coup d'état.

Second Empire, Napoleon III—1852-70.

Success in Russia, China, Mexico

Strengthening the Enemies Prussia and Italy

Attack of France 1870-71

I. Alliance with England, 1854-56, (A) Crimean war against Russia in the Black Sea (B) China and Annam: liberty of commerce, religion. 1864-67. Intervention in Mexico for Hapsburgs. Maximilian fails. II—Helps to unite the enemies of France 1859, allied to Sardinia; McMahon defeats the Austrians at Magenta Solferino. Milan 1860 Riots; Cialdini invades four-fifths of Papal states. Garibaldi the two Sicilies; Venice taken during the Austro-Prussian war, 1866; Rome in 1870. Franco-Prussian war 1870-71. Germany had 850,000 men; France, 350,000. Beaten back on the Meuse, McMahon is defeated at Sedan, Sept. 1: Napoleon surrenders.

1870. *Third Republic,* Gambetta, dictator, Bazaine surrenders at Metz. Siege capitulation of Paris, Jan. 28, 1871. Thiers concludes peace; Alsace and one-quarter Lorraine ceded.

March 18-May 27, Commune of Paris.

Anarchistic Commune

Siege of the Communards, 50,000 socialists captured. Presidents: 1873, McMahon, desire for a Bourbon. New Constitution, 1879, Grévy. Gambetta and Ferry expel the religious, recall the communards—conquest of Indo-China, Madagascar, Annam—sale of dignities.

Religious Persecution

Conquest in Africa, Indo-China

1887. *Carnot* murdered—Panama Canal scandals—1894, Perier resigns. Faure. Thirst for revenge. Dreyfus scandals. 1899, Loubet. Government hostile to church; disestablishment—persecutions of Catholics, 1914. World War reunites Frenchmen.

French States

General View

PANORAMA

Carolingian Empire Divided into Gallic-Teutonic Parts and Composite Center

The Carolingian family pact of 843 had divided the empire of Charlemagne into Gallic and Germanic parts of about equal power with a middle kingdom or empire of Lotharingia; that central state soon broke up. Parts became independent states and parts fell into the hands of the German kings which gave those an undue preponderance in the affairs of Europe. Moreover, these countries were parts of ancient Gaul—mostly settled by Burgundians and Franks who were Gallicized or Latinized—so that they were more Gallic than Teutonic, and naturally would tend towards France; which in the course of centuries, reunited most of them to the Gallic kingdom. However, the borderlands of Belgium and Switzerland being farther away from and out of immediate reach of the Central monarchies, maintained a quasi-independence, and finally arose to national autonomy, which they enjoy today.

Although Held by Germany the East Remained Gallic

East

Northeastern France was divided into Lower Lotharingia, which was ancient Belgium, and into Upper Lotharingia, which alone retained the Carolingian name softened into Lorraine.

Stake of the War

Alsace-Lorraine was one of the stakes of the great war and of preceding wars, and calls for special attention. It was always inclined towards France.

Rhone Basin

Southeastern France—the Rhone basin had Burgundian kingdoms—which were bequeathed upon the empire,

1033. Entirely different from the Germans in language and temperament, the states of the Rhone basin joined the kingdom of France, one after another.

Paris Nucleus

The heart of France or Gaul remained Paris—which became the capital of the Capetian kings. It is true that in 997 the sway of the kings of Paris was small; but it grew gradually and naturally all around the city until it had absorbed the rest of ancient Gaul, which seems to be made to form one state, between the seas and the mountains. It is true that in the thirteenth century the English kings held the west of France as fiefs from the crown, and that for a hundred years they fought for the throne of France itself, but they were finally driven away and France was united like ancient Gaul.

West Held by English

The Feudal principalities were absorbed by the Crown.

France a Consolidated Monarchy

There were thirty-five feudal states which attained prominence, but they were all absorbed by the crown before the Modern Ages, and were given as appanages to the younger branches of the dynasty or to other worthy houses. France was a unified and consolidated monarchy, very mildly administered. Germany was a confederation of states, under the sway of an elective king or emperor where the fiefs remained in their sovereignty until the debacle of the German dynasties at the Great World's War.

Germany a Confederacy of States

Princely Houses.

Court Nobility Princely Houses

The disappearance of the Great Feudal Lords did not mean the disappearance of the Feudal nobility. Instead of a landed nobility it became a titled court nobility, having charge of the great court functions. Those princely houses were as great and as important as the ancient feudal principalities.

CHAPTER II

French States

Chronicles

NORTHWEST FRANCE

Armorica Extended from Seine to Garonne

BRITTANY

Held by English and French

Inhabited by Vendeans and colonized by Bretons, who had been driven out of England. It was not entirely subdued nor held by the Franks.

Ninth century—1491. Independent ruled by counts and dukes. Fell under Plantagenets for a time.

POITOU X CENTURY—1416

Low and High.

Eleanor of Poitou marries Louis VII king of France, 1137, then Plantagenet, Henry II king of England, 1152. Poitou conquered by Philip Augustus, 1205.

Vendée corresponds to Lower Poitou. Vendeans warred against Huguenots and Revolutionaries. They stood up against revolutionary atrocities. They commenced June, 1793, under Cathelineau, suppressed in 1796. The war was continued in Brittany by the Chouans, suppressed by Napoleon, 1800.

Aquitaine.

Aquitaine is a corruption of Auscetaine (Basque), Guienne is a further corruption of Aquitaine, conquered by Visigoths, defeated by Clovis, helped by Charles Martel against Saracens, reduced to vassalage, 768.

886. Guilhen of Auvergne, founder of Cluny. Duke Guilhen X, 1137, marries daughter, Eleanor, to Louis VII 1137. She marries Henry II of England, 1152, conveying Poitou Guienne and Gascony to England, she was imprisoned by him 1173-89, died in 1204.

ANJOU

Superior Rulers Get Realms

Lacking in geographical individuality, owes its pre-eminence to the character and fortunes of its counts and dukes.

870 I House England

Ingelgar about 870. Fulk 888. Fulk V king of Jerusalem 1131. Geoffrey Plantagenet unites Maine, marries Mathilda of England. Normandy. Henry II, king of England, 1154.

1204. Estates confiscated to France, given to brother of Louis IX, Charles of Anjou, who gets *Naples,* 1266, marries Beatrice of Provence. **1266 II House Naples**

Charles II of Naples invests sister, Marguerite, wife of Charles of Valois with Anjou and Provence, whose son, Philip VI, becomes king of France 1328, uniting Anjou to the crown. 1356, John the Good bestows it upon his son, Louis I, who is invested by Pope with Naples and Provence, 1384. Louis III, 1434. Brother Rene I, 1430=Isabelle of Guise, heiress of Lorraine, is fought by cousin and Burgundians. 1435, heir to brother. Naples lost—Anjou must be ceded to Louis XI, France. **1356-1481 III House Lorraine**

NORMANDY

Normans, 841, take Rouen. 885-86 besiege Paris, which is defended by Robert (Capetian). **Dukes Side with the Winning Dynasties**

Rolf or Rollo baptized, receives from Charles the Simple, daughter Gisela for wife and is given the Lower Seine. The dukes side with Carolingians, then join the Capetians. They drive away new invaders from the northern countries. The marriage relations of the dukes were with the English kings and Danish invaders. Their marriage ideas were loose and still half pagan. Robert the Devil, 1028-35, divorced Estride, the sister of Canute and married Gerleva of Falaise. It is from that illegitimate union that issued William the Bastard, a name he was to exchange for the "Conqueror." His father had great trouble in having him recognized as his successor, as he was only a boy, hence their uprisings against him. The stormy years of his youth, however, hardened him for the rest of his life and prepared him for the conquest of England. **Loose Morals** **William the Conqueror** **Conquest of England**

William the Conqueror, 1035-1087, plots during minority. Rising of Western Normandy, put down with help of Henry, king of France, conquest of parts of Maine from Anjou, 1068. Mathilda, daughter of Baldwin V of Flanders, 1052, William invades England, wins the battle of Hastings 1066, over Harold. The defeat of revolted nobles in the north, 1068-71, an occasion to invest more Frenchmen and enrich them. The four large earldoms abolished, replaced by shires: Continental feudalism introduced 1086. **England Cut Up in Shires**

Wars between his children and grandchildren.

Family Troubles Between Three Sons

Robert, the oldest, claims Normandy, revolts 1077-80, is conquered. Duke 1087, misgovernment, sells Cotentin to Henry I. 1097, duchy to William II Rufus, 1100-1106, returns, misgoverns.

Captured 1106 by Henry, a prisoner till 1135.

Henry I, 1106-35, opposed by nephews: Theobald of Blois, and William Cliton, son of Robert, 1128. Succeeded by nephew.

1154-1203 Anjou Dynasty

The son of their sister, Adele, Stephen of Blois, 1135-54. Henry's daughter Mathilde, marries Geoffrey of Anjou, Henry II, Plantagenet, 1154-89, becomes king.

Richard I, Cœur de Lion, 1189-99. John Lackland, forfeiture and conquest by Philip Augustus, except Guernsey, Jersey, Alderney, 1203.

1203 Annexed to France

1203. *Normandy* was made a domain of the crown of France, and the Normans became Frenchmen. During the 100 years' war, Normandy was occupied by Englishmen, 1418-1450, and Henry V wanted more to unite it to England than to retain France.

PICARDY

Somme Valley. Conquered by first counts of Flanders. Name appears first in XIII century. It was a borderland from Louis XI to Louis XIV.

Boulogne and Calais were in the hands of the English for a long time.

ARTOIS

The land of the Atrebati—capital Arras, corresponds nearly to Pas de Calais. It was given to Judith=Baldwin I, remained under Flanders till marriage of Isabella with Philip Augustus. 1180, It passed to Burgundy, Austria was ceded to France, Louis XIV, 1678.

VERMANDOIS

Favors Capetians

Vermandois occupied lands that later became Picardy and Champagne: Capital, St. Quentin.

Herbert I sustains Eudes against Charles the Simple—assassinated by Baldwin of Flanders, 902. *Herbert II* marries daughter of Robert, procures election of Rodolph, keeps Charles the Simple prisoner, helps Hugh the Great against Louis d'Outre Mer, alliance broken up by Raoul, 943.

Herbert IV marries Alin, sister of Valois.

CHAMPAGNE

930-1152

Champagne was known by this name during the sixth century. It was a part of Vermandois.

943. Countship.

Eudes de Blois and Chartres, cousin of Stephen I, 1019-1152.

Henry III was duke of Champagne and also king of Navarre.

Daughter Jane of Navarre marries Philip the Fair, their son, Louis, receives Champagne. Philip VI unites it to crown of France.

VALOIS

956-1215

Valois in Ile de France. Crespy capital, Compiegne. Pepin, brother of Herbert I. 956, last male descendant. Waleran, son of Hugh the Great of France, 956. Count of Vexin. **Counts**

Simon retires from world, 1077, Sister Alin marries Herbert IV of Vermandois.

Raoul V 1152: Leaves two sisters: Eleanore and Isabella. Isabella, 1167, marries Philip, count of Flanders, claims share; Eleonore, 1183-1214, cedes the countries of Valois, Vermandois, Vexin and Amiens to Philip Augustus, 1215.

Appanage of the Crown of France.

1285. *Valois* is detached from crown by Philip III in behalf of younger brother, Charles VI, father of *Philip VI,* king of *France,* 1328.

CENTER OF FRANCE

Ile de France—Duchy of France

So called because included between the Rivers Seine, Marne, Aisne, Oise and Ourcq. It was the portion of the country about Paris that was most completely under the control of the kings, i. e., the royal domain; was enlarged with other territories, completed about middle of fifteenth century became the center of France. **Between Five Rivers** **Royal Domain of Third Dynasty**

The Robertians were counts of Paris and dukes of France, descending from Robert the Strong, who is said to be the son of a Norman chief, Witichin. **Robertians**

Hugh Capet—capatus, mantel, cap, because he wore a cape. **Named Capetians**

ORLEANAIS, 1344-1847

Appanage for younger branch of the reigning family.

I Duke Philip, 1344.

II House Orleans Valois, 1392-1498. Louis XII king.

III Duke Gaston. Gaston, brother of Louis XIII, 1660. Intrigues against Richelieu and Mazarin.

Philip I Palatinate

IV House Orleans—Bourbon, 1660-1848.

Philip I, 1660-1701, brother of Louis XIV, marries Henrietta of England; 2nd Elizabeth of Palatinate; France claims Palatinate, Savoy.

Philip II, 1701-1723, great general inspires jealousy of uncle, removed, dissolute. Regent, 1715-23.

Louis, 1752, austere Jansenist.

Warrior

Louis Philip I, 1785=Louise Bourbon Conti. A warrior.

Philip II, Egalité, 1793=Mary Adelaide de Bourbon Ponthievre. Votes death to Louis XVI, is executed himself.

Louis Philip, 1830-48, king of the French.

BOURBONNAIS

I House Bourbon

Bourbon l'Archambault owes its name to Gallic God Borvo. Castle in rich portion of France, on Burge River, subtributary of the Allier. 1. House Bourbon, Childebrand, brother of Charles Martel. 913 *Adhemar,* faithful to Carolingians, receives lands from Charles the Simple.

Archambault I, 1031, gives his own name to castle of Bourbon.

II House Capetian

Beatrice, 1310, marries *Robert* of *France,* count of Clermont, sixth son of St. Louis.

Louis I, The Great, 1310-41, or the *Lame,* saves French army at Courtrai from complete destruction. Great Chamberlain, duke in 1327, obtains county of Marche.

Two Branches

1342. *Division* in elder line Bourbon and younger line Marche.

I Elder

Elder line, Bourbon, 1342-1523. *Peter I,* prodigal. Louis II, the Good, 1356-1410, hostage in London, wars with Du Guesclin to expel English from south, regent for Charles VI, tries to reconcile Orleans and Burgundy, compels pirates of Tunis to return prisoners, makes Moulins capital.

Fight English

John I, 1410, marries Mary of Berry, who brings Auvergne and Montpensier. Captured at Agincourt, pays three ransoms, dies in prison. Third son, Louis, progenitor of Bourbon Montpensier.

Charles I, 1434-56 = Agnes, daughter of John the Fearless, enters two plots against King Charles VII, 1440. Peter II, 1488-1503, marries Ann, daughter of Louis XI. Their daughter, Susan, marries second cousin, Charles de Montpensier, 1503-27, called Constable of Bourbon, greatest commander of France, who is dreaded by Louis XII, abused by Francois I, joins the Emperor Charles V, attacks Rome—fails. Duchy confiscated 1523.

Constable Joins Enemy

Younger Line Marche Vendome. Son James of Marche marries Catherine Vendome (situated on Loire, 19 miles northeast of Blois).

2. Younger

The fifth in descent from James is *Charles,* 1495-1537, the father of Anthony Vendome and Louis Condé.

1537-62. *Anthony Bourbon* marries Jane of Albrets, queen of *Navarre.* 1562-1610 *Henry IV* becomes king of France. Royal stem of *Bourbon Dynasty* 1593-1789.

CONDÉ, 1537-1804

Louis V Bourbon-Condé 1537-69—Huguenot leader.

Henry I, 1569-88, Huguenot.

Huguenots Become Catholics. Heroes

Henry II, 1588-1646, Catholic, marries Montmorency, inheriting that title, revolts against Mary de Medici, gains Richelieu. Louis II, the great Condé, 1686=Clemence de Meille, niece of Richelieu. His brother was in command of Conti.

Louis Joseph, 1818, fights in seven years' war, in revolution. Louis Henry, 1830—Orleans scandals. His son, Duke of Enghien, was shot by Napoleon's order, 1804.

CONTI, 1666-1814

Conti, Sur Celles in Picardy.

Armand, prince of Conti, 1685, brother of Great Condé, captured in Fronde, marries Anna Maria Martinozze, niece of Mazarin.

Louis 1664-1709, valiant, disliked by Louis XIV.

Joseph, 1736-1814.

MONTMORENCY, TENTH CENTURY—1632

Town nine miles northwest of Paris.

Prominent Leaders

The family has produced six constables, twelve marshals, several admirals and cardinals, etc., and was declared by Henry IV to be after that of the Bourbons, the first house in Europe.

Constable

Tenth century, Burchard, sire of Matthieu, first baron of France and Christendom. Matthieu I, 1131-66, constable.

Montmorency.

Ann, Marshall, 1492-1567 duke named after godmother Ann of Brittany, brought up with Francis I, follows him into Italy. Fights battles, makes treaties; most important man in France.

41 disgraced, 47 restored by Henry II of France, captured at St. Quentin, supplanted by Guise, restored, helps them, and fights Huguenots in I and II war. Eldest son, Francis, marries Diana, natural daughter of Henry II.

Henry I, 1614—Henry II, 1632, admiral, marshal refused office of Constable by jealous Richelieu. Revolts with Gaston of Orleans, is shot 1632.

Married to Condé

Sister Marguerite marries Henry II, Condé 1632, bringing him her title.

COLIGNY-CHATILLON

Coligny (near Jura).

Chatillon sur Loing.

Huguenots

Gaspard de Coligny buys Chatillon, marries Louise of Montmorency. Three sons, Huguenot leaders: Gaspard de Coligny, admiral 1572. Francois d'Andelot. Cardinal Chatillon, Protestant, marries, excommunicated, 1563.

Murders

Gaspard knighted on field of Cerisoles, military reformer, 1554, admiral, captured at St. Quentin. Huguenot sends Huguenot colony to Brazil, rival of Guise, is generally beaten. Murders Francis Guise, is murdered by Henry the Balafré, 1572.

EASTERN FRANCE

There Were Always Middle States

The empire of Charlemagne was divided in 843 into a western, a middle and an eastern part. The western was French, the middle was composite, the eastern was Teutonic. That partition lasted throughout the centuries. Although the middle kingdom broke up with Lothaire I, and was divided by his three sons, and partly annexed by Germany and France, there always were some middle states between these powers and there remain such today. These are the Netherlands, Lorraine and Switzerland.

MIDDLE KINGDOM

Emperor Lothaire II

840-55. *Lothaire I* misbehaves, must abdicate—division among three sons: Louis II, Italy — Lothaire II, Lorraine — Charles —south of Vosges. At latter's death 563, states divided between

two brothers, later conquered by his uncles of France and Germany—Lothaire II, divorce from Theutberga, opposed by Pope, dies without children. Division of Lotharingia between his two uncles. Louis II, Empire and Italy: has to fight the Saracens.

When Charles the Bald became emperor he also wished to control Germany; but the sons of his brother Louis, the German, defeat him and annex the whole of Lotharingia to Germany.

LOTHARINGIA

Division

Lorraine disputed between German and French sovereigns, who appoint their brothers as governors.

Moselle Upper And Meuse Lower

Division in lower and upper Lorraine: Belgian and Lorraine regions. 953. St. Bruno, Archbishop of Cologne, divides in upper Lorraine at the foot of the Vosges, on Moselle, which conserves the name of Lorraine, with Episcopal Sees of Treves, Metz, Toul and Verdun and lower Lorraine, on Meuse which is divided into Brabant, etc., and reaches to the Scheldt and the sea.

LORRAINE (UPPER LORRAINE)

Countship, 959—Dukedom, 1354-10.

Fusion of Old and New Dynasties

Dynasty Gerald of Alsace, 1046-1431. Intermarriage with Hohenstaufen, Valesians, Guise, Burgundians, Angevines, Scotch. Isabella, the daughter of last duke, heiress, marries Anjou, who is opposed by her cousin, of Vaudemont.

Anjou D, 1431. Their daughter Yolanthe marries his son, Frederic II, whence issued:

Rene II, 1473-1508, who is defeated and driven away by Charles the Reckless of Burgundy, but slays him.

Division

1508. *Division* in western part: Guise, 1508-1675; and eastern part: Lorraine proper, 1508-73.

The Duchy of Lorraine was a member of the Germanic body but had close relations with France.

French Spirit

French culture became predominant in Lorraine, and the French spirit prevailed among the population.

Even in Eastern Part

Although the eastern part under the Lorraine branch had a predominating German population, still it inclined towards France, and finally it was ceded to the same. The western part under the Guise had chiefly a Romanized population.

LORRAINE PROPER, 1508-1735

Three dioceses were ceded to France by the Protestants.

Branches

Lorraine: Catholics fight the Huguenots, struggle to maintain themselves on the throne—on the side of Austria—Francis Stephen surrenders the duchy to France in 1735. In 1736 he marries Mary Theresa, Empress of Austria, obtains in compensation the grand duchy of Tuscany, where the last of the Medici died, 1737. Stanislaus Leszcynski, duke, 1735-66. Lorraine, annexed to Germany, 1871-1918.

GUISE, 1508-1675

Four Pairs of Dukes and Cardinals

The town of Guise is located on the Oise. There were four pairs of dukes and cardinals representing the movements of the age.

Catholic Leaders

Claude—Antoinette de Bourbon, 1508-57, hero at Marignano. Daughter marries James V of Scotland. Francis the Balafré, 1550, was the noblest of the Guise; his brother the Cardinal was the ablest, took a leading part in the council of Trent. Wars of Religion.

Henry I, the Balafré, 1563-88, head of the Catholic League. Victorious, murdered by Huguenots, sister has King Henry killed, brother Charles of Mayenne enters Paris, candidate for king, is opposed by his nephew Henry's son. Both recognize Henry IV, who gives them the government of Languedoc, 1675.

The last scion of Guise, the marquis of Elbeuf, dies in 1828.

People cannot be weaned from France.

People Remain French

The people of Lorraine and Alsace have been taken away from France for about half a century and annexed to Germany and subjected to a systematic process of Prussianization which, far from winning the new subjects, alienated them by their harshness and meddling.

ALSACE-LORRAINE PART OF FRANCE

Panorama

French People

Alsace-Lorraine is a borderland between France and Germany that has been held alternatively by both of these countries, but that is heart and soul with France.

Alsace Soil Fertile, Manufacturing Cities

Alsace is composed of a long narrow slope lying between the Vosges and the Rhine, across from the Grand Duchy of Baden. It has an area of 3,202 sq. m. It is a rich farming country. It has a number of manufacturing cities of which Strasburg is the principal one. The people are independent. The com-

munes had many struggles with the bishoprics to maintain and increase their rights. They are mostly fervent Catholics.

German Speaking People Won Over by France

Tyrannized by Germany

Most of Alsace was annexed to France after the Thirty Years' War 1648; Strasburg was incorporated with France in 1681. The people were easily won over to the new state by the mild and liberal government of France. In 1870 Alsace was annexed to Germany. It was at once subject to a system of forcible Prussianization which aroused it against its new masters. Although the immense majority of the population are of German blood and language their feelings and their sympathies are with France, which fifty years of occupation have not changed.

Lorraine Plateau Coal and Iron Mines

Guise Rivals of Bourbons

Lorraine is a hilly plateau lying on the Vosges between the Rhine and the Moselle valleys and comprising 2,403 square miles. It has the biggest coal mines on the continent. French is spoken throughout Lorraine; and exclusively in its western part. History and culture are mostly Gallic. The Lorraine houses of Nancy and Guise played an important part in France in the beginning of modern history. The Guise were the rival house of the Bourbons and were on the point of holding the throne of France. They were very popular; being liberal and generous; leaders in politics as well as in religion. There were four pairs of glorious dukes and cardinals thoroughly French in their character and policy.

Lorraine Ceded to France

Although the eastern princes were continually at war with Louis XIV and were friendly towards the Hapsburgs; still their last duke, Francis I, ceded Lorraine to France in 1735, receiving as indemnity Tuscany in Italy.

The people of Alsace-Lorraine are in sympathy with France and could not be won over to Germany by half a century of systematic Teutonization. They were like exiles, kept away from their country and their liberation through the great war was a joyous return of exiles to their ancient home.

German Strasburg Won Over by French

There were ecclesiastical principalities that were progressive and advanced in culture, to wit: Strasburg, Metz, Toul and Verdun, and contributed to maintain a Catholic and French spirit. Strasburg was a Celtic, Roman, Frankish, German and French city. It was an ancient diocese and acquired large territories. There were disputes between the bishop and the people and more between the nobles and the people. In 1262 the city revolted

against the archbishop and became a free imperial city. Strasburg became one of the headquarters of the Protestant propaganda. It remained neutral in the Thirty Years' War. Captured in 1680 by Louis XIV it was won over to the French by fair treatment.

Three Bishoprics

The dioceses of *Metz, Toul and Verdun* maintained the French spirit among the people, even of German language. In 1555 they were seized by Henry II, in alliance with Maurice of Saxony against Charles V.

BURGUNDY AND SOUTHEAST—RHONE BASIN

1st. Kingdom—Burgundian dynasty—406-513.

Land of Clothilde—is annexed by Clovis.

Kingdoms

2nd. Kingdom—Frankish dynasty—561-621.

Merovingians reign and all Burgundy is annexed to Neustria.

3rd and 4th kingdoms, upper and lower Burgundy.

(*A*) *Transjurane, Swiss and Savoyan,* 888-933.

Rudolph I, fights the Saracens, 912-937; Rudolph II fights the Magyars, is called to Italy, but cedes same to Hugh in exchange for Provence. His widow marries Hugh, and his daughter Adelaide, Lothaire, Hugh's son, then Otto the Great.

(*B*) 879-933. *Cisjurane.* Boso=Irmengard, daughter of Louis II: son Louis called to Lombardy and made emperor.

Louis is blinded by Berenger, because he had promised not to return to Italy. Hugh of Provence who had governed the realm made himself independent, depriving Louis' son; but cedes Provence for the crown of Italy to Rudolph II of Burgundy.

United Kingdom of Arles, 933-1033.

Rudolph II resides at Arles. Conrad, 937-993, minor under tutelage of Otto I. Fief of empire.

Rudolph III, 993-1033, wills to empire.

Union to empire.

Franco-Germanic contest for the control of the Valley of the Rhone.

Germany Tries to Keep Rhone

The emperors of Germany used every means to keep the valley of the Rhone which was of great strategic value as a route to Italy. Frederick Barbarossa married Countess Beatrix and Frederick II leagued with the heretical Raymond of Toulouse. But the Romance people were too different from the Germanic people in language, customs and laws to remain in one empire with them. They naturally swung to the French.

St. Louis established a brother in Provence. Philip V had married Joanna, the heiress of Franche Comté. The residence of the Popes at Avignon further helps to Gallicize the Rhone basin. The French marriages of Margaret, the heiress of Flanders and the country of Burgundy, make the French influence paramount.

France Wins

County of Burgundy—Franche Comté

Tenth century.

Robert I of France separates county from duchy in favor of Rudolph III of Arles, who bequeaths states to empire, 1032. Beatrix marries Frederick Barbarossa. Joanna marries Philip V, king of France, 1307-22.

County

Margaret marries first Philip de Rouvre, the last Capetian duke, who dies, 1362, secondly, Philip the Bold, first *Valesian* duke, 1363. Seized by Louis XI, 1477, conquered by Louis XIV, 1676.

Dukedom of Burgundy, 887-1477

Dukedom

1. Appanage—Kings of France appoint sons.
2. Dynasty—*Twelve Capetian Dukes,* 1032-1362.

Henry, son of third duke (Eudes I), founds dynasty in Portugal.

Margaret of Flanders marries, first Philip de Rouvre, the last Capetian duke, and second Philip the Bold, the first Valesian duke.

3. Dynasty—*Valesian Dukes,* 1363-1477—progressive and aggressive, raised Burgundy to a rank of equality with the main states of Europe. See center states.

SOUTHERN FRANCE

Languedoc represents ancient Septimania.

Languedoc

Toulouse, city as ancient as Rome—friendly to Caesar, rich during the Empire. It was the capital of the Westgoth kingdom. It was taken by Franks in 507.

Toulouse Ancient City

Inroads of Saracens.

County of Toulouse, 900-1271—the masters of Languedoc, wealth of the cities, refinement.

The Albigenses attack ecclesiastical and political order, and would overthrow every institution. They are reduced by five crusades against them, 1209-27. Hostility of the counts Raymond VI and Raymond VII. Simon de Montfort conquers them. Amaury cedes conquest to Louis VIII of France.

Toulouse was captured by Montfort in the Albigensian crusade in 1216; it often revolted and was often besieged. Joan, daughter of Raymond VII, marries Alphonse of Poitiers, brother of St. Louis, thus preparing the incorporation of the country into the royal domains of the Capetians. Toulouse was united to France in 1271 and formed part of Languedoc.

COMTATS

Avignon Comtat—City. 1305-78, residence of seven popes. Comtat of Venaissin, excellent country, ceded to popes by Philip III, 1273, annexed to France, 1791. Residence of Orange rulers.

Orange, four miles long, four miles broad, lies in Venaissin. Four lines. 1530-1702, 4th line, Claudia, sister of the last count, marries Henry of Nassau. Their son, René, is stadtholder of the Netherlands, and is succeeded by his first cousin, William, the Silent, prince of Orange.

DAUPHINE

The Dauphine, three dolphins on crest: part of Arles kingdom. Grenoble counts of Vienne become important. 1349. Sold to France,—whose heir is called Dauphin.

PROVENCE

Provence—becomes part of kingdom of Arles.

1. House, 879, Boso—Carolingian counts.
2. Provencal counts, 926.
3. Aragons, 1112—Aragon of Barcelon.
4. Angevins, 1246-1481, incorporated into France.

Belgium

The Composite Nation

A fusion of races tends to improve the composite nations resulting from them. No people are more mixed than the Belgians and none were more progressive. **Composite Character**

Belgium is a borderland between France, Germany and England, and combines traits of these great nations. It is inhabited by two races: The Flemish and the Walloon, who speak different languages, but who have the same origin.

Both are a mixture of Celts and Franks; where the Celtic element predominates a French idiom is spoken; where the other element predominates, the Flemish idiom is used. Both having the same origin, they perfectly answer the definition of a nation. **Origin a Mixture of Celts and Teutons**

Moreover, they have the same character, to-wit: a passionate love of liberty, of religion, and of culture and an indefatigable activity; such traits always make a progressive people. Their folk song rings, "Flemings and Walloons are only surnames, Belgian is our family name." **Common Traits**

Love of Liberty.

The Belgians are such lovers of liberty, that they always fought any encroachment on their rights and always were a free people. Walloons and Flemings stood together for liberty. They were left free under the Roman and Frankish empires; they were the companions of the Franks in their expeditions to make the Nomadic tribes settle down. When Western Europe was **Fight For Liberty**

parcelled out into fiefs, depending on France and Germany, the Belgian principalities enjoyed a large amount of freedom. Being far away from the central powers, they were only lightly ruled by their suzerains, and opposed an implacable resistance against any attempt on their liberties.

Defense of Liberty

When the peoples of the earth commenced to organize a real and logical democracy, the Belgians were among the first to assert their independence against the Dutch. In our days they maintained their liberty against the most powerful tyrant of any age. They fought that they and the world may be safe for democracy.

Love of Religion.

Practical Christians

The Belgians are one of the most Christian nations of the earth. They are Catholics and most all practice what they believe. All attend services Sunday mornings, and all have a good time Sunday afternoons. The Belgians put religion above trade, regardless of any sacrifice.

Sacrifices Conscience

At the Reformation, when the Dutch attempted to destroy their churches and change their ancient faith, the Belgians fought for their liberty of worship and sacrificed their commerce to follow the dictates of their conscience. For they were shut off from the sea routes by the Hollanders, and ostracized by the northern powers who were then fanatical Protestants, and they suffered an eclipse in their commerce for conscience' sake.

Love of Culture.

Useful Arts

The Belgians have a natural inclination to the arts—the fine arts as well as the useful. They seem to be born mechanics and when they migrate to other countries they quickly are noted for their mechanical skill in every kind of craft and secure the best of positions.

Fine Arts and Sciences

As for the fine arts and letters, the Belgians excel

in painting, music, history and science. Their museums are filled with masterpieces of their own masters, and their homes are decorated in fine taste and style. The Belgians have their quota of men great in every kind of science and they always march in the van of progress.

Love of Labor.

Devouring Activity

The Belgians are animated with a devouring activity. Labor is a second nature to them. The density of the population brings up many rivals for every position. It is a difficult task to climb in the scale of society and it requires exertion to make a living. Everyone works early and late. But labor develops man and produces wealth and abundance; it creates a powerful community and a progressive people. Belgium has a man to the acre, that is, 646 people to the square mile; it is more than any other country supports.

Progressive Role in the World.

Roman Culture Absorbed Communicated

Belgium took a lively part in all the movements of the times: social, political and religious; commercial and intellectual.

Barbarism Fought

It quickly assimilated the Roman civilization and communicated the same to the Franks, who migrated on its soil, and amalgamated with its progressive inhabitants, and formed themselves into the civilizing nation of the west. It fought against Mohammedism and Cæsarism. It made its mark in industry, commerce and colonization.

Progressiveness

Small Territory but Prominent Power.

Prominence of Belgium

Rich Soils and Mines

Belgium is one of the smallest lands in Europe. Still it ranks the fifth in the world's trade. The area of Belgium is 11,843 square miles. Its population, 7,386,466 souls. Its soil is inexhaustible and it is as intensely cul-

tivated as a garden. It has coal and iron mines ranking fifth in importance in all Europe. Its streams, the Meuse, the Scheldt and the Yser, afford a complete drainage of the plains and form a large network of waterways which penetrates into every nook of the country. Railroads, national, provincial and vicinal, run to the very villages. The highways between these villages are kept up like our boulevards.

Drainage

Roads

A Great Colony

Belgium has the largest and finest colony in Africa, that of the Congo, which is eighty times larger than the mother country. That state is very fertile and practically organized and administered. The slave raids have been stopped forever. Life and property are safe and the country is being rapidly developed.

History

Ancient History

I. PERIOD 57 B. C.—476 A. D.

ROMAN PERIOD—CULTURED

Third Part of Gaul

In ancient times Belgium formed the third part of Gaul, stretching from the Rhine to the Somme and the Sea. The Belgians strongly resisted the Roman conquest, 58-51. Ambiorix came nearly destroying Julius Caesar. Once incorporated in the Roman Empire, the Belgians took up the advanced culture of Rome, and became a factor in the Empire and enjoyed for five centuries the blessings of the civilization of Athens and Rome.

Valiance

Culture

Medieval History

FIFTH-SIXTEENTH CENTURIES

Ages of Struggle

The Middle Ages were ages of struggle and formation full of wild disorder and vice and of noble heroism

GODEFROID DE BOUILLON
KING OF JERUSALEM

and virtue. They were the times of struggle against anarchy, fanaticism and despotism and of struggles for order, religion and liberty. The greatest champions of the rights of men were the Franco-Belgians, who at home created industry and prosperity and abroad threw themselves valiantly in the great movements for the sake of humanity.

Whilst those world wars lasted during the whole of the Middle Ages, they are treated first; then the local events and national improvements are taken up.

A

WORLD WARS FOR CULTURE

Ages of Heroes

The Middle Ages were the heroic ages of Christendom. Nomadism and brutality were let loose upon mankind by the fall of the Roman Empire—the power that had maintained peace in the world for centuries. The Franco-Belgians were the first to restore order in Europe and fought the longest against the powers of barbarism. The expeditions of Charlemagne to tame and settle down the barbarians of the north and the wars of Charles Martel, Godfrey de Bouillon, Baldwin IX of Flanders, St. Louis IX of France and Emperor Charles V are holy wars undertaken to defend liberty, culture and religion; they all were crusades fought to establish and maintain civilization in the world.

Franco-Belgian Heroes

Without denying the part of all the Christian nations in those world wars for civilization, it is safe to say that the Franco-Belgian heroes and later the French and the Belgians had the greatest share. For them crusading began centuries before and lasted centuries after the general crusades. Their rulers became the leaders of those Christian expeditions; but most of them lost their lives in the infidel countries and their great dynasties

were lost to their people. The feats of Godfrey de Bouillon, Baldwin of Flanders, equal the deeds of any heroes of the past ages and will forever redound to the glory of the Belgians.

B

NATIONAL MOVEMENTS

During the Middle Ages the Belgians progressed under every kind of government. They throve as partners of the Franco-Belgian Empire; as quasi-independent vassals and as a reunited and free nation.

II PERIOD—476-843

FRANCO-BELGIAN PERIOD: FORMATIVE

Belgium the Cradle of Frankish Dynasties

From the Fourth century many Franks settled in Belgium and combined with the ancient populations and made them more Teutonic than before.

It is on Belgian soil that the two first dynasties of the Franks arose and grew, to-wit:—the Merovingians, 350-752, the Carolingians, 752-987—Clovis, Charles Martel and Charlemagne are Belgian princes. Clovis' capital was Tournay, Charlemagne's was Aix la Chapelle, then in the center of Belgium.

The Franks: The Leaders of the Teutons.

Franks in Contact With Rome

Most of the history of ancient Belgium from the fall of the old Roman Empire of the West to the restoration of the same by Charlemagne may be told in the history of the Franks. They are the one nation that grew on the confines of the Roman Empire along the right side of the Rhine from the Main river to the sea, and that occupied the left side and all of Belgium even before the fall of the Empire. They had adopted the policies and strategies of the Empire. Three Franks had been proclaimed emperors of Rome. By embracing

Christianity the Franks acquired a new element of culture and progress.

Leavened by Christianity

They had become similar to the Celts of Gaul, whom they conquered, and they could at once amalgamate themselves with those Latinized Gauls—thus they represented in themselves a revival of the ancient civilization and they became the Neo-Latins of the North.

And by Mixture With Gauls Re-establish the Western Empire

The Franks became the leaders of continental Europe for three centuries; they laid the foundation of a new Empire of the west, which was gloriously established by Charlemagne who was consecrated the first Emperor by the Chief of Christendom.

III PERIOD. 843-1400, FEUDAL PERIOD

Feudal System

Military System of Feudalism.

Europe was organized under the feudal system from the IX to the XIV century.

As a political unity the name of Belgium disappeared and there arose a number of small principalities, with local names, but the Belgian spirit of independence remained alive.

Many Fiefs, One-Spirit

Lower Lotharingia covered most of Belgium and Holland and soon was divided into several fiefs or provinces, of which Brabant and Luxemburg were the principal ones. It was often disputed between France and Germany and its major part was incorporated in the German empire. But it retained its independent spirit.

The western part of ancient Belgium, called Flanders, was apportioned to France in the Carolingian division. But it remained more Belgian than French. It extended to the Somme and comprehended Artois besides Belgian and French Flanders.

During the Middle Ages under the feudal system, there

Seventeen Principalities

Some Episodes

arose seventeen well known states upon the soil of ancient Belgium of which today Belgium contains nine, France one (Artois) and Holland seven. All had their strifes for liberty and made strides in progress. Some data of Flemish history are given here as samples of Belgian life.

Flanders.

Mostly all the neighboring lands were still merely agricultural, without industries, when Flanders was renowned all over the world for her textures of wool and flax. Large cities sprang up on all sides and covered the land. The other Belgian principalities closely followed in thrift and wealth.

Textile Industries

The Flemings had perfected the woolen industry and produced lustrous broadcloth that rivaled with the silks of India.

Beside wool, the Flemings cultivated flax, and became famous for their linen, and they are until today. The Englishmen come and buy the white flax of Flanders, which remains the best paying crop up to our own times.

Masters Brought to England

Envious of the prosperity of the Flemish factories, the kings of England offered fabulous sums to the Belgian weavers to draw those gold producers to their land, and they succeeded in transplanting the cream of the woolen industries into their land; first equaling, then eclipsing the Flemings. It was the foundation of English supremacy in manufacturing and trading.

Struggles for Liberty.

The industry and commerce of the Flemings was naturally carried on in towns; and Flanders was covered with cities. The manufacturing population were the makers and the masters of the cities, and they enjoyed home rule. Charters were granted by their rulers,

who were obliged to respect these rights and privileges. The town was called a commune or city; it had its own seal, a bell to convoke the citizens or burghers, and a belfry to preserve the charter and to serve as watch-tower and prison. It had the right to maintain troops and to build walls of defense.

Commune Rights

Class Privileges

In opposition to the democracy stood the nobility and the rich merchants, who formed a patriciate.

The fourteenth century saw the struggles of the common people, the manufacturing classes, against the aristocrats, composed of merchants, magnates and nobles, and led by the kings of France. The former followed the banner of Flanders; a black lion upon a golden field; and prided themselves on the name of Klauwaert, from the claws of the lion. The latter followed the French banner of the lilies, and they were called Lilliards and regarded as traitors by the patriotic Flemings. It was a national struggle for existence, for the kings of France were determined to confiscate Flanders to their crown. It was also a social struggle, for their followers in Flanders were the nobility and the aristocracy of wealth, who wished to rule and exploit Flanders as their fellows ruled and exploited France. The citizens of the towns arose in their numbers to vindicate their political independence and their social rights. They fought for a century against the kings of France and their allies in Flanders. It is due to their struggles that the independence of the Belgian provinces has been maintained against the French cupidity; and that the rights of labor have been asserted and vindicated against the powerful kings of France.

Two Camps: Klauwaerts and Lilliards

Citizens Defend Their Privileges

Philip the Fair, King of France, was one of the most faithless, tyrannical, revengeful and irreligious kings that ever reigned. It was he who, out of spite, broke up

Philip the Fair Tyrant

the temporary power of the Popes and covered the great Pope Boniface VIII (1305) with such brutal violence that it killed him. He imprisoned the Counts of Flanders, Ferrand and Guy and confiscated their fief. The Flemings revolted. At Bruges, Breydel and Deconinck slew all the French in the city. All Flanders was soon in revolt. The flower of the French nobility was destroyed at the battle of Courtrai, named the battle of the Golden Spurs, because the knights left 700 golden spurs on the battlefield.

Confiscation

Matins of Bruges

Battle

Other Parts of Belgium

General Struggle for Democracy

At Ghent the Van Artevelde made alliance with England against the greedy kings of France. The Brabançons wrung from their Dukes the Charter of the Joyeuse Entrée, more democratic than the Magna Charta of England. At Liege six hundred Franchimontois devoted themselves to death for the sake of liberty.

Splendor and Decline of the Communes.

Prosperity

The communes had reached the apogee of power and wealth in the fourteenth century, but their very prosperity brought quarrels between the aristocratic and the laboring class of the cities and also among the neighboring cities.

Internal and External Struggles

As in Ancient Greece

It was the case of the mighty Greek cities of old who warred among themselves and fought those great wars of the Peloponnesus, of which the Greek historians give us so splendid an account. While Bruges and Ghent and other cities were quarrelling among themselves, instead of keeping open the great waterways to the sea they allowed them to be silted up, and they lost their commerce and industry, which were eagerly seized by England and by Antwerp.

Neglect of Waterways

Eclipse of Bruges

Thus Bruges, the great Belgian seaport of the Middle

Ages, was cut off from her ocean canal communication. Antwerp on the deep Scheldt took its place.

Burgundian Dukes Unite the Big Cities

The statesmanship of the Burgundian dynasty put an end to these local rivalries, and inaugurated a national policy, wherein the interests of the ancient cities were not only safeguarded but also promoted and not only maritime Flanders, but the whole of Belgium became a world power and the richest country of the times.

IV PERIOD—REUNION OF PRINCIPALITIES

Burgundy-Netherlands 1363

Reunion of Belgian and Holland Principalities.

Feudal Particularism

During the Middle Ages, particularism was the rule in Europe; i. e., the division in many fiefs. It was especially pronounced where the people had made more progress, as in the ancient territory of Belgium; which had no less than seventeen principalities.

National Spirit of Unity Persists

However, those political divisions did not destroy the spirit of national unity that animated those countries at all times. That helped the Burgundian Dukes to unite under their sceptre the many states, that had belonged to different houses, and to reconstruct ancient Belgium.

Addition of Burgundian Domains.

Burgundians Added

These Lords possessed moreover some of the Burgundian countries, which formed a part of ancient Lotharingia, or the Middle Kingdom that lay between France and Germany in the ninth century.

Restores Lotharingia

Unification Necessary Before Aggressive France

The French people being united into a compact kingdom eager to expand, the Netherland principalities would be absorbed unless they were united into one vigorous state able to resist the attacks of a powerful aggressive neighbor. The unification of seventeen states separated for many centuries would require skillful diplomacy rarely found in the course of history. But it

Effected Through Statesmen

was found in the gifted dukes of Burgundy uniting the distinguished houses of Flanders and Valois. Through a series of marriages, negotiations and campaigns they succeeded in bringing together principalities which for centuries had been rivals of one another. It was especially through peaceful diplomacy that these great statesmen succeeded in uniting the provinces that in ancient times had been one, and that naturally go together. Philip the Good was the most successful among all of them. His son Charles the Fearless was the only one that had recourse to arms to round off his domains and he perished by the sword.

Centralizing Policy Resisted

Such master rulers would naturally establish a strong government and they concentrated many powers in their hands; following the policy of the times which was one of centralization. In this they met with unyielding opposition from the peoples that had enjoyed valuable franchises for centuries and they learned how to respect those cherished rights and obtained all the more the sincere co-operation of subjects, who being left free in their local affairs made the greatest of sacrifices to build up the power of their progressive dukes.

Franchises Respected

Generous Co-operation from a Free People

Splendor of Bruges

Philip the Good, 1419-1467, was the most opulent prince of his time. He was the patron of arts and letters. He held his court at Bruges and supported a colony of artists which made of Bruges the museum of the Nord. Gorgeous styles prevailed; gold, silver and jewels abounded on all sides. The woolen industries were so important that Philip established the Order of the Golden Fleece on the occasion of his marriage with Isabella of Portugal, thus honoring the great woolen industries, the source of Belgian greatness. It was the first official recognition of the power and rights of labor.

Order of Golden Fleece

Recognition of Labor

The great order of the rising state had for emblem not some powerful, fierce animal in threat, but the meek lamb, and its valuable wool—the source of Belgium's wealth and industry.

Imperial Marriages

Mary of Burgundy, the granddaughter of Philip the Good, married the scion of the Hapsburgs, Maximilian, who became emperor of Germany. Their children married to the children of the great Isabella the Catholic, who, with Ferdinand the Catholic, united Spain in one monarchy, drove the Mohammedan Moors into Africa and made possible to Columbus the discovery of America. Emperor Charles V was the grandson of Isabella and the son of Philip of Burgundy and Joanna of Spain, and he seemed to unite in his blood the noble qualities of the counts of Flanders, the Hapsburg rulers and the Spanish warriors. He was born in Ghent and loved to call himself a burgher of that opulent commonwealth. He was proud of his city of Ghent and he used to say jokingly of the capital of France, that he could put her in his big Gant, which means glove in French: "Je mettrai Paris dans mon Gant!" In spite of the pride they had in their fellow citizen, Kaiser Karl, the Ghentenaars refused to pay the heavy taxes laid upon them and rebelled against him. But he hastened from Spain to reduce the rebels and did not hesitate to punish his fellow citizens, 1539. Charles was the world ruler of his day. It was under him that America was conquered and added to the dominions of his house. He was the first white man who ruled America. So there was a time that the ruler of Belgium, a Belgian born prince, was also the ruler of the new world. He confided important positions of his empire to the sturdy sons of Belgium. Charles V is the national hero of the Belgians. The memory of "Kaiser Karl" lives until today among

Charles V Emperor of Old and New World

Native City Rebels—Is Punished

National Hero

the people more than that of any other prince of past centuries.

Antwerp: Sea Port Metropolis

Under Charles V, Antwerp was perhaps the most prosperous and wealthy city of Europe, surpassing even Venice itself. The broad and deep Scheldt makes one of the best soft water harbors in the world, where, without expense, the sea-going vessels are cleansed from the barnacles that grow on them in the ocean. It penetrates sixty miles into the continent and forms the natural seaport of the best part of western Europe. Napoleon understood so well its importance that he constructed there the finest docks of the times, which excite admiration until today.

World Trade

There were distinct advantages of world trade in the connection with the Spanish empire; as that opened many positions to the progressive Belgians in the new worlds conquered by Spain. But it was lost by the shortcomings of an absentee government.

Modern History

FOURTEENTH-TWENTIETH CENTURIES

In modern ages the Belgians, who for centuries had enjoyed a monopoly of trade in Northern Europe, suffered a commercial eclipse under foreign regimes, to rise again a free nation and to retake their ancient rank among the progressive peoples of Europe.

Sacrifices for Conscience' Sake

In Northern continental Europe, Belgium alone remained faithful to the ancient church. But it paid dearly for its adhering to its own conviction and refusing to side in with the violent reformers. It was persecuted and injured for the faith that it professed, but it remained unshaken in its religion and finally obtained its freedom of worship.

But the material loss was sustained for the noblest of

causes; for the liberty of conscience. It was to assert their belief in their ancient religion that the Belgians separated from the rest of Northern Europe, which took a new form of Christianity and boycotted them because they followed the dictates of their consciences and stood firm in the midst of changing beliefs. Whatever a man may think of the different forms of Christianity he must give credit to those who have the courage to sacrifice their material interests for what they deem their spiritual good.

Commercial Eclipse

In 1830 the Belgians fought themselves free and they prospered again and they soon took back their ancient place in the commerce of the world; before two generations of independence had passed, they were the fifth nation in the volume of world trade.

Struggles in 1830

When the modern militarists were on their way to the conquest of the world, the Belgians again became crusaders for liberty. They sacrificed their land that "the world might be a fit place to live in." It is true they are paralyzed for a generation to come—the Yzer country is in worse condition than Caesar found it— because it is a desert and the sea water is covering the fat meadows of its valley. But the Belgians are free and so is the world.

1914-18

FIFTH PERIOD: 1556-1830. FOREIGN REGIMES

COMMERCIAL ECLIPSE

Belgium passed under the rule of Spain, 1556; Austria, 1713; France, 1794; Holland, 1815-30.

Belgium collapsed under the misgovernment of distant and alien powers and under the attacks of greedy neighbors. In the course of three centuries, there is hardly anything to record, but the weakness of the rulers, and the assaults of France and Holland.

Misgoverned and Attacked

Spanish Domination.

Contrast Between Statesmen

The Burgundian princes had shown real statesmanship by uniting the Netherlands together in one powerful state able to defend itself against aggressive neighbors. William of Orange showed himself their enemy by dividing them in two, mostly to satisfy his own ambition. Philip II granted autonomy to the faithful provinces of the south, under the sovereignty of Albert and Isabella who, however, died without children.

Victim of Holland

Belgium was the special victim of Holland, which closed her rivers and stopped her sea trade, and she suffered a commercial eclipse that lasted over two hundred years.

Belgium became the prey of the French King Louis XIV, who sliced off her southern domains and made no less than five wars of conquest on her territory.

Principal Causes of the Division of Belgium and Holland

1. *Absenteeism.*

Philip II. It is with Philip II that commences that inefficient government of the Belgian provinces by absentee rulers, who did not understand the situation. However able and practical the governors appointed might be, they were only deputies or substitutes lacking the personal authority of a sovereign who never visited his distant subjects. The country remained open to the machinations of its enemies whether inside or outside. Ambitious princes found it possible to sow dissensions in the land, and even detach parts of it from the sovereign. Hostile neighbors could invade and subjugate whole provinces before the main power found time to send defenders to the hitherto abandoned country.

Absentee Rulers Uninformed Belated

Leave Land Open to Revolts and Attacks

2. Intrigues and Violence.

Intrigues of William the Silent

William of Orange cut off the tie that united Holland to Spain, and organized an aggressive republic which became powerful and proved itself an enemy of the Belgians by closing their rivers, and shutting them out of the sea trade. The Belgian provinces were treated as a dependency of Holland, to be exploited by the Hollanders, until they could be dismembered and annexed without provoking European wars. However, the Belgian people concentrated, as it were, within their narrow boundaries, developed their fields and their mines and grew in numbers and in wealth.

Belgium Used as a Subject Country

Dutch Domination—1815-30.

Barrier Kingdom Against France

In order to give the Orange dynasty a share in the redistribution of European lands and to oppose a firm barrier to new French invasions, Belgium was united to Holland in one kingdom without having been consulted in the matter.

William I, 1815-30, king of Holland, was a narrow and stubborn autocrat, who treated the Belgians as a conquered people, and lost them through his persecutions. He overtaxed the Belgians and persecuted their church; and he ostracized the Walloons. The Flemings joined their brethren and they overthrew the tyrant.

VI PERIOD. INDEPENDENT KINGDOM OF BELGIUM 1830-1918

Independent but Mutilated Belgium, 1830.

Peace

The London conference recognized the independence of Belgium as an accomplished fact. King William stubbornly refused to recognize it, his armies invaded Belgium, and advanced until they were repelled by the French: the following year General Chassé was driven

1838 Cession of Two Half Provinces

out of Antwerp. It was only in 1838 that William agreed to recognize the independence of Belgium, on condition to give up to him the half of Limburg and the half of Luxemburg. To arrive at a temporary peace and settlement, the Belgians gave up for a time those territories, thinking that some day, time and circumstances will restore their lands.

Liberty of Conscience in Catholic Belgium

Belgium, a Catholic people, had expelled a Protestant King, who tyrannized over conscience, now elected another Protestant king, who was a champion of religious liberty, to-wit: Leopold of Saxe-Coburg. It inscribed liberty as the corner stone of its constitution. After centuries of foreign rule, it was finally allowed to rule itself, and it gave to all its citizens the fullest right of self-development: it grew and prospered and took a remarkable place among the nations of the world.

Strife of Political Parties

Two political parties arose in Belgium—the Catholic and the Liberal, the former being conservative, the other fluctuating. Both are progressive and their strife is often lively. The king forms a useful balance of power between the parties. Of late the Socialists have taken the lead among the Liberals.

Bruxelles, the bilingual capital, soon became a center of arts and finances.

Superior Dynasty.

Progressive Dynasty

Belgium was happy in the choice of a dynasty, that was to raise it in less than a century to a prosperity equaling that of the great powers.

Leopold I, the wise founder, solidly established the kingdom.

Development

Leopold II, the keen statesman, developed the resources of the country and found an outlet for its produce in the Congo, the only unexplored and unoccupied part of the world.

Albert I was the heroic defender of his little land against the colossus of the north.

Belgium the Rampart of Civilization Against Brute Force

When driven by sheer numbers from his country, he took a stand on the Yzer River, and for four years he held the invader from crossing into England. As Baldwin 1,000 years before had stood as the sentinel of Europe against the savage Normans, so Albert the Brave stopped the advancing Teutonic hordes on that very sea coast. At his side stood Queen Elizabeth as nurse of the wounded and mother of the people: an angel of consolation in the dire trials of the Belgians.

Queen Elizabeth

BELGIUM'S PART IN THE WORLD'S WAR 1914-1918

Monograph

Heroic Stands Against Germany

On the night of the 3rd of August, 1914, Belgium was served an ultimatum by powerful Germany requesting passage through its territory. It had to choose between dishonor or destruction. Only twelve hours were granted for an answer. It was suddenly surprised, having been assured that there was no thought of violating its neutrality. It did not hesitate. The answer was: "We cannot break our international obligations. We will defend ourselves with all the means in our power." It was the struggle of David and Goliath.

King Albert Stops the Powerful Kaiser

With an army ten times smaller and weaker than her enemy's Belgium withstood long enough the German advance to give France and England time to mobilize their forces and to oppose an effectual barrier to the German hordes. Only the twenty-seventh part was free, with no other defence than a small river, still the Belgians held that strip of country and blocked the road to England.

First Onslaught—Heroic Resistance.

Stand Made Wherever Possible

King Albert I led the defense and tried to stop the advancing enemy at every river. Liege resisted to the

last. Namur resisted but soon fell. Confident in her fifty-nine forts, Antwerp resisted for a month, while the Germans were beaten at the Marne. But the Belgian army was being surrounded by the enemy; and 30,000 escaped capture by crossing over into Holland, where they were interned till the end of the war, and the bulk of the army evacuated the city.

Masterly Retreat

Although the enemy was swarming over the country, King Albert led his army, hungry and exhausted, to the Yzer River, where the French and the English troops could join him. It was a masterly retreat of 94 miles in face of the enemy. It barred the road to London.

The Flanders Front

Three Nations Defend Yzer

The Belgians entrenched themselves along the Yzer River from Nieuport to Dixmude, while the English occupied the canal of the Yperlée and the city of Ypres and the French operated in the hills towards the south, communicating with their Arras Front.

From October to November there were two formidable assaults—one at the Yzer and another at Ypres. Furious battles of artillery and hand-to-hand struggle took place but the road to London remained barred. It

The Second Defeat

was the second defeat of the Germans and it broke their power of advance. It presaged their final debacle.

The danger was extreme on account of the unshaken determination to win prevailing on both sides. The military operations hardly stopped during the winter. They recommenced with renewed force in the spring of 1915. The fights raged mostly around Ypres, therefore, they are called the second battle of Ypres.

In a Second Battle at Ypres Poisonous Gas Fails

Despairing of winning by ordinary military means the Germans had recourse to the hellish device of poisoned gas at Boesinghe, which at first paralyzed the sturdy English and Canadians but was soon

eluded by gas masks that rendered the soldiers immune.

Ypres was not taken, nor the road to London forced open.

Such fighting lasted unabated four long years.

Yzer Section. Fierce and Interminable Fights.

Heroic Resistance of the Belgians

It is here that the Belgiams showed their most sturdy qualities, and the king proved his solid leadership. His army was reduced to 84,000 men who were decimated by a continual fight and a risky retreat of ninety miles. It was without shoes and clothes, without arms and provisions. It was attacked with all the force of the German army for twelve days and for these days it was alone to defend itself. But the king knew how to animate his soldiers and to brace them up with the certitude of the coming of the great allies. Every soldier became a hero; he disputed every inch of ground till his last breath. Finally the tremendous overpower of the enemy effected a crossing to the west bank at the Yzer bend and the Germans swarmed across the river.

The Relentless Machines Allow a Crossing at the Yzer Bend

The Sea to the Rescue.

The Belgians Were Saved Through the Flooding of the Yzer Valley

The Belgiums had no other shelter than the embankment of the railway which runs parallel to the Yzer river. The situation was hopeless. But the last resource was put in operation. The sluices of Nieuport were opened and the sea water which, during the high tide, stood above the level of the Yzer valley, flooded it, and drowned the Germans, submerged their machinery and opposed an impassible barrier to the German advance. But the fat meadows were ruined for many years to come.

Exceptional Difficulties in the Yzer Country.

No Shelter

Watery Trenches

The extreme moisture of the country filled the trenches with water as soon as they were dug. The soldiers were standing in the mud and the water to their knees while they were harassed by the fire of the relentless foe. Still they held out and they are the ones that closed the maritime road to the invaders. It was only the tenth day that the French could reach that dangerous spot and they soon cleared the western bank of the stubborn Germans who held on to every place they had captured.

10 Days of Solitary Fighting

Shelter Created and Made Impregnable.

Shelter Improved

The Belgians lost no time in improving their defenses; they built up shelters above the ground with sacks of dirt, they constructed plank or branch walks over the marshy places, and they were able to withstand the relentless and furious attacks of the Germans for four years and to strengthen themselves for the next offensive.

4 Years of Defensive

Several Sorties

Not only did the Belgians defend the lower Yzer, but they made several sorties to sustain the allies in their struggle with the stubborn enemy of the country.

In 1918 the Belgians Pounce Upon Their Enemy

When in July, 1918, Foch started his offensive the Belgians bounded like liberated lions against their cruel oppressors and regardless of any danger they carried the crest of Flanders, from which the hated enemy had so long harassed their land. They had a full share in driving them out of West Flanders and in hurrying and hastening the debacle that forced the proud invaders to sue for peace. The armistice was granted them November 11th on harsh conditions which were imperative in dealing with treacherous and cruel enemies.

Albert Leader of Heroes

King Albert made heroes of a handful of exhausted and unarmed men who withstood four years of ceaseless

attacks of the Northern Colossus, and finally bounded from their shelter to pounce upon the oppressors of their lands.

System of Atrocities and Terrorism.

System of Atrocities to Terrorize People and Ruin the Country

The Germans brought in a new system of warfare full of atrocities that was to strike awe in the civilians and destroy the resources of the land for generations. All was done systematically on a preconcerted plan and was calculated to break down the spirit of the people, to starve them to inaction, and to prevent their rehabilitation. When the Bishop of Liege asked them to stop those barbarous crimes, that cried for vengeance to heaven and for the reprobation of the civilized world in the the verdict of history, they answered that they "would win and write history." But their victims and the free nations are writing the history of the shameful deeds of those tormentors of mankind, and it is in vain that the Prussians try to deny them. The half has not been told.

Fire

Many towns were burnt and the inhabitants shot for the trumped-up crime of one of them. The library of Louvain was burnt.

Fines

Absurd prohibitions were multiplied in order to arouse the people to outbreaks, and to be able to fine them heavily and often.

War Contributions

Exhausting war contributions were exacted and provisions commandeered, in such a systematic way, that anything that could be extracted from the people was done.

Enslavement and Starvation

The climax was reached when the Belgians were deported to Germany, and made slaves to work for their enemies. Transported in cattle cars, they were burdened with such heavy tasks to perform without any human food at all that within a few weeks those modern slaves were afflicted with consumption; most of them died in the

hands of their cruel masters and those who returned were like living skeletons.

Belgians Not Demoralized.

Awe Does Not Break Spirit of Belgians but Hardens it

Did the Germans advance to break the morale of the Belgians? On the contrary, they succeeded only in one thing; to-wit—to render their victims more decided to resist such inhuman masters. Every week under their very eyes at Brussels, there appeared a paper, called "La Libre Belgique" which exposed all their crimes and caricatured the tormentors of the Belgian nation. In spite of the heavy sums placed upon the head of the editor and publisher of that biting sheet, they were never able to find traitors to deliver that audacious Belgian into their hands.

La Libre Belgique

No Traitors.

Treason None

Unable to subdue the Belgian spirit, the Prussians looked for traitors and spies to divide them but they found very few that would accept their bribes.

There was not a single leading man that betrayed his country, nor even were there many of the starving laboring men that would listen to the hated invader.

No Division.

Split Between Flemings and Walloons

They struck one last scheme, that of splitting the people into Walloon and Flemish elements. The Flemings, whose language is akin to the German, were not given satisfaction, in regard to their language. It was for the enemy an excellent wedge to split the nation. There were many patriots that grieved over such discriminations, and demanded the rightful use of the Flemish language. They were called Flamingants. Among them were extremists, called activists, who put the language above anything else, and would resort to any means and even

Revolution

Language Difficulties

combine with outside powers to obtain redress. Those fanatics became the tools of the enemy, dividing the land, and were officially branded as traitors. At the instigation of the Prussians the extreme Flamingants demanded a political separation in two parts: Flanders and Wallonia. Belgium was divided into two states by the German authorities and a Flemish ministry of agitators and upstarts was formed. But the Belgians are no traitors; the activists were regarded as tools of the Germans and traitors to their country.

Activists Would Split Country

Magistrates Not Afraid.

It is here that Belgian judges showed their integrity and their fearlessness. The courts unanimously condemned them for treason and cast them in jail, to be executed as traitors. They were released by the Germans, and the judges were exiled into Germany; that judgment branded them forever as traitors and rendered their stay in Belgium intolerable, even during the German occupation. But when the enemies were driven out, most of the activists fled the country they had betrayed and those that faced the contempt of their fellow citizens were cast into jail, to be executed as common traitors. Belgium was more united than ever.

Condemned as Traitors

Judges Exiled

Culprits Executed

The Saviors of the Civilians.

What became of the whole country downtrodden and robbed by the occupying power? Who kept up the patriotic spirit? Who kept the people alive? It was a saintly cardinal, an able diplomat and two humane Americans.

Bleeding Belgian Nation

The Germans did everything to terrorize the people and to provoke revenge or riot which would give a new

pretext for plunder and for murder. Cardinal Mercier did not fear to raise his voice to protest against every crime. He called the war of defense a crusade and called the fallen soldiers martyrs of liberty worthy of heaven. His pastoral letters aroused the courage of the whole nation to an invincible strength, and instilled a calm resignation to the suffering citizens.

Encouraged by Cardinal Mercier

Baron Cartier de Marchienne, minister at Washington, was a providence for Belgium. During the war he knew how to win the good will of America for the Belgians; during the peace conference he powerfully helped to secure the rights of his little country. He was made the first Ambassador of Belgium to the United States.

The Germans plundered the country, requisitioned the stock and crops, carried away or destroyed the machinery and wrecked every factory; they deprived the population of the necessaries of life, and tried to starve to despair or to death a nation that they had treacherously attacked. Many people were without food and looked like walking skeletons. A fearful mortality set in. But there were two generous Americans, Hoover and Whitlock, sent among a hungry people like angels of charity. They procured many shiploads of goods from the good American people and they kept alive the Belgian nation. Hunger did not enslave the liberty-loving Belgians who would never submit to their barbarous oppressors. The knowledge that their people were still alive and more hostile than ever to the German tyranny gave new life and courage to the soldiers in their muddy trenches of the Yzer.

Kept Alive by the Americans

The Nation Was Alive the Soldiers Fought for Somebody

Cardinal Mercier
The Fearless Protector of the Belgians
1914-1918

Chronicles

FIRST PERIOD: ROMAN REGIME, 57 B. C.-476 A. D.

Struggle. Ambiorix and Caesar. Culture, prosperity.

SECOND PERIOD: FRANCO-BELGIAN 476-843

Formation of Frankish character in Belgium. Clovis and Charlemagne Belgian princes.

Eclipse of Name

Although the name of Belgium disappeared and was replaced by the Frankish name of its new masters, such as Lotharingia; still Belgium remained the pivotal country of the West, and on its soil two Frankish Dynasties arose—the Genealogy of the Merovingians and Carolingians belongs as much to Belgium as to France.

Third Period: Feudal Regime 843-1364

Persistency of Spirit

Under the feudal system the Belgian countries were divided into seventeen provinces, each having its local name—but they remained quasi-independent, and never became part and parcel of the big monarchies either of France or Germany. They were so much one people in spirit and in custom that these numerous provinces were united into one nation during the reign of the Great Duke, Philip the Good, towards the close of the Middle Ages.

There were nine Belgian states and seven Dutch ones.

Belgian Principalities

FLANDERS 862-1384.

Originally a fief of France—lying between the Scheldt and the Manche, got imperial territories, 1050, such as Zealand, and it struggled against Holland for the same.

863-78. *Baldwin Iron Arm* repels the Normans, obtains the daughter of Charles the Bald, the king of France, with an immense territory.

Progressive Valiant Counts

The counts introduce the wool industry—the source of the wealth of Flanders.

They were great crusaders and extended their influence abroad.

Baldwin VI of Flanders marries Richilde of Hainault, 1050-73. 1191-1279 Countess Margaret marries Baldwin of Hainault. Their son, *Baldwin IX, Emperor of Constantinople.* Leaves two daughters. Margaret's sons: Dampierre gets Flanders, D'Avesnes Hainault 1279.

From the thirteenth to the seventeenth century the kings of France took all French Flanders, which was more than half of the country, Artois forming a part of Flanders.

Struggle Against Conquest and Autocracy

Encroachments of the Kings of France and struggles of the communes for their franchises—alliance with England—Count Ferrand and Guy of Dampierre were cast in jail. Revolt against Philip the Fair, who was beaten at the battle of the Golden Spurs. Two last counts side with France. Revolt of the Van Artevelde of Ghent. Saves the independence of Belgium.

LOTHARINGIA KINGDOM OF THE CENTER

840-55. Lothaire I misbehaves—must abdicate. Division between his three sons: Louis II, Italy; Lothaire II, 855-69, Lotharingia proper; Charles, south of Vosges. At Charles' death part is divided between his two brothers. Lothaire's divorce. After him Lotharingia is divided between his uncles, the kings of France and Germany. It is disputed between their successors and mostly incorporated in Deutschland. Anarchy. 956, St. Bruno, brother of Otto the Great, divides it in *Upper* Lorraine on the Moselle at the foot of the Vosges—and *Lower* Lorraine on the Middle Meuse—which were separated by the Ardennes forest.

Divided in Upper and Lower Lotharingia

LOWER LOTHARINGIA—IN BELGIUM

Provinces

The Belgian part was divided in the different provinces that persist until today. That people was not any more cut up than the other countries of Europe at that epoch, nor was it extinguished. It did not divide the common spirit and love of liberty that animated the Belgians of the Middle Ages and that has continued to animate them until today.

Have Regular Male Descendants for Six Centuries Dukes of Burgundy Unite 17 Provinces

Strong dynasties arose and had valiant male descendants for about six centuries. Then the throne went to female descendants married to foreign princes of considerable power. The dukes of Burgundy gathered up seventeen states that cover about Belgium and Holland of today. Artois, now part of France, formed then part of Belgium. *Philip the Good,* 1419-67, inherits or purchases Namur, 21; Hainault and Holland, 33; Brabant, 30; Luxemburg, 43. Charles the Reckless buys Guelders and Alsace. The Burgundian princes lead Belgium into prosperity.

BELGIUM

BRABANT AND ANTWERP 994-1431

967-1005. Carolingian Dynasty. Charles of France fights Hugh Capet, son Otto dies childless—daughters marry the counts of Louvain and Namur. Louvain capital.

1005-1106. Godfrey Dynasty. *Godfrey V of Bouillon,* 1076-1106, kills the adversary of Emperor Henry IV, who makes him Duke. I. Crusade: King of Jerusalem.

Louvain Dynasty, 1106-1406: Three Godfries, 1196 three Henries, 1261 three Johns.

Burgundian D. 1400, Brussels capital, Antony. John IV erects the University of Louvain, 1426.

HAINAULT 875-1433

I. Dynasty 875-1315. Reginald Long Neck.

II. 1192-1279 Flemish. Union with Flanders. Countess Richilde marries Baldwin. Baldwin Crusader emperor of Constantinople. **Union with Flanders**

III. Dynasty Avesnes 1299-1356. Gets Holland and Zealand. **Holland**

IV. Dynasty Bavarian 1356-1433. Jacqueline contracts four marriages—cedes counties to Philip the Good.

NAMUR 908-1418

I. Dynasty Albert I.=Ermengard Carolingian.

II. House of Flanders 1196-1418. Yolanda.=Peter of Courtenoy, Emperor Constantinople. Sold to Guy Dampiere 1263.

LUXEMBURG 963-1433

I. Dynasty 963.

II. Dynasty Ermesinda 1214=Waleran of Limburg. Union till defeat of Woeringen by Brabant 1280. **Limburg Dynasty**

Henry V becomes Emperor Henry VII 1308-1433. Son John the Blind marries Elizabeth of Bohemia: *Emperors of Germany:* Charles IV, 1347. Wenceslaus Sigismund who cedes Luxemburg to niece, Elizabeth de Gorlitz, and she marries Burgundian Antony, and cedes to Philip the Good. **Bohemia Empire**

By congress of Vienna it was made a grand duchy under the king of Holland 1815. In 1830 it fought with Belgians for independence, 1830-39; ceased to hang to Germany, 1866. 1890 passes to Nassau house. **Grand Duchy 1815**

Appanage of Netherlands

Football of Powers

For five centuries Luxemburg was united to the Belgian provinces. In 1815 it was made a Grand Duchy under the rule of the king of the Netherlands and became a member of the German Confederation. It joined the Belgian revolt against the Netherlands and continued in Belgian hands until 1839, when part of it was ceded to Belgium, the king of the Netherlands ruling as grand duke over the remainder. It was again in the Zolverein 1842-62. In 1867 the International conference of London and the treaty of London made it a neutral independent state under the Orange Dynasty. In 1890 by the Salic law it passed to Adolphe of Nassau—whose daughter, Adelaid, reigned since 1890 till 1919.

The Belgian Province: Area 1706 sq. m.; population 219,210. The Grand Duchy: Area 998 sq. m.; population 245,888. Iron deposits. Catholic religion.

Luxemburg and *Limburg* joined the Belgian Revolution 1830—were divided in two between Belgium and Holland 1839.

LIMBURG 1064-1288

Waleran the Old, of Arlon, builds Castle of Limburg. Waleran III marries Ermesinda, heiress of Luxemburg 1190. Limburg is conquered by Brabant by battle of Woeringen 1288.

LIEGE, ECCLESIASTICAL PRINCIPALITY, VIII—1795

Domain Equal to a Province of Actual Belgium Progressive

The see of Tongres was transferred to Maestricht—then to Liege. Charles Martel and Charlemagne invested the bishops with temporal jurisdiction. Their domain was extended mostly along the left basin of the Meuse. In actual Belgium it would occupy as much territory as a province. It was stretching from Holland to France. The industries were highly developed—there raged wars with neighboring powers—and struggles between the archbishop, the nobility and the people.

Fourth Period: Union of Ancient Belgium

NETHERLANDS—BURGUNDY 1364-1555

Union of the Belgian Principalities under the Dukes of Burgundy.

Necessity of union against united France. Middle kingdom revived. Empire reached by descendants.

Centralizing policy resisted by Flemings.

Philip the Bold, 1364. *Margaret, Heiress of Flanders,* 1304-19. John the Fearless. Rivalry: Orleans and Burgundy murders.

Philip the Good, 1419-67. Splendid court. Order of Golden Fleece instituted to glorify the woolworkers. Against the French kings. Inherits or buys provinces of ancient Belgium. 1421, Namur. 1433, Hainault (Jacoba had married Burgundian; marries three others). 1430 Brabant. 1433, Luxemburg. Taxes. Heavy burdens arouse rebellion; Bruges 1437, Ghent 1448-53; who are subdued. 1467-77 *Charles the Rash,* Gueldren. Treachery Louis XI. Alsace bought. War against the Swiss. *Mary of Burgundy* 1477=*Maximilian of Austria.* Privileges defended. Revolt of Flemish and capture of Maximilian. French intrigues. Attack by Louis XI, defense by Maximilian. Spanish marriage. 1505-55 Charles V, born in Ghent, world ruler.

Philip The Good

Reunites Belgium

Belgium central force and beneficiary of world empire. Commerce with old and new world. Antwerp. Agitators sow religious divisions under mild rule of Charles' aunt and sister.

Fifth Period: Foreign Regimes

DOMINATION OF SPAIN, 1555-1713

Secession of Netherlands Caused under Absentee Rulers Through Plots of William the Silent.

1555-89. *Philip II* withdraws to Spain and governs by aunt and sister. Secret propagandism. Plots of *William The Silent.* Great generals of Spain win victories. 1579 confederation of Arras by Catholics—union of Utrecht by Protestants; north independent and preying upon south; commercial eclipse of Belgium.

The Silent Separates

South

Belgian Provinces under Spain.

Distant lands united by inheritances are seldom well administered.

Invincible generals could not relieve Belgium.

1598-1624. *Independence Under Albert and Isabella* (1633).

Holland and France make a partition treaty about Belgium. Wars between Spain and France. Artois lost.

1661-1713. *Five Wars of Louis XIV to Subdue Belgium.*

First, devolution war 1661-64; twelve Belgian cities. Second war against Holland, Franche Comté allowed. Third war 1680. Historical dependencies: Strasburg, Lorraine. Fourth war 1698-97. Grande alliance; fortunes change. Peace of Ryswick, half of conquests returned to get the will of Spanish king. Fifth

Struggles Against France

war. Spanish succession. *Philip V* seizes Spain, Louis XIV suffers defeat, asks for peace 1708. Routs. Bourbons keep Spain only.

1713-94. DOMINATION OF AUSTRIA

Belgium isolated from the world. Rivers closed in the north, limits guarded in the south. General Indian company suppressed.

Mary Theresa 1740-80. Belgians faithful in Austrian succession war. Mary and her brother, Charles de Lorraine, beneficent, popular. Joseph II, 1780, unpopular reformer. General seminary under his professors condemned. Revolution 1788-1790. Brother Leopold II wins back the Belgian people.

DOMINATION OF THE FRENCH 1794-1814

Farmers war against infidels. Belgium, the battlefield. Antwerp made a big port.

DOMINATION OF THE NETHERLANDS 1815-30

Barrier against France.

William I stubborn. Overtaxation. Attacks on liberties of language, worship, education and press. Revolution.

Sixth Period: National

INDEPENDENT KINGDOM OF BELGIUM 1830-1918

Leopold I Saxe-Coburg-Gotha. Superior Dynasty.

Wisdom

Sudden invasion of Dutch; repelled by French. No peace before half of Limburg and Luxemburg are sacrificed 1838. Catholic university of Louvain opened. Leopold, a wise man, develops the resources of the country, forms balance of power between the contending parties.

Statesmanship

1865-1909. *Leopold II,* 1870. Liberals want monopoly of education and tyrannize their opponents until they are overthrown. 1893, universal suffrage with system of plural vote. Congo discovered and colonized, is recognized by powers as a Free State. Slowness of people to prepare for war leaves Belgium at the mercy of the Prussians.

Heroism

1909. *Albert I=Elizabeth of Bavaria.* The heroic defender of his little land against the colossus of the north in the world war, 1914-18.

Netherlands

THE VICTORS OF THE MARSHES

Swamps Made Rich and Unconquerable

Louis XIV said that Holland was only the washing of the French rivers and as such claimed it. But the Hollanders made of these swamps washed down by the Rhine and its companion rivers the Meuse and the Scheldt one of the richest lands and one of the greatest powers of the world.

In the history of Holland there is a period of struggle against the elements, a period of struggle against the world powers, and a period of secure enjoyment of independence and prosperity.

I. PERIOD. FEUDAL EPOCH. IX-XVI CENTURY

Struggle Against the Elements

Flood Plains Drained

The best parts of Holland were redeemed from the river and sea floods. By systems of dykes, dams, and levees, big spaces were protected against further encroachments of the water, and drained by canals or pumped dry by windmills.

River Marshes

The Deltas of three fullbanked rivers along the coasts of the Netherlands often lie lower than the level of the sea, and consequently are subject to floods. Enormous levee works were thrown up to keep the rivers in their beds.

Sea Marshes

The sea waters were shifting over the lowlands. Immense dams were constructed to keep out the briny waves and dry land was made, covered with the diluvial deposit of the saltwaters. But the angry sea turned against the intruder and covered his fields with her brine. No less than 190 outbreaks are known. There was a fierce struggle between water and man. Whole provinces

were conquered from the sea; and were flooded over and over, but they were protected and dammed again and again, until finally they remained in the possession of the indefatiguable Hollanders.

Inundation Covered Whole Provinces Zuyderzee

Sometimes the elements took their revenge, pierced the dunes and the dams and flooded whole provinces. The Zuyderzee was formed by five inundations from the year 1170 to 1395. It covers 2,027 square miles. It is shallow, the main depth of the inner portion is about twelve feet, and the maximum twenty, while over large areas the depth is three feet or less at low tide. The main shipping route to Amsterdam is through canals leading directly from the North Sea. For a long time the Hollanders have prepared to reclaim the Zuyderzee, and now they are ready to do the work.

Naval Empire in the Swamps

Amid these watery plains arose seven quasi-independent states that remained free from the attacks of the powers of the continent; for they could not be reached, far from being conquered. On their patch of marshes, hardly above the sea level, the Dutch created a maritime power that rivalled great empires and swayed the ocean for 200 years.

II PERIOD. WORLD POWER—1579-1795

It was a glorious epoch for the Hollanders, when they asserted their independence and made themselves the masters of the sea for a couple of centuries.

Unconquered they Conquer and Rule the Seas

The Dutch are a unique people, who never have been conquered, neither by the elements of nature, nor by the armies or navies of man. On the contrary, they often conquered the stormy waves and the fleets that controlled the oceans.

Although they have only a small stretch of land, hardly rising above the water, they have competed with the great powers of Spain, England and France, and

have wrested from them a share of the ocean trade a couple of centuries. For Holland was for a long period of our modern ages, one of the great naval and commercial powers of the world. For a long time they disputed with England the supremacy of the sea, and held a monopoly of the world trade.

Long Naval and Commercial Supremacy

The Hollanders had defended their marshlands against the encroachments of the North Sea, and they had wrested from the watery element vast stretches of land which they protected by dams against the angry waters and converted in polders, meadows and gardens of inexhaustible fertility.

They had Tamed the Waters

Those very struggles against nature have made of the Dutch a hardy and warlike people, always ready to defend themselves against the attacks of other nations. The waters offer them an unconquerable defense in flooding the country and drowning the invaders. Free from outside domination, the Dutch have remained free from inside tyranny and maintained their national life by a continual struggle against encroachments upon their rights, either by noblemen or merchant princes. When the Spaniards attempted to curtail their liberties they arose against them and fought themselves free through a struggle of forty years.

Floods Keep Out Invaders

They were the first ones after the Reformation to establish in northern Europe a real democracy, which has now lasted for three centuries and a half, and still is solid and active. It is true the republican form of government has been replaced by a monarchial form, but still the democratic spirit ever remained alive.

First Republic

The princes of Orange had been the founders (William I the Silent) and the defenders of Holland (William III) and were the pride and the reliance of the Hollanders. It was William III that thwarted the

Orange Great Leaders

imperial schemes of the insatiable Louis XIV and prevented him from conquering the Netherlands and all Europe. He organized no less than three European coalitions against his perpetual aggressions. He is one of the great champions for the liberty of the world.

The princes of Orange Nassau are sometimes represented as the creators of the liberty of the Dutch, but there were eight centuries of freedom before them, which had prepared the way for them.

William the Silent

William the Silent is credited with an unalloyed patriotism, an upright policy, and a universal liberalism—but his policies were selfish, deceitful and tyrannical. He led the emancipation war against Spain and freed the northern provinces; it was more for his own aggrandizement than for the freedom of the people.

Unscrupulous Leader

"The silent prince was a politician and diplomat of the first rank, filled with ambition which he well knew how to conceal; having no religious scruples, being Catholic, Lutheran or Calvinist as it suited him, a man who had made the downfall of Spanish rule the one aim in his life."—Cath. Encyclopedia.

Deceitful Policy Alienates the Belgians

It was William that, by his deceitful policy, alienated the Belgians from the union, and thus broke up the restored Middle Kingdom of 800 years ago.

When the Catholics had made with the Protestants, the "pacification of Ghent," i. e., the pact to defend their liberties against the Spaniards, the Gueux proceeded to desecrate and pillage the churches. The Belgians cut loose from the iconoclasts who were continually protesting their respect for the ancient religion. They would have no further relation with William the Silent, the double dealer who was undermining their religion. Still they would not continue under the

stern Spanish reign, and called other foreign princes to come to free and rule them.

Cath. Enc.: "The eyes of the Catholics were at last opened. Seeing that under pretext of freeing them from Spanish tyranny they were being enslaved under Protestantism," they turned from William's party and sought once more the lawful king in spite of the just complaints they had against his government. It was the Walloons who started the reaction movement, in which the Flemish joined. They formed the Confederation of Arras for the preservation of their religion.

Belgians Expel Dutch Tyranny as Well as Spanish

III PERIOD. STRUGGLES FOR POWER 1648

The Dutch republic is represented as a pure democracy securing full liberty to all its citizens and doing justice to the neighboring nations. But there were no real democracies after the Reformation; there were autocratic systems, where a minority of men exerted full control over the bodies as well as the souls of the subjects. The Dutch confederation was an autocratic government where those in power tryrannized the rest of the state.

Republic No Real Democracy

But an Oligarchy

There were fierce struggles between the princes of Orange and the great merchants for the political power in the country. In spite of all their services, the Orange Dynasty was overthrown more than once, and the rich merchants ruled the republic. But all the regimes were stern and autocratic.

Struggle for Supremacy

Stern Governments

There were also fierce struggles between the merchant princes, who were immensely wealthy, and the laboring classes, who were kept in poverty and subjection. It was the usual oppression of the proletarians by the plutocrats.

Struggle Between Merchants and Laborers

A people as assertive as the Hollanders compelled

Religious

Tyranny

all the Protestants to conform to their Calvinistic state church. They carried on violent struggles against dissenters who would mollify its stern doctrines and morals, and executed as heretics some of their leaders, such as Barneveldt.

Catholics Oppressed

Stern laws were in vigor against the Catholics and remained so for a long time.

It was the persecution against the Catholics that lost the great colony of Brazil, 1653.

Even in the XIX century King William I oppressed his Catholic subjects of Belgium, who threw off his yoke.

Dutch Use Belgium for Their Profit

The Holland state never ceased to oppress the Belgians. A people as aggressive as the Hollanders did not fail to assert their monopoly of trade against the Belgians, whom they shut out from all communication with the outside world and kept in subjection by garrisoning the principal Belgian cities. They closed the Belgian rivers in our century and even when Belgium fought herself free from their tyranny, they tenaciously clung to those rivers and refused to give up territories essentially Belgian in all their history and relations.

French Storm

During the French wars 1794-1814, Holland lost its great sea power and even its independence. But it was not subdued. That conquest was too sudden and too superficial to be lasting. It was like a storm that rages fiercely and suddenly subsides. Not only did Holland

Belgian Provinces Given, Lost

recover its independence, but it received the Belgian provinces which constituted one of the finest domains of Europe. But it lost that gift through the despotism and the stubbornness of King William I.

United Kingdom of Netherlands 1815-30

Autocracy Drives Away the Belgians

William I, king of the Netherlands, 1815, was born too late to administer Belgium. He was imbued with an autocratic idea, of the first reforming princes,

that he could treat the Belgians as a conquered people, and that he could proscribe their religion and curtail their liberties, and burden them with taxes. Hence he was driven out of the country. He was the main cause of the breaking up of the Netherlands, that powerful bulwark formed for the maintenance of peace in Europe, and for the loss of the world power that Holland had exerted for two centuries.

Violation of Belgian Rights

William I violated the Belgian liberties of religion and education; he discriminated against the Belgians in taxes, appointments and representations. Although two-thirds of the population, the Belgians had no more representative than the Dutch. The concordat with the Pope was not observed; 1821, the taxes were laid mostly upon the Belgians. 1830, Revolution. Belgium was recognized as an independent kingdom by the great powers and neutralized under their protection. The headstrong William would not recognize the new kingdom, except under condition to allow him the half of Luxemburg and of Limburg. He had to abdicate in the midst of the dissatisfaction of his people.

Revolution

IV PERIOD. 1830. KINGDOM OF HOLLAND SECURE AND PROGRESSIVE

Reduced to its ancient boundaries, Holland remained an unconquerable country on account of its configuration, that enables it to flood the land against any invader. After the death of King William I the government became thoroughly liberal and progressive. It started gigantic works of reclamation, one of which comprehends the great Zuyderzee. Abroad it perfected its system of colonization, and it made of Java the garden of Malaysia, and even the most prosperous colony of the world.

Improvements at Home

In Colonies

Netherlands.

Chronicles.

I. FEUDAL PERIOD: SEVEN PRINCIPALITIES

HOLLAND AND ZEALAND

Quasi-Independent from Empire

Holland was quasi-independent on account of the natural defense by waters; the power of the counts and the distance from the center of the empire.

Sturdy Counts

I. Dynasty. *Dirk I* End IX century—1299. 400 years of sturdy rulers defend themselves against the waters and make polders.

International Relations

From Dirk IV, 1039, till William III there were quarrels with Flanders about Zealand which was ceded by Louis I of Flanders. Conflict widened to a boundary question between Germany and France. William II chosen emperor of Germany against Frederick II, 1248-1256, perishes on the ice in an expedition against revolted Frisians. Floris V murdered in struggle between France and England.

Internal Strife

II. Dynasty, *Hainault* 1300. Struggles between the burghers (called cods=cablejauws) and the Nobles (Hooks).

III. Bavarian Dynasty 1356-1433. William IV 1404-17. His daughter Jacqueline, fickle, marries four times, must cede states to *Philip the Good.*

Strife Against Centralization

IV. *Burgundian* Dynasty 1433. Struggle against the centralizing of the Burgundians, commerce and wealth. Mary 1477 signs the Great Privilege; franchise of cities; right of states to declare war.

V. *Hapsburg Dynasty,* 1482-1579. Maximilian.

William of Orange Drives Out Spaniards

Holland formed part of the Netherlands and prospered till the Reformation divided the land. William of Orange managed the liberation of the northern provinces from the Spanish Hapsburgs; in his favor as Stadtholder of Holland.

GUELDERLAND

Civil Wars

Countship about 1100. Gerhard I. Duchy in fourteenth century. 1239 comprehended Upper Gueldren. 1339-71 Raynald III, brother Edward, wages civil war against him and deprives him ten years of his dukedom.

Succession Struggles, Juliers Dynasty 1378, nephew William, grand nephew Arnold of Egmund 1426-73, is opposed by

Cleves and Burgundy. Extravagant: must pawn territory to Cleves. Son Adolph, administrator, imprisons him, is conquered by Charles the Rash who receives the title to duchy for 20,000 gulden. *Burgundian Dukes* 1473. 1493, Charles Edmund wars for his patrimony in 1528, and receives administration. William of Juliers claims 1538-47; 1579, Gueldren joins Utrecht union.

Extravagance of Duke

Sale to Burgundians

FRIESLAND

Frisians from Rhine to Weser, the Ems being the line between the West and East Frisians.

West Friesland was not separated at first by the Zuyderzee which was formed in twelfth and following centuries.

Divided by Zuyderzee

The Frisians were honored by the Romans.

Resist the Franks, till Charlemagne. St. Willibrord, St. Boniface martyred.

Resists Hollanders Hapsburgs

Attempts of the counts of Holland to overcome the Frisians.

Attempts of Philip the Good to get recognition met by declaration they depend directly from the empire.

Frisia was subdued by Charles V.

Great struggles between the people and the poor.

East Friesland. Anarchy struggle between nobles and people. Confederation 1430 chooses Edzard. Dynasty lasts till 1744. Duchy taken by Prussia is ceded to Hanover.

Class Struggles

Utrecht

Utrecht Ecclesiastical Principality 700-1528. Diocese founded at the end of the seventh century became a large temporal state. In 1528 it was ceded by the incumbent, Henry of Bavaria, to Charles V. In 1579 it joined the union of the seven northern provinces.

II PERIOD: REUNION OF ANCIENT BELGIAN PROVINCES 1400-1579

Burgundians unite seventeen provinces. See pp. 259-263.

III PERIOD: GREAT WORLD POWER 1579-1830

1579-1609. *War of Liberation.* Lady Governesses too lenient in face of the plotting of *William of Orange, the Silent,* who propagates heresy and discontent, triumphs against the greatest generals of the age. In spite of his protestations of respect for the church, William arouses the iconoclasts to abolish the Catholic worship and four hundred churches are sacked. The best generals are sent to reduce the rebels. 1567, *Duke Alva* crushes these

William the Silent

Iconoclasm

Great Spanish Generals Hold Belgium

vandals, inquisition executes Egmont. 1573. Requesens conquers at Nimwegen, is repelled from Leyden by the piercing of the dykes; rapine of unpaid soldiers, pacification of Ghent, between all the Netherlands; compact to expel the foreign soldiers, 1576. *Juan of Austria* conquers at Gembloux, 1578, nephew Alexander Farnese victorious.

1579 Union of Utrecht

1579, *Union of Utrecht;* seven northern provinces, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Gueldren, Groningen, Friesland and Overyssel unite under William the Silent, stadtholder, who is murdered, 1584. Barneveldt. 1600, conquests. Maurice of Nassau defeats Duke Albert of Austria at Nieuport, 1600, founder of company of India. 1607-24 brother *Henry* took Limburg and Luzemburg; conquered the Portuguese colonies; Brazil (1631-53) and India 1694-1709. Peace of Westphalia closed the Scheldt on the Belgians.

Confederation of Arras

The Belgians not trusting the Silent Prince, concluded the confederation of Arras 1579, seven southern provinces call foreign princes for ten years; Farnese wins the Walloons and fights Henry IV of France. 1598-1624. *Belgium* independent under Albert and Isabella, prospered.

APOGEE OF POWER BUT STRUGGLE BETWEEN AUTOCRACY AND DEMOCRACY

Assertion of Republicanism

William II, 1647-1650, attempts to make himself sovereign of Holland. Fails. The Hollanders select a *plebeian* to rule them, 1652-1692, Jan DeWit, the grand pensionary. Golden Age of the Republic which becomes the greatest sea power of Europe, 1635.

Three Wars Against England

Three wars with England. 1653-1665, Deruyter conquers, penetrating into the Thames; but New Amsterdam lost. DeWit develops the other colonies, and makes the Triple Alliance, after which the French and English invade Holland, and the great Republican is murdered. *William III* proclaimed stadtholder, 1672-1702 breaks the dams and drives the French away, leads Europe in coalitions against Louis XIV, becomes king of Great Britain. Three wars with France.

Three Wars Against France William III

Indian, Japanese Trade, 1660-1740.

Belgium Garrisoned

Heinsius continues during the Spanish succession war to oppose French and obtains the right of barrier in Belgium against French aggression, 1713-1781.

Faithful to the Pragmatic Sanction, Van Slingelandt obtained from Austria the suppression of the company of India, established at Ostend as a rival to Holland. During peace, neglect of army and navy; war against England during the American Revolution. Losses of colonies.

William IV, 1747-51, William V, 1795, Stadtholders: Aristocrats, alternate with Republican leaders.

Holland under France, 1795-1815.

Holland was made first a republic then a kingdom for Louis Bonaparte.

Netherlands barrier against France, 1815-1530.

Netherlands' Barrier

By Treaty of Vienna 1815, Holland was restored to the Orange rule. Belgium was united to it to form a barrier against France.

Vicissitudes

The Grand Duchy of Luxemburg was dynastically united to Holland till the extinction of the male descendants of the reigning branch, 1890. The union was made as a barrier against France.

But that political combination was broken up through the narrowness of King William I who persecuted his Belgian subjects.

IV Period. 1830-1918. *Kingdom of Holland, Liberal and Progressive*

Liberal Constitution

1840. *William II.* A liberal constitution is proclaimed. 1840-90. William III. Great public works are undertaken—the suffrage is extended—religious instruction is given in the public schools. 1890, Minor *Wilhelmina* reigns in 1898. Her marriage to Henry of Mecklenburg was resented as a dangerous influence given to the Germans. The rumors of war between Germany and England accelerate war preparations. Swiss system of defense introduced in 1889. Coast defenses erected at Flushing and Amsterdam in 1912. Neutrality observed during the world war.

Broad Policy

Against Attack

Switzerland, 1299-1918

THE SWISS THE MASTERS OF THE MOUNTAINS

PANORAMA

There are several features that place the Swiss Republic in the front rank of the governments of the world—such as the hardiness, ability and liberalism of its people.

1. Hardy People

The asperities of the climate harden the people to a wonderful degree. The Swiss were strong enough to stand up against the growing power of the Hapsburgs, whose very family stronghold towers above the Aar river, and they fought a fight of two centuries to assert and maintain their independence, against that famous dynasty, that dominated Germany for five centuries. Swiss soldiers were chosen as guards in the principal courts of Europe and formed the bodyguards of the monarchs.

Maintain Independence Against Imperial Hapsburgs

Preparedness

The people are at all times prepared to defend their country against any aggressor. There is universal military training and service. Without natural defenses, the Swiss have been able to maintain their independence against the strongest powers of Europe. In the world's war, their country was not touched.

2. Able People

It is said to the credit of the thrifty Hollanders that they conquered their lands from the watery elements. The Swiss conquered their country from the snows and the rocks, and made a living in the barest and coldest countries of Europe. Not only did they live happy in the Skyland, but turned their mountains into the pleasure ground of Europe. They made also of wild Switzerland the meeting place of the world and

Conquer Country from the Sky

the refuge of the persecuted, the exiled and the reformers, the leaders of new movements for the betterment of the race. Switzerland is the center for international meetings, congresses and associations of all sorts. It is Geneva that is the home of the Red Cross Society.

Made It the Playground and Meeting Place of Europe

The Swiss are a liberal people. The Swiss are liberty-loving and liberty practicing. Not only are they free themselves, but they leave others free.

3. Liberal People Swiss Govern Themselves Directly

The Swiss govern themselves mostly by a direct method. They are divided into cantons or small states, some no larger than the American counties. Often the people decide directly in their town meeting what will be their laws or regulations. It is true they elect representatives to legislate for them, but they keep control of the legislature by the "initiative and the referendum." If the representatives fail to fulfill their mandates, a specified number of voters may take the initiative and present a measure to the legislature, which has to pass on it. If the legislature rejects it, it must be submitted to a popular vote or "referendum" for adoption or rejection. If a cantonal law is obnoxious to a number of people, they may petition for a referendum to all the voters—which is a kind of a veto or check against representatives.

Initiative and Referendum

The Swiss are a people of three races and of more languages, of two religions and of twenty-two sovereign states, that are all tenacious of their little holdings and jealous of their neighbors' growth; still they agree together.

One in Spite of Many Differences

Before the Reformation there never had been any attempt against the liberties of others. Since, there

have been sporadic outbreaks of intolerance and attempts at persecution. But they were the work of a few fanatics, and did not last. The liberty of conscience was guaranteed and granted to all alike. The Swiss are strong believers, Protestants as well as Catholics, but they are broad enough to let everyone have his own belief. When anyone attacked their belief, they stood up to defend their rights and their convictions; the attack on their liberty of conscience served only to confirm them in their faith and to steel them against their oppressors. They always ended by maintaining their liberty.

Coerce Nobody

Strong Believers

In the XIX Century, under the pretext of freeing the Catholics from the yoke of Rome, but for the purpose of subduing them under their own yoke, a minority of reformers aroused the Protestant body to destroy the rights of the Catholics. In 1848 the latter organized a confederacy of their own, where they could remain the free Swiss of the past six centuries. Although they were beaten and compelled to remain in the persecuting republic they obtained some redress and later on won back their ancient liberties.

In XIX Century Suffer War and Exile

When Bismarck's Kulturkampf forced its way into free Switzerland, there were found Swiss to plot the enslavement of their fellow citizens, and to exile Bishop Mermillod and the Jesuits, and proscribe the liberty of education and of worship. But their hateful tyranny disgusted the fair Swiss, who swept it from their free country.

Statistics

The area is 15,976 square miles. 25.2 per cent is completely unproductive.

The census of 1910 showed 3,753,293 inhabitants. 6% are

German speaking, 23% French, 12% Italian, 1% Romanic, and 1% other tongues.

2,108,590 were Protestants, 1,590,000 were Catholics, 19,023 were Jews and 46,597 belonged to other confessions or to none.

Chronicles.

I PERIOD—STRUGGLE FOR INDEPENDENCE—XIII CENTURY.

Beginning of Civilization

The convents developed the country—they were mild lords. They delegated the administration of their property to princes, who endeavored to render their rule permanent and hereditary. *Swiss League*—similar to other German Leagues, but more consistent, the nucleus of the Republic.

Thirteen Districts of the League, 1231-1513

First League Nucleus

1291. After the death of Rudolph I was formed the Perpetual League of Schwyz, Uri and Unterwalden.

Legend a Symbol

The legend of William Tell, 1386, is not local, as it is found in six other places. It is a common Germanic Tradition. Nor is it original as there also was the previous legend of Saxo Grammaticus (XII Cent.). Tell's name was made a symbol of Swiss energy and love of freedom.

Other Emperors Help Against Hapsburg Domination

The emperors of the Nassau and Luxemburg houses, who were rivals to the Hapsburgs, granted franchises to the Swiss. After the Golden Bull of Charles IV (Luxemburg) five more districts dared join the League, to-wit:—Commercial Lucerne, quiet Zurich, powerful Berne, Glaris and Zug.

Two Centuries of Victories Over the Hapsburgs and the Burgundians

Victories at Morgarten, 1315, at Sempach, Leopold III falls with the flower of his nobility, 1411. Leopold IV at Nafels. Emperor Frederick IV calls French Armagnacs, who are beaten at St. James' cemetery, 1455. Charles the Reckless of Burgundy buys lands from a penniless Hapsburg of Styria—he is beaten at Granson and Morat and slain at Nancy. Maximilian I, beaten, recognizes the independence of Switzerland, 1499, which was guaranteed at the Peace of Westphalia, 1648.

Third Increase

Fribourg and Soluthurn were admitted in 1481, Basle and Schaffhausen in 1454, Appenzel in 1513.

French Influence

The Swiss were engaged by French kings in their wars against the Hapsburgs in Italy. French influence controlled Switzerland, and was taking the place of the empire.

II PERIOD—1516-1798

Reformation: Division, Oppression

Ulrich Zwingle, learned humanist, pastor at Einsiedlen 1526, preaches against pilgrimage to Mary, suppresses Catholic worship, executes for heresy the Anabaptist Maus. Oecolumpad revolutionizes Basle, 1524-29, proscribing Catholic worship 1524. Berne magistrates decide to reform. Alliance of Protestant districts, counter alliance of Catholics, with Ferdinand of Austria, victory of Cappel, death of tyrannical reformer, Zwingle.

Farel W. Farel reforms in Neuchatel, 1532 in Geneva.

Calvin John Calvin, 1536-64, retained by Farel to aid him, exiled by Burghers. In Strasburg, 1538-41; marries there Ideletta Van Buren, the widow of an Anabaptist.

Tyrannical theocracy, executes Gruet and Servet, 1555. Expels free citizens, replacing them by heretical foreigners, mostly from France.

Catholic Reaction Catholic revival through St. Charles Borromeo, 1579, founding a collegium Helveticum in Milan, 1580, places a nuncio at Lucerne, 1586 Catholic cantons sign the Borromean or Golden League; 1574, call of Jesuits, 1581 of Capuchins, they are refused admission to Protestant cities, Geneva, Strasburg and Muhlhausen.

Haughty Oligarchy in Cities Growth of aristocracy, especially in Berne, Lucerne admitting of no new burghers, with political rights. Berne had 360 burgher families, and in 1776 there remained only eighteen, and they formed the ruling oligarchy.

Harshness of city rule.

Revolt Fall of prices after Thirty Years' War; return of soldiers. 1653, peasant revolt, quelled by Bernese troops.

Rivalry of Catholics and Calvinists Taggenburg war by Protestants against Catholics who win at Vilmergen in 1656; lose in 1712—must give share to Protestants in administration of Thurgau and Rheinfeld.

III PERIOD, 1789-1918

Revolutions and Struggles for Liberty

French Storm Invasion of French troops; ancient confederation dissolved. Helvetian republic proclaimed with equal rights to all residents; center at Lucerne. Four forest cantons reduced to one, fight for old liberties; Schwytz under Reding beaten at Morgarten. Geneva annexed; treasures of Berne and Zurich carried to France. A

system of robbery and extortion by greedy and impious officials is established with too much centralization. 1803, Napoleon's act of mediation restores the confederation, adding six cantons: St. Gall, Grisons, Aargau, Thurgau, Ticino, Vaud. Diet meets once a year in towns, three Catholics and three Protestants.

1814. Independence regained, neutrality guaranteed by the powers. Equal rights to Catholics and Protestants. Geneva, the Valais and Neuchatel admitted—which makes twenty-two cantons. Federal pact drawn up at Zurich accepted by Congress of Vienna. Six dioceses subject directly to Holy See.

Twenty-Two Cantons

Political agitations, 1830-47. 1827, revisions of cantonal constitutions. 1834, articles of conference, subject the church to control of the state. Religious persecutions. In Aargau elective law favors Protestants. 1841, revolt of Catholics beaten at Vilmergen, suppression of eight convents. Slanders against the Catholics, general attack upon Jesuit colleges, 1843, Sunderbund of Catholic cantons in defense of their rights, special confederation of Lucerne, Uri Schwytz, Unterwalden, Zug, Fribourg and Valais is dissolved by radical majority, 1847, defeated Nov. 11, 1849.

Persecutions

Attacks Against Catholics

Who Make Sunderbund

1848. New constitution was modeled after the United States, except that it failed to guaranty the Catholic establishments, and allowed to exile the Jesuits and Bishops and priests.

1848 Constitution

The revised constitution put more power in the federal control.

After the decree of infallibility some Catholics regarded it as a new prerogative of the Papacy and formed a small but noisy sect of the Old Catholics, which soon dwindled away. The government took umbrage and recurred to the odious, vexatious proscriptions, usual to the brutal kulturkampfs organized by Bismarck. But the rage of the persecutors soon spent itself against the invincible determination of the Catholics to maintain their liberties. The discriminating laws are discarded one after another. The storm of persecution has only served to render faith more solid and more active. Switzerland remained faithful to its ancient glory to be the land of the free.

Old Catholics

Kulturkamp Finds Catholics Invincible

The Teutons

ETHNOLOGY

Warlike Teutons Stop the Roman Eagles

The Teutons are that strong race which occupied the Rhine, the Elbe and the Oder regions in Caesar's time, They were the ones that stopped the Roman Eagles in the North, overthrew the Empire itself and conquered its rich provinces. The best part of Europe fell into the hands of Germans who became the leading peoples of the continent.

In the Fifth century of our Lord, during the migration of the nations, the Teutons were pushed westward, while the Slavs advanced towards the Elbe. Thence began that migratory movement into the Roman empire, whereby six nations conquered its rich provinces

Six Nations Conquered the Roman Empire

to-wit: The Franks and Burgundians, Gaul; the Anglo-Saxons, England; the Westgoths and Suevi, Spain; the Eastgoths and Langobards, Italy; the Vandals, Africa. Those German warriors were barbarians, the reverse of the Latin settlers of the Old Empire, and it lasted centuries before they were softened by the climate and culture of the south. Eventually they blended with the conquered nations and most of their descendants could not any more be recognized as sturdy sons of the North.

Teutonic princes became the rulers of Russia.

Outside Germans.

Other Countries Speaking German

The Low Germans of the Netherlands (the Belgians and Hollanders) and the Scandinavians are people of Germanic speech if not of Germanic stock, but they do no more belong to Germany than all the Latin speaking countries would belong to Italy.

The Anglo-Saxons form a Teutonic people as powerful as the Teutons in Germany. They are the masters of the British Isles, the rulers of India, Australia, East and South Africa, Canada, and the builders of the United States. They do not claim to own all these countries and nations. Outside of Europe their rule is mild, beneficent and welcome.

The Scandinavians are separated from time immemorial from the bulk of the German nations; their archaic language is harsher than the other German tongues.

Fatherland Germans

Germans at Home Wild, Pure, Aggressive

The Germans that stayed in Germany remained unmixed Teutons. They were wild and rugged as the elements of their country; they were sturdy and warlike and aggressive, always eager to expand. For three centuries more they remained nomadic, and were pushing eastward and southward into the territories of others. The Slavs of the east, who were always pressed by other Slavs and by Mongolians, never opposed a firm resistance. The old imperial provinces of the west were now held and defended by their kinsmen, who had conquered them.

Commenced to be Checked by the Franks

The German wanderlust commenced to be checked by the new civilization growing up. The Franks, one of the nations that went out from them, conquered Gaul, overcome their kinsmen beyond the Rhine and compelled them to settle down. They also gave them the first impulse of civilization and Christianity and thus commenced to form the distinct and different nations of Germany. It was not without heroic resistance that the free and wild Germans gave in to their more advanced cousins. It was not a slavish subjection, but a virile admission of superior power and mode of living attained by their old tribesmen.

Heroic Struggle for Freedom

Expansion Towards the East

War of 1000 Years

Reach Others by Diplomacy

Barred from expansion toward Latin Europe, the Germans turned their steps toward the Slavonic lands, where they had lived before, and commenced that conquest of the Elbe and Oder and even Vistula regions, which lasted for a thousand years and is still going on today. Strongly organized for war and conquest, they subdued and Germanized the Slavs, advanced along the northern seas; but they found a stubborn resistance in the Bohemians and the Poles, who maintained their autonomy and independence until they were deprived of it by political schemes, without giving up their nationality.

League Order

Besides their military bands pushing eastwards they had powerful agencies of penetration, to-wit: The Hanseatic League, which had the monopoly of trade with agencies established in most of the Baltic ports and the Teutonic Order, which was settled on the historical Baltic shores and ruled the whole country. Composed mostly of German knights they propagated the German tongue and fostered the German interests.

Elective Emperors Give Order Without Subjection

The Germans never gave up their independence. They lived in free states under the direction of an emperor of their choice. The constitution of the Roman Empire of the German nations brought order among the turbulent princes of Germany. It gave them a confederation of free states under an elective emperor which functioned regularly for 1000 years.

Religious Storms Divide

War of a Generation

Parcelling Out

It was only the great religious storm of the Reformation that brought anarchy back into Germany. For thirty bloody years, brother fought against brother, animated by blind fanaticism to force his brother against his will. Germany was parceled out into 365 independent states and descended to the second rank among the nations of

Europe. It was a labyrinth of peoples and every princelet looked out for his own interest. **Labyrinth of Nations**

In the nineteenth century, the Prussians succeeded in bringing the German princes one by one under their control and finally proceeded to attack the rest of the world. But the free nations of the earth stood up to beat down their would-be master. **Attempt at World Empire Frustrated**

There were eight large states besides a number of small principalities, lay and ecclesiastical, and free cities.

In modern times the most distinguished nations were the Austrians, the Bavarians, the Schwabs, the Rhinelanders, the Hanoverians, the Saxons, the Prussians.

The new German empire was proclaimed January, 1871. Twenty-five governments were represented in the Federal council with fifty-eight votes, to-wit: Prussia, seventeen; Bavaria, six; Saxony and Wurtemberg, each, four; Baden and Hesse, each, three; Mecklenburg, Schwerin and Brunswick, each, two; the rest, each, one. **States in German Empire**

Warlike Character

The Teutons were that warlike people who dominated central Europe from the mountains to the northern seas. They were tall and robust, and loved warring and hunting more than working and toiling. They were animated with a love of personal freedom, and would not live in towns, which they regarded as prisons. They held meetings of all the freemen to decide their affairs. They followed their chosen leader as companions and equals. **Strong** **Free**

The Germans have real love for order and discipline. They undergo great hardships in training for war, and they maintain strongly the established system of government at the cost of the greatest sacrifices. **Love Order and Discipline**

The strength of the Teutons lay in the trust they had in one another and in their habit of forming federations under leaders of heroic mould—that gave them the superiority over their less organized neighbors and made of them the guardians of peace in the continent of Europe. It is only in the last centuries that their truthfulness was shoken through the Pantheistic doctrines, and the Hohenzollern propaganda but they will return to their natural faithfulness.

The Germans are distinguished for their home virtues. Their tastes are natural and simple. Their main thought centers in the home life, where they pass all the time they can.

The German Monarchy

Outlines

Middle Ages—476-1517

I. PERIOD OF STORMS—843-1073

Half Barbarian Tribes

The mighty empire of Charlemange, kept in check and overawed the half-barbarian tribes of Germany. After him they broke loose from the central authority which fell in weak hands. The savage tribes hovering in the north and the east of Germany made unceasing inroads and laid the country waste. To-wit:—The Normans, the Slavs, the Avars and the Magyars.

Savage North and Eastmen Deluge Germany

The Northmen were fierce sea-rovers, always on their barks, to pounce upon the inhabitants of the sea coasts and the river banks.

The Slavs, continually pushed westward by the Finnish tribes, penetrated more into Germany. The Finns, such as the Avars and Magyars, come down from the wilds of the northeast and fell upon the newly formed kingdom of Germany, which was horribly devastated and found only one way to withstand the storms, to-

wit:—to oppose one barbarian tribe to the other. But that, too, brought its dangers. Once in a good country the barbarians refused to leave it, and entrenched themselves in the same. It is thus that the Magyars or Hungarians established themselves in the middle Danube country, which was called after them Hungary.

And Remained Therein

The Carolingians succumbed to the assaults. In the ocean of calamities to which their lawlessness had brought Germany, the Teutonic tribes decided to give themselves masters for the good of the country, and they chose those for leaders who were best able to protect the country against the flood of barbarians. There was then, in northern Germany, a vigorous power able to cope with the invaders, to-wit: the Saxon emperors, who repeatedly beat the invaders and compelled those they could not expel to settle down. Otto, the Great, was the hero who crippled them.

Stopped by the Saxon Dynasty

The Magyars were settled on the Danube; and soon converted to Christianity, they became a peaceful and powerful nation, able to repel the fierce barbarians, who came behind them to conquer a share of Europe. That saved northern Germany the worst outrages which the savages perpetrated upon other countries.

II. PERIOD OF CHIVALRY AND IDEALISM—1073-1273

Gigantic Strides and Struggles

These were stirring times. Intense faith and deep learning, high ideals and undaunted chivalry form the character of this period. It was the age of the cathedrals and the universities, the age of the communes and the crusades and of gigantic struggles for the liberty of the world. The constitution of the European commonwealth provided safeguards for the life and liberty of individuals and peoples and was generally respected during 1,000 years.

Mighty Potentates Attack the Liberties of Men

In Germany there arose bold warriors who dreamed of absolute and universal domination, and who attempted to make themselves the masters of Europe and thus to sway the world. Powerful emperors dared to trample upon the public rights of Christendom and to bring back the absolutism of the Pagan Cæsars.

They attempted to get control of the souls as well as of the bodies of men and thus to rule supreme in religion and state. They were the bold Henrys of the Franconian dynasty and the princely Fredericks of the Hohenstaufen house; the former attacked the rights of the church, the latter the rights of the people.

Popes Arise, Princes and Peoples Follow

Worthy Champions of Great Causes

Freedom Vindicated

But the Popes of Rome stood up for the liberty of religion and government and the best men of the times fought at their side for the rights of humanity. Among these fighting Popes were St. Gregory VII, Alexander III, Honorius III. They undertook for the safety and freedom of the world gallant struggles that will never be forgotten as long as the world stands. All the leaders in the fights were men of heroic mold, champions that were worthy of one another. The liberty of conscience and person, soul and body were vindicated and firmly established for centuries to come.

Despots Overthrown

The great princes who attempted to subdue everyone to their yoke were vanquished and their dynasties were overthrown and disappeared from history.

Reaction Against Autocracy

In order to maintain the equilibrium between the states of the empire and to prevent the emperors from rendering their house the controlling powers of Germany, the Electors chose men from a distance or from new and small houses for the office and dignity of emperor. That was the time of the interregnum and of changing dynasties.

St. Gregory VII.
The Valiant Pope
1073-1085

MONOGRAPHS

The Hohenstaufen Emperors (1138-1256) wished to establish a universal and absolute monarchy, and strove to annex Italy to Germany and to subject them both to their own arbitrary power. If they were the masters of these two countries they could control the world.

Hohenstaufen Imperialism

Ghibelline Emperors Seek Absolute and Universal Power

The Popes arose against the tyrants and strove for the maintenance of a balance of power among the nations, and for the liberty of mankind.

Opposed by Popes Who Assist Popular Party of Guelfs

They put themselves at the head of the Italians, and entered into an alliance with the German rivals of the imperial family. The populists were called Guelfs, from the leader of the German nobles, Welf or Guelf of Alttorff. The imperialists were called Ghibellines, after Wayblingen, the first family seat of the Hohenstaufens. Gigantic wars were waged to repel the tyrants. Italy became the classic land of liberty and culture. More than two hundred republics arose, where all the arts and sciences flourished for centuries.

Republics of Italy

Frederick Barbarossa

Barbarossa Intolerant of Liberty

Frederick I (1152-1190) was a great prince, but he was possessed with too extravagant an idea of his own prerogatives. He could not tolerate the liberty of the republics of Italy or the independence of the Bishops of Rome. In A.D. 1158 German armies passed the Alps to reduce the thriving cities of Lombardy. The Milanese had either destroyed or fortified the bridges of the Adda, but the German cavalry succeeded in crossing it. Siege was laid to Milan, and famine forced that city to capitulate. The emperor agreed not to enter the gates; but he erected a throne at a distance of two leagues, where he effectively humiliated the proud republicans. There the Archbishop and nobles were compelled to appear before him barefooted and bareheaded; thither the people had

Humiliates Milanese

to come with ropes around their necks, and all to take the oath of allegiance prostrate on the ground. Then Frederick summoned a diet in the plain of Roncaglia, and had his alleged imperial rights enlarged on in great detail by four Doctors of the University of Bologna. Nothing less was claimed than the same absolute power once wielded by the Pagan Emperors.

Claims Unlimited Authority

This was expressed by such adages as: "The will of Caesar is law," and "The good pleasure of the prince has the force of law." Thus the municipal constitutions of the Lombard cities and the freedom of the Papal states were virtually abolished. A podesta or judge foreign to the town was appointed to enforce the imperial laws.

Establishes Podestas

The Milanese flew to arms. Frederick beseiged them, and again resolved to starve them to death. Their crops were mowed down, their vinestocks cut, and their trees felled or barked. They held out for two years; but in 1162 their provisions, already nearly exhausted, were destroyed by fire, and they were therefore compelled to surrender at discretion. Frederick delayed their sentence for a month. Then he ordered the town completely evacuated and had the soldiers of the Ghibelline cities level it to the ground. The people were distributed between four villages, built at two leagues distance from their former city; but the higher classes fled to the neighboring cities, and spread everywhere their love of liberty and their thirst for vengeance.

Revolt and Destruction of Milan

Frederick had long before attacked the Papal rights and had been threatened with excommunication for so doing by Adrian IV. When Alexander III (1159-1181) was elected to the Roman Pontificate by the College of Cardinals, three imperialist cardinals proceeded to elect an anti-Pope, and Alexander had to flee to France, where he excommunicated the schismatical emperor.

Frederick Excommunicated by Alexander III.

Frederick's tyranny caused a general uprising in Italy, and his exactions were so exorbitant that the taxes amounted to five-sixths of the revenues. The Lombard cities made secret leagues against him, and drove away his hateful podestas. The despot was powerful enough to reduce them all into submission, and even to capture Rome. But there God's vengeance awaited him; for the fever of the Roman marshes carried off the flower of the German nobility.

Exactions and Revolt

Pestilence

Fifteen Lombard cities now bound themselves by a solemn treaty to unite in resisting the imperial aggressions and upholding the Pope; and even all the Ghibelline cities joined them, except Pavia.

Their first step was to rebuild Milan; which arose from her ashes as an aggressive and uncompromising republic. Their second step was to build a new city to check Pavia, and they gave it the name of Alexandria, in compliment to the liberty-loving Pope (1168).

Lombard League Builds Cities

Frederick I prepared to take a signal revenge. In 1174 he burned Suzes and encamped before Alexandria. But he was driven off by the Italian patriots, and abandoned by the German Guelfs. Beaten at Legnano, he escaped from the field alone and disguised, with little hope of raising a fresh army, and he was reduced to sue for peace. He solemnly recognized the rights of the Popes and of the people, and he faithfully respected them till the end of his days. For two centuries the cities of northern Italy flourished as republics under the protection of the German Emperors and the guidance of the Roman Pontiffs.

And Defeats Emperor at Legnano

Who Reforms

The greatest lever of the imperial tyrants in their efforts to overthrow the moral power of the Church had thus far been the setting up of anti-Popes, which resulted in the dividing of Christendom, as it was difficult to know

Emperors Raise Anti-popes

who was the real Pope. To remedy this evil the great Alexander III, convoked a synod in 1179 at the Lateran palace, which was the eleventh Ecumenical Council, and is known as the Third Council of Lateran. There it was decided that a two-thirds vote of the cardinals should thenceforth be necessary for the election of a Sovereign Pontiff.

Ecumenical Council Requires Two-Thirds Vote in Papal Elections

Frederick II

A Family of Despots

Barbarossa's eldest son, Henry VI, married Constantia, the heiress of Naples or the two Sicilies. He was a tyrant and died young. Pope Innocent II protected his widow and his infant child Frederick, and upon the promise of separating Italy from Germany and of undertaking a crusade, obtained for the latter the election to the German Empire. Frederick II (1224-1250) was the most gifted ruler of the age. But he proved to be an ungrateful man and a refined hypocrite; he was a cruel tyrant, a rank infidel and a shameless libertine, and he sacrificed everything to the Hohenstaufen idea of universal and absolute domination. He deceived Pope Honorius III, but was unmasked by George IX and put down by Innovent IV.

Tyranny, Greed and Lust

Strives After Unlimited Power

Under various pretexts Frederick put off the Crusade, keeping 100,500 men waiting till they grew discouraged and dispersed to their homes, although Damietta was being besieged and captured by the Mohammedans. Far from punishing the infidel Saracens who had devastated Italy, he selected 20,000 of them for his guard. Meanwhile he strengthened the influence of his family in Italy and in Germany, where his eldest son Henry was selected as his successor. Milan flung to the breeze her carroccio, or war-standard, and fifteen cities pledged themselves again to the Lombard confederation. It was only after many halts, and after an excommunication by

Excommunicated by Gregory IX

the aged but energetic Pope Gregory IX, that Frederick went on the crusade to the Holy Land to which he had pledged himself. But he shamefully compromised with the enemy, as if he had been a Mussulman himself. Meanwhile he had all the old Pagan laws of Sicily collected by his chancellor, Peter de Vineis, in order to justify the re-establishing of the absolute Caesarism of the Roman Emperors, upon the ruin of the Christian constitutions. To these dangerous pretensions the Pope contented himself with opposing the Five Books of the Decretals compiled by St. Raymond de Pennafort. When Frederick's eldest son and successor-elect revolted, Pope Gregory showed his magnanimity by writing to the German princes to assist in putting him down. As a result, the rebel prince was conquered, and the right of succession was transferred to his brother Conrad.

A Mock Crusade

Re-enacts Pagan Laws

Papal Magnanimity

Frederick put at the head of the Ghibelline faction, Eccelino the Fierce, a man without virtue, pity or remorse; he granted him a bodyguard of Germans, and gave him his natural daughter in marriage. He invested his natural son Enzio, with Sardinia, a fief of the Holy See. The undaunted Gregory IX excommunicated the aggressive Emperor, proclaimed a crusade, and summoned a General Council. Frederick besieged Rome, whence he was driven away by the crusaders. Enzio in the meantime killed a hundred of the Bishops coming to the Council. The news of this outrage gave such a terrible shock to the nonagenarian Pontiff that he died shortly after.

Massacre of Bishops

Death of Gregory

For seventeen months the cardinals were unable to choose a successor. Finally Innocent IV was elected, and he commenced negotiations with Frederick, who tried to surprise and capture him. But he fled to Genoa and thence to Lyons, where he convoked the thirteenth General Council, which deposed the faithless Emperor in

Innocent IV Flees to France

Council of Lyons Deposes Frederick

1245. On hearing of his sentence, Frederick II put on his crown, exclaiming: "Torrents of blood shall flow ere it fall from my head." In vain did he appeal to the Ghibellines of Italy and to the princes of Europe; he was abandoned. Defeated by the Guelfs at Parma, and left alone, he was forced to retire to a small town of southern Italy, whence he sent to offer reparation. In the midst of his trouble he was overtaken with sickness, and he died overwhelmed with grief and humiliation. His sole surviving legitimate son, Conrad IV, was driven from Germany by William of Holland, and retired to Italy, where he had to wrest his kingdom of Sicily from his natural brother Manfred. But he died in his youth, and Manfred again seized the reins of power in Naples. The Pope, who was suzerain, thereupon called in Charles of Anjou, who conquered the usurper. The new king showed great cruelty towards the friends of the old dynasty, and Conradin, Conrad's son, was summoned from Germany, but he was defeated and beheaded at Naples. Thus perished the Hohenstaufen dynasty, which had threatened to enslave Church and State alike.

Whose Dynasty is Extinguished

III. PERIOD OF CENTRALIZATION—1273-1517

Tendency of Centralization

In spite of the efforts of Imperial Electors to maintain a balance of power among the States of Germany, the tendency of centralization had set in and the emperors, however weak they were at their elevation, endeavored to round off their own holdings by the addition of any adjoining fiefs that became vacant and the bestowal of all vacant lands upon their own house. It was one of the results of the Renaissance to bring back pagan ideas, discarded for centuries and the absolute governments of the ancient Caesars.

Brought Back by the Renaissance

But They Enlarge Their Own Estates

The new men proceeded at once to enlarge their power, and the weaker they were the more they en-

deavored to expand. They assumed absolute rights which were not theirs, but which belonged to the body of the electors or were circumscribed by the laws of the empire. They used their federate power more for their own aggrandizement than for the benefit of the whole state. But that abuse of power ordinarily led to their overthrow or to the exculsion of their house.

To Maintain Balance

The electors made emperors of princes who could not give umbrage to any potentate and would likely attend to their office of maintaining order and security for all.

New Men Elected

Charles of Luxemburg was poor and despised; he was arrested by a butcher of Worms because he was not able to pay his bills. But by his Golden Bull he raised the power of the electorate.

To pay heavy debts Sigismund took money from Frederick of Hohenzollern for the Mark and electorate of Brandenburg, which he bestowed upon him.

Hapsburg Very Successful

The Hapsburgs were the most successful in enlarging the family estates, without offending their rivals to the breaking point. Otherwise they would have been deprived of the empire before a century of rule had passed.

MONOGRAPH

Hapsburg World-Power

This monograph may be interpreted as a plea for the restoration of the Austrian Empire. There is no such idea here. Austria as an empire may have finished its work or it may not. Its component elements have rejected its ancient regime and are going to rule themselves. The times seem to be ripe for it.

No Plea for Restoration

Statement of True History

This monograph is nothing but a plain statement of facts which contradict the public opinion of our day. The main power of continental Europe for 500 years has been neither oppressive nor reactionary, but it left

to every race its own language and life. At the break up of the ancient commonwealth, those races were found able, ready and ambitious to undertake their own government, an evident sign they were not kept backward.

Difference of Judgments

There is a great difference of opinion about the character of the Austrian Empire. It became too powerful for its rivals; it was too conservative for the revolutionists; it lasted too long for the nations it had saved from the Turks and then paternally ruled. It has been subject to the attacks of all those whose ambitions it thwarted, or whose systems it contradicted, who have created an unfavorable opinion about that venerable monarchy.

Austria in the Way of Many Fiercely Attacked

Vindicated by History

But the main facts of history show that the Austrian Empire was for centuries a bond of union among the most heterogeneous races of Europe, and an unconquerable bulwark of defense against the relentless foe of Christendom.

Rulers Vigorous

The rulers were among the most vigorous and the most progressive of the times without becoming aggressive against the neighboring powers and threatening to the liberty of the world. If they wished to subdue the earth to their power they had centuries to do it. At the time of Charles V the Hapsburgs possessed a world empire, but did not use it to overwhelm Europe. They divided their holdings between Germany and Spain.

Not Oppressive

Contrast Aggressiveness

A comparison is often made between the aggressiveness of the Hohenzollerns, who subdued and united Germany in a century and the conservatism of the Hapsburgs who did not unify nor subdue their German fellow princes, nor their Slavonic subjects in the space of five centuries, but the difference is in favor of the Hapsburgs. The first worked mainly for their own aggrandizement, and used intrigue and violence to reduce German and

Conservatism

other independent states under their yoke and to expel Austria from the German circles after which they attacked the civilized world to reduce it under their arrogant power. The latter lived and let live. They did not scheme to destroy the nationalities over whom they ruled, but they left them their customs and languages which is a benefit of incalculable value. If their power fell to pieces at the break-up of the German war machine the different elements that had composed it came out strong and spirited and were able to organize themselves in independent nations. In his notes to the allied powers, Carl of Austria was able to state that it had not been their policy to destroy the life of any nationality and that it was with his full consent that their former subjects now established governments according to their own wishes.

Hapsburgs Misrepresented by Special Enemies

It is on account of the very functions they were fulfilling in the world that the Hapsburgs have been attacked by specific enemies. An aggressor or oppressor never forgives those he attacks or enslaves. The Hapsburgs were the rivals of the ambitious Bourbons of France, the victims of the Hohenzollerns of the North; the faithful adherents of the ancient church and as such were regarded as enemies by Protestants, Schismatics and infidels alike. All those powers have combined to represent Austria as a power of despotism and stagnation.

Interior Peace Exterior Defense

The Hapsburgs form the most remarkable dynasty the world has ever seen. They have been leaders and defenders of Europe for five centuries (1272-1806). From their appearance upon the political stage of the continent they brought order among the warring princes and maintained it for centuries. It was not their fault that the religious dissensions shook up Germany for about a century and a half, and that foreign powers were bring-

ing armies into Germany for thirty years, and reduced the Fatherland to a secondary rank among the nations.

There is a strong outline of Austrian History in J. N. Larned's Ready Reference Work in which he narrates the rapid strides of the Hapsburg's princes to a predominant position in the world and criticizes the vigorous policy by which they conquered it. He extols the Prussian thoroughness in its aggression and intrigue whilst he condemns the Austrian conservatism that had no designs upon its unsuspecting neighbors. He underestimates the personal qualities of the emperors who could not keep in their house an elective throne if they were only ordinary men. Were Charles V, Rudolph I, Ferdinand II no more than common rulers? Here are some extracts of his logical outline of Austrian history:

Ninth Century

The Mark

"The history of Austria is unique in being the history of a Family and not the history of a State,—the history of a Dynastic and not of a National Power. Territorially, the name was attached, until 1806, to an inconsiderable arch-duchy, on the Danube, in the corner of Teutonic Europe where the Germans of the Middle Ages fought back the Turanian races and the Slavs. Dynastically, it became connected in the Thirteenth Century with a House, then insignificant, in Alsace, and to the future remarkable fortunes of that House the territory so named contributed little more than a strong central position and a capital town.

A. D. 1272. Rudolph of Hapsburg Emperor

"Rudolph, Count of Hapsburg, with whom the importance of Austrian history begins, was elected Emperor in 1272, for the reason that his possessions were small and the resoluteness of his character was unknown. He disappointed the Electors by increasing the weight and reviving the power of the Imperial office, which they

had not at all desired, and he used its power vigorously for the benefit of himself and his own. The King of Bohemia resisted him and was defeated and slain; and a part of the Dominions which the Bohemian king had acquired including Austria (then a duchy), Carniola and Styria, was appropriated by Rudolph, for his sons. The House of Hapsburg thus became the House of Austria and its history is what bears the name of Austrian history from that time until 1806.

A. D. 1282. The House in Possession of Austria

"The Hapsburg family has never produced men of the higher intellectual powers, or the higher qualities of any kind; but a remarkable vitality has been proved in it, and a polite self-seeking capability, which has never, perhaps, persisted through so many generations in any other line. It owes to these qualities the acquisition, again and again, of the elective Imperial crown, until that crown settled, at last upon the heirs of the House, in practically hereditary succession, despite the wish of the princes of Germany to keep it shifting among the weaker members of their order, and despite the rivalry of greater houses with ambitions like its own.

A. D. 1438. The Imperial Crown

"The prestige of the splendid Imperial title, and the influence derived from the theoretical functions of the Emperor—small as the actual powers that he held might be—were instruments of policy which the Austrian princes knew how to use with enormous effect. Austrian marriages and Austrian diplomacy, often alluded to as examples of luck and craft in political affairs, show, rather it may be, the consistent calculation and sagacity with which the House of Austria has pursued its aims.

"By marriages, by diplomacy, and by pressures brought to bear from the headship of the Empire, the family plucked, one by one, the coronets of Tyrol and Carinthia (1363), Franche Comté and Flanders, with the Low

A. D. 1363 1526 Gatherings of Crowns and Coronets

Countries entire (1477), and the crowns of Spain, Naples, Sicily and Sardinia (1516), Bohemia (including Moravia), and Hungary (1526). Its many diadems were never moulded into one, but have been from first to last, the carefully distinguished emblems of so many separate sovereignties, united in no way but by homage to a common prince.

"The one most fortunate acquisition of the House, which has given most stability to the heterogeneous structure of its power, in the judgment of the ablest among modern historians, is the Hungarian crown. Its Burgundian and Spanish marriages, which brought to it the rich Netherlands and the vast realm of Ferdinand and Isabella, brought also a division of the family, and the rooting of a second stem in Spain; and while its grandeur among the dynasties of Europe was augmented, the real gain of the House in its older seat was small. But the Kingdom of Hungary has been a mass of very concrete political power in its hands, and has supplied in some degree the weight of nationality that was otherwise wanting in the dominions of the House.

A. D. 1516. The Branch in Spain

The Mixture of Races

"The mixture of races under the Austrian sovereigns is the most extraordinary in Europe. Their possessions exactly cover that part of the continent in which its earlier and later invaders fought longest and most; where the struggle between them was final, and where they mingled their settlements together. The Slavic peoples are predominant in numbers; the Germans are scarcely more than one-fourth of the whole; and yet until recent years, the Austrian power figured chiefly as a German power in European politics, and took leadership in Germany itself. This position accrued to it through the persisting, potent influence of the Imperial title which the Archdukes of Austria bore, with medieval

Of Austria

Hegemony

Through Prestige Amid Divided States

fictions from Rome and from Germany woven together and clinging around it; and through the broken and divided conditions of the German land, where petty courts and princelings disputed precedence with one another and none could lead."

Larned, after mentioning some shortcomings of the Hapsburg system, says that they were entering in the general march of modern progress:

"Its face and its feet are now turned quite away from the paths of ambition and of policy which it trod so long. It has learned, and is learning, so fast that it may yet be a teacher in the school of liberal politics which it entered so late. It has set Hungary by the side of Austria, treading the one great nation of its subjects no longer under foot. It sees its interests and recognizes its duties in that quarter of Europe to which History and Geography have been pointing from Vienna and Budapest since the days of Charlemagne. Its mission in Europe is to command the precarious future of the southeastern states, so far as may be, and to guard them against the dangerous Muscovite, until they grow in civilization and strength and are united as one Power."

Present Progressiveness

Hapsburg Achievements

The Hapsburgs rendered invaluable service to Europe by gathering together the different nationalities that were strange and indifferent to one another, and often at war among themselves, and procuring some intercourse and commerce between hostile and antagonistic races that otherwise would have been fighting and exterminating one another.

Harmony Among Intermingled Antagonistic Races

The Hapsburgs also rendered priceless services to Europe by building up a powerful empire with different nationalities, in face of the advancing Turkish hordes

Defenders of Europe Against its Most Relentless Foe

who could have overwhelmed them, if they had been autonomous. Solyman the Magnificent devoted his glorious reign of forty years to the subjection of Hungary, and carried on no less than seven wars in that country, which could open the west of Europe to Mohammedanism, but he was repelled and stopped in his triumphant course. The Austrian Empire was the impregnable rampart and rock wall that stemmed the advancing flood of barbarians. It was its strength that prevented the Mohammedans from conquering Europe and saved the neighboring nations from the galling yoke of the Turks.

Skillful Diplomacy Mild Rule

It required skillful diplomacy to bind and keep together antagonistic races and to lead them against the most powerful and the most aggressive warrior of the times, the more so that these feats were accomplished by the rulers of a country as mountainous and as barren as Switzerland itself, and without wars of aggression and conquest. The ordinary means of expansion was love; namely: dynastic marriages which united foreign crowns to the Austrian dynasty and a mild rule that left the different races that composed their empire, their own language and national customs.

Love

Napoleon Congress Throws Her Upon Unwilling Nations

By a series of campaigns, Napoleon crippled the ancient rival of France, which was then partly driven from Germany and thrown upon Italian and Slavish nations which had not been consulted in the matter, and had had little sympathy with the new disposition, hence there was a bitter opposition against their foreign master and a continued campaign was carried on against the Austrian emperor.

Prussia Drives Her Out of the German Circles

During the last hundred years a rival of Austria was rising in Prussia, which by a series of wars and intrigues drove her out of the circle of nations, and assigned to her the task to Germanize the different races that were under

her sovereignty, or were being rescued from the Turks, Prussia coaxed her victim into an unwelcome alliance that would enable her to overpower the west of Europe, and establish a universal Empire, that would crush the liberty of the world.

And Makes Her a Tool in Her World Schemes

It is natural that the rule of Austria was none too welcome to the many races brought and kept under its rule, and not without abuses and violences, but it was not an unbearable yoke as the traducers present it to the unwary public, because those races came out of the union healthy, strong and patriotic.

Abuses Exaggerated

It is natural that those nations resented that they be reduced to an alien domination, but it will be a problem how to co-ordinate all those new inland states, and offer them outlets to the sea, which was even disputed to the great Austrian empire that united all of them in one formidable power. Some kind of a federation will have to be formed between all those independent states, whose racial elements are intermixed, and must be induced to compromise their individual pretentions and preferences for the common good of the country. The play of free institutions will solve many of these difficulties, but not without long struggles.

Impatience of Strange Subjects Natural

The Hapsburg power preserved the liberty of Europe for centuries; it fell when it was no longer necessary for the safety of the world and seemed to become an obstacle to the free development of those races it had saved from enslavement and extermination by the murdering power that disgraces our modern world. If Austria has not pushed her subject nations into all kinds of progress, it has saved them from enslavement and extermination.

A Power of Healthy Conservatism

Modern Ages, 1517-1918

FOURTH PERIOD—1517-1648

Period of Religious Contentions and Civil Wars

Religious Strife Bitter

The bitterest of all strifes are religious contentions, and the most cruel of all wars, religious wars—because the contending parties believe they are absolutely right and that they render a service to God, by persecuting or fighting their brother, and they declare their conflict a holy war, but it is unholy to force anyone's conscience, and it is impractical to make one believe against his will.

And Useless

Freedom of Conscience Precious

Anyone has an inborn right to religious liberty, and may assert and defend it with all his power; it is the dearest of all rights to follow one's own conscience; to many it is sweet as life itself. It is only a matter of self-defense to fight for the freedom to follow one's own convictions.

Contention Cut and Crimsoned Germany

No people in the world suffered more from religious contentions than Germany. At the time of the Reformation it had reached the highest power and comfort. Its sovereigns were the masters of two worlds, and its subjects could have made their fortunes in both hemispheres. Hardly had the Reformation started than the people commenced to question and attack one another's faith, and the princes undertook to force the consciences of their subjects.

Specific Tyranny About Faith

There existed a particular form of tyranny of conscience in the arbitrary power assumed by the rulers over the consciences of their subjects.

The princes arrogated to themselves the power to change the religion of their subjects, according to the maxim, "Cujus regio illius et religio." "He who rules

the land also prescribes the religion." It was to establish that tyrannical principle that they made the League of Smalcald in 1530, and conspired with the French and the Turks, the enemies of their country and of their religion. They carried on two civil wars against their emperor, Charles V, and although defeated, they obtained by the peace of Augsburg the power to Protestantize all secular states, but not ecclesiastical territories. In the Palatinate the religion was changed four times in sixty years.

League of Smalcald Against Liberty of Conscience

Against the express provisions of this compromise sixteen prince-bishoprics were secularized. The great Emperors Ferdinand II (1618) and Ferdinand III (1637) protested against such outrages. Germany divided between the "Evangelical Union," composed of Lutherans and Calvinists, and the "Catholic League," made for the defense of liberty of conscience. The Protestants started a fratricidal struggle which lasted from 1618 to 1648, and is called the Thirty Years' War. They elected as emperors, Frederick V of the Palatinate, Christian II of Denmark and Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden, successively, and they sought the help of France in their rebellion, knowing that the country was always ready and willing to weaken her rival, the Hapsburg Empire. Foreign armies, invited by the insurgents, invaded and devastated the country; and, although defeated and overpowered by the Ferdinands and their generals, Tilly and Wallenstein; the Protestants continued to lay Germany in waste and refused during eight years to listen to the negotiations of peace proposed by the Emperor. Finally, in 1648, Ferdinand III obtained the peace of Westphalia, but under the most onerous conditions. He had to sacrifice the integrity and the unity of the empire.

Thirty Years' War

Election of Two Foreign Anti-Emperors

Victories of Ferdinand III.

Peace of Westphalia

Sweden acquired several provinces on the Baltic, and France several on the Rhine. Three hundred and sixty-five independent states were recognized, and the Lutherans and Calvinists were put on the same footing as the Catholics. This was the parceling out of the land that had first divided the unity of the Church of Christ. three-fourths of the population had disappeared, and the remnant had to defend themselves against the wild animals. Germany descended to a second rank among the powers of Europe and remained there for two centuries.

Dismemberment of Empire

V. PERIOD—1648-1789

Period of Weakness—Austria on the Defensive.

Hostility of Protestants

If the German Protestants had not succeeded in overthrowing the Hapsburg dynasty, they had dealt it terrible blows, from which it never fully recovered. The kings of Prussia who were regarded as the head of Protestantism arose against Austria and tore away the rich province of Silesia. Then Austria was drawn in several succession wars, which brought her no advantages, and spent her resources on ouside concerns.

Foreign Entanglements

Causes That Ruined Country

Several causes contributed to weaken the empire. First, the ruin wrought by the Thirty Years' War, which had wasted the land, exterminated most of the people and divided the remnant in numerous states and sects.

Fierce Assaults of Conquerors

Secondly, the relentless attacks of King Louis XIV, and the stubborn wars of Frederick II, which exhausted the man power and the treasury of the empire.

Three Succession Wars

Thirdly, different succession wars in which the empire was involved, to-wit:—the Spanish, the Austrian and the Polish succession wars. As they were European questions, immense armies were put in the field and were fighting for a dozen years each time. Immense sacri-

fices were made more for the sake of dynasties than for the interests of the countries.

SIXTH PERIOD—1789-1918.

Contemporaneous Germany.

AUSTRIA

Napoleon Breaks Up Germany

The campaigns of Napoleon in Germany broke up the Holy Empire of the German nations and most of the ancient boundaries.

Loose Confederacy Hegemony of Austria

The Congress of Vienna proposed a loose confederacy of the German states. There were thirty-eight members, the emperor of Austria being at their head. But Prussia undermined his authority and by the middle of the century she was the virtual leader of Germany.

Austria Down-trodden by the French

Austria, the ancient rival of France, was subject to the brunt of the attacks of the victorious Napoleon. One campaign was not finished but another was undertaken with renewed vigor. The ancient empire was trampled under the feet of the armies and reduced to heaps of ruins. The Holy Empire was abolished and an Austrian Empire erected. The confederacy of the Rhine first replaced the ancient empire, and other dispositions were made of it afterwards. Austria was deprived of her German states and thrown upon the Adriatic basin, peopled by Italians and Slavs, and thus involved into interminable difficulties with many foreign nations to rule. She had already three races to harmonize, the German, Slavonic and Hungarian and now one more was added, to-wit: the Italian.

Thrown Upon

Strange Races

Era of Revolutions

There set in an era of revolutions that would have overthrown any power less anchored in the soil of the land and less implanted in the soul of the populations. All the time Prussia was scheming to crush Austria, and she struck her a death blow in the war of 1866, driv-

Intrigues

ing her entirely out of Germany. She finally forced her to become an ally in her schemes for the conquest of Europe.

PRUSSIA

Stand Against Napoleon Award of Large Estates

Prussia was the only power in the north that had been able to make a stand against the irresistible Napoleon, and she came triumphant out of the storm of a quarter of a century. Being the most powerful state of north central Europe, she pushed her interests at the Congress of Vienna and secured enormous territories in the reorganization of Europe which made her a formidable rival for Austria. Then the plan was made to subjugate all the German nations and was ruthlessly carried out.

Austria Crippled; Germany Subdued; World Conquest

Austria was crippled and pushed away from the German populations toward the Slavonic ones, the other states were reduced to a condition of vassalage. Once the master of Germany, Prussia lost no time to prepare for the conquest of the Continent. When fully ready she broke every law of humanity to crush the nations of Europe.

Bled for the Ambition of the Rulers

Overburdened with taxes the people made several attempts to stop the unjust warfare that was waged for the benefit of the junkers, but they were overcome and subjected to an iron rule, and many fled the taxes and the yoke and emigrated. When in the world's war the armies were conquered by the democratic powers of the world, the people arose and overthrew their ancient masters and organized republics all over Germany. The abuse of power had been so great that the reaction is going to the other extreme, and threatens to overthrow all order and security.

THE PRUSSIAN WORLD POWER

Monograph: Scheme of Supremacy in Germany

Admiration Has Waned

We used to hail the German advances as great strides in progress, but we learned from the disclosures and practices in the world's war that these were intended to establish a world tyranny. German efficiency and thoroughness was extolled everywhere. Now it is made evident that they were used for the aggrandizement of the Prussians and the subjugation of the world. The unification of Germany in itself is a boon to Germans and may be a benefit to mankind, but it was used to enslave the Germans themselves and to threaten the liberty of other nations. The Prussians were heralded as the restorers of the German power and influence in the world, and of the ancient Germanic empire, that had flourished for hundreds of years, but that restoration was not accomplished for the benefit of the German people, nor was it a liberation from an intolerable yoke. It was made for the advance of Prussia and the enslavement of the other principalities of Germany.

Efficiency Abused for the Subjugation of the World

Unification for the Benefit of Prussia

Treacherous Methods Reduce All Under Supremacy of Prussia

Hitherto the Germans had enjoyed autonomy and self-government, and each nationality had developed a civilization of its own, having specific merit and value for the land and the people. Through crafty diplomacy, secret plots and sudden assaults the other German states were reduced under the Prussian overpower; they were all but made vassals of the Kaiser, obliged to serve to the glorification of the new master. After reducing Germany under their power the Prussians began preparations for the great war that was to give them the command of Europe and the mastery of the world.

Flourishing States Enslaved; All Nations Threatened

Good Record

That was not the method of the early Hohenzollern dynasty. The princes were among the most distinguished electors of the empire and the most loyal sup-

porters of the reigning Hapsburgs. They supported the constitution of the empire which was a federation of states under the direction of an emperor. They were also progressive rulers, as they made substantial improvements in the marshy wastes of Brandenburg.

Good Prospects

The Hohenzollern domains had a healthy and steady growth and occupied a high rank in Eastern Germany. No injustice or violence was necessary to secure a bright future for Prussia.

Strong State

The great elector, Frederick William (1648-88) had an army and a navy superior to those of his neighbors. Frederick I 1701-13, his successor, acquired the rank of king, and recruited from everywhere that famous tall guard that formed the nucleus of the great military power of the Prussians. Frederick William I made such economies and such investments that he left a large army and a full treasury to his son and successor Frederick II.

Growth Succession Laws Keep Holdings

While Neighboring States Are Subdividing

The Hohenzollerns were practical business men and they knew not only how to keep their fiefs together, but also how to increase them by marriage with the scions of the heirs of large estates. By the law of male primogeniture and by family pacts they not only kept intact what they had, but they acquired a number of neighboring lands without the shedding of a drop of blood. They soon had together a respectable state that was superior to all the neighboring ones. In other principalities there were numerous divisions and subdivisions which naturally weakened the nation. At one time there were eight reigning princes of the Palatine family and in Thuringia, fourteen of the Wettin family.

Frederick the Great

Frederick II Reverses the Policy and Throws Prussia in the Path of Ruthlessness

But there arose from the Hohenzollerns a genius for good and for evil that changed their policy and resorted to every means to make Prussia a great power. It was

Frederick II the Great (1730-1780), who undermined the German empire by ruthless warfare and helped to ruin and break up the whole Kingdom of Poland for his own private benefit.

Character

Guggenberger, General History. Character: "Frederick was a man of extraordinary mental resources, his intellect shrewd and calculating, his judgment rapid and clear. He was bold in danger, strong in adversity, indefatigable in the detail work of civil and military organization. He intensely loved power and display. Hard, selfish and cynical, entirely void of any moral principles or moral scruple, he was in political dealings callous to every sentiment of generosity or honor. In his internal government he introduced many beneficial measures, such as abolition of trial by torture. His rule was based on the maxim, 'All for the people, nothing through the people.'"

Excellent Administration

Undermines the Hapsburg Power

Frederick II attacked Mary Theresa, the daughter of his benefactor, Emperor Charles VI, and so weakened the House of Austria that it fell an easy victim to the attacks of Napoleon. From it he conquered Silesia in the teeth of Europe and defended it in three terrible wars, and astonished Europe by the quickness of his attacks and the thoroughness of his defenses.

Ruins Religion, Introduces Materialistic Philosophy

Frederick II was the friend of the impious Voltaire, who passed many years with him, and he contributed greatly to destroy religion and morality among the German princes and to eradicate even the natural sense of responsibility born in every man.

Ruin of Poland

Another great crime was the bare-faced robbery committed by Frederick II in the partition of Poland. It is a device of Prussian diplomacy to contract secret treaties and deceive the enemy. He concluded with Catherine II an understanding to maintain in Poland the

Secret Treaty to Maintain Fatal Constitution in Poland

anarchical constitution that would ruin that country and when the Poles tried to extricate themselves from the fatal defects of their government the Prussian and the Russian armies occupied Poland, compelled their victim to maintain the destructive rules, and then Frederick shamefully proposed to pay themselves for their services by slices of Polish territory. The part taken by him was very valuable, as it bound together the different parts of Prussia (1776). That was the beginning of the dismemberment of Poland, which was completely divided in 1793 and 1795.

Invasion

Territory Taken for Services

The acquisitions of Frederick II had made of Prussia the great power of Northern Germany, which was second only to Austria. Prussia made the strongest opposition to the invading armies of Napoleon. However, once it abstained from the coalition made against the insatiable conqueror in the hope of securing Hanover from Napoleon, which was not granted; it was even attacked singly by him and driven beyond the Elbe. At the congress of Vienna, Prussia claimed vast territories in the Rhenish and Saxon provinces and became one of the great powers of Europe.

Prussia Opposes Napoleon

Great Awards at Congress of Vienna

The ruins accumulated by a quarter of a century of warfare were so universal and so appalling that it took more than a generation to recuperate from them. The people who had been decimated and plundered on a gigantic scale arose several times against the princes that had officially injured them and they demanded protection against the repetition of such butcheries. They, moreover, claimed living wages from the capitalists that exploited them. They arose in revolts, especially in 1848. Promises of redress were given them but not fulfilled, and a great many Germans fled the land of despotism to seek liberty and opportunity in the new world. Many of them became wealthy citizens in the United States.

Ruins Not Repaired for a Long Time

Revendication Against the Militarists

Revolutions

Bismarck

Bismarck Revives Schemes

Hardly was Prussia over the depression caused by the Napoleonic wars than the great Chancellor Bismarck revived the schemes of conquest of Frederick II. He presented these as the restoration of Germany and the reunion of all Teutonic peoples to Germany. It was Pan-Germanism overtly for the benefit of the Germans, but really for the growth of the Prussians.

Pan-Germanism

Reptile Press

Bismarck had founded the Reptile Press, i. e., a press inspired and subsidized by him, ready to advocate all his schemes. It was a secret instrument in the hands of the Iron Chancellor, used to promote the interests of Prussia, although it posed as the voice of public opinion in Germany and outside, too. Lavish appropriations were given to those organs, as cunning and as dangerous as serpents. After the occupation of Hanover by Prussia the taxes from that country were mostly used to pay the reptiles that poisoned the public opinion with the Bismarckian venom.

Not the Public Opinion

Subsidized by Secret Funds

Deceitful Diplomacy

The unification of Germany was a work of artful but deceitful diplomacy. The neighbor rivals and enemies of Prussia were aroused against one another without knowing that there was a common enemy that worked to subjugate all of them. Italy was made an ally to be ready to attack Austria from the rear when war would come. Austria, legally the paramount power of Germany, was to be demolished to leave all of Germany open to Prussia.

Demolition of Austria

Austria Inveigled in the Danish War Deprived of Its Spoils

First Bismarck inveigled Austria in Prussia's quarrels with Denmark. The Prussians had been beaten by the sturdy Danes in the wars 1848-53. Now Bismarck wanted the help of Austria to drive the Danes from German soil. In the Danish war 1863-64, the little country was overwhelmed by the combination of the two great

empires. Schleswig and Holstein were conquered by Germany. Then Bismarck took alone the administration of the conquered duchies and refused any share in its administration to the official head of the German confederation.

Austria Supplanted by Prussia.

Austria Isolated

Bismarck loses no time in his purpose to drive Austria out of the German confederation. By his reptile press he endeavors to turn the public opinion against Austria. He arouses the people against the pretensions of old Austria, which had ruled too long for the benefit of the Fatherland. He secured from Napoleon a free hand against Austria, France's ancient rival. He promised the Po Basin to Italy if she would attack Austria from the rear. He gained also the smaller southern states of Germany. War was undertaken against Austria. The hostilities lasted six weeks. The larger states of Germany remained faithful to Austria, but they were soon disarmed. July 15, Bismarck demanded the neutrality, adding that if they declined his peaceful orders he would treat them as enemies. The cabinets of Dresden and Hanover, of Cassel and Wiesbaden declined them. Immediately on the nights of the 15th and 16th of June Prussian troops entered Hanover, Hesse and Saxony. The way had been opened by the Reptile press. In five days, Prussia had disarmed all Northern Germany and broken all resistance from the North Sea to the Main.

Large German States Disarmed

Northern States Disarmed

Austria Conquered in Four Weeks. Victorious Over Italy

The war proper lasted one month. Austria was attacked from the north by the Prussians and from the south by the Italians. She was beaten by the former at Custozza, but beat the latter at Sadowa. She was driven out of Germany and Italy, Prussia becoming the recognized head of Germany.

Two German Confederations

Two confederations were organized in Germany, one of the North, the other of the South. Prussia was the recognized head of the Northern confederation, and was the tacit leader of the Southern.

Blow to France—Alsace-Lorraine

France's Objection Turned Into a Threat

France repeatedly claimed some compensation for the increase of power made by Prussia. It was turned by the reptile press into an aggression against the Southern States in order to bring them closer to the Northern Confederation for common defense. When the war came they were ready to fight together for the Fatherland.

William's Attempt at Universal Empire

Versatile, Ambitious

1888-1918. *William II* is a man of great versatility and unlimited ambition. It was his purpose to make Germany the arbiter of the world. He consecrated all his time and all his talents to the one purpose to make himself the master of Europe. He made war the supreme business of the empire.

Obsessed by Self

There is only one thing that this great man lacked: balance of mind. He was obsessed of one idea that eclipsed all others—the conquest of the world, to be made by himself in his lifetime. He would consider nothing else; nor consult his natural counselors, the ministers or the princes of the empire. He was so full of his purpose, so convinced of his superiority, that he refused to avail himself of the talents of those that had built up Germany. Instead of consulting his ministers he simply dictated his will. He exported and removed even the old statesman who stood in the way of his ambition, prince Bismarck.

Ignores Counselors

Consults Nobody

Peers of Empire

There were his peers, the princes of the empire, who had favored his elevation and whose ancestors for many

centuries had been the official advisers of the Kaiser. Were they consulted? They were ignored, even shunned. The empire for them was effacement in favor of the Hohenzollerns. Still consultation with them might have avoided the fatal mistake that finally led to the ruin of the empire.

Underestimates the Task

That was just the reason why he failed in the end. He underestimated the difficulty of subduing the free and intelligent peoples of the world, who were bound to combine against a proud master. He relied on the systematic preparation of a quarter of a century. He was going to combine the characteristic weapons of the Prussians: treachery, surprise, force and affrightment.

No Hero Had Conquered the World William Combined More Means

No single hero had subdued and held the world. It took the Romans five centuries to cement together the world empire that lasted five centuries. William could do it alone in his lifetime. He was going to combine an array of forces that could not be conquered nor even stopped in their march. For twenty-five years he was drilling an army to a perfect fighting machine—he was building roads and canals that would enable his troops to move as lightning from one end of Europe to the other. Such a military preparation could not fail to alarm all the statesmen of Europe.

Morality Wanting

Humanly speaking, the war machine was perfect, but the military system lacked the essential qualities to last: truth and right. It was a system of brute force and deliberate deceit, which in the end recoiled against its perpetrators. It was founded on the materialistic philosophy that might is right, that the states are not subject to any moral law of justice, but may keep all that they can get; that everything is permissible to win the war. An atrocious warfare was carried on to conquer the enemy, by every means, however cruel and revolting

Materialistic Doctrine of Force and Deceit

they might be. A shameful conspiracy was woven around every nation of the earth, which was honeycombed by Prussian agents. The natural result of such a policy was to turn every free nation against the impudent meddler who was creating disturbances among its citizens.

Makes Enemies

The war was founded on a lie. It was declared to be undertaken for the defense of the Fatherland, but it was waged to promote the interest and glory of the Kaiser and the Junkers surrounding him. When the isolation of the Germans was broken, and they heard that the allies had no idea of destroying their country even after the atrocities they had committed in the occupied territories, they became embittered against the despots that had led them to slaughter under false pretenses, and they hastened to overthrow them as soon as they were no more awed by the enormous armies that used to threaten them.

Not Danger but Ambition Prompted War

Overthrow of Selfish Leaders

There are those who wish to exculpate the Kaiser, as being the victim of a system established by Bismarck, by whom the Germans were masterfully organized for the conquest of the world, and were now working it out. There is no desire of denying that Bismarck was the man who framed that pernicious system of conquest, but there is no way of denying that William carried it into execution. No doubt that the lessons of Bismarck pushed and drove the new master in that direction. He was powerful enough to dismiss the mighty architect of the German Empire bent on the conquest of Europe, and he could also reverse the sinister purpose of subduing the world. But he espoused the scheme of universal conquest and made it his life work to carry it out and bring the world at the foot of the Prussians. He made it so much his own scheme that he removed every minister or counselor or general that opposed his

If Bismarck Was the Originator, William Was the Executor, of the Work

His Own Prime Minister

policy. He was his own prime minister. He lost no time in putting Bismarck out of his way, and so he did with the prime ministers that failed to fully co-operate in his projects, such as Von Hertling.

Extraordinary Activity in the Whole Country

There reigned an extraordinary activity in Prussia from the palace down to the hovel; everyone was put to work for the development of the country as well as for the Hohenzollern dynasty. The schools were teaching war, the camps were training the youth, the factories were piling up munitions. Military roads were built on water as well as on land. Experts were studying every phase of the future war. Every possible preparation was made: so that success seemed to be assured and failure impossible.

War Fell as a Thunderbolt

The war fell as a thunderbolt upon Europe. Nobody was prepared but Germany. The assassination of the Crown Prince of Austria was eagerly seized as an occasion or rather an excuse to start the conflagration.

Greatest of All Wars

There never was a war so enormous in its extent and so atrocious in its operations as the world war of August, 1914, to November, 1918. This war involved more nationalities, covered more territories and had more battles than the combined wars of several centuries.

Many Nationalities Involved

Started by Autocrat; After Raging Four Years Ended with the Downfall of Autocracy

The war was caused by the Kaiser, William II, autocrat of Germany. It took the world by surprise and raged for four years. It ended as suddenly as it began. It brought the complete downfall of autocracy. One king after another lost his throne, and the Kaiser himself, the most ambitious of all became an exile and a fugitive. It was the most colossal war of all history. The struggle commenced between the Teutonic Empires on one side and France and Russia on the other. When the neutrality of Belgium was violated England joined the allies.

New and more flagrant violations of international laws aroused Roumania, Greece and Italy, and finally the United States of America to join the civilized nations. President Wilson kept out of the war as long as he could, until finally the attempts of the Germans became brazen and defiant. He entered the conflict with heart and soul and refused to negotiate with the faithless rulers of Germany. The Teutons had no other allies than the savage Turks and the Bulgarians. Twenty-seven nations were involved in the war. There were battles in nearly all lands and seas of the world. In Europe alone there were four fronts, an eastern, the Russian; two southern fronts, the Balkan and the Alpian, and a western one stretching from the North Sea to Switzerland. The Teutons had planned to strike the nations one after another, and they dealt stunning blows on every one of these fronts. Hindenburg and Mackensen conquered whole countries in the east. It was in the west that the issue of the war was decided. It was a grand march and a threatening advance when five innumerable armies overwhelming Belgium, marched toward Paris. Little Belgium held them back long enough to allow France to gather some forces, and General Joffre routed them at the Marne. The English arrived in time to help the Belgians in their stand on their last foot of ground beyond the Yzer. That was as far as the Teutons went. For four years they tried to break the lines of the allies in order to reach Paris and London. Battles were fought again on the Marne and the Yzer, also on the Somme (Amiens) and the Meuse (Verdun). They delivered most furious attacks against Verdun, without being able to take it. When the allies commenced to be worn out the Americans came and brought fresh troups anxious to march upon Berlin. Gen-

America

Growing Brazenness of the Kaiser

Wilson Refuses to Negotiate With them any longer

Battles in Nearly Every Land and Sea

Victorious on Other Fronts, the Teutons Are Stopped, Then Thrown Back on the West Front

The Americans Brought Fresh Vigor. Foch the Supreme Commander Broke Enemy Lines

eral Foch was made supreme commander of the allies and he broke the famous Hindenburg Line. The attrition tactics of the allies to wear down the enemy had proven effective, and the Germans had to retreat. When the populace, who had continually been promised victory, heard that they had been duped all the time, they revolted against the deceivers. When they learned that the allies never had any intention to hurt Germany, they felt so indignant that they overthrew the Kaiser and the arrogant junkers.

The Disabused Germans Overthrew the Lying Junkers

What gives a particular odium to this war is the barbarous manner in which it was carried on. The morale of the civil populations was to be destroyed. The soldiers were told to strike terror into the hearts of the people in order to break their spirits. Falling upon little Belgium in the midst of peace they commenced at once to punish whole cities for any delinquency of one of the inhabitants. They were especially severe against the pastor and the burgomaster. They committed wholesale plunders for the most simple infraction against the tyrannical orders. They leveled the churches and the cities and they destroyed the ancient city of Louvain and burned the priceless library of its famous university. There were many original manuscripts destroyed that can never be replaced. What good has this awful devastation done for the Germans?

Odious Treatment of the Civilians to Strike Terror

Burning of Louvain Library

Every device of wanton destruction, every infernal machine of slaughter and torment that had been forbidden by the Hague Conventions was used by the savage invaders. Defenseless towns were bombarded from the air with no other object than to cause ruin and death and throw the people into consternation.

New Devices of Destruction

Submarines lurked in the waters and became the terror of the ocean. Gas shells were unexpectedly thrown in the trenches and maimed the soldiers or asphyxiated them in a second. The allies knew of these barbarous weapons before they were surprised by them, but they would not use them until they were compelled to do so in self-defense. The Germans used every infernal machine for four long years. Can a family of nations subsist with such fiends around or above them?

Submarines; Gas Shells

What put the climax to the crimes committed by the Germans in occupied countries was the starving of the populations and the deportation of the able-bodied men and women. It was a return to the slavery of pagan times of Rome and Babylon. The deported men were driven to the mines and overburdened immediately with work and abuse. If they ever came back alive, they looked like skeletons. Many died from the result of ill treatment. The poor women were obliged to perform exhausting work and exposed to all kinds of indignities.

Starving and Deportation

The war wrought upon mankind more suffering and death than the wars of many past centuries, and all for the ambition of one man, one dynasty and one caste. The estimated casualties are 30,000,000, the battle deaths of 7,845,300, the cost $250,000,000,000.

Scourge of Mankind

But it brought still more harm to the German nations themselves by instilling in them the ambition to subjugate the world and throwing them into a policy of deceit, which finally ruined them for a long time to come.

Calamity for Germany Itself

Mania of World Conquest.

William II did an immense harm to the Germans by imbuing them with the mania of world conquest. He filled them with the idea that they were born and trained to rule the other nations, and he claimed the right to use every means to reach that destiny. Before this

Policy of World Conquest

Assumption of Superiority

war the German people were distinguished for justice, humanity and culture. Now many have been blinded by the sophistic propaganda of materialism and brutal force, and they cannot see why other peoples have rights and feelings to be respected. The result of the war ought to dissipate such dangerous theory and make Germany satisfied to live peaceably among the family of nations.

Menace to Other Nations

Fear and Revenge

System of Treachery.

The systems of espionage, treachery and revolt established by the Prussians in every land was a crime against the law of nations. It was a conspiracy against the peace and security of the world. Official proofs of such dastardly deeds and shameless practices by the ambassadors and consuls of the Teutonic powers have come out on all sides and surpass belief.

Conspiracy Against Every Nation

Minister Delbruck bluntly expressed the spirit of the German government. "A German never loses his nationality were he nationalized in many lands." Ambassador Bernstorff, while stationed at Washington, carried on for years a treacherous propaganda against the United States, which has been brought out by our government, and brands him as a shameless traitor and a terrible danger to the country.

Treacherous Diplomats

1919—PEACE TREATY

The Armistice was signed November 11, 1918. The Treaty of Peace between the Allies and Germany was signed June 28, 1919. So many questions had been raised by the world conflict, that it required several more months to solve them. There were many points that could be settled only temporarily or tentatively, and that may have to be revised. The main object of the Peace Conference was to restore peace and security in the world.

Momentous Questions Long Debated

Peace Signed

President Woodrow Wilson endeavored to form a League of Nations that would render war impossible in the future. If his noble plan was not accepted fully, at least it was partially adopted and it will be realized at some future time. The world does not seem to be ready as yet, for such noble propositions formulated and advocated by the statesman of Washington.

League of Nations Partially Established

Peace of Versailles

Hard as were the conditions imposed on the Central Powers, they were just and necessary. The wanton destruction and slaughter, openly contrary to the laws of nations and to the Hague regulations, demanded reparation. However enormous the indemnity is, it will not commence to repair the incalculable damages inflicted upon peaceable civilians. Safeguards had to be established against an enemy who had broken every international law and torn to pieces the most solemn treaties.

Conditions Hard

But Just and Necessary

Financial Wars

The German people and Republic were endeavoring to live up to the treaty; but the same leaders, who had brought on the disastrous war started a financial struggle that wrought as much hardship as the military one. The best parts of France and Belgium had been ruined by the war; while the German country had not been touched. But the German leaders endeavored to escape the indemnity that had been imposed upon them, and had recourse to every excuse and every device to delay the payments. Being in dire financial distress the French occupied the Ruhr valley; which paralyzed the industrial life of the fatherland. Unscrupulous German financiers proposed to render their country unable to pay and they

German Irreconcilables Refuse Reparations to Ruined Allies

ruined its financial system at the same time they monopolized the resources of their country in their own hands. The situation of Germany became unbearable and that of the allies hopeless. There seemed to be no hope of any settlement and the hatred became more intensified than ever.

Finally in the winter of 1923 a commission of experts, practical business men from the Allies, was selected to disentangle the misunderstandings that divided war-torn Europe.

Dawes Pacifier

At once they considered the situation in all its bearings. General Charles Dawes of the United States was their chairman. He is a man of quick and direct ways. He investigated the facts and silenced the feelings and the commission succeeded in presenting a plan that was welcomed by all parties concerned. If it is carried out, Dawes and his associates will be known in history as the pacifyers of Europe after ten years of disastrous wars and conflicts.

SOME DISPOSITIONS OF THE VERSAILLES TREATY

Rand-McNally Atlas, 1920:

Germany

Germany loses one-fifth of its late conquests and one-twentieth more may be lost.

	AREA SQ. MILES	POPULATION
Before the war	208,780	67,812,000
Deduction	43,752	9,689,727
	165,028	58,122,273

Germany cedes:

	AREA SQ. MILES	POPULATION
Alsace-Lorraine	5,605	1,874,041
Eastern zone	27,686	5,903,305
Subject to plebiscite	8,572	5,903,305
Loses sovereignty	1,507	345,866

The German colonies are taken over by England and France, and a small part by Japan.

Austria Is Dismembered

Austria is dismembered and partitioned between the races that were parts of her empire.

	AREA SQ. MILES	POPULATION
Austria—Germans	33,438	7,076,418
Czecho-Slovakia—Czechs	52,712	13,600,000
Hungary—Magyars	95,000	15,500,000
Italia Irridenta—Italians	11,740	1,848,542

The area of Austria proper is 33,438 square miles. If the size of the German state is taken for unity, the Italians have one-third of its size, the Hungarians three times and both the Czecho and Jugo-Slavs twice its size.

Austro-Italian Difficulties

Italian Possessions No Benefit

By the Congress of Vienna, 1815, Austria had been favored with Lombardy and Venetia in compensation of territories lost elsewhere. That was rather a burden and a cause of war of liberation on the part of the Italians. About 1860, these two provinces were lost to Italy. Three other Italian or mixed territories were still held by Austria, and called irredeemed Italy: "Italia Irridenta" to-wit: The Trentino, Trieste, part of Dalmatia; which are now awarded to Italy.

Roumania and Hungary

The Roumanians claim several territories which are as much Hungarian as they are Roumanian or Slavonic. They have some rights, having been among the Allies; but they should not be allowed to dominate alien populations. They have overrun the neighboring countries. For permanent peace a just medium has to be struck.

The Balkans

	AREA SQ. MILES	POPULATION
Jugo-Slavia or Serbia	68,369	13,190,767
Bulgaria	43,305	4,752,997
Roumania	53,489	7,516,418
Greece	41,933	4,363,000
Turkey in Europe	10,833	2,291,900

Turkey in Asia may be reduced to Anatolia.

Turkey

The lot of Turkey is not fixed as yet on account of the difficulty of dividing the spoils of the ancient tyrants. There is question of leaving only Anatolia or Western Asia Minor to the Turks, the Aegean Coasts being excepted. The eastern part will form the Republic of Armenia. Mesopotamia, Syria, Palestine and Arabia are lost.

Armenia

Throughout the many massacres, persecutions and savage invasions Armenia persists in existing. Area, 208,000 square miles reaching the three seas and the Euphrates river. Population, 10,800,000 souls. Mesopotamia and Palestine, will go to England, Syria to France. Arabia threw off the yoke of the Turks.

Russia

Russia, disputed between Reds, Whites and Secessionists divided into 21 states. Besides Russia the most important are:

	AREA SQ. MILES	POPULATION
Finland	125,689	3,277,100
Lithuania	80,000	9,000,000
Poland	43,805	28,803,305
Ukraine	216,400	30,000,000

There are Caucasian, Siberian, Turkish and Russian Republics.

Breaking Up of the Russian Empire:

Bolsheviki Tyrannize Russia and Lose Its Most Advanced States

Russia is afflicted by the machinations of the communistic Soviets, and by the throes of civil war between the Reds and the Whites. The Western and Southern provinces seceded and constituted large and independent Republics to-wit: Finland, Lithuania, Poland and Ukraine. In Caucasia four states are started, counting in Armenia. Siberia is the most adverse to the Bolsheviki misrule and despotism.

Breaking Up of the Austrian Empire

Austria Had Protected Different Races

The Austrian Empire was an inland state which had saved and united weak races that could not defend themselves. In spite of many services rendered Europe, it was begrudged a few ports on the Adriatic sea. Small agitators aroused racial feelings and demanded separation.

Agitators Divided Them on Racial Lines

Now those people are divided in four small inland states, none powerful enough to defend its rights. They are isolated from the rest of the world. If the venerable Empire of Austria could not get a decent seaport, how will the small states reach the world markets, indispensable in our days? It is true there were abuses, especially against the Slavs, who never obtained recognition as a partner in the dual empire; but they could be remedied by making it an empire consisting of three parts and giving each race an equitable share in the government. It is neither the language, nor the race, that constitute a state and a people, but the common interest and the mutual understanding and protection. Those races who had some protection and power under the Hapsburgs are more helpless than before. Their real

leaders know this and endeavor to form some new kind of federation.

Some Consequences of the War

Bands of Fanatics Let Loose to Experiment Upon Mankind

One of the saddest consequences of this unjust and savage war is that it let loose the passions of ignorant and narrow reformers, fanatical patriots and self-seeking agitators who are trying to overthrow the existing conditions of society without having anything practicable to put in their place. Most states and institutions are the outcome of the natural factors among them. Abuses, it is true, have slipped in, and grown up, but that is no reason to overthrow the whole order of society and bring on anarchy and chaos. The abuses can be corrected by legal and peaceful means, as it is done in the United States of America, where the majority rules and does not allow bands of conspirators to overthrow their legal and just government. It is under pretext of liberty, justice and patriotism that they agitate and reform; but is for the purpose of forcing upon the people their yoke, much harder than the orderly government that existed, although it may have been tyrannical. Setting up states that have no power of self defense, or no access to the sea, conditions of vital importance in the modern world, simply serves to gratify the ambition of small politicians.

Radicals Destroy

Bring in More Abuses

German Monarchy

Chronicles.

House of Carolingians, 843-918

Louis the German, 843-76, repels the Normans, takes one-half Lorraine, three sons conquer the other half. **Normans and Slavs Invading**

Charles the Fat: Emperor and king of France; buying peace from the Normans, is deposed. 887, *Arnulf* defeats them at the Dyle, and calls the Magyars against the Moravians. Emperor, Louis the Child, 899-911, perishes fighting against the Magyars.

911. *Elective Monarchy*—Conrad I of Franconia, fights rival, Henry of Saxony, and designates him as his successor, 918-1024.

House of Saxony, 918-1024

Henry I, the Fowler, reduces the dukes of Bavaria, Swabia, Lotharingia, Bohemia and defeats the Magyars at Merseburg.

Otto I, the Great, 936, subdues rebellious relatives, conquers the Slavs of the Oder and of Bohemia, crushes the Hungarians at the Lech, bestows Saxony to Herman Billung. Three expeditions in Italy; he conquers the Lombards and marries Queen Adelaide, and gives the cities to the Lombard Bishops. Otto is crowned emperor by Pope John XII. **Otto the Great** **Holy Empire**

962. *Holy Roman Empire of the German Nations.*

Besides the four lay court officers, Otto appoints three ecclesiastical ones, who become the imperial electors.

972. *Otto II—Theophano* the Greek, 993, under regency of mother and Gerbert; revolt of Bavaria.

1002. *SS. Henry II—Cunegunda.*

1024-1125. *House of Franconia.*

Struggles for religious liberty.

Conrad II—Sustains the cities against the Bishops in Lombardy, cannot keep the Normans out of Naples, inherits the Kingdom of Burgundy. **Vassals Reduced**

1030. *Henry III,* reduces Bohemia and Poland; fights Hungary and Lorraine; institutes the Truce of God.

1056. *Henry IV,* corrupted, repudiates and retakes Bertha, oppresses the Saxons, opposes antipope to Alexander II. 1073-85. *Gregory VII.* **Henry IV**

Lay Investitures Condemned, Excommunicated Henry Goes to Canossa

1073-1122. *Investiture Quarrel.*

1st period, 1074-75, councils against the incontinency and simony of clergy, the result of lay investitures. The Pope is seized by Guibert and after a victory over the Saxons deposed at Worms; 1076, Henry is excommunicated; suspended of royal office and goes to Canossa, January 25th, 1088.

Antipopes Anti-Emperors

1077. 2nd period. Seizing of Gregory, anti-emperor Rudolph of Swaba, brother-in-law, is worn out by negotiations and falls; is replaced by Herman of Luxemburg, 1080-86. Second excommunication of Henry. Antipope Guibert Clement III.

Siege of Rome, Rescue by Naples, Revolt of Sons

1081. 3rd period. Siege of Rome, which surrenders; rescue of Gregory by Robert Guiscard, whose troops plunder the faithless city.

1089-1106. 4th period. Third invasion of Italy; excommunication by Urban II and Pascal II against whom four antipopes arise. But revolt of sons. Conrad, 1093-1103, captures and degrades his father who dies at Liege.

Henry V Exacts Concessions, Condemned by Two

1106-24. *Henry V,* extorts from Pascal II the renunciation of the imperial fiefs held by the church, and the right of privilegium of investiture by the crozier. Protestation of the clergy, condemnation by the council of Rome, of the Pope, who offers his resignation. An antipope excommunicated by Galixtus II. Henry V negotiates: 1122, Concordat of Worms.

1123. Ninth general council; Lateran I; investiture by crozier forbidden; by sceptre allowed after election, before consecration in the north, after it in the south. Canons against incontinency and simony in clergy, reinforced by tenth council, 1139.

Lothaire of Saxony

1124-31. *Lothaire II of Saxony* gives daughter Gertrude to Henry Welf the Proud, duke of Bavaria, overcomes the opposition of the Hohenstaufen Henry V's nephews, gives Saxon Brandenburg to Ascanian Albert the Bear (Berlin), respects the rights of the church.

1138-1256. *Struggle Against Civil Liberty. Hohenstaufen Dynasty.*

Irregular Election

Conrad III of Swabia, nephew of Henry V, is elected before the time appointed; and opposed by *Henry the Proud,* husband of Lothaire's daughter Gertrude; battle of Weinberg,

Welfs Ghibellines

Hie Welf! Hie Weiblingen! Welf estates confiscated. 2nd crusade.

Austrian Henry Jasomirgott marries Gertrude, the widow of Henry the Proud.

1152-1191. *Frederick Barbarossa* returns Bavaria to *Henry the Lion,* son of Henry the Proud, appoints Henry Jasomirgott, duke of Austria; makes Bohemia a kingdom and is recognized as suzerain by Poland, Hungary and Denmark. **Frederick**

1154-87. Italian expedition: receives the Lombard crown at Pavia, and the Imperial crown at Rome, where he executes the revolutionist Albert of Brescia.

Attempts at Universal Despotism—(a) *Wars in Lombardy.*

1158-62. Capitulation of Milan. An Imperial Diet proclaims the emperor's power over cities, even Rome: revolt, destruction of Milan; excommunication by Alexander III who flees to France. Election of antipope Victor.

2nd War, 1166-68. Capture of Rome by Barbarossa, but army driven away or killed by pest. **Rome Captured**

Lombard League: (36 cities) Builds Milan and Alexandria. **Lombard League**

3rd War, 1174-78. Frederick, not sustained by Henry the Lion, is beaten at Legnano, and grants self-government to the cities, under imperial suzerainty.

1180. Henry Welf's states were divided; Allodial, Brunswick and Luneville were left to him; Saxon Brandenburg was given to Bernard Elector; Westphalia to Archbishop of Cologne; parts of Bavaria to Otto Wittelsbach. **Henry the Lion Fiefs Confiscated**

It was the greatest break up and the most important shifting of power Germany ever saw in the Middle Ages, similar to the manipulation of states by Hohenzollern in modern times. It was a terrible blow to northern Germany, which it cut up in several states often hostile to each other. **Manipulation of States**

1190-98. *Henry VI. Constantia of Naples,* reduces the competing Norman king, 1194, and persecutes the Norman nobility; league of the Guelf cities. 1198-1208. *Otto IV* and *Philip of Swabia*—civil war. *Innocent III* invests Frederick II of Naples, pronounces against his uncle Philip for Guelf *Otto IV,* 1208-13, who seizes church property, is excommunicated; defeated at Bouvines, 1214-50, *Frederick II;* I. *War in Italy;* delay of crusade to strengthen his family in Italy; Henry, eldest son, king of Italy—elected king of Romans, in spite of the provision not to unite the two lands. Excommunication by *Gregory IX,* 6th crusade. **Two Emperors, Guelf and Ghibelline**

I. War. 1130, Eccelino tyrannizes Lombardy: League of fifteen cities; P. de Vineis asserts in a new Sicilian code the absolute power of the Caesars. 2W. 1135, revolt of Henry in Germany, excommunicated, captured. 3W. 1138, son Enzio invested with papal fief of Sardinia. Second excommunication, impiety, appeal to general council, whose members are intercepted and imprisoned; papal election delayed for two years. 4W. Attempts to seize *Innocent IV,* who convokes thirteenth general council at Lyons; deposition of Frederic II, 1245. Henry of Thuringia elected, beaten, dies.

Pagan Absolutism

William of Holland, 1247-56, opposed by Conrad IV, 1250-54, who leaves an infant, Conradin. Naples given to Charles of Anjou.

Interregnum Rise of Independent States

1254-74. *Great Interregnum.* In Italy Manfred natural son of Frederick, takes Naples, 1258-66; Urban IV, cedes it to *Charles of Anjou,* who slays Manfred in battle; defeats and executes *Conradin,* 1267. In Germany two kings elected: Alphonse X never came; Richard Cromwell came four times, but was powerless. Ottocar II of Bohemia subdues Austria; Hapsburgs and Bavarians grow strong; 100 independent states are formed. Leagues of Hanse and Rhine.

Chronicles.

Alternating Houses

1273-91. *Rudolph of Hapsburg* reduces plundering landlords, defeats Ottocar II twice, slaying him in the second battle; and gives his Austrian possessions, Austria, Styria, Carniola, to Albert, his own son.

1291. *Adolf Nassau* takes Meissen for his children, deposed.

1298-1308 *Albert of Austria* cannot endow relatives, nor subdue the Swiss, who are set free under his successor.

1308. *Henry VII of Luxemburg* marries his son, John the Blind, to Elizabeth of Bohemia, favors the Swiss against the Hapsburg. He goes to pacify Italy, makes Matthew Visconti Imperial Vicar, but the Guelfs of Naples dominated at Rome.

Election War. Rival Captured Associated Struggle with Avignon Popes

1314. *Double Election,* 1314-47, *Louis IV Bavaria,* opposed by *Frederick III of Austria.* After eight years of struggles Louis defeats and captures his rival at Muhldorf, and associates him to the empire. *Louis Struggles against the Popes of Avignon,* who are under French influence, whilst he is led by the Schismatic-

Franciscans, "Spirituals." First excommunication: for exerting the imperial functions before the Papal confirmation he sustains the Italian Ghibellines, makes Peter Corbario anti-Pope, but flees from Rome before Robert of Naples.

1342. Louis dissolves the Bohemian marriage of Margaret Maultasch, heiress of Tyrol, to marry her to his son Louis; mark grave of Brandenburg. Second excommunication; election of John the Blind's son. Bohemian.

Excommunication and Anti-Pope

House of Luxemburg-Bohemia, 1347-1437.

Charles IV, 1347-78. Black plague, 1349-52, takes two-thirds of the people. Prague made a splendid capital, and enriched with a university.

Prague Improved

Golden Bull: defines the rights of the seven electors: the Archbishops of Mainz, Treves, Cologne; the princes of Bohemia, Saxony, Brandenburg, Palatinate.

Golden Bull Regulates Elections

1378-1400. *Wenceslas the Slothful.* Murder of St. John Nepomuk; struggles between the leagues of the towns and of the lords.

Struggles Between Towns and Castles

1400-1410. *Rupert* recognized along the Rhine; he cannot secure Brabant and Limburg, which are incorporated in Burgundy state.

1400. Election of cousin *Jodoc* of Moravia and of the brother of King Wenzel:

Sigismund=Mary of Hungary, 1414-1437, where he had reigned since 1382. Sigismund promotes the council of *Constance,* where John Huss and Jerome of Prague were condemned and executed 1419-1433.

Sigismund Convokes Council of Constance

Huss Executed

Hussite War. Ziska defeats two crusades and destroys churches, 1424. Split between Jacobites and Calixtines, who obtain use of both species of Communion. The two Procopius slain the following year. 1425, to pay his debts, Sigismund sells Brandenburg to Frederick Hohenzollern. 1423, Saxony to Frederick Wettin. Daughter Elizabeth married to Hapsburg.

Hussite Wars

House of Hapsburg, 1437-1918.

Albert II is killed, advancing against Murad II, who was invading Hungary.

1439-1494. *Frederick IV* not brilliant, John Hunyady drives the Turks from Belgrade, his son *Matthias Corvin,* 1458-90,

Corvin Conquers Bohemia from Podriebad

fights and expels Podiebrad the Hussite king of Bohemia, which was promised him, and which is given to the Pole *Ladislav VIII.* He seizes Austria and defends it against Maximilian. Wars of towns and cantons against the nobles.

Wars Between Towns and Defeat by Swiss

The Swiss defeat the Franko-German troops at St. James' cemetery and defeat Charles the Bold of Burgundy in three battles.

Edict of Peace

Defends Heritage of Wife

1493-1519. *Maximilian=Mary of Burgundy* proclaims the edict of perpetual peace, and institutes ten government circles to enforce it. After Corvin he secures title to Austria, defends the Netherlands, helps Milan against Louis XII; helps Pope Julius II against Venice. Their son, *Philip the Fair,* marries *Jane* of Spain and Naples, the daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella.

FOURTH PERIOD: 1517-1648

Religious Dissensions and Civil Wars

Wars Against France

1519-1556. *Charles V,* the master of Spain, Netherland, Naples. Charles wages four wars against Francis I for Milan, which he retains, 1521-44. Second war, 1527-29, a holy league is organized against the Hapsburgs by Pope Clement VII. Rome is besieged and sacked by the German army.

Protestant Division

Luther's New System

Charles fights Protestant division. The Dominican Tetzel preaching the indulgence for St. Peter's Church, is attacked by the Augustine monk, Martin Luther. Luther preaches a direct communication of Christ, salvation by faith alone, private interpretation of the Bible. 1520, excommunicated by Leo X; 1521, banned by the Diet of Worms, taken to Wartburg by Frederick of Saxony; he translates the New Testament at the Wartburg. 1523-25, revolt of peasants, slain. 1525-35, revolt of the Anabaptists, who establish communism at Munster. They are moderated by Mennonis. The nobles are won over by the confiscated church property; Albert of Brandenburg; Philip of Hesse. 1529, Diet of Spire forbids heretics new violences; protestation. 1530, confession of Augsburg. 1531, Protestant League of Schmalcalden. 1532, understanding with the Catholics, concessions at Nuremburg. 1538, Holy League of the Catholics. Schmalcaldenic wars. I 1546-47, victory by Maurice of Saxony at Muhlberg, to whom Saxony is bestowed. II war, 1552-53; betrays, threatens emperor, cedes half of Lorraine to Henry II (fifth war with France). 1555, religious peace of Augsburg;

Revolt of Peasants and Anabaptists

Wars of Schmalcalden Protestants Victory Then Defeat

Peace of Augsburg

Emperor Charles V.
1519-1555

equality between Lutherans and Catholics and right to reform except in ecclesiastical states. Four wars of Solyman for Hungary, where he opposes Zapolya to Ferdinand attacks Vienna. 1532, retires before Charles V, who takes pirates' nest of Tunis and Barbarossa, 1535 and Algiers, 1541. Charles V abdicates. **Wars Against Solyman**

1556-64. *Ferdinand I* tries to restore religious union through the theological conferences between the Catholics and the Protestants. 1564-76. Maximilian II opposed to the Jesuits. Nobles and prelates apostatize and persecute. **Conciliation**

1576-1612. *Rudolph II* favors the Jesuits and the Franciscans, who stop the defection and establish a powerful Catholic reaction. Rudolph inactive, busy with astronomy. The married Bishop Gebhard of Cologne is deposed and replaced by Ernest of Bavaria. 1606, the Protestants make evangelical alliance under Frederick IV, the Palatine Elector, and the Catholics the Catholic League under Maximilian of Bavaria. 1612, the Southern States elect Mathias, Rudolph's brother, who cannot break up the confederations and designates cousin of Styria, Ferdinand II. **Defection** **Reaction** **Evangelical Alliance** **Catholic League**

1618-48. *Thirty Years' War*

1619-48. *Ferdinand II,* king of Bohemia; 1617, Hungary; 1618, emperor is deposed by Bohemian Protestants. **Religious Wars; Bohemian**

First Period, Palatine, 1618-23, Adventurers defeated. Frederick=Elizabeth Stuart, proclaimed king of Bohemia, is conquered near Prague by Ferdinand II and Tilly, hero of thirty-five battles, 1623; Palatine Electorate given to Maximilian of Bavaria.

Second Period, Danish, 1623-29, Frederick's brother-in-law, Christian III, King of Denmark, defeated at Lutter by Tilly. Wallenstein invades Denmark and receives Mecklenburg, which he loses by his haughtiness. 1629, Edict of restitution; 14 bishoprics, 120 monasteries had been held by Protestants in spite of the prohibition and peace of Augsburg. **Danish**

Third Period. 1629-38. Swedish. Tilly captures Magdeburg. Gustavus Adolphus defeats Tilly at Leipsic, 1631, and Lech marches triumphantly through Germany, but (1632) falls at Lutzen before Wallenstein, who would betray the emperor but is murdered. 1634, Young Ferdinand wins at Nordlingen and draws the Germans to peace at Prague. **Foreign Political Wars; Swedish**

Fourth Period, 1636-48, Swedish-French. War is prolonged by Richelieu and Oxenstierna. Devastation of Germany by Tors- **French-Swedish**

tenson, Wrangel, Condé, Turenne and Weimar. The population is reduced to one-fourth.

1639-1658. *Ferdinand III* negotiates. 1634, Congress of Munster after death of Richelieu. Trautmansdorff divides the Swedes and the French.

Depopulation—Ruin of Land Loss of Commerce Extreme Division

1648. *Peace of Westphalia;* equality of Lutherans, Catholics; 1624, Annus Normalis Ecclesiasticum Reservatum for the future; 365 independent states. The son of Palatine receives lower Palatinate and 8th electorate; Alsace, half of Lorraine lost to France; Pomerania to Sweden. Trade passes to the English. The population is reduced to one-fourth. The empire becomes a confederation without finances and without defenses, held together by the prestige of the Hapsburgs. Emperor Ferdinand gives a perpetual guarantee to respect the liberties and makes supreme efforts to repair the awful damage done to divided Germany by most of the powers of Europe.

FIFTH PERIOD, 1688-1789

Period of Weakness: Austria on the Defensive

Shadow of Empire Attacks of Louis XIV. Losses

1658-1705. *Leopold I.* The empire is only a shadow of its ancient splendor and power, and is no match for the assaults of France, which, however, are warded off by coalitions of powers. The permanent Diet of Regensburg is a legislative body without power; the religious matters are decided by a special college, the Corpus Catholicorum and the Corpus Evangelicorum. The unscrupulous Louis XIV of France in repeated wars takes the remainder of Alsace and Lorraine and rest of Palatinate; causes two Turkish wars, 1661-64. First—progress in Transylvania; victory on Raab at St. Gothard by Montecuculli. Second, 1683-99—Siege of Vienna, delivered by Sobieski; rout of Mohacz by Charles VI of Lorraine, at Zenta by Eugene of Savoy; capture of Morea by Venice, Hungary and France. Sylvania left to Austria and vested in its male line by peace of Carlowitz, 1699. Joseph elected and crowned king, 1701.

Attacks of the Turks Gains; Hungary Permanently Settled Upon Austria

Frederick I King, of Prussia. Ninth Elector Ernst Augustus of Hanover.

Spanish Succession

1705-11—*Joseph I.* Sustains his brother Charles through Eugene of Savoy in Spanish Succession war.

1711-1740, *Charles VI,* receiving Austrian Empire. The powers refuse to leave the Hapsburg dominions together; 1713, peace

of Utrecht, Spain with colonies is left to the Bourbons. Austria obtains Belgium, Lombardy, Naples and Sicily, which in 1721 is exchanged for Sardinia. 1717, Spaniards attack Naples; repelled by the Quadruple Alliance, they take it, during the Polish succession war, however, allowing Parma and Placentia to Austria. The French receive Lorraine for Leczinski, while Francois de Lorraine receives Tuscany in exchange. With Turks, 1717, Eugene frees the Danubian Slavs, Turks cede Bosnia, Austria gains its greatest extension by treaty of Passarowitz 1718, but loses Belgrade, 1736. Pragmatic sanction to secure throne to daughter.

Belgium Italy Sicily and Naples to Spain Parma, etc. Turks Cede Bosnia

Pragmatic Sanction to Austrian Succession

1740-80. *Mary Theresa—Francis of Lorraine.*

Austrian Succession War, 1740-48. Hanover, England, allies. Frederick II, King of Prussia, rouses the powers against his rival.

War Eight Years

Anti-emperor Charles VII, 1742-45, of Bavaria advances into Bohemia, chased by Mary Theresa and her Hungarians.

Frederick II, takes Silesia, and French under Saxe, win at Fontenoy and conquer Belgium.

Reforms of Joseph II. Arouses the Belgians and Hungarians

1745. Death of Charles VII. Maximilian recognizes Mary and Francis is elected emperor, 1745-65. Coalition of Europe against Frederick II, who defends Silesia in Seven Years' War, 1756-63. In the partition of Poland Mary Theresa takes a small portion of Poland and that was to maintain the equilibrium. She favors the Jesuits.

Prussia Defends Silesia for Seven Years

1780-90. *Joseph II,* would exchange Belgium for Bavaria with Charles Theodore, but is prevented by Frederick II. Philosopher, he attacks the religious orders, and diocesan seminaries; reformer, he destroys the old customs; resistance of the Hungarians, revolution of the Belgians; proclamation of the United States of Belgium.

1790-92. *Leopold II,* restores the Belgian constitutions.

Chronicles Austria.

1806-34, *Francis I,* in Austria. Four nationalities; entanglements in Italy.

By Congress of Vienna. Metternich endeavors to cement the German confederation. Reaction against revolutions and secret societies. Congresses of Laybach and Verona to quiet down the peninsular revolutions.

Measures Against Disturbances

1835-48. *Ferdinand I.* Revolutionary movements in Germany; three constitutional assemblies: Frankfort, Berlin and Vienna. Fourth, Prague. Three riots in Vienna; revolts in Hungary and Lombardy. Abdication.

Hungary Reduced by Czar

1848-1916. *Francis Joseph.* Hungary is reduced by Czar, fearing Poland. Italy is beaten at Novara by Radetsky; but helped by French, who win at Magenta, she gets Lombardy.

Austria loses German empire. Hapsburgs hold Austrian empire together.

Strife Between Prussia and Austria for Hegemony in Germany
Intrigues and Wars

1864. War of Prussia and Austria against Denmark; Schleswig-Holstein taken, but kept and governed by Prussia.

Austria Driven Out of Germany

France Crushed

Alsace-Lorraine

1866. Austro-Prussian War. In six weeks Austria is defeated (at Sadowa) and driven out of the German Confederation. North and South German Confederations; although defeated at Custozza; Italy gets Venice. Austria could still stop the Prussian omnipotence in Germany by preventing the crushing of France by Prussia in 1870-71, but she let her rival proceed and Alsace-Lorraine were annexed to Prussia.

Home Rule to Hungary Some Concession to Slavic States

In 1867 the claims of the Hungarians were satisfied and the dual monarchy formed: ("Ausgleich"), Austria-Hungary, but the Czechs and Poles also claimed rights which were conceded from time to time. In 1878 the administration of Bosnia-Herzegovina was entrusted to her. They were annexed in 1908. In 1914 the Crown Prince Ferdinand was murdered by Servians: World war. The Teutonic allies, Bulgaria and Turkey, against most of the civilized world.

1916-18—Charles VII.

Chronicles Prussia.

East of Rhine Lost Recovered; West of Rhine Acquired

Frederick William III, 1797-1840. For the sake of Hanover abstains from the third coalition against Napoleon, but he lost half of his country in the fourth war, ceding Rhine to the Elbe by peace of Tilsit, 1807.

1814-15. Peace of Vienna gives him the Rhine provinces.

Third centenary of Luther. Political reunion of Protestants as "Evangelical Alliance."

1840-61. *Frederick William IV.* Revolutionary movements were thwarted by the Prussians; still in 1848 they compelled king Frederick William IV to grant a constitution, which was not observed. In 1849 the king declined the imperial crown offered him by German princes assembled at Frankfort; he persecutes the Archbishop of Cologne. As he was rendered incompetent to reign by a serious malady his brother William I (afterwards emperor) became regent in 1858.

Revolutionary Movements Thwarted

1848 Constitution Which is Not Observed

1861-1888. *William I.*

Bismarck. 1861-90 (Died 1898). Blood and Iron Chancellor, crushes the revolts, rules four years without subsidies, builds and strengthens the army. William made himself unpopular by repressing the popular movements. Bismarck courts and invites war. Danish war, 1863-64. Austria drawn into the Danish war, but refused a share in the administration of Schleswig-Holstein.

Bismarck Crushes Revolts

Provokes Wars

Danish

1866. Austro-Prussian war.

Bismarck contracts a secret alliance with Italy (Cavour) against Austria and secures the neutrality of Napoleon. Austria is beaten at Sadowa and reduced in six weeks. Austria is excluded from Germany and Italy.

Italian

North and South German Confederations. Italy, the ally of Prussia, is beaten at Custozza and still gets Venetia.

Bismarck prepares to crush France, which objects to Leopold Hohenzollern becoming King of Spain, and declares war against isolated France. 1870-71. Franco-Prussian war. Prussia and the two German confederations. William and Von Molkte win at Sedan; Napoleon surrenders; also Metz, Paris. January 18, 1871, at Versailles, William is elected and proclaimed Emperor of Germany. Peace. Alsace annexed and one-quarter of Lorraine (Metz); five billions indemnity, which are used to increase the military forces. Berlin conference recognizes Congo, etc.

France Isolated—Routed

Empire

Alsace-Lorraine

Indemnity

1873-82. Kulturkampf of the Archprotestant Empire against the Catholic church. Falk's May Laws expel the religious orders opposition by Center; Windthorst proposes social reforms, and establishes workingmen's insurance, obtains relaxation from May laws. Bismarck establishes in 1885, East African colonies; in 1888 southwest colonies. Rise of socialism.

Kulturkampf

Stopped by Center

German States

VERY INDEPENDENT

Love of Independence

Nowhere else has the love of independence shown itself as strong as in Germany where a number of independent states have lasted till our own days. Although Germany was an empire, it had several features of a Republic such as the election of the Emperor (although the choice was to be of one of the members of the dynasty) the maintenance of the independence of each state, and the federation of states according to well known rules. For there was an ironclad constitution in the Roman Empire of the German nations, which bound the emperor as well as the smallest vassal in Europe.

Empire With Republican Features

Cutting Up by the Sectarians and Selfish

Sometimes the independence of states degenerated into a parceling out of the country by the sectarian and the self-seeker. After the Thirty Years' War, Germany was cut up into as many so called independent states as there are days in the year. It was of no benefit to any except to those selfish beings, who cannot agree with anybody.

Natural Division

At ordinary times, Germany was divided into certain well defined and characteristic countries that had their own life and that contributed to the general welfare of the people. They represented most of the ancient tribes that had roamed over Germany for centuries.

Great Changes

The breaking up of the Saxon estates in 1180 made a profound change in the shape and form of Germany and was the beginning of most of the dynasties that exist until today. The growth of the Hapsburg estates and the preponderance of Austria for several centuries marked another change in the composition of Germany. The sudden preponderance of Prussia in the nineteenth

century and the annexation or control of the German states of the North, made the greatest of changes.

Plan

First some of the original states of Germany will be described, then the smaller states that arose in their territories, will be delineated, by giving the time of their duration, and the succession of their dynasties.

There were eight large states besides a number of small principalities, lay and ecclesiastical, and free cities.

Nations

In modern times the most distinguished nations were the Austrians, the Bavarians, the Schwabs, the Rhinelanders, the Hanoverians, the Saxons and the Prussians.

States in Empire

The new German empire was proclaimed January, 1871. Twenty-five governments, with fifty-eight votes, were represented in the Federal Council, to-wit: Prussia, seventeen; Bavaria, six; Saxony and Wurtemberg, each, four; Baden and Hesse, each, three; Mecklenburg, Schwerin and Brunswick, each, two; the rest, each, one.

North Germany

Old Saxony

Chronicles.

The Saxons had followed the Franks to the Rhine, and disputed that river with them. They had the hegemony of the coast tribes from Batavia to the Elbe. About 450 the Saxons ruled the North Sea and conquered Great Britain; also conquered or absorbed the plain's tribes. By the close of the sixth century the Saxons had the hegemony of northwest Germany, which had become the land of the Saxons. The country of the Saxons was divided as follows: Westphalia on the Sieg Ruhr-Lippe and Ems; Engren on both sides of the Weser as far as the Leine; Eastphalia as far as the Elbe; Transalbingia on the lower Elbe to the Eider.

Location Westphalia, Engren, Eastphalia North-Albingia

Twenty years of war with Charlemagne, 772-803. Six different wars: I period, 772-80; II period, 782-805. General uprising under Wittikind. After many revolts baptism tithes are required.

Wars; Converted; Baptized

Wittikind and Albion are baptized. The proscription of Paganism was necessary on account of the numerous revolts it occasioned in every tribe. The establishment of Bishoprics was required for the permanency of the church. III period, 796-799 in Transalbingia. IV period, 808-10, invasion by King Gottfried who is vanquished by Charlemagne and compelled to cede land as far as Eider. Heliand Poem. Dynasties of Dukes:

Transalbingia

First line: *Wittikind,* struggles against Charlemagne.

Ducal Houses

Second line: Dukes Ludolphinger, 850. Ludolph Herzog of Nordalbingia, little Margravate, east of the Elbe, to oppose Northmen; extends southeast along the Elbe system. Otto I the Illustrious, 880-912. Henry I the Fowler, Emperor, 918; Otto II as Emperor I, 936. 960, cedes to Billings.

Saxons Oppose Henry IV

Third line: *Billings,* 960-1106, Herman. Magnus 1073-1106. Leagues with Guelf of Bavaria against emperor Henry IV.

Marriage to Guelf Henry the Proud

Fourth line: *Guelfs,* 1106-79. *Lothaire of Supplinburg* marries as third wife Richenza, daughter of Henry Nordheim who had many possessions in Saxony. Emperor, 1124-37. Two years after his elevation he assigns Saxony to his daughter *Gertrude, married to Henry the Proud, Welf,* who through his father, Henry the Black, was Duke of Bavaria, and through his mother Wulfhild, daughter of Magnue Billings, inherited the private Billing's possessions.

Struggles

Struggle Between Guelfs and Ghibellines.

Henry the Lion and Barbarossa

Henry I opposes illegal election of Conrad III, is conquered at Weinberg, fiefs are confiscated. Henry II, the Lion, 1139-80 ten-year-old child, receives back Saxony from his friend and cousin Frederick Barbarossa, marries Mathilde the daughter of Henry II, Plantagenet. Haughtiness made enemies of Archbishops of Magdeburg, Bremen and of Albert the Bear, Otto of Meissen, League repressed by Barbarossa, Diet of Bamberg, 1168 and pilgrimage of Henry to Jerusalem. Desertion by Henry before battle of Legnano. Refusal to appear before four diets. Confiscation of fiefs.

North Sea States Cut Up

Dismemberment of Guelf Possessions 1180.

Allodial estates alone left: Brunswick and Luneberg. Henry refuses to accompany Barbarossa to crusade, is banished for three years, goes to England, made two fruitless attempts to recover fiefs.

Dynastic and Racial Name

Main Parts

The Guelf name remained with Henry Lion's family. The Saxon name went to Eastern part of Saxony, and to Thuringia. Duchy was broken up in different estates: Bavaria to Otto of Wittelsbach, Westphalia and part of Engren to Archbishop of Cologne as duke. Lubeck, Hamburg and Bremen became free cities; the Archbishops of Madgeburg, and other bishops became princes. The Counts of Holstein and Oldenburg became immediate vassals of Empire.

Brunswick

Bruno I, nephew of Otto the Great, 955-72. Richenza, fourth descendant, marries Lothaire II of Saxony, who unites Saxon domains. Daughter Gertrude marries Welf Henry the Proud, who brings Bavaria, obtains Luneberg from Frederick II, as fief of the empire 1235 and acquires Celle and Hanover.

Two old lines of Brunswick Luneberg, 1267-1428.

Two middle lines, 1428-1546, which Frederick Ernest the Confessor, 1527-46, unites, he joins Protestant League, imposes Protestantism. *Two new lines,* 1546-1884. Brunswick and Hanover.

Brunswick 1546-1884

Wolfenbuttel was castle of dukes till 1754, library, 300,000 volumes. Henry, founder of line in 1634. Louis, 1830-84, his only son had died in 1873. By contract, the succession should fall to Hanoverians, who were excluded by Emperor. 1885, Albrecht of Prussia, regent.

Hanover—1546-1866

Two Successions of Four Brothers

The Dukes reside at Luneberg. *William*: *four sons* succeed one another as dukes; Ernest, Christian, Augustus, Frederick. The only brother who married was the fifth; George, 1641, he reigned at Calenberg and Gottingen and took up his residence in the city of Hanover, 1641. Four sons succeeded; 1, Christian Louis; 2, George William; 3, John Frederick, 1679-1698; 4, *Ernest Augustus* who was married to the *Palatine Sophia* (*Stuart*) granddaughter of James II. He introduces the law of primogeniture, and in 1692 gets the ninth electoral title. 1698-1727, *George Louis married his cousin Sophia Dorothea* of Calenberg, which united all Hanover. For infidelity: thirty years imprisonment. Acquisition of Bremen Verden diocese. 1716, *King of Great Britain.* 1816, rank of kingdom and accession of

Stuart Marriage

United to England; Separated

East Friesland and Hildesheim. Hanover separated from Great Britain in 1837. Ernest August of Cumberland narrow minded. George V, blind 1851—had Windhorst for minister in 1862.

1866. German war 1866 and annexation to Prussia. Ernest Augustus, 1878, protest against annexation, exchange for Guelf fund, 1892.

Oldenburg—Tenth Century—1865

Old line counts; tenth century 1446.

New Danish line counts 1446-1667. 1448 Christian VIII elected king of Denmark and duke of Schleswig-Holstein, cedes to his brother. Anton I, 1531-73 introduces Protestantism.

1667. Royal Danish line. 1773, family compact. Christian VII of Denmark exchanges Oldenburg for Holstein with Paul (of Russia) who leaves it to cousin, *Holstein-Gottorp line,* 1773-1870. George, 1785-1812, marries Catherine, daughter of Paul I of Russia. Augustus, 1828; Peter, 1853.

Oldenburg houses. (a) 1446. Counts Oldenburg extinguished in 1667. (b) Royal Danish line extinguished in 1863. (c) 1773. Holstein Gottorp line (near Schleswig) which had branches in Russia, Sweden and Oldenburg. (d) Holstein Sunderburg line with its branch the Augustenburg (Alsen Island). (e) Glucksburg line, now in possession of Danish throne.

Schleswig-Holstein—Ninth Century—1866

Imperial Mark

Danish mark, between Eider and Schley rivers, established by Charlemagne, reinforced by Otto the Great. Even the Danish kings owed homage for Denmark to Carolingians and to Hohenstaufen, but never since Frederick II have they rendered homage to the German kings. Conrad II removed boundary to Eider in Canute's time. Schleswig partly Danish; Holstein wholly German.

Two Duchies, Two Races, Two Relations

From 1326 to 1330 Waldemar of Schleswig was raised to Danish throne by his uncle, Gerhard of Holstein, but driven away. He had ceded him his duchy, but got it back. In 1375 Holstein inherited Schleswig, vassal to Denmark for Schleswig and vassal to empire for Holstein. Union of counties indissoluble, but no annexation to Denmark.

Oldenburg Royal Line

1448. Christian of Oldenburg became king of Denmark; 1460 Duke of Schleswig-Holstein. 1548 Christian III divides: royal lines (Augustenburg and Glucksburg) and ducal line Holstein

Gottorp. In 1773 Gottorp Paul of Russia ceded his share in Holstein for Oldenburg. In 1777 nearly all *Schleswig-Holstein reunited itself to Denmark.*

In 1815 Danish king had to enter the German confederation for Holstein and for newly acquired Duchy of Lauenburg. Dual regulations of duchies lead to Schleswig-Holstein wars; three in 1848-50. Augustenburg arouses Germans; first German troops help duchies and win; alone the duchies are defeated, lose, remain to Denmark.

1848 to 1853 Wars

Duchies cannot escheat to king's cousins on female lines, but Czar, 1852, at London protocol conference and treaty, extends male inheritance to Denmark kingship also.

Male Inheritance

Glucksburg Dynasty, Christian IX Glucksburg, was married to Louise, first cousin of Frederick VII, 1863, incorporates the duchies. *War.* The Augustenburg Frederick rises in Schleswig. Germany demands that Denmark give up duchies until her claims are settled. *War.* Denmark taken; Dybbol defended, but taken. By peace of Vienna duchies ceded to Germany, are taken by Prussia. Prusso-Austrian war, 1866. Incorporation of duchies in Prussia.

1863 War

Annexed by Prussia

New or Eastern Saxony

Brandenburg under Ascanians, 1134-1319.

Saxons

Ascanian line. The youngest son of Albert Bear, Bernard III of Lauenberg, 1180-1212. Albert I, 1212-60, defeats Waldemar II of Denmark. Division between: John Lauenberg and Albert II Wittenberg. Both contend for electoral privileges, which are settled by Golden Bull, 1356, in *junior line of Wittenberg;* which thus transports name of Saxony to new soil of Slavonia. It is further subdivided in Wittenberg and Anhalt. Extinction of Ascanians with Albert III, 1411-1422.

Lauenberg and Wittenberg

Misnia Margravate under Wettins, 1123.

Henry Fowler 918, builds a castle among Sorbs at Meissen-1128. Otto founds See of Branniborn=Brandeburg. Conrad of Wettin, 1123-57; first hereditary margrave divides estates. Otto the Rich, 1157-90. Silver mines opened; Freiburg built; Fair of Leipsic. Henry the Illustrious, 1221-88, son of Thuringian Jutta, wars against Sophie of Brabant for inheritance; he taking Thuringia, 1263; she, Hesse.

Margravate

Seventh descendant of Conrad, *Frederick I, the Warlike,* renders service to Sigismund in Hussite war, is made elector of Saxony, 1423-28. He had founded University of Leipsic, 1409.

Electorate

Elector of Saxony. Division, Frederick II, 1428-64, gets Saxony; brother *William,* Thuringia. Fratricidal wars.

Ernestine and Albertine Lines. Religious Wars

Division in Two Lines

Frederick's sons, Ernest and Albert, reign peaceably together for twenty years, until death of uncle, 1485. Albert asks division; gets choice; takes Meissen and East; Ernest the Elector has Thuringia, Wittenberg and adjoining lands: west.

Ernestines Have but Lose Electorate

Ernestine electors—Ernest's sons: Frederick III, the Wise, 1486-1525, founds University of Wittenberg; favors Luther. John the Steadfast, 1525-32, fanatic Protestant leads Schmalcaldic League with Philip of Hesse. John Frederick the Magnanimous, 1532-47 (died 1554) fights Charles V in first Schmal-

Maurice

caldic war; attacked by Maurice of East Saxony; beaten at Muhlberg. By capitulation of Wittenberg cedes electorate and duchy, keeping only Thuringia. Estates are parceled out.

Albertine

Albertine line, 1547. George, 1500, devoted Catholic, opposes Luther; brother Henry the Pious, 1539-1540, fanatical Protestant. *Maurice,* 1541-53, Protestant, too astute to let his religion stand in the way of aggrandizement, let John Frederick be taken by Charles V at Muhlberg; gets electorate and duchy.

Albertine electors—Maurice and his brother and successor, 1553. Promote agriculture; persecute Catholics and Calvinists; the latter are favored under the following reigns. In Thirty Years' War George I, 1611-56, mostly favors Imperialists; when he turns to the Protestants, Saxony is devastated by Wallenstein and population is reduced to half.

Kingship of Poland and Saxony

King of Poland

Frederick August II 1694-1733, chosen king of Poland, turns a Catholic; must fight Stanislas Leczinski; who is supported by Charles XII of Sweden, 1704-09, and drains the electorate of men and means. Frederic Augustus III 1734-1763. Indolent.

1733-63

Can get no Polish help for European wars. Frederick August IV, 1763-1827, sides with French, gets Warsaw and title of King of Saxony (August I) from Napoleon, but loses northern half of realm to Prussia.

1836-56. Frederick August IV. Reforms, revolution of 1848, which is reduced through Prussian troops. Alliance of the kings of Saxony, Prussia and Hanover. 1854-78 Brother John I, learned man. Minister de Beust, stands with Austria in war, 1866. Saxony is occupied, 10,000,000 thalers exacted, entrance in Prussian combination forced. 1873. Albert, a soldier, gives liberal reforms.

1866 Austro-Prussian War; Invaded; Incorporated

Saxon Duchies in Thuringia

Ernestine branch. Its history is mainly a recital of partitions, reunions, redivisions, and fresh combinations of territory among the various sons of the successive dukes. In 1547 Ex-Elector Frederick was allowed to retain Thuringian parts; in 1554 by treaty of Naumburg additions were made. He forbade his sons to divide their inheritance, which was, however, done after the death of the oldest son in 1565, when two survivors, John William and John Frederick II, founded separate jurisdictions at Coburg and Weimar, although they were exchanging territories every third year. Both duchies gave off a new one—Eisenach and Altenburg.

History of Partitions in Spite of Warnings

John of Weimar, 1573-1605, son of John William, is regarded as common ancestor of present Ernestine lines, through Weimar (William) and Gotha. Another son, Bernard the Great, 1634, distinguished himself in thirty years' war. Four divisions of Weimar and seven of Gotha. In Weimar the principle of primogeniture was adopted in 1719.

John of Weimar

Ernest III, 1806-43, in 1826 cut Gothan knot, exchanges Saalfield for Gotha.

Ernest of Coburg, Gotha, in 1834 sells Lichtenburg for $60,000 yearly. His children: Ernest IV, 1843, marries Alexandria of Baden. Albert marries Victoria of England; their second son Alfred, Duke of Edinburg, heir apparent. Other children of Francis: Ferdinand, father of Ferdinand who marries Maria queen of Portugal; Victoria who marries Edward, duke of Kent; Leopold I, who marries Charlotte, daughter of George IV; in 1831 becomes king of the Belgians and marries Mary Louise of Orleans.

Royal Marriages

Thuringia

The Thuringians, a branch of the Suevi (Hermanduri) were a kingdom during the migration of nations. The western parts

Early Kingdom

were conquered by the Franks; the northern parts by the Saxons; the middle kept the name of Thuringia. It was subdued by the Carolingians and it formed a rampart against the Slavic advance.

Thuringia was evangelized by St. Boniface.

Landgravate

Landgravate. *First dynasty.* Tenth century. Louis the Springer, 1130, builds the Castle of Wartburg; marries the heiress of Hesse.

Second dynasty (1180) ended by two brothers, Louis the Saint; Henry Raspe, emperor, 1244-47. Wasting succession war between Brabant and Saxony. The former gets Hesse; the latter, Thuringia.

Third dynasty (1263): *Wettins, Thuringia* the domain of the Ernestine or older branch, and the seat of small "Saxon" duchies.

Actually Thirteen States

There are now four principal estates styled *Saxe*:

Saxe-Altenburg. Area, 511 square miles. Population, 206,508.

Saxe-Coburg-Gotha. Area, 711 square miles. Population, 242,432.

Saxe-Meiningen. Area, 953 square miles. Population, 268,916.

Saxe-Weimar Eisenach. Area, 1397. Population, 388,196.

Two Schwarzburg:

Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt. Area, 363 square miles. Population, 96,835.

Schwarzburg-Sondershausen. Area, 333 square miles. Population, 65,152.

Two Reuss:

Reuss-Greiz. Area, 122 square miles. Population, 70,603.

Reuss-Gera. Area, 319 square miles. Population, 144, 584.

Anhalt. Under Ascanians on Elbe; Divided; Zerbst Dessau. Was united in 1863. Area, 888 square miles. Population, 328-029.

Waldeck. Area, 433 square miles. Population, 65,876.

Lippe-Detmold, on Teutoberg, whence start the Lippe and the Weser. Area, 469 square miles. Population, 145,577.

Lippe-Schaumburg. Area, 131 square miles. Population, 44,992.

Birkenfeld east of Treves. Area, 194 square miles. Population, 46,484.

Rise of the Hohenzollerns

Hohenzollern in the South

About Year 1000

The house occupied a prominent position among the petty noble families of Swabia in the beginning of the twelfth century and in its close Count Frederick of Zolre was invested with the burgravate of Nuremberg. Division between two sons, 1227. Elder Line Swabian Branch. Frederick, XIV century, two branches, Hochingen and Sigmaringen. Growth hurt by partitions. 1695, succession contract between the two branches, Swabian Brandenburgian. 1848, the two princes resign in favor of Prussia and receive the prerogatives of the younger sons of the royal house. Leopold was offered the throne of Spain; Charles that of Roumania, of which he became king. Area, 440 square miles. Population, 66,763. Mostly all Catholics. Younger branch Franconian, 1227-1415. Beyreuth and Anspach. The character of the Hohenzollerns was acquisitiveness and the capacity to hold and administer what they once acquired. From the founder of the line, Conrad III to his Fifth successor, Frederick VI, there was a steady growth of territory and influence.

Burgraves

Two Branches Swabian

Hurt by Partitions

Franconian

Sixth Generation Buys Brandenburg

1415. Hereditary dukedom and Electorate of Brandenburg granted Frederick VI.

CONCRETION OF HOHENZOLLERN STATES IN THE NORTH

I. Period of Legal growth—

The lower Rhine principalities. Counties about the eleventh century, then duchies.

Cleves; Dukes, 1417-1609.

Mark united to Cleves, 1400.

Julich united with Berg, 1423. Both were united to Cleves 1521. At the extinction of the male line, in William V, Eleonora was married to Albert of Prussia and Ann to the count Palatine of Neuburg. Both contended for the duchies. The Julich succession contest was settled in 1666, Cleves and Mark going to the Hohenzollerns, Julich and Berg to the Palatines. Julich was annexed to France 1801. All was assigned to Prussia 1814.

Heiress Eleonora Marries Heir of Prussia

The Baltic Duchies, 1417.

Frederick of Hohenzollern elector of Brandenburg. His great grandson Albert of Brandenburg, 1512, grandmaster of the Teutonic knights, apostatizes and secularizes Prussia. His only son, Albert Frederick, marries an heiress of the Rhine duchies.

His Son Albert Frederick

Teutonic Order

Prussia. The hostile Pagans of Prussia are subdued by the Teutonic Order who colonize the country with sturdy Germans, 1230-1415. Albert of Brandenburg, a Hohenzollern prince, grandmaster of the order in Prussia, takes advantage of the Reformation to secularize the possessions of the order and make himself duke of Prussia. His only son, Albert Frederick, 1568-1618, marries Eleonora of Cleves, heiress of the Rhenish duchies; whose daughter marries John Sigismund of Brandenburg.

Hohenzollern

Brandenburg, 1136-1320.

1136-1320. Ascanian dynasty.

Dynasties

1320. Anarchy under Bavarian and Bohemian margraves.

1415-1918, *Hohenzollern* dynasty. Frederick I. 1440, Frederick II. 1470-86, his brother Albert II establishes the right of primogeniture in the male line. His successors extend that arrangement with Pomerania and Prussia. At the death of Albert Frederick of Prussia, the duchy rightly belonged to John Sigismund, 1610; who moreover married his granddaughter.

Hohenzollern Primogeniture

While Other States Are Parcelled Out Through Successions

This law of primogeniture, which was obtaining in England and France, was an exception in Germany, and assured the growth of the Hohenzollern states and their ultimate preponderance above the principalities that were divided and subdivided as private properties. There were eight reigning princes of the Palatinate family and fourteen of the Saxon family.

1499-1531. Joachim I maintains faith and prosperity. 1531-72, Joachim II turns Protestant and secularizes church property. 1608-19, *John Sigismund* marries Ann of Cleves, heiress of Cleves and Prussia. 1619-40, George William sides with the legitimate emperor. 1640-88, The Great Elector, Frederick William in Thirty Years' War. Has army, starts navy; beats Swedes at Fehrbellin; in peace of Westphalia gets rights in Pomerania, and independence from Poland.

1688, *Frederick III* (Duke). 1703, First King of Prussia. Court after that of Louis XIV: Pomp and extravagance. 1713-30 *Frederick William I,* economy, makes a military monarchy. 80.-000 men: the fourth military power in Europe; regiment of giant guards.

II Period Age of Brutal Force, 1730-1918

1730-80. *Frederick II the Great.* Military and political genius. Unscrupulous Machiavelist, scoffing Voltairian. Improves the land and the finances. Ruling over 5,000,000 people, he raised more soldiers than his enemies who ruled over 100,000,000. *Three Silesian Wars.* In Austrian succession war takes and keeps Silesia. Coalition of Europe (except England). *Seven Years' War* 1756-63. Six victories, until exhaustion sets in 1759, but heroism and new allies. Ruin of the country; efforts to repair and to improve Prussia. 1776, *First Partition of Poland* planned with Catherine II and participated in by Mary Therese for plan of equilibrium. 1786-95, nephew Frederick William II second and third partition of Poland. 1797, Frederick William III 1797-1840.

For Baltic Provinces see pages 396—98

Middle Germany

Hesse—Catti or Gatti and Gothi

Hesse

Part of Thuringian kingdom. Landgravate lies between the Main, Middle Rhine and Weser.

Thuringian Line

Thuringian line. 1130, heiress of Giso marries Landgrave of Thuringia, who thus becomes master of Hesse.

Louis marries daughter Andre II; perishes in Crusade.

Henry Raspe elected anti-emperor, 1246; wounded at Ulm; dies at Wartburg, 1247. Succession war. Meissen gets Thuringia; Brabant, Hesse.

Brabant

Brabant line, 1257-67. Sophia of Brabant, niece of last landgrave of Hesse, her son, Henry V the Child, receives title of Landgrave of Hesse from Adolph Nassau 1265.

Reunion

1500, William the Middle unites the Upper and Lower Hesse.

Protestantism

Philip, 1509-67, introduces reformation in 1526; Schmalcaldic League; imprisoned by Charles V, 1547; rescued by Maurice of Saxony, his brother-in-law, 1552. 1567, division between four sons: H. Cassel, H. Darmstadt, H. Rheinfels (extinguished 1593), H. Marburg (extinguished 1604). 1596-1866, other Hesse principalities arise.

Schmalcaldic League

Partitions

Soldiers Hired Out

Hesse Cassel 1567, William IV, 1567, receives half Hesse with Cassel as capital. Charles I, 1670, hires out soldiers to improve finances. Frederick I becomes king of Sweden by marrying Ulrica, 1719-51. Brother William, 1751-60. Frederick II, 1760-85, hires out 22,000 soldiers to England.

Elector

William IX, 1785-1821. For lost territory across Rhine receives other lands around Mainz and title of Elector as William I.

William II, 1821; constitution of 1830. Frederick William I, 1847, commotion; promises much, executes little; is restored. 1866, Alliance with Austria. Hesse overrun by Prussian troops; elector prisoner in Stettin; released only on renouncing his claims; dies 1875.

Hesse Darmstadt.

Louis, 1790, grand duke. Louis II, 1830; Louis III, 1848. siding with Austria in 1866; must pay indemnity, enter North German confederation for lands north of Main; 1871 enters German empire.

Nassau, 911-1866

Fights Barbarians

Nassau on Lahn. Otto, brother of Conrad I, 911, repulses Barbarians. Henry the Rich, 1255. Sons Walram and Otto, divide.

German Branch, Walram. Adolph, 1292-98. Emperor tries to increase family possessions by Thuringia and Meissen; deposed; slain.

Adolph William Charles, 1839-48, marries Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas of Russia.

Adolph, 1848, gives liberal constitution which he narrows afterwards; siding with Austria, Nassau is annexed to Prussia, 1866.

Enlarged Governors

Dutch Line. Otto Dielemberg marries heir of Breda, Governor of Brabant, and all Netherlands. Brother John succeeds. 1516; two sons, Henry and William. Henry takes Belgian possessions; preceptor and confidential friend of Charles V; marries Claudia of Orange. Their son, Rene of Nassau Chalons, succeeds; becomes stadtholder of Netherlands, is succeeded, 1544, by first cousin, William the Silent, son of William, who turns Protestant; arouses Netherlands, and becomes stadtholder of Holland, 1579-84.

Henry Marries Claudia of Orange

Bavaria

Franconia on Main 911, Emperor Conrad. **Franconia**

Imperial Dynasty, 1024-1125.

Franconia now forms North Bavaria: Upper, Middle, Lower Franconia.

Palatinate: Lower on left Rhine, Upper in Upper Franconia.

Palatinate.

Palatin, palace representative; several were established under different names. The Rhenish or Lorraine Palatin remained and he became the first prince of the empire and the Vicar in case of vacancy. His original seat was at Aix la Chapelle. **Palatins Direct Representatives of the Emperor**

1010, *Saxon line.*

1156, *Swabian line.*

1186, *Wittelsbach line;* Otto I, Otto II.

Louis II, 1254-94; *division in two branches*: in Elder branch of Bavaria. Emperor Louis the Bavarian and younger branch of the Palatinate.

Palatinate Proper.

The two brothers, Louis the emperor and Rudolph the duke, reign together. Afterwards the younger fights the emperor, who still cedes the Upper Palatinate, located on the Upper Main, to his son and concludes with him a treaty of alternative succession to the electorate, lasting to the Golden Bull, 1356, which gave the electorate to the Palatins. 1400-10 Rupert III, elected emperor, is recognized on the Rhine only. Division between four sons. Grandson Christopher, king of Denmark. Line extinct in 1559. **Division of Four Centuries** **Electorate Alternating Till 1356**

1559, *Zimmeren branch;* Frederick III; fanatic Calvinist, proscribes Lutheranism. Louis XI, 1610-23; marries Louise of Orange; Calvinism is restored. **Six Changes of Religion in 60 Years**

Frederick V marries Elizabeth Stuart, daughter of James I, of England. By accepting the Bohemian crown he starts the Thirty Years' War, is routed at Prague; states and electorate given to Maximilian of Bavaria. Upper Palatinate lost forever. Frederick's son, Charles Frederick, 1649-80, recovers Lower Palatinate and gets eighth electorate. Daughter Sophie marries Ernest of Hanover, whose son George I, 1714, *becomes king of England.* **Thirty Years' War**

1654, Charles of Zweybruck, nephew of Christine, becomes *king of Sweden.*

1680-85, Charles Louis; his sister marries Philip Orleans, brother of Louis XIV, who ravages the Palatinate.

1685-1742, *Newburg line. Philip William,* 1685, a Catholic. Emigration of Palatines, Protestants. John William, 1698; brother Charles Philip, 1716-42.

1742, *Sulzbach line.* Charles Theodore, in 1777, inherits also Bavaria.

1799-1918, Zweybrucken.

Bavaria.

Native Dukes

Confederation around Regensburg. 530-788. Ten national dukes. Struggle against the Franks. Tassilo II, revolts against Charlemagne. Annexed to Frankenland, the Bavarians remain under Carolingians till 971; struggle against Slavs and Magyars.

Margraves Dukes

Bavaria is governed by *Margraves.* 920-947, *dukes;* Saxon dukes, 947; Franconians.

Welfs or Guelfs, descended from sister of Charlemagne; Guelf II, count of Swabia, conquered by emperor Conrad II; Guelf III last male; sister Cunegunda, marries Albert Azzo Margrave d'Este.

Guelf IV, 1055-1111; created duke in Bavaria, 1071, as Guelf I and fights Henry IV. 1101-20, Guelf II; marries Mathilda of Canossa, 1089-95; abandons her and papal party and reigns in Bavaria, 1120-26; Henry the Black, 1126-39. Henry the Proud

Bavarian Marries Gertrude of Saxony

marries Gertrude of Saxony, gets Bavaria. His brother, Guelf VI, 1139, fights for the German duchies. 1143-53, Henry XI of Austria marries Gertrude the Widow of Bavaria. 1155-95 the Guelf Henry the Lion, recovers Bavaria, deserts Frederick Barbarossa, is deprived of fiefs.

1184-1294 Rhine Electorate

1180-1918, *Wittelsbach,* Otto I, expands, 1183-1231, Louis I receives title of Rhenish Palatine Elector. Otto II, Louis II,

Division of Four Centuries

1253-94. Division between the elder Bavaria branch; Louis emperor, and the younger Palatine branch, Rudolph which lasts four centuries. The emperor grants Upper Palatinate to his cousin. Palatinate and Bavaria alternate as electors until Golden Bull settles the electorate in the Palatinate, 1356, and parts in Upper Bavaria are given in exchange.

Bavaria Proper.

Partitions

Primogeniture

Unity

Thirty Years' War

Emperor Louis of Bavaria, 1314-47, has many struggles. Division of inheritance, 1460-1508, Albert III, the Wise, introduces the principle of primogeniture. His two sons struggle for seven years and then reign together. Bavarians favorable to Catholic unity, maintain peace and promote letters. William the Pious retires to the convent. *Maximilian I,* 1596-1651, head of the Catholic League, 1609, routs the Palatine Anti-Emperor Frederick at Prague, 1523, and gets his electorate (VII) with High Palatinate. Tilly victorious in Thirty Years' War; peace of Westphalia restores Rhine Electorate, now eighth electorate, and Palatinate leaves Upper Palatinate to Bavaria.

Succession and Equilibrium Wars

Succession Wars: Spanish Austrian

1651, Ferdinand. 1679; Maximilian II fights Turks (Belgrade) and Louis XIV. In Spanish succession for his son Joseph, joins France which cedes Belgium; wins at Hoechstadt, is put under the ban of the empire, but restored.

1725-45, Charles Albert, marries daughter of Emperor Joseph I, opposes the Pragmatic Sanction made by Emperor Charles VI; elected himself, assumes the title of Emperor Charles VII. 1745-77 Maximilian II gives up outside concerns and develops the resources of Bavaria.

Dynasties 1777

1799

Territory Doubled

Palatine line, 1777-99. Charles Theodore. Exchange of Bavaria for Belgium proposed, thwarted by Frederick II.

1799-1918, *Zweybruck* (*Deux-Ponts line*). Maximilian (IV), is mostly for Napoleon, gets title of king (Max I), and double territory, prodigality, liberal constitution. 1825, Louis I, progressive; his brother Otto becomes king of Greece; resigns 1848.

Maximilian II, liberal, 1864; Louis II, 1864-86. Hostile to Prussian hegemony; Bavaria sides with Austria in 1866, loses territory and is forced in the south German confederation by Prussia; helps to beat France, 1870-71.

Liberals of Palatinate persecute the patriotic conservatives of Bavaria. 1886, Otto II, insane; uncle Leopold, regent. King of Bavaria helps Prussia in world war. 1914-18. Conquered by allies; dethroned by socialists.

South Germany

SOUTHERN GERMANS

Two Names

Suevi. Include the Marcomanni, Quadi, etc. The former become the Bavarians, the latter the Austrians.

Marbod refuses the alliance with the Northern Teuton Hermann. 168-80, war with Marcus Aurelius.

Part of the Suevi migrate to Spain, 410.

Alemanni: confederation of broken tribes driven westward by the Slavs; invade and devastate Alsace; driven back by Julian the Apostate; invade Gaul.

Old Swabia

Site Element

Corresponds to modern Baden Wurtemberg, Hohenzollern, with part of Bavaria. Fifth century: Suevi pour in country and amalgamate with Alemanni. Eighth century National Dukedom of Alemanni abolished by the Franks.

Dukes of Swabia, 916-1268.

Swabia. Erected in duchy for Burkard, 916-26, frequently changed hands, being bestowed on sons of Saxon and Franconian emperors.

Hohenstaufen Line, 1079-1268. Frederic I Count of Hohenstauffen. Frederic II=Judith Welf. Frederic (III) Barbarossa, 1147-52. Succeed nephew, three sons. Grandson Frederic (IV) Emp. II, 1208. Conrad IV, 1235-54. Conradin, 1254-68.

Subdivision of Swabia After the Fall of the Hohenstaufens.

Franchises

Conradin, 1254-68, raises money for his Italian expeditions, by dividing and selling territories; the dukedom being very rich. Swabia most civilized and most prosperous. As the Hohenstaufen line lost in strength in its hopeless struggle with the papacy, the Swabian nobles increased their power, several became immediate vassals of the empire, Counts of Wurtemberg acted as "primi inter pares."

Anarchy and Leagues.

Anarchy

Endless series of feuds, and attempts at peace. The lesser nobles fought with the greater nobles, the towns banded themselves together against both and alliances and counter alliances were formed and dissolved with bewildering activity.

The Schleglerkrieg is a bloody contest between counts of Wurtemberg and lesser noblesse in 1367. In 1376 cities, estates, 1488 nobles, prelates and towns, joined in the great Swabian Confederation to maintain peace, and they stopped the Peasants' War in 1525. **Leagues**

Wurtemberg joined in Schmalcaldic league and was fined by the emperor, cities were deprived of their democratic constitution.

Baden

Counts of Zahringen in Eleventh century, 1218.

Herman II, 1074, margrave of Baden, till Christopher.

1527-1771, two lines: *Baden, Durlach.*

1801-03. Napoleon gives land, electorate and title of Grand Duke. In confederation of Rhine. Two-thirds Catholics. 1821, union of two Protestant churches. **French Wars**

Liberal agitation, 1830, 48, 49, Charles Leopold driven from Carlsruhe, is restored by Prussians. Oldest son *Louis* relinquishes succession to his brother *Frederick William* 1852.

Wurtemberg

Struggle for Liberty, 1268-1500.

The country was cut up in small rival states. The struggles for liberty between the lords and the cities degenerated in lawlessness.

Dukes. Eberhard 1457-96, fights the turbulence of the cities, founds the University of Tubingen, 1498-1550 minor Ulrich I, struggles against people; ill-treating his Bavarian wife, he is driven away by Bavarians, and his country sold to Austria. *Protestant* restored by Hesse during the Peasants' War; conquered and expelled during the Schmalcaldic war, restored by Charles V. **Protestant Wars**

In Thirty Years' War, Wurtemberg was reduced from 400,000 people to 50,000 people. Devastation by Louis XIV, 1688. 1707-1733, Charles Alexander a Catholic. 1733-93 Charles Eugene gifted. 1797-1816, Frederick II gets lands and title from French. 1866, faithful to Austria. 1870 fights for Prussia, joins empire. **French Wars** **Prussian Wars**

HOHENZOLLERN

Small southern princes that became great in the north.

Tyrol

Old Rhetia. Twelfth Century 1363

300, overrun by Alemanni; 600, north conquered by Bavarians, Trent by Lombards from south. Eleventh century counts of Teriolis of Roman time, prominent around Meran; twelfth **North and South Counts**

century, control southern slope of Alps Counts of Andechs, Bavarians control the Inn basin, and tributaries of Tyrol.

1248-1363 Meinhardt Margaret Maultasch Goes to Hapsburgs

Adelaide, sister-in-law of last count, marries Meinhardt I, Count of Gorz, who rules to 1248. Their son, Meinhardt II, 1257-1295, marries Hapsburger, gets Carinthia and Styria. Sons Otto and Henry, 1310-35. Margaret Maultasch (Pocket Mouth) married to John of Bohemia, son of John the Blind; remarried by Louis IV to Bavarian Louis, Duke of Brandenburg. When her son Meinhardt III, 1361-63, dies, she gives possessions to Austrian cousins, 1363.

Styria—980-1192

Part of Duchy of Carinthia.

Steyer Nucleus

Castle of Steyer built in 980. 1056, made Margravate. Ottocar VI, 1164-92 helps Frederick I against Henry Lion, obtains title of duke, bequeaths to Leopold V, of Austria, 1192.

Carinthia 1363—Carniola 1282

Ancient

Carni Celts leave their name. Comprised in Ancient Noricum and Pannonia.

Margravate, under Charlemagne, duchy of Arnulf. 1335, Margaret Maultasch cedes possessions to Austria, 1363.

Carniola under dukes of Friuli. Inherited by Hapsburg Rudolph IV of Austria, 1282.

Austria

Mountains Made a Power by Hapsburg

Most of Austria is covered by the Alps—Vienna is located between the mountains and the Danube Valley that broadens out at that point. Still in that mountainous country the Hapsburgs built up a power that dominated Europe for five hundred years. The Austrian power was a triumph of diplomacy, as it united hostile races and kept them from fighting among themselves and made them a rampart that checked the Turkish onrush.

799—A mark or margravate established by Charlemagne against the Avars, who attack for 200 years.

Outpost Struggling Against the Avars

Its nucleus was from river Enns to Raab. It was a stronghold erected in enemy territory after destruction of the Avar empire by Charlemagne and peopled with German colonists, 799. The power extended north and south of River Drave, the latter reaching near Adriatic. Austria conquered by Hungarians. 937, absorbed by them until their crushing defeat at Lechfeld, 955.

Babenberg Dynasty—983-1246, 263 years.

Leopold I, Henry I; 994-1018.

Leopold IV, 1138, receives Bavaria from Emperor Conrad III of Hohenstaufen; attacked by Welf, who is defeated at Weinberg. Brother Henry X, Jasomirgott, 1142-77 marries Gertrude, Henry Proud's widow, to strengthen himself in Bavaria which is reclaimed in 1156 by Henry the Lion, her son.

Mix in Welff and Ghibelline Quarrels

Austria is extended to the Inn and made a duchy, hereditary even in female line. Leopold V, 1177-94, receives Styria by bequest. In the third Crusade he fights Richard Coeur de Lion and captures him at his return, Leopold VI makes Vienna a staple town. Frederick II, the Fighter, 1230-46, obtains Carniola, attacks Hungary; slain by Bela IV.

Female lines—Ottocar II of Bohemia, 1252, takes Austria and Styria; 1269 inherits Carinthia a part of Carniola and Friuli in spite of brother of late duke. Refusing to recognize Rudolph II as emperor, 1276 must cede him Austrian possessions, reclaims them, is slain at Marchfeld, 1278. Judith of Hapsburg marries Wenzel IV, whose sister Agnes marries Rudolph, youngest son, the parents of John, with sanction of electors.

Succession Wars

Marriages

1280-1918—*Hapsburg Dynasty—Formation of World Power*

Seventh century in Upper Alsace. Breisgau. Castle of Hapsburg built above Windish. Rudolph I 1273, buys possessions in the forest country; although poor, is chosen emperor. 1280 he vanquishes Ottocar, reduces noble barons and invests his son with vacant fiefs.

Princes Begin in Mountains

Investitures to Children

Duke Albert I, emperor, marries Elizabeth, daughter of Sigismund, king of Bohemia and Hungary.

Marriages

Maximilian I marries Mary of Burgundy, Netherlands. Their son, Philip the Fair, marries the heiress of Spain. Charles V has Spain and the New World; he cedes Austria to Ferdinand his brother, who marries the heiress of Hungary.

Rise of Hapsburgs

The possessions of the Hapsburgs were extended by marriages and negotiations rather than by wars of conquest. Generally they were composed of many nationalities; but they were kept together by peaceable means rather than by violent ones; the nationality and the language remaining intact.

Peaceable Union

Union Practice

It was a family principle that the lands were indivisible—brothers would reign jointly rather than make partitions.

Apogee

The house attained its greatest power at the end of the Fifteenth century and the beginning of the Sixteenth century, when Belgium, Hungary and Bohemia were added to its domains.

Dukes and Emperors, 1276-1291:

Emperor Rudolph Invests Sons

Punishes Robbers

Albert I Succeeded by Five Sons

Albert II, Two Sons

Rudolph I satisfies various claimants against Austria, by ceding Styria and Carinthia to Meinhardt of Tyrol, with a revision clause in case of failure of male descendants. He destroys the castles of the robber barons. *Albert I, duke,* 1283-1308. Emperor 1298-1308; vain attempts to bring fiefs in his family: Holland, Bohemia; Meissen. Murdered by nephew, John Parricida, son of Rudolph II, whom he had deprived of Swabian possessions; revenged by wife Elizabeth and daughter Agnes. *Succeeded by four sons,* Frederick II the Handsome, anti-emperor to Louis of Bavaria, 1314-30; Leopold, Albert II and Otto the Gay. Duke Albert II, the Wise, forms a union in 1335-58 after death of Frederick; has reconciliation with Louis IV; heritage of Carinthia assured. *Rudolph IV,* 1358-65, the Founder, get Tyrol and Carinthia, 1363; the Learned founds University of Vienna; the Magnificent completes St. Stephens, is excluded from electorate, claims title archduke.

Division in Austria and Styria

Treaty of mutual inheritance in case of extinction of the dynasties between Bohemia and Austria. Succeeded by his brothers, Albert III and Leopold III, *who reign together, but who separate in* 1379 into Austria and Styria.

1379-1457 *Austrian Branch.*

Albert III acquires Tyrol; Albert IV, 1395-1404, poisoned. Albert V 1404-39; Emp. Albert II 1438-39, marries Elizabeth, daughter of Sigismund, king of Bohemia, Hungary; Ladislav the Posthumous, 1439-57, made archduke by emperor Frederick IV.

Styrian Branch:

1379-1454, lose Swiss. Leopold III and his chivalry fall at Sempach, 1386. Four sons: Leopold IV falls at Nafels, 1411. Frederick Empty Pocket shelters Pope John XXIII; is dispossessed. Aargau is conquered by the Swiss. Son pawns the Rhine possessions to Charles the Reckless, who is beaten at Grandson, Morat and perishes at Nancy, 1477.

1457—*Reunion.*

Styrian Frederick V, 1457-73 (as Emperor Frederick IV), weak but generous; 1440-50 calls French freelances, Armagnacs to reconquer Aargau. They are beaten at St. James and being attacked by Viennese, revolt and besiege his brother Albert in his own castle; he is delivered by George Podiebrad and must cede lower Austria to Albert, who dies following year. Having invested Wladislav with Bohemia, 1477 which had been promised Corvinus, the hammer of the Turks, the latter conquers Austria; 100,000 florins promised; only half paid. Austria ravaged four years; *Matthias Corvin rules,* 1485-90. Maximilian had been chosen king of Rome and Germany. *Maximilian=Mary of Burgundy,* 1477, Netherlands, exacts from Ladislav VIII of Bohemia and Hungary, a reversion clause. Maximilian 1493-1519, Austria and Empire transmit Netherlands to son Philip, married to Spanish heiress, Joanna, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella; adds Tyrol.

Frederick IV.

Corvinus Deprived of Bohemia Takes Austria

Maximilian; Mary of Burgundy

Charles V, 1506, Netherlands, Spain, Naples, 1519, empire, 1521 marries Isabella of Portugal, (which falls to Philip II, 1560-1640) cedes hereditary possessions of Austria, except Netherlands, to Ferdinand, who was married to Ann, sister of the king of Bohemia and Hungary, and became his heir, 1526. Spanish and Austrian branches help each other; protect religion; seek favorable marriages.

Kaiser Karl

Corporate Powers

CITIES

Frankfort-on-Main, 414,406 souls; the Central City of Germany, Free City—Election City—Fair City.

The Inland Cities were the governmental and industrial centers of the different states, which were formed around them.

NORTHERN CITIES WERE MOSTLY INCORPORATED INTO PRUSSIA

Hamburg, 936,000. Third seaport of the world.

Bremen, 214,816.

Stettin, 234,033.

Kiel, 208,845.

Lubeck, 98,612, the leader of the Hanseatic cities.

Dantzig, 169,305, started by the Danes—built by the Poles; it passed to Prussia in the second partition of Poland in 1793.

Koenigsberg, 248,059, residence of the Grandmaster of the Teutonic knights and of the dukes and kings of Prussia.

Breslau, 510,929. Silesia.

IMPERIAL AND FREE CITIES

Republics

Prominent places acquired independence from the state or sovereign within whose territory they were situated; either by defensive leagues, or service and money to the prince,—and took place along with principalities. They became centers of wealth and intelligence. Some were free cities, most all were immediately under imperial jurisdiction and protection. Some put themselves under their prelates as Cologne, Spires and Worms. They formed quasi-independent republics and were called reichstädte.

Location and Number

Such cities were more numerous where the princes were less powerful. In Swabia and the Rhinelands there were more than 100; in Franconia only Nuremberg and five smaller places; in Bavaria only Regensburg; in Westphalia, Dortmund and Herford. There were 133 free cities before the peace of Luneville; 1801, most all were suppressed then, all in 1810.

In the North

LEAGUES OF CITIES

There were organized some leagues among the cities, the principal ones being the Hanseatic, Rhenish and Swabian leagues.

THE HANSEATIC LEAGUE

Need of Protection

The Hanseatic League formed an international power, for three centuries, and protected the northern trade, when the Imperial dynasties from the south neglected the northern countries. There was great danger to travel and trade: exorbitant tolls were exacted; barons plundered, pirates and robbers waylaid the merchants. Travel was tedious and slow. It took over a year to make a trip to northern and southern Europe.

Origin

The union of several seaports and trading cities, between the Baltic and the Elbe, formed in the thirteenth century (between 1255 and 1262), was the beginning of the league. There was a special alliance between *Lubeck and Hamburg.*

Extent

In the fourteenth century the league attained wide extent and great power. After this time the name *Hansa* (i. e., trade guild) was commonly applied to the league. Since 1350 over ninety cities extending from the mouth of the Scheldt to Esthonia, besides many inland cities (i. e., Madgeburg, Berlin, Thorn),

Objects

belonged to the *Hansa.* The objects of the alliance were

common defense, security of sea and land routes, settlement of disputes between members by arbitration, acquirement and maintenance of trading privileges in foreign countries.

Rivalry with Denmark.

Wars

The German trade and ascendency provoked wars with the Danish king, Waldemar III, 1340-77. 1st war, 1361, Waldemar takes Gothland and destroys Wisby—Burgomaster of Lubeck plunders Copenhagen. 2nd war, 1367, Copenhagen taken again. Lubeck was the capital and storage for raw produce of the Baltic basin, of which herring was one of the principal staples until 1476, when that fish disappeared from the sound and went to Dutch and Scottish coasts.

Causes of Decline

The growth of the power of the princes, especially after the secularization of the ecclesiastical estates by the reformers and the calamities of the thirty years' war weakened the league—the last triannual meeting was held in 1664 attended only by six cities.

Divided Into Quarters

Divisions of the league, into three, afterwards four quarters. 1. Prussian and Livonian; principal town, Dantzig. 2. Wendic, including also the cities of Mecklenburg, Pomerania and the Marches; chief town, Lubeck. 3. Saxon; chief town, Brunswick. 4. Westphalian; chief town, Cologne. Principal trading stations: Novgorod, Stockholm, Wisby (in Gothland), Bergen, Bruges, London. Ships of war, Orlogschiffe.

Stations

Factories

Counters or factories were established in foreign cities. The principal ones were London, Novgorod, Bergen and Bruges, the latter was the northern metropolis for southern wares and became the most opulent city of northern Europe.

LEAGUE OF RHINE CITIES

Seventy Cities

The League of Rhine cities, founded about the middle of the thirteenth century (league of Worms and Mainz), to insure stricter enforcement of the public peace, comprised at various times more than seventy cities, not all upon the Rhine (i. e. Bremen, Regensburg, Nuremberg); both temporal and spiritual princes joined the league. It maintained peace during the interim. It fell apart from the fourteenth century, many members joining the Hanseatic or Swabian Leagues.

THE SWABIAN LEAGUES

City League

The Swabian city league concluded in 1376, particularly as a

defense against the *Count of Wurtemberg.* Eberhand the Greiner i. e., Quarreler, (also called Rauschebart, Uhland's ballads).

People's League

2. *Swabian People's League,* organized at the end of the Fifteenth Century, 1488, against the anarchy that afflicted the country. Cities, nobles and prelates joined to restore peace and maintain it. They greatly contributed to stop the peasants' war of Luther's time.

Other Leagues

There were other leagues—such as the Frankfort, Wetterau, Hanenstein, Burgundy.

Temporal Ecclesiastical Powers

TEUTONIC ORDER

Kill Missionaries, Exterminate Christians

The Slavs of the Baltic Coast, the Prussians and the Letts were stubborn Pagans. The Prussians killed the missionaries, St. Adelbert, 997, and St. Bruno, 1008, they attacked the Christians and threatened to exterminate them.

Christian Resists the Persecutors

Two centuries later Christian—a Cistercian monk and a bishop in 1209, leads a crusade against those threatening Pagans and fortifies Cuelm, which, however, is taken by them. He founds the Knights of Prussia, who perish fighting against them.

Calls the Teutonic Knights

In 1226 he calls the Teutonic Knights who in twenty-five years subdue the violent Pagans and in another quarter of a century reduce them under their power, 1230-70. The Prussians were fierce and intractable and they were treated mercilessly. If they were to be pacified, it was necessary to frighten them into submission. The Prussians willing to become Christian were declared freemen; those who refused were made the slaves of the conquerors. Sturdy Germans were planted in the land in order to make it German. That such a method of Christianization is not a solid one was proven, when at the outbreak of Protestantism, the Prussians hastened to throw off the stern rule of the church and range themselves under an easier form of Christianity. At last their Grandmasters Brandenburg and Plettenburg embraced Protestantism and were followed by the majority of their subjects.

Who Subdued Them and Compel Them to Become Christians

Colonization

Not a Thorough Conversion

First Hospitalers

The Teutonic Knights had been founded at Jerusalem, 1128, as hospital brothers to take care of the German pilgrims and crusaders. They distinguished themselves at the siege of Acre, 1190. Religious knights were added to them for the defense of the pilgrims. That was a religious military order.

Finding it impossible to fight the infidels any longer in the east the Grandmaster Von Salza, 1210-34, accepted the call to Prussia, to go and fight the Pagans of the Baltic. In half a century they had forced the Prussians to embrace Christianity. **Then Knights** **Conquest of Baltic Coast**

They absorbed the Swordbearers of Livonia and conquered Livonia, Curland, Esthonia and Ingria.

The headquarters were established at Marienburg, 1309-1457. Under Kniprode, 1351-83, the knights controlled over 2,000,000 souls and formed the great sea power of the Baltic. When Lithuania was converted in 1386 and united to Poland—the reason for existence of the Teutonic knights had disappeared. There commenced a lively struggle between the kings and the Teutonic Order. The knights were routed at Tannenburg, 1410: they lost 600 knights and were ruined financially. They were compelled to have recourse to exactions which aroused the native nobility and the towns and provided the Poles with an opportunity to interfere against the Order. A new war cost the order West Prussia, and East Prussia was only held under the suzerainty of the kings of Poland (Treaty of Thorn), 1466. **2,000,000 Souls** **Two Wars with Poland**

Catholic Encyclopedia:

"To maintain itself against the kings of Poland the Order had to rely on Germany and to confide the office of Grandmaster to German princes. But the second of these, Albert of Brandenburg, 1511, abused his position to secularize Prussia, at the same time embracing Protestantism, 1525. He made Prussia an hereditary fief of his house under the suzerainty of the Crown of Poland. **German Prince Secularizes Prussia**

"Nevertheless the dignitaries of the Order in the remainder of Germany faithfully preserved its possessions and having broken with the apostate chose a new Grandmaster, Walter of Croneberg, who fixed his residence at Mergentheim in Franconia, 1526. After the loss of Prussia, the Order still retained in Germany twelve bailiwicks which they lost one by one, Napoleon suppressing the Order, 1801 and 1809. **Order Maintained Elsewhere**

"The Teutonics retained only the bailiwick in the Tyrol and that in the Austrian states. . . . Besides the Catholic branch in Austria the Order has a Protestant branch in the ancient bailiwick of Utrecht, which are aristocratic and charitable institutions, small in numbers." **Two Small Branches Remain**

THE EASTERN BALTIC PRINCIPALITIES

Locally they are Germanic Provinces. See page 381
Racially they were Slavonic. See pages 409-12

Census

Livonia and Courland: Natives Letts. *Esthonia, Ingria,* natives Finns on Gulf of Finland. The ruling class, the townspeople and the nobility, are Germans. The religion is Protestant. Livonia, 1,431,000; Courland, 727,000; Esthonians, 459,780.

Livonia Swordbearers

Livonia, first missionary, Meinhardt, 1186. Second Bishop Berthold, brings crusaders; wins a victory in which he perishes. Third Bishop, 1200-29, founds Riga; organizes the Order of *Swordbearers,* 1202. Dorpat Episcopal city. Order affiliated to Teutonic Order, 1237-1438. Walter of Plettenberg becomes Protestant, is recognized by Charles V as prince of the empire.

Countries Disputed

These countries were disputed between Poland, Sweden and Russia, the latter annexing most of them in 1721.

Compact with Brandenburg Not Allowed

Pomerania, 1684-1832, along the sea. Celts, Wends, Vandals, Slavs. 1171, two ducal houses. Christianization. Pomerellen west of Vistule to Teutonic knights, 1308. Bogeslav XIV, 1625-37, unites the duchies. 1571, Compact with Brandenburg for male succession. 1648, Treaty of Westphalia divides between Sweden and Brandenburg. Sweden cedes to Prussia, 1720-1818.

Conquered Keeps Slavic Dynasty

Mecklenburg. German territory occupied by Obotrite Wends, conquered by Henry the Lion of Saxony; is the only German state that has maintained a Slavish dynasty. There were frequent divisions and subdivisions. Reformation, 1524; University at Rostock, 1721. In Thirty Years' War Mecklenburg was given to Wallenstein but restored. It was ruined, many farmers were made serfs. 1701 Division between Mecklenburg-Schwerin, 625,645, and Strelitz, 103,450 souls. Troubles between classes. The poverty of the country reduces most of the farmers to serfdom, which was abolished by Frederick Francis, 1785-1837.

Poor

Three Agencies of Teutonization

The policy of Germany was a steady systematic conquest or reconquest of the Baltic provinces, or at least penetration of the eastern provinces. The princes conquered by arms; the Teutonic knights by settlement and coercion; the Hansa through trade and intercourse. The reformers advanced the Germanization of the Baltic coasts.

ECCLESIASTICAL PRINCIPALITIES

Cities Chose Prelates

In Germany many cities and countries put themselves under the temporal rule of the prelates of the church either as subjects

or vassals. The Ecclesiastical rule was mild and enlightened and rendered life easy for the people. It was neither violent nor grasping and it let people live. That very mildness made it weak in the face of evildoers and predatory princes; lack of greed for temporal interests made it also sedentary and conservative. Although the ecclesiastical princes had often to take the sword to defend their states, they were ordinarily unprepared for war—which was not the main concern of the rulers.

Mild and Enlightened

Conservative

If it was deemed by many people a blessing to live under ecclesiastical sovereigns, it was not an unmixed blessing for the church. Because the temporal cares absorbed the time necessary for the cares of the soul. It brought worldly concern into the sanctuary and the cloister. The church is freer without worldly cares, although she may not enforce her laws as she did in her own temporal states.

Temporal Care Embarassing

The Reformers secularized many ecclesiastical estates. The Revolution swept away the rest. Thus states of the Teutonic order were appropriated by the grandmasters and turned over to Protestantism. It was one of the main complaints of the church; that estates that had been donated or devoted to the church were now turned against it.

Secularized or Turned Against the Church

So great was the confidence the people had for the wisdom of the dignitaries of the church that they gave them a great share in the election of the emperors. The ordinary college of imperial electors was composed of seven princes—three of whom were prelates, to-wit: the archbishops of Mainz, Trier and Cologne; who were the arch-chancellors of Germany, Burgundy and Italy. There was also one archbishopric. Twenty-three bishoprics.

Three Imperial Electors

Personnel

Bishoprics

There were many immediate abbeys—which depended directly upon the emperor.

There were the Knightly Orders of the Hospitallers, the Templars and the Teutons—the Templars were suppressed in 1312. The Hospitallers survive until today in the Island of Malta. The Teutonic knights are treated apart.

Orders: Ecclesiastical

Knightly

BISHOPRICS

The Rhine and Ems country were about equally divided between Ecclesiastical and civil estates. Emperor Maximilian called the Rhine the priests' street. There were also large ecclesiastical principalities along the Upper Danube. Many in Eastern

Especially Along the Rhine

and Central Germany had been confiscated by the Protestants. All were suppressed by the Revolution through Napoleon. At the time of the suppression there were about 3,000,000 people under ecclesiastical princes.

Three Million

Main Ecclesiastical Principalities

Cologne

Cologne, 954-1803. St. Bruno, 933-65, was made duke of Lorraine by his brother Otto the Great. His successors extended the territory; it lay west of the Rhine and east it had the duchy of Westphalia. There were 230,000 subjects. The guilds assert the independence of the city against the archbishop; during the whole of the Middle Ages the same guilds struggled against the merchant princes.

Some History

Treves, 200,000 subjects; lower and middle Moselle valley and tract across Coblenz.

Mainz, Bishopric 750. Principal see of Germany; the see of St. Boniface.

Worms.

Spire.

Munster, 4,000 square miles, 350,000 people.

Wurzburg had 1,900 square miles. Bishop, duke of Franconia

Salzburg.

Augsburg.

Erfurth.

Hildesheim.

Fulda.

The Slavs

Sector I—Race and Character.

Large Territory and Number

The Slavs are the descendants of the Sarmatians. Their original seat was north of the Sea of Azor. Thence they moved northward to the head waters of the Russian streams, whence again many moved westward to central Europe. Now they occupy most of the eastern half of the continent and they count no less than seventeen branches.

Stock

There are scholars who hold that the Lithuanians and Slavs are of different stocks, because there is a great difference in their languages, however both races have many points of contact and similarity and here they are placed together, as we handle no disputed questions.

Widespread but Weak

The Slavs are the most wide-spread and the least advanced of the European races. They occupy more space on the maps of geography than they do in the charts of history.

Sound Mind and Body

The Slavs are one of the fine branches of the Aryan family, endowed with high qualities of mind and body. Their judgment is sound. It never swerved from faith into rationalism. The Slavs never drifted into such numerous sects and factions as the German people have done. They did not fall in that rampant infidelity and skepticism which is the curse of the modern world. The Slavs practiced these natural virtues that make up strong races—and today they can stand more work and more hardships than any other people. It is impossible to root them out.

Peaceable People

The Slavs are a peaceable people who are satisfied to till the land. They do not undertake wars to conquer

Agricultural Not Military

other countries, or subdue other nations. That was not the aim of Peter the Great. It became the aim of the German dynasty that inherited the throne of the Czars the last centuries.

Progressive

Wherever the Slavs had an opportunity they progressed as fast as any people in the world. The Poles and the Bohemians had powerful kingdoms for a thousand years, equal to the very empire of Germany. Letters, sciences and arts flourished; all virtues were practiced by those Christian peoples and happiness reigned among them.

Incursions and Oppressions

From the time of the Huns to that of the Mongols, 376-1480, the Slavs were exposed to the incursions of the Asiatic hordes of Barbarians, and for centuries subjected to their abominable yoke—i. e. for more than 200 years they groaned under the oppression of foreign and barbarous masters.

Racial Struggle

In the west there was a relentless racial struggle for lands located between the Elb and the Vistule, and elsewhere, abandoned by the Germans and occupied by the Slavs.

A Few Centuries of Anarchy Ruined the West

The western people of Europe have been subject but a few hundred years to the curses brought on by nomadism, war, invasion, tyranny and anarchy, and their civilization perished in the storm.

Power of Resistance

Far from dying out under such hindrances, the Slavs increased and multiplied and filled the earth. If they did not equal in power and wealth the peoples around them, they surpassed them in longevity, fecundity and tenacity of purpose.

In matters of conduct and judgment, they come up to any other class of people. The large families that they are rearing show that they do not break the laws of nature.

Services.

Poles Save Europe

The Poles played a historical role in the fight against threatening Mohammedanism, which had frightened Europe for 1,000 years, and gave them the coup de grace on land.

King Sobieski gave so many and such terrible blows to the unspeakable Turks that their power was broken, and they ceased to attack Christendom, and from that time had to defend their own conquests against the Christians they had afflicted so long.

Russians Shield Europe

There is another historical role of incalculable value to Europe. During the course of centuries the Slavs were the shield of the continent against savage invaders. They broke the first onslaught of the barbarian hordes from Asia that rolled into Europe like avalanches roll thundering down from the mountain sides. The Russians have been the rampart of Europe for many centuries.

Lack of Military Organization

The Slavs have ever been more subject peoples than ruling ones—but it is not due to any physical or mental inferiority. It is owing to lack of military and political organization equal to that of their neighbors, that the Slavs so often became the victims of peoples of smaller numbers and territories. With the exception of the Czars of German origin they did never take arms except to defend themselves; while predatory neighbors were always arming and designing to conquer new lands.

Political

It is also due to the lack of national and religious unity and understanding that the Slavs could never for a long time co-operate for broad racial or national purposes. It is true the Poles had a glorious kingdom that lasted for 800 years; but it was internally divided

and fell a prey to its enemies. It is true the Russian empire acquired immense territories and worked up the Panslavist feelings which made it for a time the master of the Slavic world; but its policy was based on intrigue and oppression and after a few centuries of phenomenal growth the colossus fell and disappeared as a world power, leaving its subjects exposed to the depredations of kaisers and demagogues. To rule a strong and resolute people, it requires strength and justice; for such never submit to oppression. But justice was lacking. There is a turn to every form of injustice. When the Russian collapse arrived, it was final; the subject nations did not stand up for the empire, but they immediately threw off the yoke of the orthodox tyrant.

Religious

The religious divisions were another source of weakness among the Slavs. Involved in the Schism of Constantinople, the Muscovite princes prevented a return to the Catholic unity; a step which the patriarch of Kieff wished to make. Later on they bought from the patriarch of Constantinople the right to have their own patriarch, who completely fell under the control of the Czar. Finally Peter the Great abolished the patriarchate and established the Holy Synod to govern the church of Russia under his supreme authority. The Slavonic bishops of other lands fell away from that lay pope. Today there are a dozen of Slavic churches who refuse to recognize a Russian head-church.

Orthodox Princes Prevent Return to Rome

Abolish Russian Patriarchate

The Slavic Christians are of Latin and Greek rites. The western ones, as the Poles, Bohemians and Slovenians are of Latin rite; the southern and eastern Slavs of Greek rite.

Some Slavs fearing that the German missionaries who came to them might be followed by German soldiers who would conquer their country, applied to Constantinople for Slavonic missionaries. Count Ratislav sent an ambassador to Emperor Michael III, to ask for missionaries that could speak Slavish. 862, SS. Cyril and Methodius, the apostles of the Slavs, converted the Moravians and Bohemians; they were working in union with Rome, where they visited and where Methodius died. They translated the scriptures into Slavic and wrote it in an alphabet of current Greek such as was used in the ninth century A. D. That was the Glagolitic alphabet, which was simplified by St. Clement, disciple of Methodius, and called Cyrillic. It is the language of the Orthodox church. The Catholic Dalmatians kept the Glagolitic version; the other Catholic Slavs of the South adopted the Catholic or Latin alphabet.

Call for Slavish Missionaries

SS. Cyril and Methodius

Translation of Scriptures

Sector II—General History of the Slavs. Continual Struggles.

The general events among the Slavs were the conquest of the Slavs by military powers and their continual growth in number; the advance westward and the eastward repulse from the Elbe to the Oder.

The Slavs, blocked in their western expansion by the growing German powers, turned eastward towards the Volga plains and helped to form that great Slavic settlement of all the Russias.

Slavs Turned Eastward

Yoke of Barbarous Powers in the East.

The Slavs fell successively under the overlordships of the Huns, 376-453; the Gepidae, 453-463; the Avars, 563-623. The western Slavs became independent of

Empires Ruling Over Slavs

the Avars under Samo, 623. The southern Slavs expelled the Avars from the Balkan Peninsula, 623-630, where they founded Croatia and Servia. The eastern Slavs remained under the supremacy of the Avars till 660. Then they came under the power of the Bulgarians, 660-676, with whom they formed a mixed nation. They were tributary to the Khazars, 676-842; and in the south of Russia till 862. The northern Russians with Permians and Finns were tributary to the Ugro-Magyars, 842-972, and Swedes, 859; all Russia was subject to the Mongols, 1224-XV century; southern Russia to the Turcs, XIV century to XIX century.

1,000 Years of Racial Struggle in the West

Unlucky Intermingling

The intermingling of Teutons and Slavs was unhappy for the latter, because they were politically the weakest party.

German Claim Slavonic Possessions

The claim of Middle Europe by the Germans who had abandoned it for better chances, and by the Slavs, who had occupied it as a vacant country, was the origin of the secular struggles between the Germans and the Slavs. The more advanced and better organized Germans occupied the Slavonic lands one after another by their troops and marks flanked with fortifications, and penetrated into the same by their educational and religious teachers.

It is only in the extreme north and west that they succeeded in subduing the Slavonic elements and destroying their racial spirit, but they completely failed in Bohemia and Poland, which were powerful rivals of the empire during the Middle Ages.

Outcome of Struggle Various

In the South the Hapsburgs did not even attempt the extinction of the racial spirit, language or institutions

of the Slavs. They simply ruled them because they came under their power.

Means of German penetration.

German Agencies

Three powerful German agencies did much to advance the Teutonic interests in the disputed territory, to-wit: The Hanseatic League, the German Margravates and the Teutonic Knights.

Hanseatic League.

Commercial Hanse

Although the Hanseatic League was not organized as a political means of extension, it still was turned into that purpose. The Germans who settled among the Slavs did identify themselves with them: being the commercial and moneyed element of the country, they endeavored to bring it under the control of the fatherland. It is just the German spirit which gave Germany such an influence in the Baltic countries.

Margravates.

Saxon Princes Subdue Northern Slavs

Saxon princes and emperors subdued the northern Slavs, whose lands were organized into German principalities, named Marches, Marks, because they were on the boundaries and marked the limits of the different territories. The whole of Brandenburg became a German state and so did the country south of it, later named Saxony from its new masters. Markgravates were established as outposts into Slavish territory to keep it under subjection.

Teutonic Knights.

Teutonic Knights Subdue Prussians

The military propaganda was more of a German than of a Christian movement, and it did not make thorough Christians of the Prussians as they turned to the new form of Christianity, as soon as it appeared: a sign that they had never been completely convinced of Christianity before; for neophytes are fervent and solid, and nothing

can turn them away the first centuries of their conversion.

Slavs Mistrust German Missionaries

It was the fear of political propaganda that made the German missionaries who were sent by Rome, however holy and well-meaning, unwelcome among some Slavs who appealed for Byzantine missionaries. There

Slavonic Apostles Recognize the Pope

was no hostility to the Pope of Rome, while the apostles of the Slavs, St. Cyril and St. Methodius, went to Rome for recognition and jurisdiction, and one of them died in Rome. Moreover, Constantinople remained united to the Catholic Church until all her missionary efforts had ceased. There was a fear lest

Cause of Schism in Continental Europe

the German missionaries abuse their authority to bring their converts under German influence. In case of real missionaries the fear was unfounded, still it existed, and it was the cause that most of Eastern Europe followed Constantinople and separated from the Christian unity.

Sector III—Lot of Different Groups.

The Slavs may be divided in:

Southern Slavs: Croats and Serbs, Slovenians, Slavicized Bulgarians.

Northern Slavs: Poles, Lithuanians, Prussians.

Western Slavs: Polabians, Czechs, Wends.

Eastern Slavs: Ruthenians, Great Russians.

Southern Slavs—Jugo Slavs.

Invaders for 200 Years

The invasion and occupation of the Balkan peninsula took up four centuries and required long struggles. It is here only that the Slavs appear as a warrior people. The Slavs had first entered the empire as colonists or auxiliaries. After the departure of the Ostrogoths for Italy, 490, they occupied the vacant lands left by them.

The seventh century was the great century of expansion.

In Dacia Replaced the Roumanians

The Slavs commenced their excursions into the Balkan part of the empire, and they continued it during two centuries. Several times they ravaged the whole peninsula down to the Peloponnesus. The starting point of their incursions was ancient Dacia, i. e., the Transylvania, Moldavia and Wallachia of our days, where they replaced many Roumanians who fled to the mountains while they occupied the plains. They covered with their colonies Thrace, Macedonia, Epirus, Thessaly, Hellas and Morea. In the latter they preserved their independence A. D. 587-815. Slavonic was still spoken on the Teygete in the middle of the fifteenth century. The French crusaders and the Venetians had often to fight against the Slavonians. The Mainotes are of Slavish origin. The Slavs constructed boats and reached the islands and coasts of the Ægean and Ionian Sea and even threatened Constantinople.

Colonies Everywhere

Independence in Morea 587-815

Drave and Save Occupied by Croatians and Servians

The lower Drave and the Save were visited and frequented early by Slavs; but they were really occupied by them under the reign of the Emperor Heraclius, 610-641, who had called them against the Avars. The Croatians and the Servians established themselves in Dalmatia and in the countries to the west of it.

Pushed by Avars Slavs Occupy Southwest

Flying before the Avars, established in Pannonia toward 550, or fighting with them, the Carantani Slavs occupied interior Noricum, i. e., what is now Styria, Carinthia and Carniola, they ascended the Mar and the Inn Valleys. They were stopped in their westward advance by the Bavarians. At the end of

the sixth century other Slavic tribes had penetrated in the Tyrol, and occupied Friuli and Istria.

Germanization in the South—Various.

After the rout of the Magyars at the Lech, 955, the Eastmark, later Ostmark or Ostenreich-Austria was organized in eastern Bavaria; Melk, afterwards Vienna became the residence of the Babenbergs, and later of the Hapsburgs.

Austria and Styria Are Germanized

The Dukedoms of Carinthia, Syria and Carniola fell into German hands, without being deprived of their customs and their language and they had bishops of their own.

Isolated Groups in Hungary

Isolated German groups were brought into Hungary 1050; to Kremnitz and Sips Mountains; 1143, farmers to Siebenberger, miners were brought to the Southern Erzgebirge by the Fuggers; farmers in devastated Banat by Mary Theresa. Now the Slavoni, the Croats and the Servians form the Republic of Jugo Slavia, area 33,891 square miles.

Western Slavs

Inland Slavs of Oder and Elbe.

Pacific Advance to the Elbe Saale Luneburg

The progress of the Slavs towards the Elbe had been more rapid and more pacific. In the fourth century the Wendes or Sorbs had replaced the Germans on the Oder; in the second half of the fifth century they advanced along the shores of the Baltic and reached the Elbe. Then they occupied the banks of the Saale, the Luneburg, and some tribes advanced along Eastern tributaries of the Rhine.

The upper basin of the Elbe had been peopled by the Celtic Boii, who left their name to the land, Bo-

hemia. About the year 12 B. C., the German Marcomanni occupied the land and remained there till the middle of the fifth century, when their name disappears from history. The Czechs took the land, 550. They were followed by the Moravians, who drove away the Lombards and settled in the basin of the Moravia, in lower (Austria) and on the southern slope of the Carpaths.

Bohemia First Settled by the Boii the Marcomanni

550 by Czechs Also Moravians

Samo (623-58) at the head of the Lusatian Wends, especially in Bohemia, delivered the western Slavs from the servitude of the Avars. He established his capital on the upper Elbe and defeated the Saxons and Lombards at Voitsburg. After him the Slavs separated again.

Samo United the Slavs

The ancestors of the Rutheni of Galicia crossed the mountains of Tatra and spread to the oriental extremity of mountainous Hungary, whilst other Slavs advanced as far as the heart of Germany, to-wit: Saxony, Thuringia, Franconia, Bavaria and also Switzerland.

Slavs Advance Into the Heart of Germany

Swatopluk, 874-95, established a formidable power in Moravia; the emperor of Germany called the Magyars against him.

Swatopluk

Germanizing of the Northwestern Slavs.

German reconquest of the lands beyond the Elbe.

Germanizing

By the treaty of Verdun, 843, east Frankenland did not stretch beyond the line from Kiel to Triest and it was with difficulty that it defended itself in the north against the Normans (Louvain, 891); in the east against the Moravians (Swatopluk, 894) in the south against the Magyars (Passau, 907, Augsburg, 910).

On Defensive

The Slavs, who had occupied the eastern provinces of old Germany, were pastoral, hunting and fishing

Slavs in Eastern Provinces Backward

tribes; the land was so thinly settled that it was a work of progress when the Germans reconquered it.

Emperor Henry the Fowler Erect Forts at Havelberg Meissen

The Saxon Emperors. 928, Henry the Fowler takes Brennabor (Brandenburg), defeats the united Wends and erects fortresses such as Havelberg and Meissen.

Prince Conquers Between Elbe and Oder

German Princes. 939-963. Gero Margrave of the East Mark murders the Slavish chiefs, compels the Slavic tribes between the Elbe and the Oder to acknowledge his suzerainty. He is referred to in the Niebeungen Lied.

Henry the Lion and Albert the Bear attracted Flemish and Saxon settlers to Brandenburg; Albert founds Berlin, 1162, and reaches the Oder. His dynasty, 1134-1319, conquers all Brandenburg.

Saxon Duke Inducement Settlers

The dukes offered large homesteads and great inducements to Saxon settlers. The Slavic names were Germanized; Stargard was called Oldenburg, and Ratibor, Ratzeburg. Around Leipsic, Frankish colonists settled, 1017. At Chemnitz a Benedictine Abbey arose and a German market town grew up.

Monks Civilize Them

The Cistercians and the Premonstratenses convert, win and civilize the Slavs and Germanize them. They build monasteries that become centers of progress, such as Lehnin, Dobberan, Bergen and Oliva.

Endurance of some Slavonic Monarchies.

Commercial Invasion of Bohemia and Poland

The Western Slavs, the Bohemians and the Poles had well-organized governments that resisted any encroachment of the Germans, still they were hampered by a continual influx of Germans into their territories, so that their boundaries and their centers of industry were filled with Germans anxious to take advantage of the prosperous state of affairs among the Slavs, which was better than in their own country.

Those powerful monarchies, too, fell into the hands of the Germans. Bohemia fell to Austria by a stroke of diplomacy, Poland was cut to pieces and partitioned by high-handed robbery of Prussia and her allies.

Final Annexation

Northeastern Slavs.

The northeast Slavs were the Poles and the Prussians: the former being mild and docile, the latter quarrelsome and fanatic.

Poles.

Noble Race

The Poles formed for centuries the most advanced and the most noble of the Slavic nations. The Poles were Christianized before the year 1000. In 1356 they formed with the Lithuanians a political union which made them for two centuries the most powerful nation of the north. Without delay a university was established.

Christianize

Enlightened

Hospitable

When the Jews were driven out of Germany, the Poles opened their country to them, who, however, caused a great deal of trouble.

Crusading

When the Turks were multiplying their attacks upon Christianity, and tried their supreme efforts against Vienna, it was Sobieski, the Polish king, that drove them back.

Confessors

When the Protestant princes compelled all northern Europe to adopt their new religion, the Poles held onto the old faith and allowed no one to dictate what they should believe.

But Anarchy of Nobles

The nation, invincible by any outside enemy, fell the victim of the turbulence and the selfishness of its own nobles, who created anarchy in the land toward the end of the eighteenth century and betrayed it to its foreign enemies.

Conspiracy of Powers
Partitions

The most unscrupulous powers of those times and of all times, Prussia and Russia, conspired to partition the helpless nation, which was divided three times in twenty-five years, more than a century ago.

Life and Hope

The Poles, however, are as true as ever to their ancient country and their glorious faith. There are 25,000,000 of them—they hope and are determined to retake their place among the free nations of the earth.

Lithuanians.

Lithuania Attacked by Sword-bearers 1186

Meinhard is the first bishop, 1186; the second Berthold leads a crusade; the third Adalbert 1200-29, forms the order of Swordbearers, 1202, who attack the pagans and unite to the Teutonic Knights, 1237-1438, and subjugate Courland and Livonia. The last Grandmaster, Gothard Kettler of Courland, struggles against the Archbishop and becomes Protestant and hereditary duke.

Christian Founds Prussian Knights

Christian 1209, preaches, founds and leads Knights of Prussia, who are slain at the battle of Strasburg.

Prussians.

The *Slavs* had no organized hierarchy that is known except the Polabians and the Prussians, who opposed, stubbornly, the introduction of Christianity. Those of the Island of Rugen were very superstitious.

Pagan Worship

Prussians Martyrize 997-1008

The *Prussians* had a pagan hierarchy under a high priest "Griewe" and opposed a stubborn resistance and persecution to Christianity. St. Adalbert, 997, St. Bruno, 1008, were killed.

Stubborn Slavs Destructive

The Baltic Slavs not only refused Christianity but destroyed its institutions. The Knights conquered, converted and civilized them. In 1202 the sword-bearers commenced in Lithuania and in 1237 they joined the Teutonic Knights, who had arrived in 1230 and who prospered until the union of the Lithuanians with the Poles, 1385, and the conversion of the former.

Knights Subdue and Germanize Them

Teutonic Knights.

Appeal to Teutonic Knights.

Calls Teutonic Knights

The Knights arrive under Herman Von Salza, 1226, and they are helped by the crusades of Ottocar of Bohemia. They are granted all the lands they conquer from the pagans, one-third of which was to go to the church.

The conquest of the pagans is accomplished in twenty-five years and the struggle lasts twenty-five years longer, 1282. 1243, Innocent IV erects the bishoprics of Culm, Pomosami and Ermeland; Ottocar II erects Samland.

Extent of Power

The sway of the Order extended from the Oder to the Gulf of Finland; it had 2,500,000 people, and it carried on an active trade with the Hanseatic League.

Poland Conquers 1410

1385. Union of Lithuania with Poland and conversion of the former. Poland beats Knights at Tannenberg, 1410. Reduces the Prussians, 1466. Knights cede Samogitia and become vassals of Poland.

Opposed by Powerful German Grand-masters

Powerful German Grandmasters were elected against Poland. Albert of Brandenburg attacks Sigismund I of Poland; and is beaten, he turns Protestant and is recognized by Poland as hereditary Duke of Prussia, 1525.

Eastern Slavs

6—Eastern Slavs: Russians.

Eastern Slavs

The Russians are the most numerous and the most aggressive of the Slavic peoples.

Russians

Ethnically and locally they are divided into the Great Russians and the Little Russians; the former are spread over the center of Russia, the upper Volga and northeast; the latter occupy the west of the Dnieper. The Little Russians are also called Ruthenians in Galicia, and simply Little Russians in the Kiev country.

The Ruthenians may well claim to be the original Russians, with Kiev as the center and starting point of Greek Slavic Christianity, and for centuries the religious and political capital of Russia.

Catholics Ruthenians Orthodox Little Russians

The Catholics are called the Ruthenians and the Orthodox Little Russians; the former have the province of Lemberg in southern Galicia, with the two subordinate dioceses of Przemysl and Stanislau. In Hungary there are four Ruthenian dioceses, which are subject to the Latin prelates.

Great Russians Are a Conglomerate

The great Russians were first merely a mixture of Swedish, Finnish and Slavish peoples. Little Russia was for five centuries subject to Poland-Lithuania.

The nucleus of the Russian empire in Europe were the Slavs living on the Upper Rivers of Russia.

Growth Due to Pure Slavish Marriages

In the ninth century they occupied one-fifth of the area; now they occupy four-fifths. They are very prolific. The Slavish women were very clannish and refused to marry outsiders. It is mostly due to the patriotism of the Slavic women that the pure Slavs multiplied so fast.

Rurik Dynasty Organized

The Scandinavian Dynasty of Rurik, 862-1598, first organized the eastern Slavs and reigned over them for seven centuries. Under the Grand Prince Vladimir and Anna of Constantinople, they were Christianized and might have formed a powerful State, able to resist invaders from the east and the south. But the country was divided politically and religiously; Vladimir himself partitioned his monarchy among his twelve sons. Great wars raged among their descendants. The eastern church separated from the main body of the Christians and faced alone the Mongolian invasions.

Christianize

But Politic and Religious Divisions

The Tartars oppressed the Slavs and extorted tribute from the Russian princes; the princes in their turn became the oppressors and the extortioners of the people. Far from exterminating the hardy Russians, that yoke made them hardier and steadier yet, and more determined to free themselves. Nature has inclined the Russian to submission, endurance, resignation. History strengthened these inclinations. Hardy by nature, the Russian was steeled by history. After a submission of three centuries and a half to the Asiatic Turanians, he took the offensive and reduced them under his power. Then he applied himself to conquer that mysterious Asia whence his oppressors had come and in eighty years he conquered all of Siberia.

Mongolian Yoke Hardens the Russian

After the many centuries of slavery the Romanoffs turned the Russians into a conquering power. Peter the Great reached the Baltic. Catherine II annexed the Poles and the Czars dreamed of nothing less than the gathering of all the Slavs under their sceptre, which would make them the greatest power of the world. Pan-Slavism was their dream, their policy. It became their downfall.

World Power

A special article on each of the principal divisions of the Slavonic race will be given to-wit: On the Northern, Western, Eastern and Southern Slavs; i. e. on Poland, Bohemia, Russia and Balkania. The former will come under the caption of Slavs. The last have come under the heading of the Balkan countries because the Slavs there are mixed up with other races, which should be treated at the same time as these southern Slavs.

Special Articles

Slav Monarchies

Bohemia Outpost of Slavic Culture

Panorama. The Bohemians are the westernmost and with the Poles the most progressive population among the Slavs. There was a time that Bohemia and Poland were among the leading nations of Europe, but the former lost her autonomy, and the later its very political life as a nation. The Hungarians had a kingdom of the same rank. The kings of one country sometimes were chosen as kings of the other.

Ranking with Poland and Hungary

CZECHS AND SLOVAKS OF CENTRAL EUROPE

Czechs Progressive

The Czechs and the Slovaks migrated in the seventh century, the former settling in the fertile plains of Bohemia and Moravia, where they attained a speedy development, the latter proceeding to the rough country of Tatra on the southern slope of the Carpathians, where they hardly emerged from the cattle raising state.

Slovaks Stationary

In the ninth century the Moravians were the leaders among the western Slavs. For the remainder of the times the Bohemians were the main power. They are the ones that headed the movement of the Czecho-Slovak republic. They proposed to incorporate in their commonwealth the Slovaks on the south slope of the Middle Carpathians and the Silesians on the north slope. That will comprehend about 52,712 square miles. Bohemia proper has 20,000 square miles, and North Silesia, 1,986 square miles, etc.

Bohemians the Leaders of Czecho-Slavic Republic

Area

Population

There is a great deal of intermixture of races—the Slavs occupying the valleys of Bohemia and Moravia, number 6,435,000 souls, the Slovaks of Tatra, 1,967,000.

Many Germans

There are 3,300,000 Germans, who form the city, and manufacturing population, and give a German

aspect to the whole country. In Tatra there are Hungarian landlords and officials, but the immense bulk of the population is Slovak.

Bohemia

An Independent State, 623-1526

CHRONICLES

Founders

Samo, 623—at the head of the Lusatian Wends, or Sorbs of Carinthia, delivers the western Slavs from servitude to the Avars, he defeats the Saxons and Lombards at Voitsburg, 658 *Krok* succeeds him, whose daughter Libussa marries Premislas and founds Prague; Slavs conquer westward.

Conversion Pagan Reaction 894-950

Premislide Dynasty, 722-1306. Struggle for independence against German empire, Moravia, Magyars. 850-902 duke Borzivoc and St. Ludmilla. Struggles against neighbors. Converted by St. Methodius—916-36 St. Wenceslas overthrown. Pagan brother Boleslav, 936-50, persecutes and slays St. Wenceslas, is compelled by Otto the Great to restore Christianity. Wratislas II; title of king 1086—Ottocar I, 1197, law of primogeniture, encourages German immigration, fights at Leignitz against the Mongols. 1253-78 *Ottocar II,* crusade against the Pagans of Prussia, inherits Carinthia, Carniola, Styria, takes Austria, opposes Rudolph I of Hapsburg, and is slain by him at Marshfeld.

King Ottocar II

The last Premysl Wenceslas VI, was elected king of Poland; is murdered. His sisters marry princes of Austria and Luxemburg.

Luxemburg Dynasty

1310-1437—*Luxemburg Dynasty.* The warrior. John the Blind =Elizabeth, Premysl.

1346-78. Charles I (Emp. IV), embellishes Prague, builds University—1378-1419, Wenceslas IV the slothful, Emperor never leaves Bohemia—deposed and imprisoned.

Hussite War and Rule

Hussite Heresy: in 1498-14. Huss spreads Wicklif's heresy at University of Prague—pushes the Czech language which drives the German students to Leipsic, where a new university was founded. Hussite War: 1419-36. Huss executed *King's brother Sigismund of Hungary* also elected in Bohemia

—war against him by Ziska and two Prokops. Ladislav the Posthumous 1439-57, Civil war of Utraquists. Regent George Podiebrad 1457-71 becomes Hussite king, but he is overthrown by King Matthias Corvin of Hungary, who had been promised Bohemia and took Austria. The Pole Wladislaw is elected in Bohemia 1490; his son *Louis II,* 1506-26, marches against the Turks and is slain at Mohacz. Daughter, Elizabeth, was married to *Ferdinand IX of Hapsburg,* who thus inherits the country.

Succession Wars

Hapsburg Rule

Austrian Rule, 1526-1918.

Bohemia was the scene of the outbreak of the Thirty Years' War. The Palatine Frederick V was chosen king of Bohemia, and overthrown the following year. The Hapsburgs pacified the country, and kept it in subjugation during two centuries.

Bohemia in Four Big Wars

Bohemia was subject to Germanizing influence. During the last generation the national spirit was ablaze. After the present World War a Czecho-Slovak republic was proclaimed comprehending Bohemia, Moravia, Tatra and parts of Silesia.

German Tendency Slavic Reaction

MORAVIA

801-46, Moyomir admits missionaries from Louis the Mild. Ratislav admits men from Constantinople: Cyril and Methodius, Swatopluk revolts against the Germans, conquers Dacia and Pannonia; reigns from Baltic to Adriatic. Coalition against him. Magyars were called by Arnulf. His son Moyomir II holds the forts 893-903. Moravia was annexed to Bohemia, 1029.

TATRA

It is a pastoral region. The populations are Slovak; they were subjected by the Magyars and remain so until today.

SILESIA

Cent. Dict.—"Silesia is a large region in Central Europe, mainly in the upper basin of the Oder, northeast of the Sudetic mountains. Its early inhabitants were Slavs. The possession of it was disputed between Poland and Bohemia. It became Polish in the tenth century; was separated from Poland in 1163; was divided into several duchies ruled by branches of the Polish dynasty of Piast, gradually became largely Germanized and was incorporated with Bohemia in 1355. With Bohemia it passed to the house of Hapsburg in 1526. It suffered in the Hussite,

Object of Dispute Between Poland Bohemia Austria and Prussia

QUEEN HEDWIGE
THE MAKER OF GREAT POLAND
1386

Thirty Years,' Silesian and Napoleonic wars. It was conquered by Frederick The Great, 1741-42, and the larger part of it was ceded by Austria to Prussia in 1742, which cession was confirmed in 1763."

Austrian Silesia. Area, 1,987 square miles, population, 756,590. That is now being disputed between the Polish and the Bohemian Republics.

Prussian Silesia. Area 15,500 square miles. Population 1810, over 4,942,000.

Poland

I PERIOD. GREATNESS OF MONARCHY, 843-1386

The Poles are Advanced Slavs. They were converted to Christianity before the year 1000. Their rulers of the Piast Dynasty, 840-1371, were able to cope with the German Emperors and never consented to become their vassals. They were for three centuries the most powerful monarchs of eastern Europe. The Poles were routed by the Mongols at Leignitz and three more raids were made by the Asiatics without however delivering Poland to them. *Casimir the Great,* 1339-70, conquers Red Russia and gives laws. His sister, Elizabeth, was married to Louis the Great of Hungary. Their daughter, Hedwige, marries Jagellon of Lithuania.

Christianized Since the First Millenium

Powerful Against Germans Mongols Russians

Poland Lithuania Reduces

Jagellon Dynasty, 1386-1573. *Union of Lithuania and Poland.* Extension to the Dwina north and the Dnieper southeast and to Moldavia. The Teutonic Order was occupying the Russian seacoast. It was beaten and reduced by Wladislaw II at battle of Tannenberg, 1410. Poland had access to the sea and could carry on maritime commerce. The kingdom became powerful and prosperous.

Teutonic Knights Who had Cut Off the Sea Trade 1410

Poland resists the Turks; Sobieski stops the invading armies at Choczim, 1672, on his own frontier and crushes them at Vienna, 1683.

Turks

Although located near the center of Lutheran Protestantism, Poland resisted or expelled the emissaries of the new religion, who had invaded it with great force, and thus escaped the religious wars that crimsoned the rest of Europe for more than a century. The Protestants found followers in the large cities and among the turbulent noblemen; and also among some clergymen of noble origin. For the nobles had made themselves the masters of all offices, civil and ecclesiastical, and they occupied the higher places and some favored Protestantism. King Sigismund II (1548) favored them and allowed dissension to divide the people. Sigismund III (Wasa) 1587, curbed them. Copernicus and Cardinal Hosius of Ermeland called the Jesuits, who at once open schools and bring back many nobles. However, complete unity could not be restored; and that undermined the strength of Poland.

Protestants Gain Followers Among Nobility and Clergy Jesuits Stop Them

Poland Ruined by Turbulent Nobles

For there was war and contention in the very bosom of Poland—to-wit: the political anarchy fastened on the land by the nobility. At all times the nobles had occupied all the high functions, civil and ecclesiastical. They had arrogated to themselves extraordinary privileges. At the extinction of the Piast and the Jagellon dynasties, they had turned the nation into an elective monarchy, or rather into an oligarchic republic. Except that the king was elected for life, he was nothing else than a president of a republic. Yet he was much less; for he was shorn of all authority, and was left nothing else to do but to eat and sleep. By the pacta conventia they claimed the supreme power. The kings were made the tools of the

The King Was a Mere Shadow

turbulent nobles, and two of them, John Casimir and Henry of France, resigned the empty honor. It was simply anarchy organized into a system by a "Liberum Veto" and nothing could be done except by the dictation of the Nobles, who met only every second year for two weeks, sitting in daytime only and passing no measure except by unanimous vote. Every noble had a liberum veto by which he could stop all proceedings and put a spoke in the wheel of the administration. The climax of anarchy was reached when the nobles used that dreaded veto to prevent any business to be transacted but their own. The most profligate and the most contemptible of those little despots did not hesitate to throw the whole government into a deadlock until their price was paid, or their revenge was satisfied.

Anarchy Organized

Liberum Veto of Any Nobleman Would Stop the Whole Administration

Used for Revenge or Extortion

It was in 1652 that the liberum veto was first used against the preparation for a war against Sweden. It is the greatest curiosity in the shape of a political institution which the records of any nation presents. That system was an anachronism in Europe. When every neighboring nobility had been curbed or had renounced the right to elect kings, the Polish nobles created themselves a right unique in the world to obstruct all business by one dissenting voice.

Curious Privilege of One Man

Anachronism in Europe

The nobility had orators and poets, but no statesmen, and they exacted privileges that ruined the country. They insisted on the right to choose the kings and their wives; they chose strangers who had no power to control them. The Polish constition was a climax of oligarchic tyranny whereby the nobles sacrificed the whole country, and all the people to their own interest, and finally delivered them

Suicidal Policy of Nobles

Thwarts Heroical Kings

to the neighboring powers. That was in the time of powerful kings who by their personal genius and valor made a great figure among the monarchs of Europe. They claimed the thrones of Sweden and Russia, and drove away the Turks, then more threatening than ever.

Sobieski

Sobieski is one of the noblest heroes the world saw and could have ended the Turks forever. In 1576 he chased them across the Danube, but the nobles destroyed the fruit of his victories, granting them truce and land. Europe thanked God "for the most signal success which the three centuries Christendom had gained over the infidel." In 1683 Sobieski saved Vienna from the Turks and gave them such a terrible blow that it rendered them powerless. But the nobles refused him the means to pursue his victories and drive the Turks out of Europe. Clogged and confined by an absurd form of government to which the nobles tenaciously clung, his genius was prevented from employing itself with effect upon great national objects. He died suddenly on Corpus Christi Day, in the year 1696, and with him, says the historian, the glory of Poland descended into the tomb. On the death of Sobieski the crown of Poland was disposed of to the highest bidder."—Chambers Hist., Poland.

The Last and Greatest Pole

Poland Could Defy Any Enemy

With such mighty kings as John II and John III, Poland could have maintained her high standing among the powers of the world and nobody would have dared to insult, far less to attack her. But the power of the nation was sold and sacrificed by the selfish nobles. Seventy-four years after the death of Sobieski, Poland was overthrown and cut to pieces by her enemies.

Sobieski, King of Poland
The Hammer of the Turks
1674-1696

The rapacity and pride of these petty tyrants caused untold misery to the people, and opened the country to the intrigues of designing rivals. The election of the kings gave them an opportunity to impose candidates favorable to their own interests. Peter the Great saw the means of bringing Poland under Russia by keeping up the division among the Poles; the Hohenzollerns fomented dissensions. Russia, Prussia and Austria excluded French influence. In 1732 they made a secret agreement by which they bound themselves to resist all French intervention in Poland, with this pact begins that system of nursing and interferences with which these three powers pushed the "sick man of the North" to its ruin.

Intrigues of Neighboring Powers in Elections

Against French Candidates

Plot Against

Catholic Poland was in the way of Protestant Prussia and Schismatic Russia, who wanted to humiliate her and finally absorbed her and her people. The Hohenzollerns and the Romanoffs stirred up the quarrels among the nobles, who sacrificed the interests of their country to their own ends—but soon fell the victim of their folly and treachery.

Catholic Faith

III. PERIOD. PLUNDER OF A NATION, 1772-1918

In 1772 the first partition took place among Russia, Prussia and Austria; 1500 square miles. The amendment of the constitution is blocked by Russophiles. Dissident and Catholic (Bar) League: intervention 1793 second partition between Prussia and Russia. Rising under Kosciusko, is successful, then overwhelmed, 1795. Third partition between the three powers.

Partition Between Three Powers

Resistance Only Tightens the Chains

Revolts of XIX Century.

The reforms among the Poles were not allowed by the Prusso-Russians, who wanted no reconstruction; they worked to Russify and Prussianize their victims.

International Crime

Punished by Wars

Autonomous Poland Necessary

The partition of Poland was an international crime which must fall back upon its perpetrators some day. The European war of 1914-18 would not have been possible if Poland had remained as a big state between the Russians and the Germans. The autonomy of Poland is necessary for the peace and independence of Europe. The world war is over; the executioners of Poland have fallen, and their victim is being restored among the free nations of the world.

Rebirth of Poland, 1918.

People Hardened by Wars

Oppression

The Polish people have been inured to hardship. They were oppressed by a tyrannical nobility. They were compelled to fight the encroachments of almost every neighbor; and they were oppressed by a tyrannical nobility; before, they were devoured by their brutal neighbors. Since that calamity their hardships have become unbearable (except in Austria); but they have served to harden them in faith and in virtue. Whenever an opportunity is given them as in America, they prove the equals to the most advanced races. If the state has been suppressed, the people have not been. And every one of them is a patriot ready to sacrifice everything for his ancestral country.

Statistics.

Some put the area of the Monarchy of Poland as twice that of the German Empire, to-wit:—435,200 square miles.

Ploetz puts it 303,000 square miles with 12,200,000 souls. Russia took 181,000 square miles, Prussia 57,000 square miles, Austria 45,000 square miles.

The Lithuanians were taken by Russia. The Poles proper by Prussia and Austria.

Poland Proper.

Poles 12,949,000, about 75% of the population. Poland comprehends the basin of the Vistule and part of the basins of the Oder and Dnieper.

Rivers Vistule the Polish Stream

The Vistule has always been a Polish river. At the first partition of Poland, its lower basin was taken by Prussia to unite East and West Prussia—Warsaw, 638,208; stands in the center of Europe, and is a point of convergence of commercial routes. Cracow and Danzig.

Lithuanians, Letts.

Extent of Lithuania

At the time of the partition of Poland, Lithuania extended from Courland to Kiev and from Poland to the Dnieper, about 100,000 square miles. The country is covered with woods or marshes and is very unproductive. Having no natural boundaries, it was subject to attacks, although it escaped conquest, and it remained practically independent.

Pagans Conquered Converted

The Lithuanians clung tenaciously to their pagan customs, and they fought bloody wars against the Teutonic Knights. They were converted under Jagellon and St. Hedwige. For a century the Lithuanians maintained their own sovereign. From 1501, they had a common sovereign with Poland.

There are 3,000,000 Lithuanians in Lithuania proper, and about 2,000,000 among the Ruthenians. Capital: Wilna 162,633.

Letts

Letts

The Letts live north of the Lithuanians towards the Gulf of Finland. They are but little modified by mixture with Germans, Finns and other peoples. They retained some of their Pagan customs down to the sixteenth century. They are mostly Protestants, 1,350,000.

Chronicles.

I Period. Greatness of Monarchy, 843-1572

Early Hegemony

After the subjugation of Bohemia by Charlemagne, the Slavic tribes to the north and to the east became independent under their petty princes. The Poles obtained the hegemony over them.

Piast Dynasty, 840-1371

Christianized by Rulers

Mieczyslas, 966, converted by his Bohemian wife, Christianizes his people. 967-1025. *Boleslav I the Great* implants Christianity, attacks persecuting Prussians: king: independent from Germany, head of Slavs, tribute from Russia, promotes parliament. Reaction after him for a quarter of a century.

Divisions War

The wicked Boleslav II, 1058, kills St. Stanislas, is replaced by his brother Wladislav, 1081-1102, who divides the realm between his two sons, the oldest of them divides between his four sons, who subdivide. 1319-33, Wladislav I restores unity, receives title of *king* from the Pope, 1339-70.

Restoration

Casimir III the Great conquers in Lithuania and the Kaptschak. Volhynia, Podolia, written laws, justice, refuge of the Jews, king of the farmers, 1390. His sister Elizabeth the wife of Louis of Hungary, who became King of Poland also.

Casimir III the Great

Dynastic Union with Lithuania

Louis the Great, king, whose daughter, St. Hedwige, marries Jagellon of Lithuania: Wladislav II.

Jagellon Dynasty, 1386-1573.

Jagellon Dynasty

Wladislav II extends into Wallachia, conquers Teutonic Knights.

Wladislav III also king of Hungary perishes at Warna, fighting against Turks.

Three Brothers

Casimir IV, 1444-92=Elizabeth Hapsburg.

Eldest son Wladislav, king of Bohemia and Hungary passed over; his three brothers succeed: Albert 1492, Alexander 1501.

Sigismund I Peace and Power

Sigismund I (1507-48) repels the Czar of Russia, reduces the Teutonic Knights, reaches Black Sea. He opposes Protestantism in Poland and maintains quiet in the midst of religious storms that rage over Europe, but recognizes as secular vassal the apostate grandmaster of the Teutonic Order in Prussia, Albert of Brandenburg.

Religious Division Checked

1648, *Sigismund II* favors Protestantism, recognizes Kettler the apostate grandmaster of Livonia as secular vassal. Catholic reaction, Jesuits called.

Sweden and Russia attack last Jagellon, 1569.

II Period. Anarchy of Nobility: Elective Monarchy, 1572-1772

Through election of kings the nobility takes every power.

Anarchy

Henry III returns to France after seeing four months of quarrels. Ann, sister of Sigismund II, wife of Batori: retakes Livonia from Russians, repels the Mongols against whom he organizes the Cossacks.

Lawless Nobles

1587-1668, *Wasa Dynasty. Statesmanship.*

Sigismund III Contests Sweden

Sigismund III, marries the sister of Sigismund II; heir of Sweden: king 1592-1604, fights usurping uncle Charles IX—and Gustav Adolph in thirty wars, imposes as Czar of Russia, his son Wladislav (IV), who loses it because he refuses to renounce the Catholic Church.

Controls Russia

1631-48. Wladislav IV retakes Livonia from Sweden, helps Jesuits to restore religious union; conference of Thorn.

Heroical Kings Repel the Turks

1648-68. *John Casimir* opposes Charles the Bipontine in Sweden and repels the Russians from the Dnieper. He abdicates.

Hampered by Oligarchy

Nobles elect weak king. After defeating Turks at Choczim, Sobieski is elected king, 1673-96. *John III Sobieski,* "the hammer of the Turks," chases them from Vienna and Hungary, gets Podolia, nobles refusing help to protect Dnieper, he cannot follow up his victories. They extort more privileges, electing the powerless Saxon who had exhausted his estates to buy the crown.

Weak Saxon

Saxon Dynasty, August II, 1696, against whom Stanislas Leczinski is raised by Sweden, 1702-09, and by France, 1733-35. August III, 1734-63. In succession war favored by Emperor Charles VI upholds his Pragmatic Sanction. Unable to act against Prussia: Four powerful families refuse subsidies during the Austrian-Prussian wars.

Succession Wars

III Period. Plunder of a Nation, 1772-1918

Creature of Catherine I and Frederick II Provokes Catholics

1764-96. *Stanislas Poniatowski,* a creature of Catherine II. Liberty to dissenters provokes the Catholics who unite and form the defensive confederation of Bar and incite the Turks to attack Russia, who beats them—Russia advances into Poland; Austria and Prussia also advance. All take a slice.

Three Partitions

I Partition—Prussia, Russia and Austria take 5,000,000 people, want to maintain the elective monarchy, and the one man's veto, which is rejected by a diet of nobles; invasion by Russia

1793: *II Partition* between Catherine and William II. General insurrection under *Kosciusko,* 1794 attacked by the three powers, he is crushed. 1795. *III Partition between Russia, Austria and Prussia.* Russia had one-half—6,000,000 people.

Systematic Persecution in Russia and Prussia

Mild Treatment in Austria

Russian Poland is made a kingdom under a Russian prince. Oppression and persecution provoke three revolts, 1831, 1846, 1864, which only tighten the yoke. The Prussians carry on a systematic campaign against the welfare, the religion and the language of the people. The Austrians give them a mild rule.

Russia

GENERAL SURVEY—ORIGIN AND CHARACTER

History of Three Rivers and Cities

The history of Russia may be told by the history of its three rivers and their principal cities: The Dnieper with Kiev, the Volga with Moscow, and the Neva with Petrograd. Kiev was the metropolis till its destruction by the Mongols, Moscow supplanted it, till the building of a western capital, St. Petersburg now Petrograd.

Original Russians Ruthenians Southwest

Refined

The original Russians are the *Ruthenians or Little Russians.* They lived especially on the Dnieper River and tributaries, and occupied a great part of the famous Black Belt of Russia, the richest of the country. They are now divided between Gallicia in the northwest and Ukrania in the south. The Ruthenians have in turn belonged to Poland and to Russia, which finally held them. After the world's war they have proclaimed their independence from Russia. They are the most refined class in Russia.

Mixed Russians of the Northeast

The Great Russians, the people generally spoken of as Russians today are the descendants of Ruthenian colonists, who migrated to the great forest regions of northern Russia, and there mingled with the hardy Finnish tribes, and composed a mixed stock of great bodily strength.

Without natural boundaries or shelter, located about the headstreams of the rivers, where the divides are low, the Slavs of Russia spread over the vast expense of the even plains; but they were also exposed to the attacks of the Mongolians around them.

Without Natural Boundaries

Russians Expand

The fact that there was plenty of land and no obstacle in the way, was an invitation to a migratory life and created a nomadic spirit among the Russians. Instead of improving the lands where they were living and making a compact and formidable state, they were divided in numerous small countries too far distant to defend one another, and often became deadly enemies and joined invading tribes against their neighbors. The very fact that the Russians were widely scattered rendered them weak and feeble everywhere, and made their land for centuries a thoroughfare of migratory nations, and themselves the vassals and the slaves of the tribes that fixed their headquarters in their territories.

Isolated Countries Wasted and Subjugated

Nomads do Not Improve Lands

Often Conquered by Military Powers

That migratory instinct has persevered through the centuries and unsettled the Slavs, keeping them from improving any land. It was the main cause of serfdom being established, and maintained among the Russians longer than among any other people, a system that binds the persons to the land. It takes permanent settlers to improve estates, but that takes away the liberty and the initiative which make for energy and ambition. It is the main cause of the backwardness of the Russian people. The leading classes have made progress, but the masses have remained stationary. That is the main reason of the discontent, the unrest and the revolution that shake the Russians. For although the system was abolished,

Bound to the Soil by Serfdom

Which Kills Ambition

Fosters Discontent

1858-62 the effects of class division and antagonism still remain and will remain for generations to come.

I PERIOD—862-1073: BARBARISM

Anarchy Inroads

As mentioned before, there was no unity between the Russians, but there was division, which often degenerated in anarchy. They were subjected by the powerful among them, and exposed to the incursions of the Northmen and the Petchenegs around them.

About the middle of the ninth century to establish order, they called Swedish princes, whose dynasty reigned over 700 years, and produced many valiant and heroic rulers. 862-1598.

Ruric Dynasty Stops the Northmen Petchenegs

The first seat of their power was Novgorod. Coming from the country of the northern invaders, the Scandinavian dynasty was able to cope with their kinsmen, the daring searovers of the North. Towards the end of the ninth century, Kiev was made the headquarters of the Russians, whence they repelled the Petchenegs of the Black Sea and attacked Constantinople.

Separate States Under Grand Prince

Vladimir the Great, 972-1015, obtained the hand of Ann the sister of Basil II, the Greek Emperor of Constantinople. Greek missionaries spread Christianity and civilization.

Vladimir divided his kingdom among his twelve sons, giving the hegemony to the rulers of Kiev with the title of Grand Prince.

II PERIOD—1073-1224: DIVISION

Civilization Retarded

The conversion to Christianity could have unified the Russians among themselves and brought them in contact with the main body of the Christians, but the land was divided politically and religiously.

Equal Division Tears Russia

The system of equal division among the sons of the ruler prevailed and although the Grand Princes of Kiev were to exercise supremacy over the other princes, it was seldom that they could enforce their authority.

Yziaslaf, 1054-78, was the last Grand Prince who tried to unite the Russian states and succeeded for a time. But he was expelled, and had to flee to the western kingdoms.

Causes Internal Warfare

The division exposed the country to unceasing internal wars, and terrible devastations.

Main Principalities

The main principalities were: 1—Kiev, 1169-1328. 2—Wladimir, 1169-1328. 3—Smolenks, 1328. 4—Tchernigoff on Dnieper. 5—Ryazan and Murom. 6—

Republics

The Republic of Novgorod the Great. Novgorod (New Town) was built in the fifth century on the northern waterways and controlled the trade of Russia, which pushed the north ahead of the south. The great metropolis became a member of the Hanseatic league in 1276 and it remained independent until it was conquered by Ivan IV the Terrible, 1475. 7-8—Pskof and Viatka were mostly under the power of Novgorod. 9—Moscow was made great by Daniel the son of St. Alexander Newski.

Political Divisions Open Land to Asiatics

Because they were not united, the Russian principalities were conquered by the Mongols one after another. Because they were separated from western Europe they failed to get the help needed against the common enemy, the Mongols from Asia.

Church Independent from Constantinople and Rome

At the schism of Constantinople from Rome declared by Michael Cerularius, King Yaroslav separates his country from Constantinople, unwilling to depend upon her; and appointed Hilarion metropolitan without the approval of Constantinople.

There was no formal schism from Rome before a metropolitan originary from Constantinople declared himself separated under Valdimir II, monomach, 1113-25. However, this was not permanent as St. Alexander Newski died a Catholic. But other Byzantians became patriarchs and accentuated the division.

Bishops Subject to Princes

The isolation of the bishops from the center of Christendom made them the tools of the secular power, as they could have no recourse to any outside authority.

Although not dependent on Constantinople, the Russians were under the influence of the inactive Greek Church and the degenerate Greek civilization.

Deprived of the Solid Western Progress

They were deprived of the virile spirit that animated the Latin churches, and the simple and solid civilization of the west, which was the only one that would have suited their half barbarian populations.

The Mongol masters naturally endeavored to win the good will of the state church as a means of order and government and bestowed their protection upon it. However they could not wean the Orthodox from the stronger allegiance to their national rulers.

III PERIOD—1238-1480: MONGOL YOKE

Invasion

1221. The first invasion routed the Comans and the Russians, at the Kalka River, 1234-40. The second invasion under Batu burned many Russian cities; (Kiev, 1240) they could not reach Novgorod which was protected by the waters, and turned to the west; they routed the Polish forces and the Teutonic Knights at Leignitz, but they were stopped before Olmutz — they devastated Hungary, and they returned east when the western princes were marching

Ravages

against them. The grand Khan Ogatai had died in the Orient, and they returned to Asia.

Kiptschak of the Golden Horde

The Tartars established their headquarters at Ssarai on the Volga. It was called the Kiptschak of the Golden Horde. It was like a Mongol camp in Europe.

The Tartars did not take possession of the soil nor lay their hands on the local administration. They simply camped in Europe, and kept a hold on the country for two centuries and a half. They demanded an oath of allegiance from the princes and a certain sum of money from the people.

Yoke of 250 Years

Seeing that resistance was fruitless, the princes soon became reconciled to their new position. Instead of seeking to throw off the Khan's authority, they sought to gain his favor.

Princes Subdued Seek Favors

The Mongols exacted that every prince should personally pay homage to the grand Khan, first in Asia at Karakorum (two princes perished on the long road), then at least at Ssarai, when that capital was erected. They exacted an enormous tribute from the Russian princes; the princes in their turn became the oppressors and the extortioners of their people, to get the tribute together.

Homage

Enormous Tribute

In order to weaken their subjects and keep them under subjection the Mongols incited the princes to fight one another, so that war was frequently raging in Russia between Russian princes and completely ruined the land. The havoc wrought in Russia impoverished the country for several centuries to come.

Divisions Accentuated

The power of the Golden Horde was strong, and could weather every storm. But two facts undermined it: the dynasty of Batu died out, 1361, and

Weakening of Kiptschak

Tamerlane overthrew the Khanate of Ssarai. It was extinguished in 1554. There arose in its stead the Mongol Khanates Kazan, 1452-1622. Astrakhan and Krim, 1498-1785.

Perversion to Islam

About 1272 the Tartars embraced Mohammedanism and became ardent apostles of Islam, which prevented any mixing up with the Russians.

Yoke Restores Unity Strengthens Autocracy

Larned: "Upon Russia's political sovereignty, the Tartar domination had two parallel effects. It hastened national unity and it strengthened autocracy. The country which under the appanage system fell to pieces, was bound together by foreign oppression as by a chain of iron. Having constituted himself Suzerain of the grand Kniazes (princes) whom he appointed and dethroned at will, the Khan conferred on them his authority. The Asiatic tyranny of which they were the delegates empowered them to govern tyrannically.

"Their despotism over the Russians was derived from their servitude under the Tartars. Every germ of free government, whether aristocratic or democratic, was stifled—nothing remained but one power, the 'veliki kniaz,' the autocrat, and such now, after more than 500 years is the basis of the state."

Rivalry of Russian Princes

There was a great contention to get the title of grand prince; that dignity was held by the rulers of Kief, (before the Mongols) of Wladimir, 1169, and of Moscow 1328.

Encroachment of Westerners

Meanwhile the Lithuanians expanded in the north and the Poles in the west.

St. Alexander Newski (1268 is a national Hero and Saint of the Russians, because he defeated the Teutonic Knights, the Finns, and the Swedes. It was his son who become grand prince at Moscow.

The Cossacks. 1224, Flying before the Mongol hordes of Batu, the Cossacks seek shelter in the islands of the Don and the Dnieper, and organize for the purpose of defense, and soon for the purpose of rapine, enlisting the barbarous tribes of the country into their service. Their leaders are called Hetmen, i. e. chiefs.

Fugitives Seek Shelter on Islands of the Dnieper and Don

The Dnieper, Zoporogian or cataract Cossacks recognized the Lithuanian dukes and Polish kings.

In 1654 on account of a murder they joined the Russians and attacked Poland till they were beaten by Sobieski, 1673.

The Don Cossacks—three bands disperse before the forces of Ivan the Terrible. Yermark, one of them, starts the conquest of Siberia.

The Cossacks live in common and observe celibacy as long as they stay together. They are the defenders of religion and country and form an intermediate tribe or cast, superior to the peasantry and inferior to the nobles. They constitute a military people inhabiting southern Russia, and are employed as guardians of its frontier, not only in Europe but also in Asia.

A Military Brotherhood

IV PERIOD—1480-1685: CENTRALIZATION

The princes of Moscow obtained the title of Grand Prince through their pliancy. They loved the Tartars beyond measure, as long as the Khan was irresistibly powerful, and they obtained the hereditary title of Grand Prince. When the Golden Horde fell to pieces they put themselves at the head of the liberation movement, which freed the country from the Tartar yoke (1480).

Moscow

Grand Hereditary Principality

The last Rurics overthrew the power of the Mongols, and took all their authority. They knew how to subjugate the people and to impose their supreme authority. *Ivan III,* 1462-1505, founded autocracy upon the ruin of every princely, popular and religious liberty. After the fall of Constantinople he assumed the double headed eagle. His Grandson *Ivan IV the Terrible,* 1534-83, seized upon every power. He overthrew the Kiptschak and assumed the absolute authority of the Grand Khans. He crushed every resistance under his iron heels. He was the most finished tyrant known in history. He was frivolous and debauched like Nero, stupid and ferocious like Caligula; full of dissimulation like Tiberius and Louis XI.

Ivan III Consolidates

Ivan the Terrible Establishes Supreme Autocracy

Fifteen Years Succession War

After the extinction of the Rurics, 1598, the succession troubles brought to the throne of Russia the Pole Ladislav, who however, refusing to adopt the official religion, was driven away. In 1613, the dynasty of the Romanoffs conquered the throne. They endeavored to reconquer the lost provinces and to restore the absolutism of the old dynasty.

First Romanoff Reconstruction

V. PERIOD—1685-1918: ROMANOFF WORLD POWER

Peter the Great

Peter the Great, 1685-1725, made a world-power of Russia. The long subjection to the barbarian Mongols of Asia, had thrown that country backward several centuries. Peter found it stagnant and barbarian. He endeavored to modernize the Russians by introducing the progressive policy adopted by other nations.

Russia Modernized

Westernized

Russia was isolated from the rest of Europe by the great Polish state which had extended across the continent from the Baltic Sea to the Black Sea.

Russia had no access to the Baltic Sea. Peter acquired its shores and built his capital on its waters

in order to make it a western power. He gave an immense impulse to civilization in old Russia. But they overdid it by their conquering tactics.

Successors in World Politics

Peter's successors followed his world policy. Catherine II added whole kingdoms to the empire. Alexander I (1801-25) stopped the triumphant march of Napoleon towards the conquest of the world, and introduced many salutary measures. Western Turkestan was conquered, the Caucasian countries were annexed, so that the Caspian Sea became a Russian Lake. To reach Constantinople and the open sea all the year round became the main policy of Russia, but it was thwarted by the western powers in the Crimean war, 1854-55. New efforts were made in the Russo-Turkish War and would have opened the seas but the advance was stopped by the Congress of Berlin, 1878. An open seaport on the Pacific Ocean was sought by Russia. Port Arthur was granted by China, and a continental Russian railway was built between Europe and Asia, but Japan objected and fell upon the advancing Bear and routed him in Manchuria and she herself planted her feet on continental Asia.

Napoleon Stopped

Sea Conquered

Constantinople Policy Thwarted

Pacific Ocean Policy Thwarted

Hostility of the Powers

The powers of Europe and Asia viewed with apprehension the relentless advance of the Russian empire, which threatened them all and they combined to arrest its farther expansion.

Neglect of Interior Development

These gigantic strides were only outward achievements full of dangers for Russia itself, because they drew the attention of the government from the interior improvement of the country and culture of the people, who were left in poverty and ignorance. The men and means of the country were absorbed by those gigantic wars of expansion.

Wars Ruin the People

Repressive Measures

Russian autocracy kept down the aspirations of the people and stopped their rightful complaints and tyrannized the population. Secret plots and open revolts were succeeding one another to get relief, and finally the absolute empire was overthrown and replaced by a republic.

Revolution and Republic

Chronicles.

I. PERIOD OF WILDERNESS AND HEROISM—862-1073

Two Founders

Ruric Dynasty, 862-1580. Three Swedish brothers around Novgorod. Ruric. Two other Scandinavians attack and take Kiev.

Ruric Dynasty 862

879. *Oleg Ruric's* cousin takes Kiev, conquers the Dnieper, repels the Petchenegs, *Kief Capital* attacks Constantinople.

912-47. Igor attacks Constantinople; his widow Olga a Christian.

Conversion

980-1013. *Wladimir I the Great* marries Anna, christianizes, unites monarchy, but divides between twelve sons under Great Princes of Kiev.

II. PERIOD 1073-1224—POLITICAL AND RELIGIOUS DIVISION

Princely Marriages

Jaroslav marries his three sisters to western kings, establishes independent patriarchate of Kiev. Schism from Constantinople.

Schism

1113-25. Wladimir II, Monomach: formal schism from Rome—promoted by Byzantine Metropolitans, who rule Kiev.

III. PERIOD 1238-1480—MONGOL YOKE

Invasions Yoke of 250 Years

1224. I. Mongol invasion wins at Kalka. 1237-40. II. Invasion of the west wins at Leignitz. Yoke of 250 years. Under Khans of Kiptschak of Ssarai, Great Princes live at Wladimir, 1167 and 1326 at Moscow, where Yurii fixes the patriarchate.

1425. *Wasili I* deposes Isidor, patriarch of Moscow, who had signed the union of Florence.

IV. PERIOD 1480-1685—CENTRALIZATION

The Last Rurics Fasten Autocracy Upon the Land

Dmitri Donsko inflicts the first defeat to the Mongols at Kulikov, 1386, and thus breaks the spell of their power.

1462-1505. *Ivan III the Great,* consolidator of Russia, overthrows the Kiptschak, 1480, fights Poland. He subdues the Russian princes and founds an absolute autocracy.

He marries the niece of Constantine XII. At the fall of Constantinople, 1453, Ivan assumes double-headed eagle. 1505, Wasili IV develops Russia.

1534-84. *Ivan IV the Terrible.* Bad under six wives—good under Anastasia, the seventh. He organizes a bodyguard called Strelitz (shooters) to execute his orders and keeps the turbulent nobles in respect—he murders at Novgorod and Moscow. He establishes serfdom to attach the nomadic people to the soil. He subdues the khan of Khazan, and Astrakhan. Cossack Yearmak commences the conquest of Siberia, 1580-86, to promote the fur trade. Czar is beaten by Poland and Sweden; begins intercourse with England and with western world.

Blood-thirsty Ivan IV

Serfdom

Tartars Subdued

Feodor rings bells, brother Dmitri perishes, 1584-1598, the last Ruric. Brother-in-law, Boris Goudonoff, 1598-1605. Chaos: usurpators invoke Poland; who proclaims Czar Wladislav, 1610-12; hated because Pole and Catholic.

Succession Wars

Romanoff Dynasty, 1613-1762.

Michael I expels the Pole, restores peace, cannot defend Finland against Sweden, nor Smolenks against Poland which are retaken by Alexis.

The First Romanoff Tries to Repair and Restore

Alexis, 1645-76, retakes Ukrania, and attacks Cossacks Two sons of his first marriage, Feodor III, Ivan V, raised by their full sister, Sophie, who tries to kill Peter of the second marriage.

V. PERIOD 1685-1919—WORLD EMPIRE

1685-1725. *Peter I the Great* wishes to westernize his empire and bring it in the family of the civilized nations; three objects:

1. Advances. Peter studies the navies of Holland and England; is recalled by a revolt of the Strelitz who are suppressed, seizes Crimea.

Navy

2. Sea power. Defeated by Charles XII of Sweden who invades Ukraine, he crushes him at Pultowa, obtains Baltic ports and founds St. Petersburg. Conquest on the Caspian Sea.

Seaports

3. Absolutism, centralization, bureaucracy, commerce, industry. Patriarch of Moscow, replaced by Holy Synod, under the heel of the Czar. Frightens to death the retrograde Czarowitch Alexis.

Reforms

Peter I had two wives, Eudocia Lapu, whence Alexis, father of Peter II; and Catherine I, whence Elizabeth, Czarine and Anna Holstein, mother of Peter III.

Five Relatives Succeeded Him. Relatives of Peter, 1725, wife

Succession Intrigues Niece Anna

Catherine I; son Alexis, 1730-40, *Niece Anna:* cruelties of Biron, designates as successor, her grand nephew, *Ivan VI,* 1740-41, who is thrown in prison by Peter's daughter, *Elizabeth,* 1741-69.

Daughter Elizabeth

She removes Germans from court, raises Holstein prince to throne of Sweden, obtains one-half Finland, helps Mary Theresa in Austrian and Prussian war, governs through favorites and ignorant Russians. Grandson Peter III, son of Ann=Charles of Holstein Gottorp.

Holstein Dynasty, 1762-1917.

Catherine I

Peter III, grandson of Peter I, inclines to Protestantism, is dethroned by wife *Catherine II* of Anhalt, 1762-96. She raises Poniatowski to throne of Poland and makes three partitions of that land. Through *Souwaroff* conquers Crimea, controls Black Sea, built two-hundred villages on Volga. Rebellion of Cossacks; republic Putchef suppressed, favors learning; keeping Jesuits and religious liberty—a libertine herself.

Paul I, 1796, nobleman, develops the interior.

Alexander Ruins Napoleon

1801-25. *Alexander I,* fights Napoleon at Tilsit, accepts secret treaty to divide Europe with Napoleon. Infringements of continental blockade, invasion of Russia by Napoleon who finds the land ruined, Moscow burning and is conquered himself. Bessarabia, one-half Moldavia taken from Turkey.

Insurrection of Poland Made a Province

1825-55. *Nicholas I,* firm against Decembrist conspirators, cruel against Catholics. (a) Despotism of brother Constantine in Poland. Insurrection of Poland. Radzivil Skrzynecki, 1830-32, land reduced to a Russian province. (b) Takes one-half Armenia from Persia and Pruth from Turkey. Is stopped by England and France. *Crimean War,* 1854-55. Capture of Sebastopol, treaty of Paris proclaims the neutrality of the Black Sea.

Crimean War

Serfdom Abolished

1855. *Alexander II*—Abolition of serfdom for 45,000,000 men; still Nihilists conspire blowing up the winter palace; murder on the day he was to give a constitution. Polish insurrection; cruelties against Catholics.

Steps Toward Constantinople

Steps toward Constantinople.

(a) Insurrection in Crete.

(b) Raising of a Russophile in Afghanistan; war with England.

(c) Conquests in Turkestan.

(d) Gortschakoff claims Black Sea.

PETER, THE GREAT
THE FOUNDER OF MODERN RUSSIA
1685-1725

(e) Insurrection of Herzegovina, Bosnia, Servia, but Turkish revenge in Bulgarian horrors.

1876-77. *Russo-Turkish War.* **Russo-Turkish War**

Capture of Kars in Armenia, Plevna in Bulgaria, 1878, *Berlin Congress* grants Armenian territories to Russia, Bosnia and Herzegovina to Austria, independence to Servia (Milan 1882), Bulgaria: (A) north of Balkans—with Sofia as capital (1879, Alexander of Battenberg); (B) south of Balkans. Roumelia receives a Christian governor. England received Cyprus. Roumania north of Danube. Charles I, Hohenzollern, 1881. **Stopped by Berlin Congress**

1881-94, *Alexander III* drives away 300,000 Jews. 1894-1917. *Nicholas II,* abolition of one-half of land tax; amnisty to political offenders; but Russification of Finland. Congress of The Hague proposed. Advance in Orient checked, 1899: Port Arthur obtained, railway authorized. 1904, Japanese war: defeats Russians; Corea and Manchuria are conquered by Japan. **Asiatic Advance Stopped**

1905. Revolution at home, liberty of conscience, press, association granted, rights guaranteed to the non-Russian subjects: but not granted. Duma (National Assembly) without power. Against Bismarck's conquests and triple alliance a dual alliance with France was contracted. **Reforms Few**

1914-18. *World War*—Successes—reverses. Revolution, overthrow of Czar—Republic: rule of liberals, anarchy of Bolsheviki. **War Republic**

THE ROMANOFF'S WORLD EMPIRE

MONOGRAPH

Right of Nations to Reach the Seas Not to Threaten Their Rivals

In our centuries of commerce and industry, interior countries ought to have access to the salt water, which is the modern world route.

Nobody could object to the use of the whole world by the nations; provided the claim does not have to extend any power to an expansion that is dangerous to the other nations of the world.

The Muscovites Needed an Outlet to the Sea but Not the Whole of Maritime Countries

Russia, surrounded by frozen oceans, or impassable mountains had a right to the open seas somewhere. Peter the Great claimed and took that right and established his capital on the Baltic waters, but his successors wanted to conquer and rule all the

neighboring lands that border the seas, and beside any land that lay in their way and could afford them valuable commodities. It was not access to the open sea, but conquest of the maritime countries, that were sought by the Muscovites. By such policy they menaced the nations of the world and undermined and ruined their own people; the free states leagued against such aggressive enemies, and their own subjects overthrew the costly Empire, and reared a republic in its stead.

They Aroused Their Neighbors and Embittered Their Own People

There are means to secure a right of way through the lands and isthmuses belonging to other nations. Such right of way ought to be sufficient for all peaceable purposes. Such means ought to be provided in the world's peace conferences. If peace can be enforced among the nations, the highways of trade and travel can be kept open, the isthmuses and straits not being excepted.

Problem of Peace Conference

Russia had natural boundaries of immense size. The European Russia of Peter the Great was bounded north and south by the sea, east by the Ural mountains. It had access to the ocean. He owned more than the half of the continent, more than anyone could administer rightly. But Catherine II wanted Poland and conspired with her grasping neighbor, Frederick II; together they accentuated the anarchy that raged in the Polish state and they mercilessly dissected that unfortunate nation. They had destroyed a harmless power that had prevented many wars in Eastern Europe. If the Kingdom of Poland had existed until today, it would have been a rampart of peace between Russia and Prussia.

Russia Needed No Expansion Having One-half of Europe

If Russia needed the open sea in the south, it did not need to possess Constantinople to pass through the Dardanelles. Still that has been the continual claim of the Muscovites. It has been their aim in two wars against Turkey, and they would have attained their object if the European powers had not prevented it. Constantinople in the hands of any predatory world power, would give the control of Europe and Asia, and the free nations of the earth could not allow that strategic point to any power, bent on world domination.

She Attacks Constantinople Twice

Thwarted by the Nations

Russia owned Siberia, i. e., the northern plains of Asia bounded by the oceans and the mountains, which constitute one-third of that continent. But the Romanoffs were not satisfied, they desired the Caspian Sea countries, Caucasia and Turkestan, and they secured most all of them. They pitilessly pounced upon unsuspecting populations hidden in the mountains and subjected them to their yoke.

Having One-third of Asia She Attacked Everything in Her Reach and Got the Caspian Countries

The Moscovites did not cease to carry on intrigue in Persia, Tibet, Mongolia and Manchuria to get control of those countries. They obtained from China, Port Arthur on the open sea, which would give her a formidable position on the Pacific. Japan protested, got ready, attacked her advancing foe before he was ready, beat him on land and on sea, and prevented the establishment of a menace on the Pacific Ocean, across the border seas.

Advances in Asia Thwarted by Japan

There was no more relentless and more brutal power than Russia, always reaching for some more territory to grasp, and people to oppress.

Relentless Aggressor

What was the object? To steal the best countries of the world for her own benefit and thus to secure an impregnable position to dominate the universe. The

fact that the Moscovites conquered and annexed so many nations and schemed for more was evident proof that they aimed at the control of the world.

What Had the Romanoffs to Bestow Upon Mankind?

Why should the Romanoffs rule the world? What could they give to other nations? In what were they ahead? What were their achievements? What was their standing among peoples in liberty, culture, learning and comfort? The Russian people had been retarded several hundred years by the Mongol barbarians who ruled and exploited them, and kept them in ignorance for 250 years. The two centuries that followed did not wipe out that retrogression into which the Mongols had thrown them. Peter the Great found them half barbarians; nor even did the efforts of the aggressive Czars for the last 200 years imbue the Russian people with any high degree of civilization or comfort. The Russian nation are the most backward in well-being and culture among all the peoples of Europe, except the slaves of Turkish despotism. The people may be called semi-barbarians. Why should they be entitled to rule over peoples more advanced than they are themselves?

The Mongols Had Delayed Them 500 Years

Why Should Half Barbarians Dominate Progressive Peoples?

Refined Poles Under Brutal Russians

The Poles are much more refined than the Russians; still they have been suffering, bleeding and sighing for the last 140 years under the yoke of brutal masters!

Learned People Only a Few

It is true there are learned and wealthy classes among the Russians, and the learned people are advanced in modern life. That is just the trouble, that there are too many ignorant and poor people, and too few progressive and comfortable ones. If the learned classes are so enlightened, why have they not brought light and learning, comfort and happiness to

Masses in Want and Ignorance

the immense majority of the poor laborers that surround them.

Russians Do Not Know How to Govern Themselves

The great indictment against the rulers of Moscovy is that they do not know how to govern their own land, and attempt to govern peoples far superior to them.

With their illimited territory, their inexhaustible resources, they have done little, and the people are as backward as they were in the beginning of the Middle Ages.

Incapable Government

Autocracy Ruling by Bureaucrats

The Russian government was the worst among the Christian governments! There was an autocrat at the head of everything with an army of bureaucrats that goaded and tyrannized the people. The misgovernment has been such that the masses have organized in secret societies to get relief from oppression or extortion. The extreme socialists, the destructive nihilists, the anarchistic Bolsheviki filled the land, and have gone to such extremes as the only way in their mind to overturn the present system of inequality, iniquity and despotism; exile, execution and robbery. It is a protest against the wholesale deportation to Siberia and the system under which Russia is groaning.

Reaction: Extreme Revolutionaries

Ruinous Wars of Conquest

Another of the great indictments against the wars of conquest and the building of a world empire is the immense sacrifices in men and means required.

It is the main cause of poverty and discontent and revolution. For such are not for the benefit of the people, but for the glory of the rulers. The wars had more to do with the unrest, and the revolution in Russia, than any other cause.

Means of Unification

Brutal means of unification were resorted to in order to assimilate the different races to the Russian people and make of them one nation; but far from blending the different races together, they only served to em-

bitter them against one another; such are the imposition of the orthodox church, the proscription of the national languages and customs. You might as well kill a person as to make him give up his religion, his tongue and his customs, which are like parts of himself, still that is a campaign in which the Muscovites were continually engaged.

Every Race

In no country of the world was the state religion so imperious, its ministers so subservient to the government, and so haughty with the people, as in Russia. In no country have the state clergy done less for the advancement of the poor, in no country are they less educated and less considered by the masses, than in Orthodox Russia. Still the clergy are the ones that push the government to extreme measures to compel every new race that is conquered to embrace the orthodox religion. They have lost the half of their flocks in ancient Russia, and try now to impose their state religion on every conquered country. In no country has there been such a violent and brutal persecution against all dissenters as in Russia. Whole Polish or Ruthenian provinces were forced into the Russian establishment.

Religious Despotism

Efforts to Change Language and Customs

Supreme efforts were made and violent measures were taken to stamp out the languages and the customs of the subject peoples; but it was all in vain. It served only to impress more vividly upon the enslaved races the despotism of their masters.

Collapse Revolt of Nations and of Subjects

What is the result of this campaign for world empire? It ended in the collapse of a power that had every prospect of life and progress and the revolt of all enslaved nations, who now will recover their liberty.

The empire was overthrown and a republic established by the people who had so long been tyrannized and robbed by the bureaucracy of the czars. Unhappily it was exploited by the Bolsheviki.

The Mongolians

CHARACTER

The Mongolians are the yellow race that occupies most of the northern and cold parts of the globe, although it dwells also in southern parts of Asia and Europe. Internat. Enc. "They possess as a rule, straight coarse hair (abundant on the head, less on the face, very scanty on the body), a bracycephalous (or mesocephalous) head form, prominent cheekbones, a roundish face, small nose, and small black eyes with overshadowing brows. Their stature is medium or below the average."

Character

Physical

Ethnography. Geo. Gerland. "Disproportion in build is shown pretty uniformly in a thick head, short, thick neck, the rump a little too long and lank extremities."

Round Head, Flat Face, Not Proportioned

Century Dict. The chief characteristics are as follows: "A very short skull, slight superciliary ridges, broad cheekbones, short and broad nose and yellowish complexion."

It is an olive or white yellow, turning sometimes nearly white.

The Mongolians are slow and gloomy. Although the Chinese had an early civilization, many Mongolians have not emerged from the tribal nomadic state. They have made some progress in arts and letters, but little in sciences. However, they are not an incapable race, and some have become highly developed, such as the Chinese and the Hungarians. That depends greatly on their environment or their moral or religious system. The Mongolians in or around Europe have been physically improved, those who have moral principles, as the Christains, have reached as high a progress as the aboriginal Europeans themselves.

Moral

Racial Statistics, the Mongolians in Europe

European Settlers.

Natives

The Ugro-Finns were natives or neighbors of Europe and became Europeanized and somewhat Aryanized.

Finns

In northwestern Europe the Finns form a distinct population on the Baltic with their capital at Helsingfords. Many of the more southern ones descended into the Danubian countries, where they carried on a struggle of centuries with the Greek empire and with the Slavic populations.

Asiatic Invaders.

Monoglian Invaders Nomads

There were seven considerable Mongol peoples who migrated to and settled in Europe, to-wit: The Alans, the Avars, the Petchenegs, the Comans, the Huns, the Mongols and the Turks, the three latter caused world-wide movements, and they are taken up in the general history of the world.

These invaders were Asiatics who had not emerged from the Nomadic state and fastened it upon parts of Europe for a millenium longer. Although the fine climate

Not Quickly Improved

of Europe gave them some of the physical qualities of the Aryan race, they did not become thoroughly civilized in spite of many centuries of association with civilized people.

THE UGRO-FINNS

Finns Progressive Mongolians

The Finns are one of the northwestern branches of the Mongolian races, and they are the most advanced among them; some of their descendents rank among the leading nations of Europe.

The Ugro-Finns were living east and north of the Slavs about the Volga and the Neva basins and the Ural Mountains, and they were the first to feel the shock of the invading savages of Asia. Naturally such repeated assaults were bound to keep back their development. There came from Asia the terrible Huns, the Alans, the Avars, the Petchenegs, the Comans, the Mongols and the Turks. There arose in Europe the Bulgarians and the Magyars, who had been rendered fierce by the very contact with the Asiatic hordes, that were of their own race. However, the Europeans were amenable to culture, lost their fierceness and took their place among the cultured nations of the continent.

First Exposed to Savage Invasions

The Finns were further exposed to the growing and expanding power of the Slavs, who spread over mostly all modern Russia.

Exposed to the Rivalry of the Slavs

It is true the Bulgarians were kept in savage conditions by the incessant struggle against the Turks and other Asiatic invaders hovering around the Black Sea.

Bulgarians Kept in Fierce Conditions

The Magyars, on the contrary, never were reduced under the brutalizing yoke of the Turks, they were softened and refined by their conversion under King St. Stephen, and became one of the impregnable ramparts of Europe against the armed and savage Turks.

SOME WHITE AND MIXED INVADERS AND SETTLERS

There were also white races in Asia who migrated to Europe in the centuries closely preceding or following the Christian era.

Some White People

It is useful to observe here that there was in Asia a contiguous band of Nomadic Caucasian races stretching as far as the Pacific Ocean, and struggling with the Mongolians for existence if not for supremacy. Such were the Saccae, the Getae: Great Getae (Massagetae), Little

Getae (Thyrsagetae), etc., the Cathayans reaching China, which the westerners named Cathay. They formed part of the Scythians. There were in Europe the Getae, the Goths and the Khazars. The latter were a sedentary and commercial people.

Iran and Turan

The secular conflict between the Mongolians and the Aryans was most bitter in the wars between the Turanians and the Iranians, ranging from the fourth to the seventh century of Christ. It is then the names of Iran (Aryan) and Turan came in vogue, as distinguishing the white and yellow races.

Some Invaders Had a Mixture of Aryan Blood

The Alans and the Avars seem to have been a mixture of Aryans and Turanians, but they entered Europe as wasting savages. Many had blue eyes, etc., like the Aryans, and they really mixed with the Teutons, as the Alans accompanying the Goths into Spain.

Some Mongolians Are Slavicised

In the course of centuries, some of the Mongolian nomads or movers became so much mixed with the Slavs that the Bulgars became Bulgarized Slavs and for practical purposes have many Slavonic characteristics.

Sketch of Savage Conditions Prevailing

In order to give an idea of the state of eastern Europe and of the conditions in which the Finns and the Slavs lived, a sketch is presented of the different invading powers that harassed them, one after another. Then another sketch is given of the Mohammedan menace, that stood armed for more than a thousand years to conquer, enslave and brutalize first them, then all of Europe, and that maintained that state of warfare up to modern times. Elsewhere is presented the struggle in the Balkan peninsula and the barbarism in which it was kept by the relentless warfare.

Chronicles—Nomadic Empires

ALANS—60 B. C.-418 A. D.

From Baltic to the Jaxartes

The Alans and Roxalani people ruled the Samoyedic, and Finno-Ugrian tribes of northern Europe from the Baltic Sea

to the Ural Mountains and northwestern Asia as far east as the Jaxartes.

Moved by Yuechi South

The Yuechi (Aryan) displace or conquer them. Part of the European branch is driven southward by the Yuechi, 161 B. C., subjugate the Dahae and Aspasiacæ east of the Caspian, but is driven north and west of that sea by the Saccœ of Kangka, to whom they became tributary. They establish themselves between the Don, the Caspian and the Caucasus. Their center seems to have been north of Azov. Their king, an ally of Mithridates of Pontus, is said to have sent him 200,000 horsemen. They spread their sway to the Baltic where their princes Aesir (Asiatics) continue to rule the Goths. They come in the Scandinavian mythology.

Settle Between Don and Caspian Sea

Rule Goths

Part of the Asiatic branch lose territory to the Yuechi. In alliance with the Hyrcanians they invade Media and drive out King Pacorus, A. D. 75, and hold his wife for ransom; they are driven out by Pacorus, allied to Tiridates of Parthia. In alliance with the king of Iberia, they invade Median and Parthian territory, 113, and are expelled by Tacitus. Some fall under the hegemony of the Khazars, the Bulgarians or Volga Finns; others take refuge in Armenia under the leadership of Vound and settle on the banks of the Araxes.

Those East of Caspian

West Under Huns

They are merged into the Gothic empire. Defeated by the Huns on the Tanais, many pass under their sway, 375; many enter their army; many join the Suevi and Vandals and the Westgoths in the invasion of Gaul, 406; Spain, 409; and found kingdom of southeastern Spain. Their king, Ataces, is slain by Wallia the Westgoth 415, and again they are defeated by the Westgoths, but they pass from them to the Huns at the battle of Chalons and nearly change the result, 451.

EMPIRE OF THE HUNS, 374-453

A. D. 93., the northern branch is crushed, 200,000 submit to China and the bulk flees westward to the Urals, 171. The southern Huns and Chinese are beaten by the Sienpi (Dardjegwe); part remain in Kan Su (China).

375 First Invasion

The northern Huns flee to Ural basin after 93 and the southern after 229. 374, they conquer the Ussuns (white Huns or Nephtalites) and Alans and commence the assault on Europe. About 400 the Juans press them westward and the invasion of Europe

is general. Under Balamber the Huns receive the adhesion of the Gepidae and Heruli, and overthrow the Ostrogoths, 375, expel the Visigoths, 376, and grasp the hegemony over eastern Europe.

Mundzuk is succeeded by his brothers Octar and Ruas. All Gothic and Slavonic nations are subdued, together with the Thuringians and Suevians. Ruas receives an annual tribute from the East Romans, with the title of General. In 430 the brothers,

433 Second Invasion

Attila (453) and Bleda (444), rule from China to the Rhine and from the Black Sea to the Baltic. They receive from Constantinople heavy tribute, and guarantee of free trade and extradition of criminals and deserters. Attila attacks the Persian Empire, ravages Media; wars with Burgundians and extends his sway to the Rhone, 434-37. He ravages Thrace and Illyria, 441-45. He defeats the East Roman or Greek Empire in three battles, he penetrates Greece to the Thermopylae; and receives increased tribute. He devastates the empire to the gates of Constantinople and exacts a heavy indemnity and triple tribute. He claims the half of the west Roman Empire, as the betrothed husband of Honoria, sister of Emperor Valentinian. He is acknowledged as overlord by the Vandals in return for assistance against the Westgoths and the Romans. 450 he invades Germany, makes the king of the east Franks his vassal, and receives tribute from Denmark. He conquers the Burgundians and besieges Orleans; he is defeated by the Romans at Chalons, 451. In 452 he invades Italy, sacks Aquileia and Venetia, but spares Rome and leaves Italy at the request of Pope Leo. He marries the Gothic princess Hilda and dies, 453, in Pannonia. The Goths and Germans revolt under the Gepidae.

Attila Sways Europe and West Asia

Empire Broken Up

Ellak, son of Attila, is defeated and killed at Netad and his empire collapses. Another son, Dengeric, 453, returns northward. He invades the Danubian provinces, but is defeated by the East Roman generals Anthemius and Anagastus, 466. He renews the invasions and is defeated and slain, 468-469. The Hunnish prince Ernak is allowed to establish a vassal principality in the territory of the empire, near the mouth of the River Danube; and another was established up the River Danube. The rest of the Huns locate between the Dnieper and Ural Rivers and gradually pass under the hegemony of the White Huns and the Khazars.

Remnants Settled

Some Mixed Peoples.

The following peoples were much mixed with Aryans, especially the Khazars.

EMPIRE OF THE AVARS—546-660.

Conquer Eastern Europe North and South

On the overthrow of the Juan Juan empire in northern Asia, part of the dominant tribe of Ugurs, ouars, ouar-khuni or Varchonites move westward and conquer all northeastern Europe, including Hunno-Finnish and Hunno-Slavic principalities of southern and central Russia (Bulgarians), and have the hegemony over the eastern Slavs and European Finno-Samoyeds. 550-570, they subdue Khazaria, but lose it to the Karluk Turks.

Help Lombards

They receive the adhesion of the Lombards and assist them to overthrow the empire of the Gepidae, 560-568, and rule to the River Enns, boundary of the Bavarians. The Lombards under King Albion conquer Italy and become independent, 569.

The Avars protect Bertacides, the Lombard, 662. Many enter the services of Grimoald of Lombardy, but are expelled.

Struggle With Constantinople

The Avars invade Thrace, but they are repelled by the East Roman Tiberius, 570; they defeat him, 574. Baian ravages Thrace and threatens Constantinople, 587, but he is driven back across the Danube and makes peace, 593.

The Avars defeat the East Romans, 594, and are defeated by them 595, 598, defeat them, 600; occupy Thrace, 604, attack Heraclius, 619, but make peace with him. They contract alliance with Khosrau of Persia, and unsuccessfully attempt the capture of Constantinople, 624-26.

Croatians and Servians are established against them. 630, the Slavs revolt in the west; 660, the Bulgarians revolt in the east and south. They overthrow the Avars and make them tributary.

Confined to Hungary 778

Subjugate Neighbors

Conquered by Charlemagne

The Avars are confined to Hungary with their capital or Royal Ring between the Danube and the Theiss. During the civil wars in the Bulgarian empire, they became independent, subjugate Bavaria and Friuli, 778. They are conquered by Charlemagne, 791-799, with the aid of the Moravians who occupy part of their territory (north Hungary). They unsuccessfully attempt a revolt. Harrassed by the Slavs, their last remnant is allowed by Charlemagne to take refuge on the right bank of the Rhine, 805.

EMPIRE OF THE KHAZARS—198-1016 A. D.

First Empire, 198-476.

Scythian Origin

The white Khazars, Akatziri or Accizuri, probably descended from the Agathyrsæ Scythians, and their overlords the Basilean (Royal) Scythians, invade Armenia, 198, but are expelled. They

Buffer State

become independent of the Alans, 277. They assist the Persians against the Armenians, 280-300; with Romans invade Persia, 363. Instigated by the Romans, they attack the Huns; but are disunited, and reduced by Attila, who cedes them to his oldest son as Viceroy of Asia and Sarmatia. The Khazars and white Ogurs (Sarogurs) or Alans break through the Persian defenses and occupy all Armenia, Georgia and Iberia.

Second Empire, 495-1016.

North of Caucasus Invade South

The Khazars overthrow the last Hunnish prince and become independent between the Volga, Don and Caucasus, and make inroads southwards into Iberia, Albania and Armenia, 496.

Khazaria is ravaged by Khosrau I, of Persia, 558-560; conquered by the Turks, who hold it twenty years (560-580). Khan

Zuebel, Ally of Heraclius

Zuebal, ally, vassal and son-in-law of Heraclius, furnishes him with 40,000 cavalry for the invasion of Persia, 624, and occupies Crimea, which becomes known as Little Khazaria. He assists

Arab Invasion Retaliated by Counter Invasion

Constantinople, to defend Armenia against the Arabs, 640.

651, Khazaria is invaded by Arabs; the capital is removed from Semender (Tarkhu) to Itil in the Delta of Volga. The Khazars retaliate by invading Mohammedan territory.

Busirus and Justinian II

Busirus received the exiled Emperor Justinian II, and gives him his daughter, 698, but he is induced by Emperor Tiberius to expel him, 704.

Rule Slavs Carriers Between East and West

The Khazars extend their possessions westward to all the Slavs outside of the German and Greek empires—and they control the carrying trade between Europe and Asia.

724, Khazaria gives refuge to the Jews from the Greek empire. It is conquered by the Mohammedan Caliph, and the Khan and his nobles are compelled to embrace Islam and become tributary to the Caliph, 737. 740 Khan Bulan with 4,000 nobles embraces Judaism and gives his daughter to Constantine. He builds a stone fortress to protect the portage of the Don. Obadiah builds synagogues and schools, and makes Judaism the state religion; only Jews are eligible to sovereignty.

St. Cyril preaches the Christian religion.

The Khazars Conquer Kiev and Regain the Hegemony of the Slavs, 859.

But the north Russians follow Ruric and Oleg. Scandinavian conquerors, 882-84. All Russians combine to press the Khazars into their original site and the carrying trade is lost to the Russians of Kiev and Novgorod. Nearly all Khazaria is conquered by Sviatoslav of Kiev, 965-66. The remnants are independent in Crimea till 1016, when their last Khan, George Tsudan, is taken prisoner by the Russians. However, two years later, the Crimea is taken by Basil II of Constantinople. The last remnants of the Khazars settle in an island of the Caspian, and in the Caucasus. They assist the Georgians in throwing off the Seljukian yoke.

Russians 965

Khazars Compressed Into Crimea 966

EMPIRE OF THE BULGARIANS—660-78

Kubrat leads the revolt of the Bulgarians, and remnants of old Huns, mixed with Finns, Slavs and other vassal peoples, against the Avars, overthrows and subjugates them and rules all eastern Europe, and makes an alliance with Heraclius, 634.

Kubrat Unites Tribes Overthrows Avar Empire

After his death the Khazars revolt, 676-678, and subjugate or expel the Bulgarians of the Centre, thus dividing their empire into two parts. The main part of the nation remains on the Volga.

His Empire is Divided by the Khazars

GREAT BULGARIA—678-746

Kubrat's eldest son reigns at Bolgari, on the upper Volga (whence that river is named). His empire has the hegemony of northern Russia. Finnish tribes move westward; the Karelians penetrating to the Gulf of Finland.

Volga Empire

The Bulgarians became tributary to Jungaria (Hungaria) of Asia, 746-841, to Magyars or Hungarians of Europe, 841-85, they maintain their independence against the Petchenegs and the Ghuzzes; but they lose against the Swedes and the Russians. They are conquered by Sviatoslav of Russia, 921, and absorbed by the Mongols, 1236.

Bulgarians Fall Under Successive Masters

Colony in Italy. Kubrat's youngest son is driven from Khazaria, of which he was sovereign, invades Italy and is allowed to settle in Beneventum by Grimoald, Lombard king of Beneventum, 670.

BULGARIA PROPER—678-971

The Bulgarians were pressed by the Hungars and the Greeks, and reduced into a limited territory, where they amalgamated with the Roumanians and Slavs. Hence the account of them is given under the caption of Slavic states of the Balkans.

KINGDOM OF PETCHENEGS—894-1122

Driven From Volga Conquer Dnieper

A remnant of Karluks, they are driven from the lower Ural and Volga by the Ghuzzes and Khazars, 894-9. They conquer from the Hungarians the country around the Dnieper, and gradually extend their dominion from the Don to the Danube.

Invade Russia Tributary of the Greek Empire

They invade Russia, 916, but are repelled by Igor I, and made tributary, 920. They revolt and besiege Kiev without success, 968, and they became tributary to Vladimir I of Russia, 997. In Russian interests, they attack the Greek empire, 1016; they cross the Danube on ice and are defeated, 1048. They are subjugated by John II, 1122.

KINGDOM OF THE COMANS, TURCOMANS OR KIPTSCHAKS

Occupy East of Volga Khazaria

A branch of the Karluks is subdued by the Ghuzzes; occupy territory of the Petchenegs east of the Volga, 899; they conquer from Russia (Khazaria) that part of the country west of the Volga. They are several times defeated by Sviatoslav I; but occupy the west to the falls of the Dnieper, where Khan Kurya defeats and slays Sviatoslav, 972. Still they lose Khazaria to Russia, 1055. They invade Russia, but are defeated and made tributary. They attack the Hungarians, but are repelled, 1091. They become tributary to Russia, and are subdued by the Mongols, 1224. Some take refuge in Hungary.

Attacked by Sviatoslav Lose Khazaria

Subdued by the Mongols

HUNGARIANS—884-972.

Called Against Other Barbarians, Settle in Pannonia

The Jungarian lords of Eastern Russia, were called by the emperors against the Bulgarians and the Moravians. Arpad, 889-907, conquers Pannonia and Dacia to Carpaths; Hegemony over Slavs of central Europe. They penetrate into Italy, but lose the East to the Petchenegs. They invade and plunder Germany and Poland, and interfere in western countries. Exact an annual tribute from Emperor Henry I, devastation of neighboring lands, forces routed at Merseburg, 933, Augsburg and Lech, 955. The wife of Geysa is a Christian queen; mother of St. Stephen, the first Christian King, 977.

Routed by Germans

Hungarian Kingdom, 1000-1520

Panorama

I. PERIOD ORGANIZATION, 997-1097

St. Stephen is the national saint, lawgiver and hero. It is a hard task to settle down nomadic tribes. St. Stephen accomplished this; he converted his people, gave them a Christian constitution, and made them respected among the nations.

Initiated Everything
Gave a Constitution That Has Lasted 900 Years

St. Stephen, 997-1038, was baptized by St. Adalbert of Prague in 994. He conquered the pagan prince Koppah, and received from Pope Sylvester the rank of royalty with "the Holy crown," with which he was crowned A. D. 1000, also the title of Apostolic King and the right to carry a cross before him. He is the Hungarian Charlemagne. His government is comparable to the personal initiative of the great civilizer of the west: He governed all by himself; he superintended the religious constructions, and took vigorous measures against stubborn pagans. He conquered the pagan Gyula of Transylvania, and other heathens. He married Gisella of Bavaria and gave his sister Gisella in marriage to the Doge of Venice, Otto Orseolo. He perfected the political and ecclesiastical organization of his kingdom which has lasted nine centuries; he divided the land into counties, and created a national parliament. He divided the church into ten dioceses, locating the metropolitan at Gran. His laws or decrees are wise and severe; his counsels to his son, St. Emerich, show his wisdom. But his son died before his death and his succession was disputed.

People Converted

Catholic Marriages

There was a pagan reaction lasting about a quarter of a century, which crowned two Pagan kings,

Pagan Reaction

but the Christian Arpads finally triumphed. 1077-95 St. Stanislaus extirpated Paganism and consolidated the work of St. Stephen. He conquered Dalmatia and Croatia.

II. PERIOD INTERIOR STRUGGLES AND EXTERIOR INTERVENTION, 1095-1301

Magnates Venice Empire

There was a continual striving of the nobles (Magnates) to get control of public powers. There was a bitter rivalry between Venice and Hungary about the Adriatic Sea. There were succession troubles in which the Greek emperor interfered. Roman, German, and Slav farmers were established in Transylvania. The crusaders passed through Hungary; and even the leaders of Fourth crusade were persuaded by the Venetians to take Zarah from the Hungarians.

Andrew II Goes to Palestine

1205-35. *Andrew II* makes the fifth oriental crusade into Palestine. He is compelled to grant to the nobility the constitution of the Golden Bull, which was

Confirms Privileges of Magnates

in force 1222-1687. It consecrated the privileges of the nobles or Magnates, giving them the right of resistance to the King who would violate the charter, and instituting annual diets to regulate all the important business of the kingdom.

Mongol Devastation Foreign Settlers

The Mongols devastate Hungary and besiege Buda. More German and Slavic colonies are admitted to replace the murdered populations.

Succession Rivalries

Succession troubles and wars; rivalry of Hapsburgs and Luxemburgers. Anjous of Naples are seated on the throne.

III. HUNGARY AMONG THE BIG EUROPEAN POWERS, 1301-1526

Louis the Great

It was under the Anjou dynasty that Hungary reached the climax of her glory. Louis the Great,

1342-82, also king of Poland, was one of the most enlightened kings of his century—he founded the university of Funfkirchen, and favored trade and industry. He created a second nobility to check the turbulent nobles. He had two daughters, who ascended thrones. Hedwige married Jagellon of Lithuania, and became the stem of the Jagellon dynasty in Poland, and Marie married Sigismund of Bohemia, who also became king of Hungary, 1387-1437, and emperor of Germany. Sigismund stays the Turkish advance, but is beaten at Nicopolis.

Checks Turbulent Nobles

Two Daughters Stems of Dynasties

Sigismund King Emperor

After the fall of Constantinople Mahomet II boldly advances but is driven back from Belgrade in a fifth Balkan crusade.

Fifth Balkan Crusade Checks Mahomet II

The Hungarians made such a desperate defense that they stopped the Turkish progress for half a century. Two kings fell on the battlefield: Ladislas VI and Louis II.

Two Kings Fall on the Battlefield

The decisive struggle was under Solyman the Magnificent, who carried on seven campaigns against Hungary and covered it with ruins.

Decisive Struggle in Hungary For Half a Century

Baits were offered, threats were resorted to, intrigues were used to wean the people away from the church, but all in vain. The Hungarians hated the unspeakable Turk, and loved Christ so much that these attempts tended to anchor them more to Christendom.

Chronicles.

HUNGARIANS

I. PERIOD OF FORMATION, 892-1093

Magyars or Ugrians from Urals called by Leo against the Bulgarians, and Arnulf against the Moravians.

Called Against Bulgarians

Arpad Dynasty, 892-1301, occupation of Pannonia and Dacia: *Hungary.* Fierce inroads but crushing defeat at the Lech by Otto I. Geysa baptized.

Fierce Inroads

KINGDOM OF HUNGARY, 988-1522

I PERIOD: CONVERSION; CIVILIZATION, 997-1093

Conversion

Pagan Reaction

988-1038. St. Stephen apostle of Hungary, gives a Germanlike constitution. Reaction. Struggle by Pagans, who are crushed by St. Ladislaus, 1077-93.

II. PERIOD OF STRUGGLE, 1093-1309

War With Venice

Venice attacks Adriatic possessions. The crusades pass, 1204, take Zarah for Venetians.

Devastation by Mongols

Andrew II, 1205-35, restores state, makes crusade, confirms privileges of Magnates by Golden Bull.

Bela IV—besieged by the Mongols in Buda who ravage the country, Germanic and Slavonic colonies established.

Andrew III, 1293-1301. Succession war: Bohemian, Austrian and Anjou claimants.

III. PERIOD OF EUROPEAN POWER, 1309-1526

Alliances with Great Dynasties

Anjou of Naples. 1309-87. *Charles Robert=Elizabeth* of Poland. Revolts and losses.

1342-82. *Louis the Great* creates second nobility, which becomes the support of the throne, reconquers Dalmatia, Wallachia favors trade and letters. University Funfkirchen, king of Poland, daughters Hedwige, queen of Poland, Mary, queen of Hungary, Sigismund.

Sigismund

Sigismund of Luxemburg, 1387-1437, who becomes King of Bohemia, Emperor.

Charles III, king of Naples, invades Hungary, and is killed by mother regent Elizabeth, who is killed likewise. Sigismund checks the Turks, but is beaten at Nicopolis in third crusade; submission of the Balkan states. Hungary attacked next.

1437. Daughter Elizabeth=Albert II of Hapsburg.

Ladislas VI Perishes

1439. Ladislas VI (Wladislaw IV of Poland) perishes at Warna in fourth crusade.

Mahomet II Checked

Albert's son Ladislas VII the Posthumous, 1444-59. St. John Capistran, John Hunyady, with fifth crusade repel Mahomet II from Belgrade and save Christendom.

1448-90. *Matthias Corvinus* overcomes the Hussite king Podiebrad of Bohemia, which is given by emperor to Pole Ladislas; but he seizes Austria, 85. Ladislas VIII must recognize Maximilian as co-king. 1516-20, his son, Louis II, perishes at Mohacz, daughter *Ann* marries *Ferdinand I Hapsburg,* 1526.

Louis II Perishes

Seven Wars and Devastation by Solyman the Magnificent, in Hungary. Roman Aype

MONGOL EMPIRE, 1224-1500

Kiptchak's Stern Yoke

The Mongols established on the Volga the *Kiptchak* empire, capital Ssari, which for three centuries imposed a hard yoke upon the Slavs. However, they kept back the threatening Turks, who by every way endeavored to enter Europe.

Taxes

The Mongols did hardly anything more than camp in Russia and live on the resources of the country.

TURKISH ATTACK, 1299-1683

Fanatic Venom of Islam

The Mongols were fierce enough to frighten all Europe, but the Turks were moreover poisoned by the Mohammedan venom and organized systematically for the conquest of the world. Their warfare was intensified by their fanaticism to impose their cult of Allah to all nations and it has a character of cruelty and permanency of its own which brands it as the climax of military scourges. Therefore it will be treated by itself, to bring out the tactics of permanent attacks upon Europe, and the awful danger of being swallowed up by that infernal monster.

PART III

1000 Years of Mohammaden Attacks

PANORAMA

Onslaught by Ultra Military Islam

Thousand Years' Efforts to Subdue Europe

If there were in Europe powers that planned and fought for a few generations to subdue the Christian continent to their sway, there was one outside power that contrived the conquest of the whole of Christendom during ten centuries and carried on a relentless offensive against the Christian world, and waged a ceaseless campaign for the extermination of the Christians.

Third Part Gives Perspective of Largest War in History

It was a question of life and death for Christian Europe. A third part is made to give a short perspective of the endless struggle. First the barbarism of the system is described. Then the three distinct onslaughts on Europe by the Mohammedans are narrated. One cannot have an idea of the evils and dangers that threatened Europe without contemplating the whole of the ceaseless struggle.

Evils of Mohammedanism

A.—Mohammedanism a Camp of Barbarism

Mohammed Establishes Polygamy and Slavery

Mohammed arose in the fairest portion of our planet, which had been civilized from the beginning. He came after Christ and His sublime Gospel, but he fell back into Pagan ideas and methods. In order to attract followers, he allowed polygamy and slavery, and thus sacrificed the bulk of mankind to the passions of a few selfish masters. In order to propagate his sect, he proclaimed warfare in its interests as the first commandment of Allah. He stirred up his soldiers by the promise of the most sensual rewards, and made them undaunted in the battlefield by his doctrine of fatalism. He taught them to die like stoics, their death being decided anyway. For the sake

A Thousand Years' War for an Impostor

The Simoon of the Desert

of this impostor a war was started that lasted a thousand years, and that threw the East into an abyss of misery. Wherever Mohammedanism passed, it withered everything like the burning simoon of the desert. It made barren the finest countries of the world, it checked the population, it lowered women, it enslaved men, it ruined agriculture and industry, and put an end to intellectual progress.

I—FANATICAL WARFARE

Moslem Conquests Not Miraculous

When Mohammed was asked to perform miracles in proof of his claims, he answered that he was not sent to perform miracles, but to subdue the world, and that his success was the Divine seal upon his mission. However, his conquests were no more supernatural than the conquests of Alexander or Napoleon. They were the result of his great military genius,

Mohammed Fanaticizes Arabians

organizing the warlike tribes of Arabia for the subjugation of the surrounding nations. He fascinated

And Turns Them Loose on the World

them by the prestige of his personality, the mysteries of his fatalism, and the lure of his sensual pleasures, and thus drove them into an interminable warfare against the rest of mankind.

He dispensed his followers from the obligations of any treaty made with strangers, whether Pagan or Christian; and he made war against the whole world his chief command. He said:

Inspires Blind Obedience

"The sword is the key to the kingdom of heaven. One night spent under arms is worth more than two months of prayer. If any one fall in battle, his sins are forgiven, and his wounds will be bright as vermilion and fragrant as musk. Seventy-five of the black-eyed girls of paradise will await him."

Mohammed imbued his followers with a spirit of blind obedience to the pretended decrees of Allah, as proclaimed by "His Prophet;" and thus obtained an unbounded submission to his orders, even when this involved exposure to the most threatening dangers. He taught them how to fight desperately, and how to die like Stoics, calmly repeating the words: "It is written." Then he enraptured them by his eloquence and his promises. He allowed all the enjoyments of the senses by legalizing polygamy; and he freed men from manual labor by imposing it upon the women and the slaves. He promised a paradise of sensual pleasure hereafter, the spiritual paradise with the Vision of God being only for a few select ones who care for it. Streams of milk, honey and wine roll their perfumed waves in that Eden promised to the poor children of Arabia's burning deserts. It is an abode beautiful with gushing waters, murmuring foliage, golden couches, bright jewels, and full of infinite and eternal delectations. There will be the ravishing songs of the Archangel Israfil and of the innumerable girls of paradise. Each "believer" will have more wives than he had on earth, and 80,000 servants.

Allows Polygamy and Slavery

And Promises Sensual Paradise Hereafter

So great was the enthusiasm excited by Mohammed that within a hundred years his warriors spread his power over the fairest countries of the Levant, and for centuries they continued to aim at universal conquest. Not only did his system inflame the Arabs during his own century, but also the Seljukian and the Ottoman Turks for the following ten centuries.

Subdues East and Brings on Centuries of Warfare

There was a great difference, however, between the Arabs and the Turks. The former retained some refinement from the old civilization of the Mediterranean countries, while the latter came from the wilds

Arabs Refined

Turks Ever Brutal

Relentless Warfare

of Asia, and brought with them the brutal and destructive instinct of the savage hordes of the desert, which they never lost in their contact with Christian peoples.

The Mohammedans came with the Koran in one hand and the sword in the other. "Die or become a Mussulman!" was their watchword. They shed the best blood of Asia, Africa and Europe, and drained away the men and means of every nation. Was not that a return to barbarism? Is it not the custom of the wild beasts of the forest to destroy every animal within their reach? And all that for the sake of an impostor! Did there ever appear a greater enemy of mankind than Mohammed?

II. SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC DEGRADATION

Mohammedanism Depopulates Lands

The very causes which at first promoted the Mohammedan power assisted in the end to hasten its overthrow.

First, polygamy and warfare drained its population, which had to be constantly replaced by foreign blood.

Degrades Women

Secondly, Islamism degraded woman. It questions their immortality, doubts their honor and denies their rights. Women are deemed so corrupt that they can never go out in public without a veil covering their whole person from head to foot. As soon as married they are confined to the harem, a part of the house inaccessible to strangers. If the poorer women go out, it is for hard work in the fields. Women are deemed so inferior to men that many doubt whether they have a soul. A man can have five wives and as many concubines as he pleases. He is the absolute master of his wives; he may send them away, he may

beat and even kill them, without any fear of the law, which does not consider women.

Hunts Slaves by the Million White and Black

Thirdly, Islam re-established slavery in its worst forms. Not only did it reduce to bondage the victims of war and piracy; but it hunted slaves, and still hunts them. Hundreds of thousands of Christians have been treacherously captured in the waters or on the shores of the Mediterranean Sea by the Saracens, the Moors and the Turks, and transported as their slaves to far-off countries. Millions of Negroes have been, and are still being surprised in their fields by invading bands of robbers. Captured and chained like cattle, they are led to distant slave-markets to be sold to the highest bidder. Thus the Mohammedans destroy the freedom and happiness of millions of human beings for the gratification of a few brutal masters.

Drives Them to Slave Markets for Gratification of a Few Masters

Fourthly, Islam ruined the fairest countries. After its warriors had conquered most of the civilized world they sat down to enjoy the spoils, and left all the work to the slaves and the women. But unhappy beings like these do not work any more than they can help, and everything must decline under such a system. Agriculture perished. The immense works of irrigation which made of the East a veritable garden were neither kept up nor repaired, and sooner or later fell to ruin. Fertile plains became barren wastes, filled with weeds and scrubs, thistles and thorns. Trade and industry ceased, and piracy and plunder took their place. Finally the religion of the False Prophet choked learning. In the beginning the fierce Khalif Omar burned the 400,000 volumes of the Alexandrian library, saying: "If they contain only the doctrines of the Koran they are superfluous.

Ruins Agriculture

Trade Industry

And Learning

If they contain anything else they deserve to be burnt!" It is true that in the tenth and eleventh centuries, under the ancient surviving influence of the civilizations that the Arabian hordes had overwhelmed and absorbed in northern Africa and western Asia, the Khalifs of Bagdad and Cordova favored letters in their brilliant capitals. In those cities there arose flourishing schools, equal to those of the Greek empire, and superior to those of western Europe, then in process of formation. However, the Mohammedan doctors could not extricate their system from the flagrant and degrading curses of fatalism, polygamy and slavery. Such intellectual activities as manifested themselves among the followers of the False Prophet were but the last flickerings of the expiring torch of civilization and soon died away. By the twelfth century the Catholic schools far eclipsed those of the Mohammedans and the seat of learning was transferred to the Latin nations. The Arabs made some progress in mathematical and physical sciences, but they made little use of their inventions and allowed their countries to become barren and desert. As for the introduction of the "Arabic" figures, the Mohammedans did not invent them, but merely borrowed them from the Hindus.

Bagdad and Cordova Only Last Echoes of Ancient Civilization

Mohammedans Created Little

Our Figures Not of Arab Origin

Mohammedanism left everything to perish around it as soon as the warrior spirit sunk inert amid the enjoyments of peace and the pride of conquest. Not more utterly does the burning simoon of the desert wither every trace of vegetation than does Islamism parch every germ of life and prosperity. Western Asia and Eastern Africa were changed under its

A Simoon Bringing Desolation and Death

touch first into a vast battlefield, and then into an immense necropolis.

Historical Outlines

I PERIOD—ARABIAN, 622-1000

After a century of the most intense aggressiveness and expansion the Mohammedans divided into three powers, and were reduced to local enterprises.

Conquests Rapid

Within twenty years the fierce soldiers of the Koran, subjugated the Pagans and the Jews of Arabia; Syria, Palestine, Persia and Egypt. In 661 they established their headquarters or Caliphate at Damascus, which is centrally located near the meeting points of the three continents of the old world.

World Wide Conquests

In 669 the Mohammedans attacked Constantinople and besieged it for seven years, but here they were stopped for the first time in their triumphant march. The unquenchable Greek fire, burnt them in their assault of the walls. It took eight centuries before they could capture the stronghold of the Bosporus. 710 was a wonderful year for them: The Westgoths of Spain in Europe, and the Turks in Turkestan were subdued. In 1711 the attack on India was started. See Spanish peninsula 94-97.

Invasion of France and Repulsion from Continental Europe

Invasion of France

In 732 the invasion of France was undertaken. From Spain the Mohammedans, under Abderrhaman, rushed into France, marking their course by fire and blood. The Duke of Aquitaine was defeated, and fled to the Franks. Charles Martel, the Frankish leader, prepared for the most vigorous resistance. During the summer of 732 the Roman clarions and the Ger-

Assembling of Northern Warriors

man horns kept alive the echoes of Gaul, and called the warriors to the banks of the Loire. A huge mass of Franks, Teutons and Gallo-Romans gathered around Poitiers, where Abderrhaman had camped. The history of the human race hardly records a more solemn moment. Islamism stood "before the last bulwark of Christianity, the last European army" as a contemporary chronicler calls the Frankish hosts. If this army falls the world is Mohammed's.

Desperate Battle

Brilliant Victory By Charles Martel

Darras gives a thrilling description of the battle. The two armies watched each other closely. On the one hand were the swarthy Orientals with many-colored turbans, white cloaks, round bucklers, crooked sabres and light lances. On the other the northern giants with their bright flowing locks, their long swords and their heavy battle-horses. At length, on the seventh day, near the end of October, at early dawn, the Mohammedans were called to prayer, and the signal was given for the onset. The Berber archers sent a hail of darts, and the Arab cavalry bore down like a hurricane upon the Christian front. The Frankish lines never quailed. Twenty times the maddened Arabs returned to the charge, with the speed of a thunder-bolt. The northern warriors received them at the points of their swords, and clove in two the diminutive sons of the desert. At four o'clock the Christians turned the flank of the Saracens, and fell upon their camp. The wall of iron breaks. Charles and his Franks charge in turn, and bear down all before them. Abderrhaman and the flower of his hosts disappear. Charles has earned his name of Martel, the Hammer; for like a hammer he has crushed the power of the Arabs.

The Hammer of the Moslems

One Monarchy—Then Three Empires

Three Caliphates Garrison The Three Continents

The Mohammedan Empire stretched from the Himalaya mountains to the Atlantic Ocean. In 751 it was divided into three powers. There were separate Caliphates at Cordova in Europe and at Bagdad in Asia; and in 907 another arose at Cairo in Africa. This division concentrated the Moslem forces at certain points, and infused new life and energy into the three capitals; which were like so many fresh and permanent armies of occupation, camped in the three continents to subdue them to the religion of Mohammed.

Turkish Onslaughts

New Champions

Two powerful Turkish people in turn gave new life and blood to Mohammedanism, and resumed the project of subduing Europe to its power; the Seljukian Turks in the eleventh century and the Ottoman Turks in the fourteenth. The Arabs and Moors were destructive enough, but the Turks were burning with hatred against settled and civilized life.

II PFRIOD—SELJUKIAN TURKS, 1000-1299

Danger and Cruelty Provoke Crusades

The Seljukian Turks had made themselves the masters of Western Asia which their Sultans ruled for a century as one monarchy. They were rapidly conquering everything in Asia. They were establishing new Sultanates in the west, which were eager to expand. They horribly tormented the pilgrims who were visiting the Holy Land.

Malik Shah, 1072-1092, was one of the most rabid persecutors the world has ever seen. Thus they provoked the invasions of their country by the Crusaders.

General Crusades, 1095-1270.

Young and Unified Europe Attacks Turks on Scene of Their Conquests, and Establishes There Two States

The Christian nations of Western Europe were just attaining their youth; they were united under the authority of the Vicar of Christ, and they felt strong and enthusiastic enough to take the offensive and to go and attack the threatening enemy in his own country. At the call of the Roman Pontiffs, the Christian warriors undertook eight expeditions into the Mohammedan lands and broke the Moslem power at home. They even established there two Catholic states, which, however, were not supported but rather opposed by the separated Oriental Christians, and therefore soon declined and fell. The crusaders succeeded in checking for centuries the invasions of Europe by the Turks. They might have crushed them forever but for the jealousy of the Greek Emperors, who often joined with the infidels out of hatred for the Catholic name.

The First Crusade, 1095-1099

Pope Urban II, 1088-1099, sent Peter the Hermit to France to preach the Crusade, and he convoked the council of Clermont, and called the flower of chivalry to the Holy war against the threatening infidels. They exclaimed as with one voice "God wills it" and they vowed to go to free the Holy Sepulchre. As a sign of their vow they put a Red Cross on their right shoulder, whence they were called Crusaders.

Army of 600,000

In the first enthusiasm numerous bands set out without leaders and perished on the road. The real crusade (1095-1099) was led by the most noble and the most renowned Knights of Christendom. Six hundred thousand men were marshaled under the

Alexis Alarmed

walls of Constantinople, and so frightened the Emperor Alexis that his daughter, Ann, wrote: "It

seemed to us as if Europe, torn from its foundations, was hurled in its entirety upon Asia." Alexis commenced to annoy the Crusaders, and refused them ships with which to cross the Bosporus until they promised to turn over to him all the conquests they might make in Asia Minor. The Crusaders defeated the Sultan of Iconium, and the Greeks followed to take possession of the conquered country, and often betrayed their allies, the Crusaders. In Syria, Baldwin of Bouillon and Bohemond of Tarento conquered Edessa and Antioch, and became the princes of these cities. Combats, famine and hardships thinned the ranks of the army before they reached Jerusalem, and the plague set in and carried off a great many. There remained only 50,000 men, but they were the flower of the Christian chivalry. When they arrived on the hills of Emmaus, and beheld Jerusalem afar off, glowing in the rays of the rising sun, they threw themselves upon their faces in the dust, and kissed with respect the ground sanctified by the footsteps of Our Lord, shouting the watchword "God wills it." The infidels were prepared for a desperate resistance, and had 40,000 soldiers from Egypt besides 20,000 belonging to Jerusalem. They had filled the wells around the city, and turned the surrounding country into a desert. The Crusaders suffered terribly from hunger and thirst, and from the burning sun; but they were relieved by the arrival of the Genoese fleet at Joppa, which brought plenty of supplies and a number of engineers. These cut down the trees of a distant forest, and constructed moving towers which were higher than the ramparts of the enemy and furnished with drawbridges which could be lowered upon the walls. After five weeks of toil and fighting, the Cru-

Claims Asiatic Conquests

Crusaders Conquer Part of Syria

Only 50,000 Arrive Before Jerusalem

Hunger, Thirst, Heat and Toil

saders prepared by a fast and a procession for the final assault. At early dawn the Christians moved forward their battle engines; the Mohammedans threw upon them flashing torches and Greek fire. The storming lasted until dark, and was recommenced the following morning. From their ramparts, the Mussulmans did not cease throwing that unquenchable Greek fire, which devoured even the shields and corselets of the steel-clad warriors. Conspicuous upon the top of this moving tower stood Godfrey of Bouillon, dealing death and havoc among the Moslems. Surrounded by a heap of dead and dying, the hero calmly gave his orders and encouraged his men by example, voice and gesture. It was the solemn hour of three o'clck at which Our Lord died. Suddenly the report spread that several of the Crusaders who had fallen in preceding battles had appeared, and planted the standard of the Cross upon the ramparts of Jerusalem. The Christians charged with renewed vigor. Godfrey's tower rolled on amid a storm of darts, stones and fiery missiles; it lowered its bridges upon the walls, whilst the Christians shot their burning darts upon the bales of cotton and straw which protected the inner wall of the city. The wind fanned the flames, and drove them upon the infidels, who were stifled by the fire and smoke. Godfrey, pressing closely behind Lethaldo and Englebert of Tournoy, and followed by the other leaders, leaped into the city and broke the Moslem ranks. The gate of St. Stephen was forced, and the Crusaders, rushing through the streets, pursued the Mussulmans and, in an excess of indignation, put the whole garrison to the sword.

Storming of Jerusalem

In Face of Greek Fire

Godfrey of Bouillon Enters

And Takes Possession of City

Procession of the Cross

As soon as victory was won, the Crusaders, laying aside their arms and bloodstained garments went, barefooted and bareheaded, weeping and striking their breasts, to the Sepulchre of Our Lord. The true Cross was borne in procession through the streets. At its sight the Christians were as much moved as if they had seen the Body of Christ as it once hung upon the same cross.

Election of Godfrey to Kingship

The chiefs met to elect a king able to defend the precious conquest of the holy places, and they unanimously chose Godfrey of Bouillon, who soon afterward gained the great battle of Ascalon against the combined forces of Egypt and Syria. The Crusaders returned to Europe, and left to the king of Jerusalem only 2,000 infantry and 300 horsemen. It was the Knights Hospitallers and the Knights Templars who formed his principal support. Unhappily he died in the year 1100.

Perspective of the Crusades

Vassals Unruly

Neighbors Hostile

Kingdom Flourishes Two-Score Years

The Kingdom of Jerusalem (1099-1187) was organized under the feudal system, but its vassals were too independent. It was surrounded by enemies on all sides. Even the Greeks of Constantinople warred on it for thirty years, to obtain possession of the principality of Antioch, which they finally wrenched from the Latins. The kings of Jerusalem were powerful for forty years. Baldwin II (1100) and Baldwin III (1118) captured the old city of Haran in Mesopotamia, and the important seaports of Acre, Tripoli, Sidon and Tyre. During the minority of Baldwin IV, Nureddin of Aleppo took from the kingdom the eastern banks of the Jordan.

Second Crusade Hampered by Greeks

The Second Crusade (1147-'49) brought 400,000 men to its assistance. But it was hampered, continu-

ally, by the Greek Emperor Manuel, who conspired against it with the Sultans of Iconium. Unhappily, dissension broke out in Jerusalem between Guy of Lusignan, who was recognized as king by the Templars, and Conrad of Montferrat, whom the Hospitallers acknowledged. Saladin, Sultan of Egypt, attacked and slew the Christians at Tiberias, and took Jerusalem in 1187.

Contention Between Templars and Hospitallers

Three Kings Lead Third Crusade

This sad intelligence aroused the Christian princes to the Third Crusade (1189-1192). The Emperor of Germany, Frederic Barbarossa, and the kings of France and England, Philip Augustus and Richard Coeur de Lion, led powerful armies to the rescue of the Holy Land, but these great princes were deceived and rendered powerless by the duplicity of the Greeks.

Fourth Crusade Diverted to Constantinople

Several circumstances diverted the Fourth Crusade (1195-1204) to Constantinople, and led to the well-deserved suppression of the treacherous empire of the Greeks, and to the establishment of a Latin Empire at Constantinople, under Baldwin of Flanders, which was to serve as a bulwark against Mohammedanism.

Baldwin Made Emperor

The Pope protested against that turn of affairs, which took a great part of the Christian forces away from the direct war against the infidels.

Latin Empire of Constantinople, 1204-59

The Greeks raised the rival Empires of Nice and Trebizoned against the Catholic State and 1259 Michael Paleologus of Nice took Constantinople and put an end to its Latin Empire. He returned to Catholic unity, but his son Andronicus fell away again and hastened the ruin of Constantinople by isolating it anew from the rest of Christendom.

The Popes did not cease to work and to agitate in order to promote expeditions against Jerusalem, and succeeded in starting the Fifth Crusade (1217-1221) under Andrew II of Hungary, and the Sixth under Emperor Frederic II (1229), neither of which however had any result.

The Seventh and Eighth Crusades were undertaken by the Holy King of France, Louis IX. The former landing in Egypt, (1250) and the latter in Tunis (1270). Both failed on account of the plague.

III PERIOD—OTTOMAN STRUGGLE

Balkan and Danubian Countries

The struggle took place in the Balkan and Danubian countries, and the Turks played here again their habitual game of wholesale slaughter of peaceable civilian populations.

There were 300 years of furious attacks by the triumphant Turks followed by three centuries of bloodshed and stagnation up to our very days.

Mongolian Hordes Savage Enough by Nature

The Mongolian hordes that came from Asia were by nature wild and cruel to the extreme, but they were made worse through the Mohammedan Arabs that poisoned them—the Turks and the Mongols were more savage than the other Asiatics that had preceded them. The former were fiery Mohammedans before they advanced into Europe; the latter turned Mussulmans when they were settled in Russia. They were truly the fanatic soldiers of Islam.

Frenzied by Islam

What made them so formidable was their insatiable thirst for conquest, and their awful luxury. The war against the Christians was represented to them as a holy war and a sacred duty and they were impatient to subdue the whole world to their prophet. Then they were fully organized for conquest; they

Perfectly Organized

were equipped and prepared to subdue the world to their (God) Allah. Finally they were so intoxicated with the allurement of lust offered them here and hereafter that they were eager to go to the end of the world, to gain the paradise that was offered them.

I. Furious Offensive

Christian Captives Made Janissaries

The Ottoman Turks were growing strong in Asia Minor, and preparing for the conquest of Constantinople. Urkhan (1327) formed the splendid army of the Janissaries out of Christian youths captured or kidnaped and frenzied by the fear of discipline or the bait of sensual pleasures. In the course of time 500,000 Christian children were thus turned into the most valiant soldiers of the False Prophet. They constituted the earliest standing army organized in those times. In 1356 Urkhan captured Gallipoli, and thus the Turks obtained their first foothold in Europe. His successor Murad I took Adrianople, and made it his European capital, notwithstanding the resistance of two crusades on the Danube. The Sultan Bajacet made a vow to feed his horses with oats on the high altar of St. Peter's in Rome, and he completely defeated a third Christian army at Nicopolis in 1396. But his progress was stopped by the invasion of the fierce Mongol conqueror Timour Lenk, who defeated and captured him at Ancyra. A civil war ensued between his three sons, and further weakened the Turks. It was the last opportunity for the Greeks to crush their mortal enemies, and they did not avail themselves of it. Bajacet's grandson Murad II (1421) besieged Constantinople, and took the harbors of the Black Sea. He ascended

Bajacet Threatens Rome

Murad II Enters Danube Valley

the Danube, and a fourth crusade was organized to resist his progress; the valiant John Hunyady of Hungary and Cardinal Cesarini repelled him from Belgrade. His son, Mohammed the Conqueror (1441-1480), avenged this repulse by the victory of Warna, where Cardinal Cesarini and King Wladislaw IV, of Poland were slain. However, the Christians, having gathered a fifth army on the Danube under Hunyady and St. John Capistran, twice defeated the formidable victor and expelled him from Belgrade (1456). In vain did Mohammed attack at Croya the undaunted prince Scanderbeg, who defeated him with the aid of another body of crusaders. In vain did he besiege the intrepid Knights of Rhodes, who, under d'Aubusson, opposed the most heroic resistance. But he succeeded in capturing the Greek capitals of Constantinople (1453), and Trebizond (1462), which achievements won him his title of Conqueror.

Mohammed Slays Polish King

Repelled From Belgrade

Croya

And Rhodes

But Captures Two Greek Capitals

II. CONSTANTINOPLE TAKEN; DANUBE OVERRUN

In 1452 Mohammed II built a large fortress on the European side of the Bosporus. The Greeks complained, and he answered by a declaration of war. Constantine XII (1448-53) was a true Christian Emperor. In this hour of supreme danger he wrote to the Pope to implore his help. Nicholas V appealed to all the Christian states, but Genoa and Venice alone responded.

Constantine XII Appeals to Catholics

So prejudiced were the Greeks that the populace insulted their friends from Italy who had come to their rescue. High Admiral Notaris was heard to say that he would rather have the turban of Mohammed at Constantinople than the tiara of the Pope.

The city hardly contained 10,000 soldiers, while it was besieged by 300,000, by sea as well as by land. A formidable artillery under Mohammed's personal direction thundered incessantly against the walls. The garrison answered by a shower of darts, javelins and Greek fire. Constantine XII was always found where the danger was most threatening. He knew no rest. His days were spent in fighting, and his nights in directing the workmen who repaired the breaches made on the ramparts. The resistance lasted nine weeks, and did not seem to slacken. The harbor was closed with a massive chain. Mohammed hit upon a plan of transporting his warships into the port by sliding them over land on greased planks. During a single night he succeeded in getting eighty ships into the very center of the harbor. The besieged were equally dismayed and astonished, and saw that their end had come. Like a pious cavalier Constantine spent his last night in the church, assisted at Mass and received Holy Communion. He exhorted his soldiers to perish gloriously rather than lay down their arms. He said: "The spirits of our departed heroes look down upon us at this moment. If Constantinople must fall, I shall find my grave beneath the walls." Mounting his horse he hurried to the fortifications. It was the 29th of May, 1453. The immense Moslem army, uttering furious yells, stormed the ramparts, and crushed the handful of defenders.

Mohammed Commands Besiegers

Passes Fleet Over Greased Planks

Piety of Emperor

Constantinople, falling for the first time into the hands of the barbarians, underwent all the horrors of a furious sack by savage enemies. Its inhabitants, to the number of 100,000 were reduced to slavery, massacred, or reserved to atrocious torments. Con-

Sack of Constantinople

Slavery

Torture

stantine had disappeared in the thick of a melee on a breach. His corpse was recognized and his head cut off and taken to Mohammed, who sent it as a bloody trophy to his people in Asia.

When Mohammed II took Constantinople, he transplanted the relentless battlefield into the heart of Christendom. Europe trembled, and the Popes ordered that every noon there should everywhere be rung "the Turkish bell," to arouse all Catholics to prayer or war against the advancing barbarians. Not only did the Catholics resist those most formidable of conquerors, but in the course of a century they broke the Turkish power.

The Turkish Bell

Catholics Vigilant and Triumphant

From 1520 to 1566 Solyman the Magnificent fought against all his neighbors to establish a universal empire, and he personally conducted thirteen expeditions. What increased the danger a hundredfold was the division of Europe, and the refusal of the Protestants to march against the Turks. The Popes with the southern powers alone had to face the danger, but Christ watched over His bark threatened by the storm, and, notwithstanding his military genius and his fiery heroism, Solyman made little progress in his wars, whether in Europe or in Asia.

Solyman Makes Thirteen Wars of Conquest

In Europe his attacks were first directed against the Mediterranean powers. The Knights Hospitallers of St. John were the bulwark of the Christians and the terror of the Mussulmans in the Mediterranean waters. Mohammed II had attacked them in vain on their fortified island of Rhodes; but in 1522 Solyman besieged them, with 300,000 men, and converted their fortress into a heap of ruins. There were only 800 knights and 4,000 men at arms, but they repelled all the Mohammedan forces for six months.

Resistance of Hospitallers

One Man Against Sixty

Finally, obtaining an honorable capitulation, they retired to Malta, where they constructed a new and impregnable fortress; and in 1565 they again repelled the great warrior.

IV. REVERSES

Tunis Captured by Charles V

Venice was still predominant in the Mediterranean, and Solyman engaged the famous pirate Barbarossa of Tunis to break her power. But Charles V captured Tunis, the seat of the pirates, and delivered 20,000 prisoners. Solyman directed his most strenuous efforts against Hungary, where he excited civil wars, and against Austria, where Protestant bitterness welcomed and assisted him. He undertook six expeditions into Hungary. In the first he killed King Louis II, and raised to the throne Zapolya, a prince of Transylvania. But the nobles elected the brother of Charles V, Ferdinand I, who had married Louis' sister, and who expelled the Turkish pretender.

Bitter and Protracted Contest in Hungary

Solyman again invaded Hungary. Profiting by the fury of the Protestants, he was able to penetrate into the heart of Europe and besiege Vienna. When the valiant Emperor Charles V was free from his other enemies, he marched against the Turks. But Solyman did not care to meet the foremost hero of Christendom. He retreated to Constantinople and recognized Ferdinand as king of the half of Hungary still remaining in Christian hands. Ten years later a new contest for the throne ensued, and furnished him another pretext for invading Hungary, which he almost turned into a desert. He died while besieging the little town of Sigeth.

The Navy Destroyed

The Turks were very powerful in the Mediterranean and wrested from Venice the island of Cyprus,

which they cruelly devastated. The holy Pope Pius V preached a Crusade against the infidels, and ordered the recitation of the beads throughout Christendom to pray for its success. He enlisted in the cause the mighty republic of Venice, and Philip II, the powerful king of Spain, and committed to Philip's half brother, Don Juan of Austria, the combined forces of the southern states. The two fleets met in the Gulf of Lepanto, and gave battle on the seventh of October, 1571. The Turkish commander fell, his head was cut off and displayed on a Christian mast, and that fired the courage of the crusaders, who annihilated the infidel fleet.

Appeal of Pius V

The importance of this victory was incalculable. Without it all the southern coasts of Europe would probably have been conquered by the Ottomans in a short time, preparatory to the subjugation of the whole continent. Even after the main fleet of the great empire of the Sultan had been crushed, Mohammedan corsairs fortified themselves in the African ports and carried on horrible piracies in all the waters of the Mediterranean—and this for three hundred years, in the teeth of the growing European monarchies.

The Turks had received their fatal blow, and did not dare any more to attack the Christian powers, except when they were encouraged to it by some European potentates who wanted to weaken their own rivals. For a last time they took the offensive again, and attacked their Christian neighbors. Poland's hero, Sobieski, gave them such terrible blows. Betaking themselves to other fields they laid siege to Vienna; but Sobieski hastened to the rescue

Risk Another Attack Receives Fatal Blow

and administered to them the fatal blow, that broke their power and their spirit. The spell of Turkish superforce was gone forever.

The Army Crushed

After the Thirty Years' War had exhausted Germany, Kara Mustapha gathered an army of 300,000 Mussulmans and besieged Vienna (1682). The Emperor Leopold and his court fled. There were left in the city 50,000 soldiers, who, assisted by the inhabitants, made a vigorous resistance. Forty-five days of siege exhausted them, and Vienna, the rich capital of Eastern Europe, seemed doomed to plunder and destruction. Pope Innocent XI summoned Sobieski, the valiant king of Poland, to the help of the distressed city. The hero appeared on the mountains with 20,000 Poles. His troops were ill-clad and poorly equipped. "Do you see those men?" said the king. "They have sworn to clothe themselves with the spoils of the enemy." "If these words," said a chronicler, "did not clothe his soldiers, they armored them!" In the morning Sobieski and his officers assisted at the Holy Mass celebrated by the Papal Nuncio, and the king served it himself kneeling down and extending his arms in the form of a cross. At ten o'clock he gave the signal for battle. After a fight of three hours, he saw the enemy wavering, and ordered a charge. A fearful hand-to-hand fight followed. At five the Turks broke their ranks and fled in utter rout. At nightfall, of all the besieging army only 20,000 corpses were left to guard the walls of the city. The Turks fled so precipitately that they left behind them 100,000 tents, 300 pieces of artillery, and 5,000 barrels of gunpowder. The following day Sobieski was received in triumph, and the mothers held up their children that they might behold their

Siege of Vienna

Raised By Sobieski

saviour. He himself intoned the Te Deum, which was chanted by the whole people. Then he sent to the Pope the standard taken from the enemy, with the famous words of Caesar, altered, from humility, into Veni, vidi, Deus vicit! "I came, I saw, God conquered." By this act of homage, he expressed the gratitude of Christendom to the Roman Pontiffs for saving it from the galling yoke of the Moslems. Then the Popes leagued Poland, Austria and Venice against the eternal foe of Europe.

Homage to Christ and His Vicar

As soon as the predatory Turks were beaten back, they sank inert in the enjoyment of the spoils; unable to create anything themselves they were soon reduced to defend themselves against the Christians they had so long attacked. They continued their heartless extermination and enslavement of their Christian subjects. At every generation they decimated the Christians because they multiplied too fast. Every year they went to the Christian villages, and there selected the handsome girls for their harems and the strong boys for their armies. During the world's war they nearly exterminated the noble Armenian people. By the hundreds of thousands they slaughtered them. If respect for life is to be established in the world, such butcheries ought to be punished like any other murder. Such cruelty and such misgovernment are anachronism, that cannot last much longer.

Turks Reduced to Defensive

Continue Enslavements

Murders

Should Be Punished

Thus has Europe saved herself and saved the world from the last of scourges, the Mohammedan yoke; she looms up as the savior of mankind and has right to the leadership of the world.

Europe Savior, Leader

SOME MOHAMMEDAN CHRONICLES

I. ARABIAN PERIOD

622-632. *Mohammed.* Hegira=flight to Medina, 8 years of struggle. Prophet, warrior, statesman. Makes Arabs champions of monotheism.

Elective Caliphs at Medina 632-661.

634-44 *Omar* conquest of Persia; Syria. Egypt.

656. Civil war between Ommyads and Alites: Sunnites: Tradition and stable government: Shiites. Book and Blood.

Hereditary Caliphs at Damascus: Ommyads 661-751.

Strife between factions. *Hosain* slain, Medina taken and Kaaba destroyed, 717 plots of legitimists.

705-15. *Walid I.* 710 annus mirabilis: admirable year.

669-675. Siege of Constantinople repelled by means of Greek Fire.

711. Conquest Turkestan by *Kotaiba;* Africa and Spain by *Mousa* and *Tarik,* Sindh 715. 714; Constantinople besieged; *Leo Tsaurian* and successors drive the Mussulmans away.

717-20. *Omar II* rules well the widest Moslem empire.

732. Invasion of France repelled by *Charles Martel.* Struggle against practical Abbassids, who exterminate Ommyads in Syria.

751. Split of the Mohammedan world.

THREE CALIPHATES

I. Western power:

Cordova Caliphate in Spain

The Moors from the Atlas mountains formed the main contingent of the Mohammedans in Spain. There were three more invasions from Morocco.

The great African seaports were turned into nests of pirates. Tripoli remained so until the last century.

II. Central power:

Some states in Africa.

The Sarrasins were terrible pirates in and around the Mediterranean.

Fatimite Caliphate 861-1071

Kairwan then *Cairo.*

The first Caliphes were energetic and progressive. The last fell under viziers.

Eyaoub Dynasty 1176-1250.

Saladin, 1174-1193, attacks all around, fights Crusaders, takes Jerusalem, annexes Syria. Scramble for power after his death.

Mameluke Dynasties: Pretorian Guards.

1254-1384. *Bhari* (River Dynasty), cruel rulers. *Sultana Segher:* succession tragedies.

1260. Beybars, brings Abbassid Caliph to Egypt.

1382-1516. *Borjite* (Castle Dynasty), milder. The founder *Barkuk* was a wise ruler. The last Sultan *Tuman Bey II* defends the city heroically. Ottomans very cruel, kill 500,000 people. Drag the Caliphate to Constantinople.

Turkish Yoke 1516-1812.

Egypt is a province exploited by the Turk. Lethargy of three centuries.

XIX Century Revival.

Khedival Dynasty 1811-1902. *Mehemet Ali* massacres the Mamelukes, helps Turks, makes conquests.

Saïd, 1854, pushes canal which is built by French, bought by English. *Arabi Pasha:* revolt and exile.

English Protectorate. 1922 *Independence*

Revolt of Two Madhis 1881-99. Who oppress the pagans. Subdued by the English.

III. Eastern power:

Abbasside Caliphate Bagdad 750-1250.

I Period: of power 750-854; *Harum al Rashid* 786-802.

II Period: Arms, letters, rivalry of Caliphate and guard, 854-940.

III Period: Emirs al Omra temporal rulers 940-1250: Buyids, Seldjuks.

Subsidiary states, 10 cultured in Persia and Mesopotamia: Tahirites, Saffarids, Samanids, Hamdanites, Buyids. Barbarian Seljukian Turks.

II. SELJUKIAN PERIOD 1020-1299

Seljukian Turks.

I. *Monarchy* 1000-1157 on Jaxartes. *Togrul Bec* ruler at Bagdad. *Malek Shah* 1072-92. Cruelty towards Christians; victories: captures *Romanus IV*, Emperor, keeps Statesman Nizam, poet *Kayyam.*

Seljukian Subsultanates; later Independent States.

Oman 1040-1185.

Irak 1118-1194.

Syria 1074-1176; *Aleppo* and *Damascus.*

Nureddin beats Crusaders in Syria and Egypt. His general *Saladin* conquers Egypt 1171; regent for his son, deposes him and annexes Syria to Egypt.

Roum or *Iconiam* in Asia Minor 1072-1243, shaken by first and third crusade; taken in 1190. *Alaeddin* 1219-34 a conqueror. 1243 conquest by *Mongols.*

Vassals and Rivals of Seljuks.

Ghazni 997-1187. *Mahmud the Great.*

Ghuri 1149-1228.

Kwaresmia 1100-1243.

Assassin Kingdoms: Ismaelians in Persia 1190-1250. In Syria 1200-1270.

VI. *Iran and Mesopotamia.*

Mongol Dynasties in the Middle Ages.

Hulago D. 1243.

Timuride D. 1440-97.

Modern Irania. Shiites.

Persia: Sufi D. 1499-1795. Abbas.

Kajar D. 1795.

Afghanistan. Ahmed Shah 1747-73.

Beluchistan.

THE EIGHT GENERAL CRUSADES AND TWO LATIN STATES—1095-1270.

I. *Crusade* 1095-99. *Kingdom of Jerusalem* 1099-1187. Greeks and other enemies all around.

II. *Crusade* 1147-49. Hampered by the Greeks. Fall of Jerusalem.

III. *Crusade* 1189-1192. Great rulers of Europe also molested by the Greeks.

IV. *Crusade* 1195-1204. Overthrows Greek Emperors, and establishes the *Latin Empire of Constantinople* 1204-1259.

V. *Crusade* 1217-1221. VI. *Crusade* 1229 without results.

VII-VIII. *Crusades. St. Louis* 1250 to Egypt, 1270 to Tunis. Plague.

Other Christian Holdings.

The Venetians kept many possessions in the Orient.

Armenia or Cilicia 1096-1375.

Cyprus 1192-1571. The Latin headquarters, kingdom—then dependency of Venice.

OTTOMAN TURKS—1299-1918

Balkan and Danubian Defensive.

8 *Christian Expeditions or Crusades* 1356-1683.

I, II, III expeditions defeated at Maritza 1365, Khossova 1389, Nicopolis 1396.

IV. 1439-43. *John Hunyades* and *Cardinal Cesarini* repel Murad II from Belgrade, but Mohammed I slays King Ladislas IV and Cesarini at Warna.

1453, captures Constantinople. Advance stopped by V. crusade. 1454-56; *John Hunyades* and *St. Capistran* repel Turks from Belgrade, *Scanderbeg* from Epire, *d'Aubuysson* from Rhodes.

VI. Seven expeditions in Hungary against *Solyman the Magnificent* 1520-66.

VII. Crusade. *Don Juan* of Austria crushes Turkish fleet at Lepanto, 1571.

VIII. *Sobieski* crushes Turkish army at Vienna, 1683.

OTTOMAN EMPIRE

I. CONQUERING ERA—1299-1371

1200. Seljuks flees from Khorassan, Persia, to Iconium. **Asia Minor**

1299. *Othman* or Osman the Bonebreaker, independent at Erzeroum, becomes a Mohammedan.

1327. *Urkhan* makes a new guard of captured Christians—janissaries. Married to Theodora, daughter of John V, Cantacuzen, who is overthrown, he avenges him taking Gallipoli in Europe, 1356. **Europe**

1359-89. *Murad I* takes Adrianople, and defeats *The First Danubian* expedition at Maritza, 1365; *the Second* at Khossova, 1389—but he is stopped by revolts in Asia and Europe. He helps the first son of John IV, Andronic IV to throne. **Crusade I-II**

1389-1402. *Bajacet I, the Lightning,* because he was as quick as lightning, replaces father and second son for tribute; defeats *Third Crusade* at Nicopolis, 1396. Bajacet is routed and captured at Angora by the Mongol conqueror Timour Link. 1402, civil war between four sons; 1414, the third Mahomet I subdues Asia Minor. **Third**

1421. *Murad II,* defeats two rivals, obtains the ports of the Black Sea, subdues Servia and Bosnia, but is repelled from Belgrade by *Fourth Crusade.* John Hunyady and Cardinal Cesarini are victorious everywhere. Murad retires to a convent, but returns against the advancing Christians, and crushes them at Warna, slaying Cesarini and Wladislaw III.

Fourth

Repulses

1451-80. *Mahomet II* the Conquerer, aims to overthrow the Greek Empire. 1453 takes Constantinople, all Greece; is repelled by *Fifth Crusade* from Epire by Scanderbeg, from Belgrade by John Hunyady, and St. John Capistran, from Rhodes by Hospitallers under d'Aubusson; he takes Trebizond, 1460, and surprises Otrante, 1480.

Capture of Two Capitals

Advance Stopped by Fifth Crusade

Absolute power: execution of all suspect pretenders. War between two sons, *Bajacet* triumphs, but is conquered by Venice, is forced to resign by his third son, the fierce *Selim II, the Grim,* 1512, who kills brothers, keeps Djem in Italy, kills 40,000 Shiites, conquers Syria, Mesopotamia, Moldavia (1517), Mamelukes of Egypt. Buys Caliphate from the last Abbaside Caliph of Cairo.

Succession Murders and Wars

Conquest in Asia and Africa: Caliphate

1520-66. *Solyman the Magnificent* makes thirteen wars of conquest, half of which were fought in Europe.

Climax of Aggressiveness; Corfu

I. Against Hospitallers who resist six months at Rhodes and capitulate. But defend Malta.

Mediterranean

II. Venice, 1535-40, the pirate Barbarossa of Tunis takes Corfu, but is conquered by Emperor Charles V, 1535. Algiers is captured.

III. Victories in Persia.

Hungary

IV. *Seven Wars in Hungary. First War,* 1524, takes Belgrade.

2nd War, 1526. Slays King Louis II at Mohacz and appoints to Transylvania Zapolya, who is expelled by Ferdinand I of Austria.

Appointing Rival to Hapsburg Makes this a Dynastic War

3rd War. 1529. Restores Zapolya and besieges Vienna, repelled by Salm. Allied with France and Protestants, invades Hungary but retires before Charles V. Suzerainty of Hungary: divided between the two claimants.

5th War, 1542. Death of Zapolya's son Sigismond, 1540-70, Ferdinand claims all Hungary, which is wasted by Solyman.

6th War, 1552-62. He expels Ferdinand from Transylvania and part of Hungary.

7th War, 1566. Siege of Szegeth and death.

II. IRREPARABLE DECLINE—1571-1918

Fleet Crushed at Lepanto

1566-1574. *Selim II.* Truce with Ferdinand I, conquest of Cyprus from Venice. Seventh crusade under Juan of Austria, crushes Turkish fleet at Lepanto, 1571.

Conquest in the East

1574-95. Murad III; Aberjian—Georgia conquered. Killing rivals in succession and civil wars, weak Sultans. 1623-40, Murad IV, Baghdad sacked and annexed.

Koprili Viziers

Five viziers Koprili stay the decline of the Turkish power.

Wars and Losses

1648-87. Mohammed IV, 1661-64, war with Austria, defeat at St. Gothard. Candia taken. 1670-76, war with Poland, rout at Choczim by Sobieski. 1683, war with Austria; Mustapha assaults Vienna, driven away by Sobieski, 1682. Austria takes Belgrade, Venetians, Morea, 1695. Turks are beaten at Zenta by Eugene of Savoy. Peace of Carlowitz, 1699, Austria gets Transylvania and most of Hungary; Venice, Morea; Russia, Azov.

Turkey Beaten by Poles and Austrians

Cedes Territories

1703-30. Ahmed III, war with Venice and Austria, first successful rout at Peterwardein and Belgrade. 1718. Peace of Passarowitz, enlarges cessions. 1735-39, war with neighbors. Some recuperations.

Wars With Catherine II

Two wars with Catherine II; more Euxine littoral lost.

Black Sea Ports

Greece Revolts

1789-1807. Selim III. Napoleon invades Egypt, wins at Aboukir—Selim is cast in jail by janissaries and replaced by brother Mahmud II, 1808. 1821-27 Greek war of independence, slaughter. Ali Pasha of Egypt is called and wins, till the allies of west Europe win at Navarino: independence of Greece recognized by peace of Adrianople. Mehemet Ali demands rewards—his sons win two victories, until stopped by the powers but recognized as hereditary governor, "Khedive" of Egypt.

Egypt Under Hereditary Khedive

1831-61. Abdul Medjid, reforms promised, not made. 1853-56, war with Russia becomes Crimean war. France, England and Turkey against Russia. Sebastopol and Kars taken. Christians still left to the cruelty of the Turks. Brother, 1861-76, *Abdul Aziz,* massacres of Christians:

Intrigue Massacres

1845, Lebanon; 1860, Syria; 1875, Bulgaria; 1894 to 1917, Armenia.

Russo-Turkish War, 1876-77

1875-76. Insurrection of Bosnia avenged by massacres in Bulgaria. 1876-77. *Russo-Turkish War*: Kars and Plevna taken. Treaty of San Stephano modified by Berlin Congress, 1875, under Bismarck is a diplomatic check to Russia. Montenegro, Servia,

Congress of Berlin

Roumania, Bulgaria—independent. Bosnia to Austria, Kars to Russia: England acquired Cyprus, France was given free hand at Tunis.

Abdul Aziz game of playing off one power against another; promises equality to all, but massacres Christians.

1895-96. Death struggle of Crete. 1897, Intervention of Greece, which is stopped by the concert of powers.

Balkan Wars.

Balkan Wars

Venezilos unites the Balkan principalities against Turkey. First Balkan war, 1812-13. Turkey beaten, loses greater part of her European possessions. *Second Liquidation of the Balkans.*

Second Balkan War, 1813, about the spoils of war. Bulgaria and Turkey against the others.

World War

World's War, 1914-18, alliance with the Teutonic powers, massacre of the Armenians.

TABLES
OF
GENEALOGY

FORMATION OF DYNASTIES

Tables of Genealogy

IMPORTANCE.

Index of Power of the Countries

In our age of democracy some people think little of Dynasties and do not take interest in them, still the reigning houses where the main factors in the upbuilding of states and the duration of their power gives a fair idea of the importance of their realms.

TRUTH.

Some Obscure In the Start

The beginnings of some genealogies are obscure or doubtful. Sometimes the same name appears as a daughter or a wife, etc. It is to be observed that sometimes the genealogies are contracted and some generations are omitted. The same names appear continually: in those times of vigorous life, there were early and late marriages and remarriages and there were many children, of whom only the principal ones were recorded. It happens that the relationship of certain persons is uncertain which is marked by (?). They may be a missing link in the table of genealogy, but that would affect only the degree of parentage, not the relationship itself.

Affects Only the Degree, Not the Fact of Parentage

BREVITY.

Shortest Accounts

If the chronicles are a short account of the past, the Tables of Genealogy are still shorter and give a glimpse of the history of the land in the synoptical catalogue of their dynasties. For here everything is reduced to lines and signs, and may be compared to guide posts and lamps in a big city.

No Complete List

The plan is to mention those who had some influence in the world, either by increasing the number of princes or by making their mark. No effort is made to record all children or obscure branches. Sometimes there is a mark "others, or six others."

MAKE-UP OF TABLES OF GENEALOGY AND CHRONOLOGY

Signs and Abbreviations

The Tables of Genealogies and Chronologies are indexes showing where persons and things belong and are not for reading but for consultation. Here are some of the abbreviations used:

In the Genealogical Tables the horizontal lines with vertical dash above and under them show the descent of one generation. Long twin vertical lines show the descent of several generations. The pointed lines show bastard descent or divorce. Endeavors are made to align the same grades at the same level.

In both Genealogies and Chronicles initials represent words or even ideas. a. m., anno mundi; year of the world; b. c., year before Christ; a. d., year of Our Lord; year after Christ. One figure the year of death; two figures the span of reign or existence.

Twin horizontal dash = or m, marriage; 1 = first marriage; 3 = third marriage. The elder children are on the left, unless there is reason to reverse the order. a b c d relate to precedence in age. Triple dashes, other children of whom no account is given.

D, +, died; O below name or year, died without male issue. D, s p, died without issue. D, s p m., died without male issue.

Abd, abdicated; bl, blinded; b, born; det, dethroned; d, died; kl, killed; pois, poisoned;

bt, brother; c, child; dr, daughter; f, father; m, mother; s, son; h, husband; w, wife; u, uncle; a, aunt; of is omitted: Baldwin Flanders means Baldwin of Flanders.

ct, count; dk, Duke; Emp, Emperor; K, king; P, prince; Ps, princess; Emn, Emmanuel.

Same Names Under Various Forms

Historical names assume different forms in different languages and different epochs. Sometimes it is marked that the different forms represent the same place or persons. Comans = Komans. Sometimes it is marked that there are two spellings.

Slavonic Idiotecons

Labial initials or terminals in Slavonic tongues: The Polish is W, the Bohemian V. In English the initials may be suppressed and the terminals changed into S; Wladislaw; Vladislav, may be written Ladislas or Ladislaus. In the accounts of the Slav nations, the idioms of each are followed as much as it may be done by a non-Slav.

DYNASTIES IN EASTERN EUROPE

Many Eastern Dynasties Omitted

In eastern Europe there are a number of dynasties of long duration which are not given or mentioned here, because they were provincial and had little influence in the general march of progress and also because many names are written in such different ways from the western versions that they are hard to remember or even to recognize. Many names are the same as those of the western rulers, but can hardly be identified, and are not given.

Slavonic and Finnish

Especially In the Balkan Country

Heroical

From the Baltic Sea to the Black Sea the Slavonic and also the Finnish states of the North as well as of the South had long-lived dynasties of their own. Especially in the Balkans each Slavic tribe had its own dynasty from the eighth century almost to the conquest by the Turcs. The Asans of Bulgaria and Wallachia; and the Nemenaya of Servia were powerful enough to compete with the Greek Empire and they opposed the most heroic and the most relentless resistance to the Turkish armies.

Christian Dynasties In the Midst of Turkey

After the fall of Constantinople, several French princes held their possessions in the Grecian countries and waters, whence they harassed the advancing Turks. Later on the Italians, nearer to the battlegrounds, took up their interests and held important territories till the end of the Middle Ages and some beyond. They seemed to be rooted in the soil and all the power of those world-conquerors could not dislodge them. They were dynasties of heroes as great as any that ever appeared in the world and would not yield as long as there remained any scions of the glorious race.

Mohammedan Dynasties

In the Orient there were a number of Mohammedan states which flourished for centuries. Ordinarily they started as outposts of advancing Islam in Schismatic lands and they continued to exist till the extinction of the dynasties which founded them, or they branched off from the main monarchy as advance guards or as secessionists of the main body. Only the principal ones can be noticed. In general, they were long enduring.

Oriental Genealogies

Genealogies Not Complete Here

No attempt has been made to collect the dynastic genealogies of the East, for several reasons, the main one being the filiation was not so certain as in the West, and was not as great a factor in the standing and the influence of the princely children. The wills and preference of the reigning monarch counted more than primogeniture or degree of kinship.

Difficulty

It is hard to make up the Oriental genealogies on account of the loose morals and the practice of polygamy existing in the East. There is another element of uncertainty with regard to the craze of the Orientals to connect themselves with the founders of the two greatest military empires of the Orient—namely, that of the Mohammedans and that of the Mongols.

Multiplied By the Claims of the Mohammedan Legitimists

The claim of the Shiites that the only legitimate successors of Mohammed were the Alites—who were often unknown—made it profitable for pretenders to try to find a connection with some obscure descendant of the prophet, and thus to claim the leadership of Mohammedanism. Deception was continually practiced by fanatical impostors, who thought themselves sent by Allah, to carry on the war against the infidels.

and Mongolian Imperials

In Asia it was equally difficult to trace the lineage of Jenghir Khan, because of his glory and his world-wide power. Descent from that phenomenal conqueror among the Nomads of the Steppes, seem to entitle the whole lineage to reign over part of Asia. Any prince, powerful by himself, loved to add to his standing the glory to belong to the ruling dynasty of Asia, and claimed the title to rule a part of the Continent. There were interpolation in those antique genealogies which nobody could control. Therefore those genealogies are no more than probable. Few are given.

Byzantine Empire

395—1453

There was no succession law. There were only reigning houses until dynastic succession was firmly established by the Macedonian Emperors.

I. THEODOSIAN HOUSE 395—454

Theodosius tg. divides into Eastern and Western Empire

Arcadius 394—405

Theodosius II — **Pulcheria** = Marcian

II. THRACIAN HOUSE 457—518

Affinity successions. Troubles. Monophysitism.

III. JUSTINIAN HOUSE 518—610

Nephews succeed. **Justinian tg.** 527—68. Conquests of Belisarius and Narses, Laws, Arts.

IV. HERACLEAN HOUSE 610—711

Exhausting struggle between Persia and Greece. Mohammedan onslaught. Monothelism.

Heracleus 610—641

= 1 Flavia — Constantine III k 641

= 2 Martina — Heracleonas

Constans II 641

Constantine IV Pogonat 668—85

Justinian II

Eight Emperors kill one another

V. ISAURIAN HOUSE 719—802. AMONIAN HOUSE 820—867

Valor and genius, but barbarous iconoclasm

Leo III the Isaurian 717—741

Constantine V Copronymus 741—755

Leo IV 775—780
=Irene 780—802

Constantine VI k by Mother

Euphrosine
=Michael II Stammerer 820

Theophilus 842—67
=St. Theodora

Niceporus 802

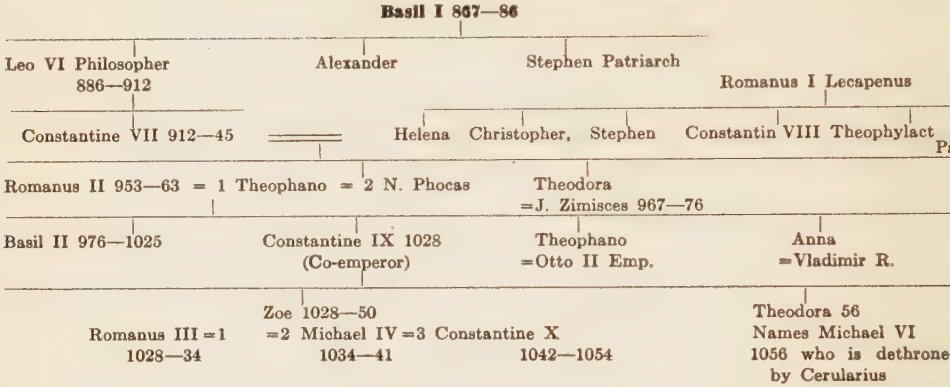
Staurakius

Leo V Armenian
813—20

Procopia
=Michael I 811

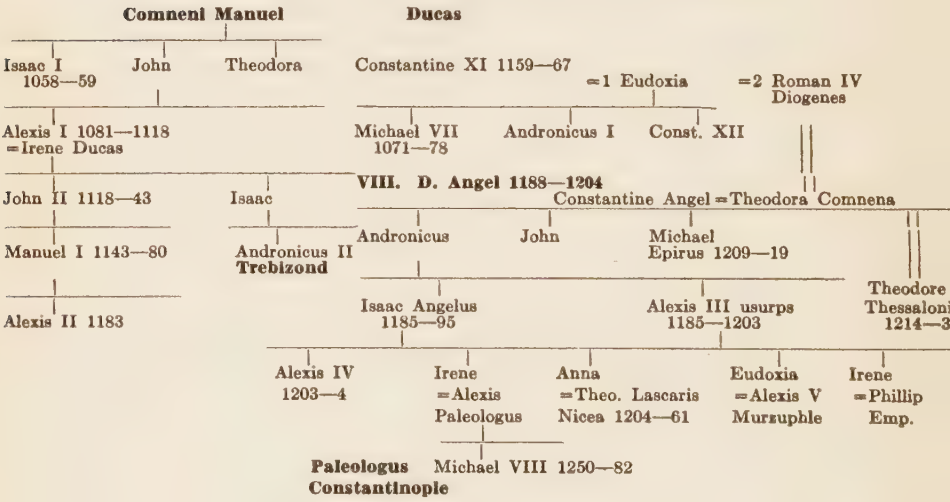
St. Ignatius
patriarch

VI. D. MACEDONIAN DYNASTY 867—1056

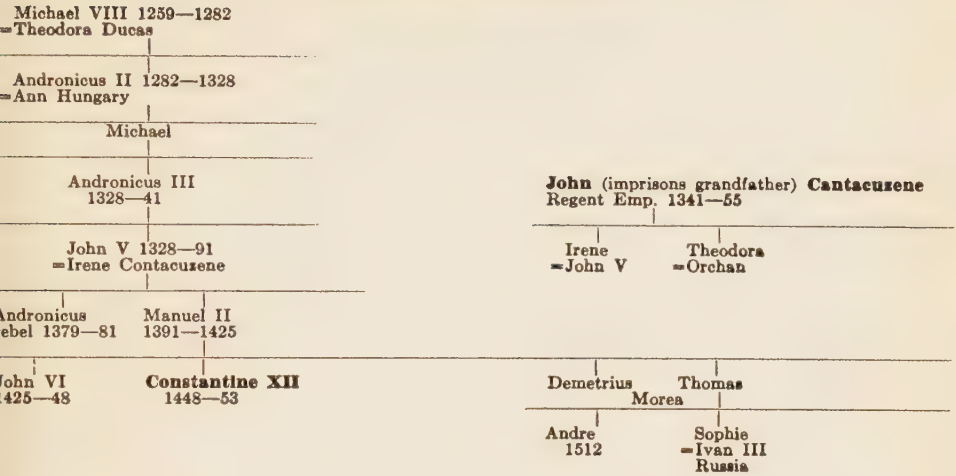


VII. D. COMNENI 1059—1185

Six Emperors the first 24 years. Six Emperors the last 27 years.



VIII. D. PALEOLOGI 1259—1453



CRUSADES

Early Crusades:
Charles Martel stops the Arabs at Poitiers, 732

Unceasing Crusades 710—1492
The Spaniards drive the Moors out of Spain

Eight General Crusades: Seljukian Turks
1098—1270
1 Crusade: Kingdom of Jerusalem 1098—1187
IV Crusade: Latin Empire of Constantinople 1204—1259
VII—VIII Crusades: St. Louis

Eight Balkan Crusades Against the Ottoman Turcs
1365—1681
Hunyades and Cesarini; Scanderbeg heroical resistance
1453, Fall of Constantinople
1571, Juan Austria crushes Turkish fleet at Lepanto
1683 Sobieski crushes army at Vienna

Kingdom of Jerusalem

Fourteen Kings 1099—1187

Christians contend for throne up to 1250

Godfrey IV the Beard Lorraine 1043

- Pope Stephen IX
- Ida =Eustache Boulogne
  - **Godfrey Bouillon** king Jerusalem 1099
  - Baldwin I king 1100—1118
    - Baldwin II Bourg 1118—31
      - Melesintha =Fulk Anjou 1031—43
        - Baldwin III 1143—62
          - Amauri 1162—73
            - Baldwin IV 1073—1084
            - Sibilla
              - =1 Wm. Montferrat
                - Baldwin V 1185—86
              - 2 =Guy Lusignan 1186—92
            - Isabella =Conrad Monteferrat 11[illegible]
              - Mary =John Brienne chosen also at Constantinop[illegible]
                - Mary =Baldwin II Cple.
                - Yolanthe =Frederic II G. Emp.
- Godfrey the Hunchback =Mathilda Canossa
  - Ida =Hugh of Rethel

Kingdom of Cyprus

Guy Lusignam—Brother Amauri 1194—1205

Dynasty 1192—1489

Latin Empire of Constantinople

1204—61

Baldwin VIII Flanders I. Emperor

- **Baldwin IX** 1204 I Emperor
  - Jane Flanders
  - Margaret Hainault
- Henry Emp. 1206—16
  - Philip Namur
  - Robert I 1220—28
  - Baldwin II 1228—72 =Mary Jerusalem
- Yolanthe =Peter Courtenai 1216—18

Turcs

SELJUKIAN TURKS

ONE MONARCHY 1040—1300

Toghrul Beg Emir al Omra 1040—63

Alp Arslan 1063—1072

Malek Shah 1072—92

FIVE STATES

ran 092—1193	Kerman 1092—1187	Aleppe 1092—1154	Damascus 1092—1154	Iconiam 1092—1300

OTTOMAN TURCS 1299—1920

Othman 1326

Orkhan 1326—59 Emir

Murad I

Bajacet I The Lightning 1388—1402

Seliman I	Musa	Nissa	Mahomet I **Sultan** 1413—21

Murad II 1451

Mahomet II the Conqueror 1451—81

Bajacet II 1481—1513

Selim the Grim 1512—20 **Caliph**
poisons own family

Solyman the Magnificent 1520—66

Selim II 1566—74 navy crushed at Lepante

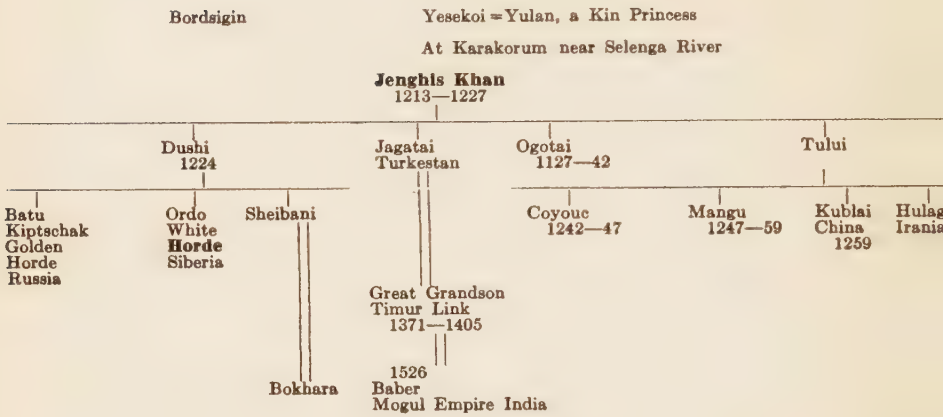
Mahomet IV Army crushed at Vienna 1683

Mahmoud II 1808—1839

Mahomet IV army crushed at Vienna 1683

	Abdul Medjid 1839—1861	Abdul Azis 1861—76	
Murad V 1876		Abdul Hamid II 1876—1909 Bloodthirsty deposed	Mohammed VI 1909—1918

Mongols



Mohammedan Spain

710—1492

Cordova Monarchy 751—1033

Sixteen Sovereigns

Abderrhaman I Emir

Abderrhaman III 912—62 Caliph

El Hakim 961—76

1033 Division into ten states

1072—1492 Granada Twenty Sultans

Christian Spain

710—1492

Heroic crusades—Divisions of kingdoms which often fight among themselves. 731 Pelayo. Sancho tg 1000—35. Emp. unites, but divides.

ARAGON 730
I Dyn. Petronilla =
II Dyn. Raymond of Barcelone 1147
Alphonse II 1173—96

3d desc. Pedro III 1276—1285

James II Frederic II Sicily Dyn. 1285—1410

4th Desc. Eleanore =John Castile

III Dyn. Ferdinand I 1416

John II 1479

Ferdinand t. Catholic =Isabella Castile

CASTILE
I Dyn. Castile and Leon
II Dyn. 1035
Ferdinand VI extends but divides

Alphons VI

Uracea 1109 — Theresa
III D. =**Raymond** =Henry Port.
Franche Comté

St. Ferdinand III 1230—52

Alphons X
The wise. Emp. elect 1252—87

4th Desct. Alphonse XI 1312—50

Pedro III cruel Dep. — Henry II Trastamare—1370

John I =Eleon Aragon

Henry III — Ferdinand Aragon

John II 1406—54

Henry IV 1450—74 Scandals — Alphons 1465 — **Isabel** 1474—1504 =**Ferdinand**

United Spain

HAPSBURGS

Catherine
1 =Arthur England
2 =Henry VIII

Juanna
=Philip Flanders-Hapsburg

Juan
=Margaret

Eleanore
Emn Portugal

Charles I Spain
V. Emp 1519—55

Ferdinand I Austria
=Ann Hungary

Margaret Parma
O Farnese

Alexander
1592

don Juan
Victor
Lepanto 1578

Philip II 1558—98
1 =Marg. Port. =2 Eliz. France
3—Mary Tudor =4 Ann Austria

1 Carlos Exec.

3 Mary England

Juana

4 1598—1621 **Philip III**

Maria
Max. II
Aust

4 Isabella Belgium
Albert Austria

Ann M.
=Louis XIII

Louis XIV =Mary T.

Louis Dauphin

BOURBONS Philip V 1701—24
=El Parma

Philip IV
1621—65

Charles II
1605—1600

Mary Ann
Ferdinand III

2 =Claudia

Margt. 1 =Leopold I Emp.

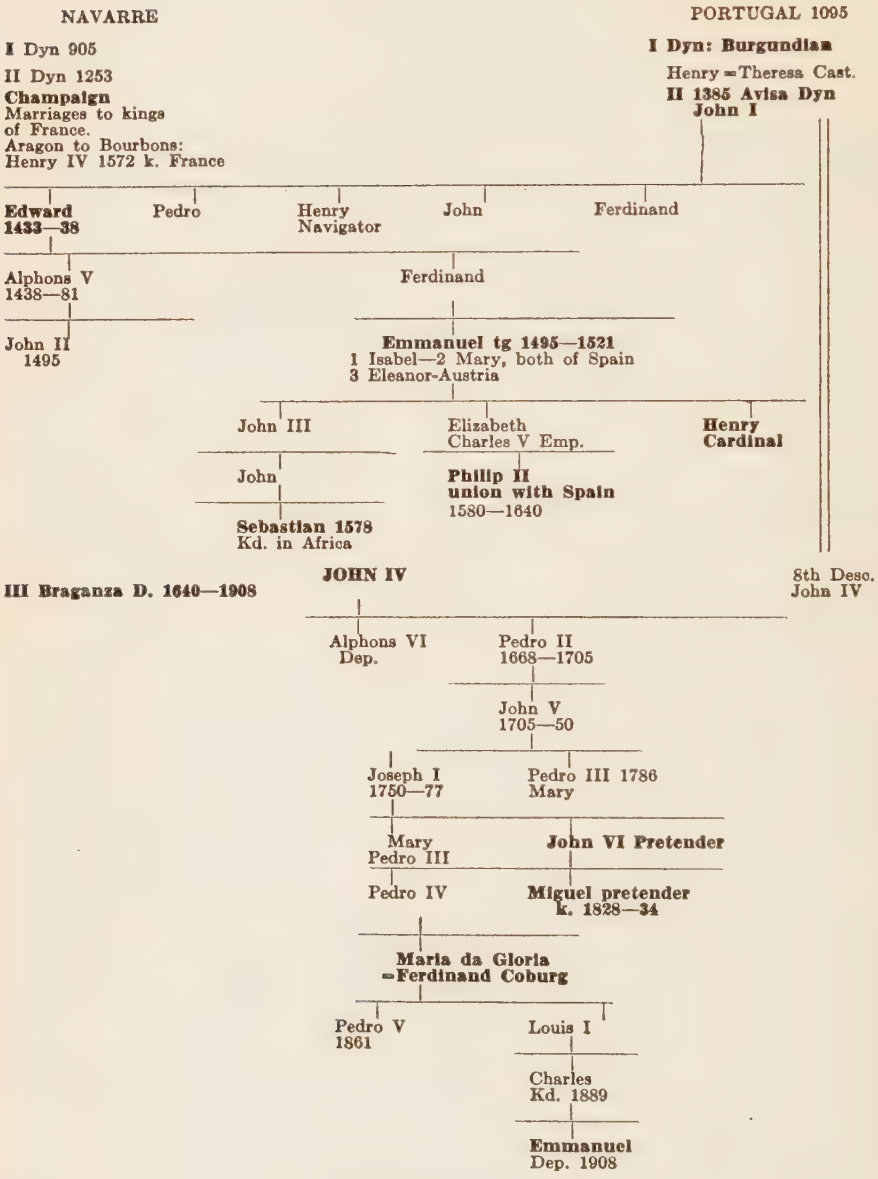
1 Mary Ant. =Max Bav.

2 Joseph I Emp. 1705—11

2 Charles VI Emp. 1711

Joseph Ferdinand
1699

Mary Theresa


NAVARRE
I Dyn 905
II Dyn 1253
Champaign
Marriages to kings of France.
Aragon to Bourbons:
Henry IV 1572 k. France
PORTUGAL 1095
I Dyn: Burgundian
Henry =Theresa Cast.
II 1385 Avisa Dyn
John I
Edward 1433—38
Pedro
Henry Navigator
John
Ferdinand
Alphons V 1438—81
John II 1495
Ferdinand
Emmanuel tg 1495—1521
1 Isabel—2 Mary, both of Spain
3 Eleanor-Austria
John III
Elizabeth
Charles V Emp.
Henry Cardinal
John
Sebastian 1578
Kd. in Africa
Philip II
union with Spain
1580—1640
III Braganza D. 1640—1908
JOHN IV
8th Desc.
John IV
Alphons VI
Dep.
Pedro II
1668—1705
John V
1705—50
Joseph I
1750—77
Pedro III 1786
Mary
Mary
Pedro III
John VI Pretender
Pedro IV
Miguel pretender
k. 1828—34
Maria da Gloria
=Ferdinand Coburg
Pedro V
1861
Louis I
Charles
Kd. 1889
Emmanuel
Dep. 1908

Italy

CENTURIES OF INVASIONS

Italy has been devastated for centuries by invasion and anarchy for lack of a strong power of defense, or permanent dynasty. There were four barbarian tribes, and the Saracen pirates. Some barons tyranized the people.

WESTGOTHS =under Balthings GAUL SPAIN

HEREDITARY MONARCHY 376—5531

Alaric I 376—411 makes 3 invasions in Italy. Sacks Rome; Conquers Southern Gaul.

Ataulf 411. Wallia, 419

Theodoric 451 fights Huns; falls at Chalons. Three sons conquer Spain. Gaul is lost through Arian intolerance.

ELECTIVE MONARCHY 531.

Recarred the Catholic 586. Unites parties. Founds the Spanish Nation.

ODOACER 476—493.

VANDALS 429—534.

Genseric 439—477; sacks Rome, calls Huns.

branch furnishes 3 kings

Huneric 477—86 Arian tyrant
2 =Eudoxia

Hilderic 524—531

Saracens
814—1057

EASTGOTHS =under Amalings

ITALY 490—554

THEODORIC the Great, hostage at Constantinople, 474; conquers Italy 507; becomes also king of Westgoths. Leaves minor grandson. Civil and Byzantine wars. Spirited defense by Kings Vitiges and Totilas.

544. CONQUEST BY GREEKS

Exarchate of Ravenna
555—774

LOMBARDS
568—774

Alboin 568—574. Treats Italy as conquered country. King Athori marries Catholic Bavarian Theodelinda, who marries King Agiluff and converts the Lombards; Blending of Italians and Lombards. Growing power of Kings, who threaten the independence of the Pope. The Franks conquer Northern Italy grant territory to Popes. 750.

TYRANTS OF ROME 901—1043

Entrenched in the strongholds of Rome, Preneste and Tusculum, the family of Theodora was master of Rome, until overthrown by the Normans of Naples. There were two reigning houses.

1—The Alberics: many princes; nine popes. They were the progenitors of the Colunnas. 2—The Crescentii of St. Sabina. They ruled Rome three times. They were the progenitors of the Cencii.

Theophylastas 901—914=Theodora I 928—32

Marosia =1 Alberic I Camerino
=2d Guy Spoleto
=3 Hugh Provence
Theodora II Crescentius I

John XI Pope
Alberic II 932—54
Marosia II —Trencote
Stephania
Theodora III =Joannes

Dius Dedi
John XII Pope
Crescentius I 984

Tregorius
Tusculum 962—1012
Censius
Crescentius II 998 Executed by Otto III

Alberic III 1013—24
John XIX Pope
Benedict VIII
Crescentius III—1012

Petrius IX—1043
Benedict IX—1049

Italy

TUSCANY

Beatrice of Upper Lorraine

=1 Boniface of Tuscany — =2 Godefray IV Lower Loraine

Mathilda of Canossa
=1 Godfrey V
=2 Welf V
Mathilda donates States to Papacy

2 =Godfrey V — 2 Ida =Eustache — 2 Sylvester

Godfrey Bouillon 1099 — **Crusaders Kings Jerusalem** — **Baldwin I 1100—18**

PARMA 1545—1860

I Farnese D 8 princes
Peter

Octavius
=Margaret Hapsburg

Alexander 1592
:
:
:
5 Desc. Elizabeth
=Philip V Spain
2 Bourbon D. 6 Princes

MANTUA GONZAGA 1328—1703

Four Princes ten Dukes

MEDICI 1024—1737

Giovani

Cosmo Elder Branch — Lorenzo Younger Br.

4th Gen. First Cousins
Popes Leo X — Clement VII

6th Gen.
Catherine
=Henry II France

7th Gen.
Mary—Henry IV France

10th Gen. Giovanni

ESTE 859—1859: Modena Ferrara

Azzo II
=Welf Cunegunda of Bavaria

Welf IV
German branch

Fulco Italian branch
Mary =James II England
Rinaldo 1655—1737
=Brunswick

Austrian D Mary Beatrice
=Ferdinand Austria

Francis IV Modena 1814

MILAN VISCONTI 1277—1535

Duke Galeazzo
=Isabella Valois

Valentine
=Louis Orleans

Grandson
Louis XII
1489—1517

Philip

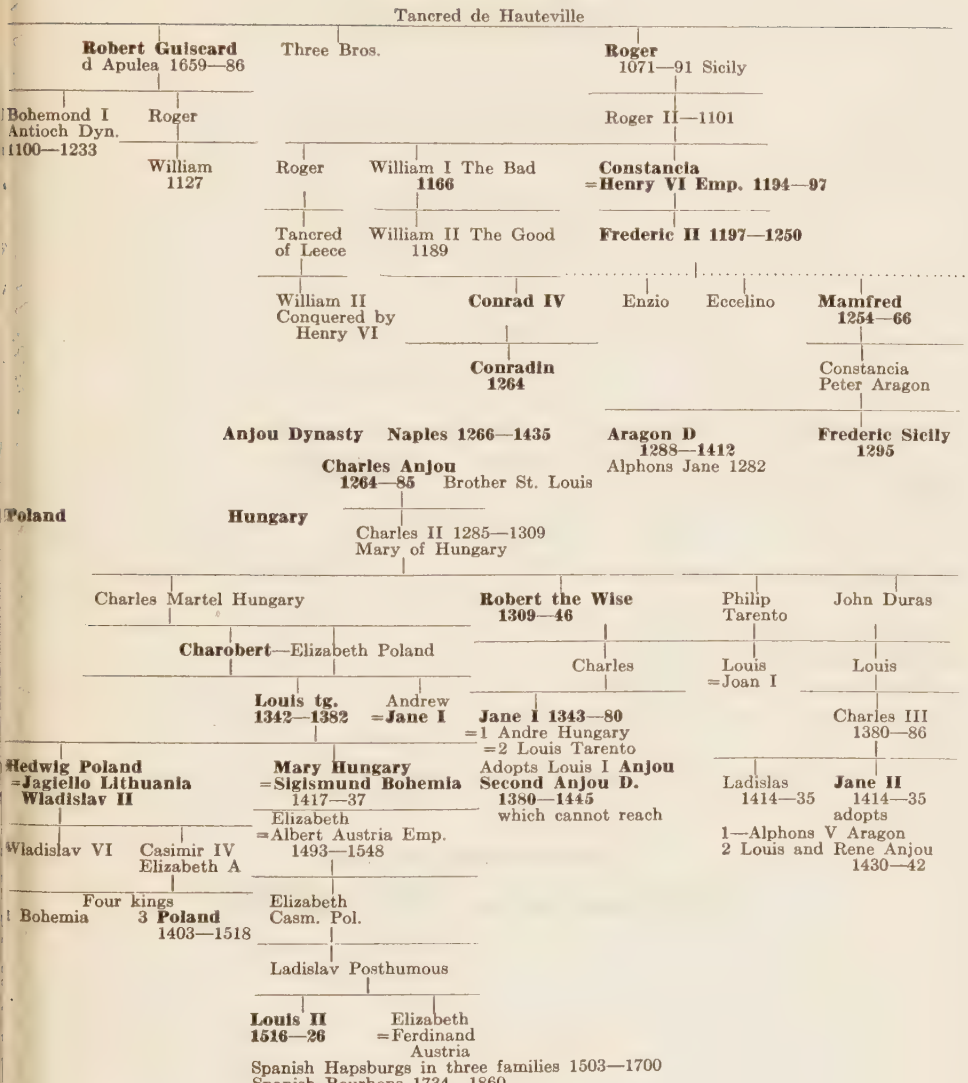
Blanca
=Sforza

Louis le More
1510
Francis
1535

Galeazzo II

TWO SICILIES

Norman Dyn. 1057—1264



Spanish Hapsburgs in three families 1503—1700
Spanish Bourbons 1734—1860

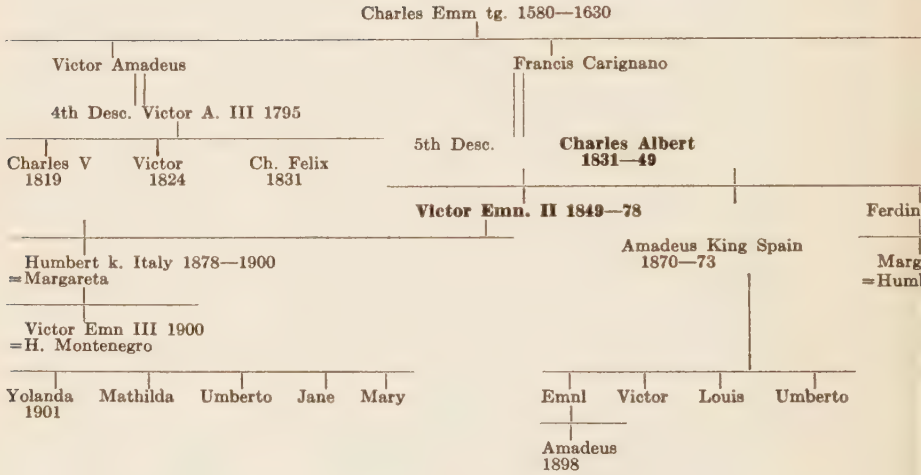
SAVOY

Counts of Savoy, Humbert Turin—1050
Mary—marries Henry IV Emp. 1044
Margaret marries St. Louis IX

1259—1418 Partition: Savoy and Piedmont
Amedee VIII unites, retires, hermit, last antipope

1417—1720 seventeen Dukes
1720—1861 Kings of Sardinia six

1861 Kings of Italy three



CHANGING REGIMES IN ITALY

Spain 1535
Austria 1713—96 1814—59
French Wars 1796—1816
Italian Annexation 1859

Great Britain

IRISH GENEALOGIES.

Antiquity

The Irish dynasties run back more than two milleniums. They start with Breoghan from Isbain or Spain, and run down to modern times in four stems of his grandsons, to wit: the Erimonians, the Eberians, the Irians and the Lugaids. Twice they connect;—to wit: about the time of Our Lord in Queen Maud and about the time of Cond of the hundred battles 128-157 A. D. Shane O'Neill 1562-67 is reputed the 88th descendant of Erimon. The Milesian dynasties reigned till the clan system of government was broken up by Elizabeth of England, 1600.

4 Kingdoms

There were four dynasties, each presiding over one of the four kingdoms. The Irish nation was organized into one whole state by the ardship, which placed an emperor over the four kingdoms. When this overking was an energetic man, he maintained peace in the Island. From the year 400 to the year 1000 of our era the Northern O'Niel's held office till Brian Boru overthrew them; and there were 47 chief kings that were recognized. For the following 150 years there was civil war for that honor.

Ardri to Rule Over All

Complexity

But the genealogies are exceedingly hard to follow, as the rulers belonged to different branches of the Milesian stem. As names matter little it suffices to know that Milesians and no other native kings reigned in Ireland.

Truth

In the main the genealogies are true, especially since the great Cond the Fighter or Nial of the Nine Hostages, 400 A. D., as they were the title for land tenure, and were preserved with the greatest of care.

Scottish Genealogies

MILESIAN D. in Scotland 502—1291. Female succession, Alternating, 1057: Hereditary succession. Fergus tg. and two brothers. Irish conquer Argyle—opposition of natives.
One Kingdom of Scone—Alba then Scotland by marriage of Scott and Pict.

KENNETH McALPIN 844—861.
Alternating successions ended through murder:
Duncan 1040 slain by Cousin Macbeth = Gruach
Vacancy after Alexander III, daughter and granddaughter 1297. England claims Suzerainty.
Appoints side branches, Baliol John 1292—96. Edward 1332—42 as vassals, revolt of Wallace Bruce.

Robert Bruce
1305—29

Edward Bruce
called to Ire and

David II Bruce
1329—77

Margery
= Walter III Stuart

STUART D. 1377—1714

Robert II
1377—90 8 children

Robert III 1390

Six Jameses
James IV 1513 = Margaret Tudor

James V 1542 = Mary Guise

Mary Stuart 1542—67—87
1 = Francis I 2 = Henry Darnley
3 = Bothwell

2

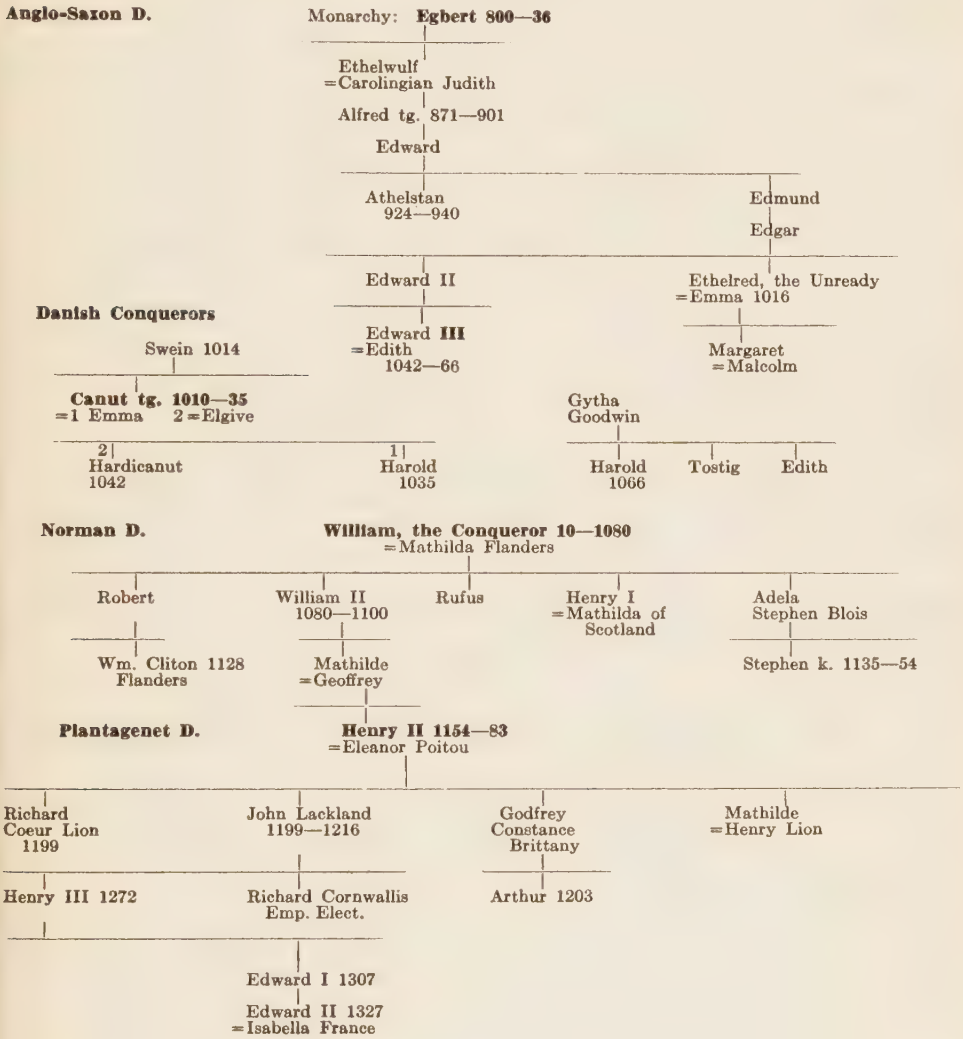
James VI Scotland 1567
James I England 1603

GUELF D. 1714

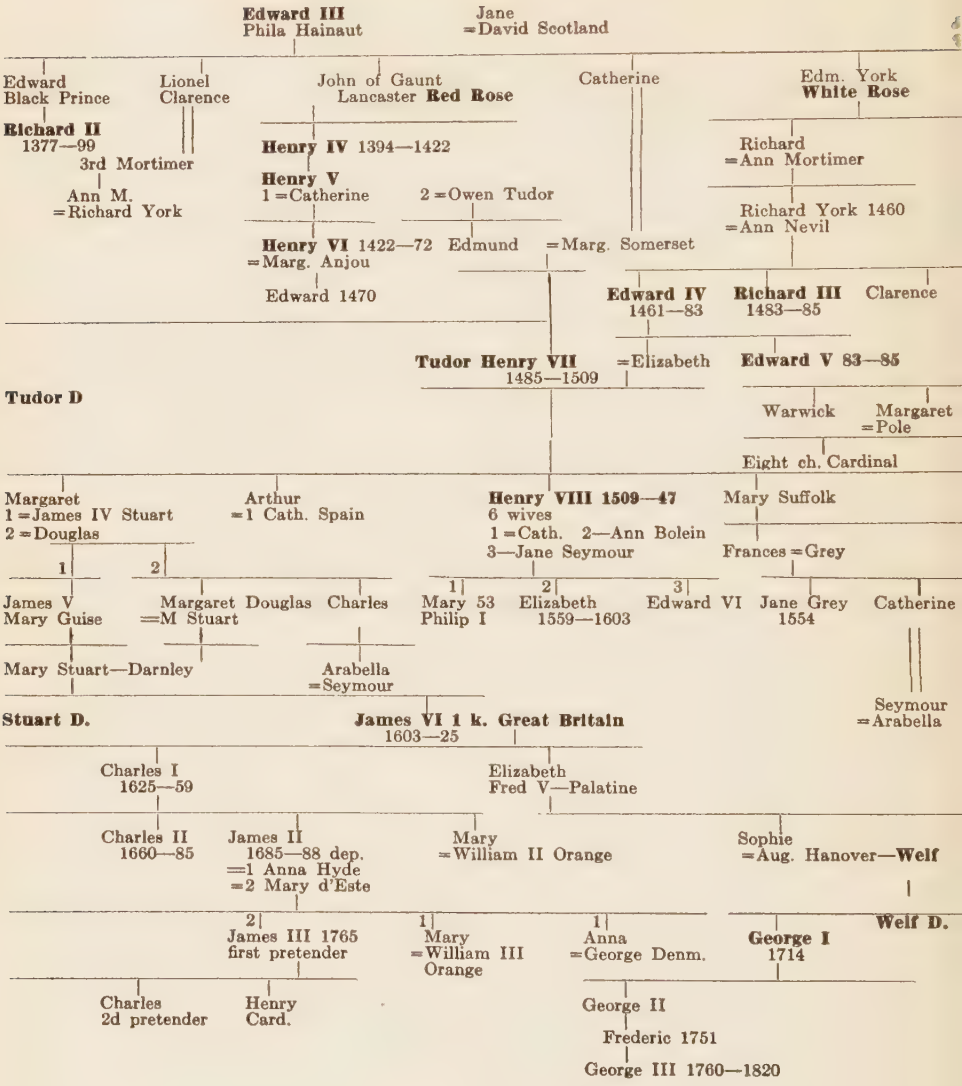
George I Hanover

English Genealogies

The dynasties of the heptarchy average 20 kings.

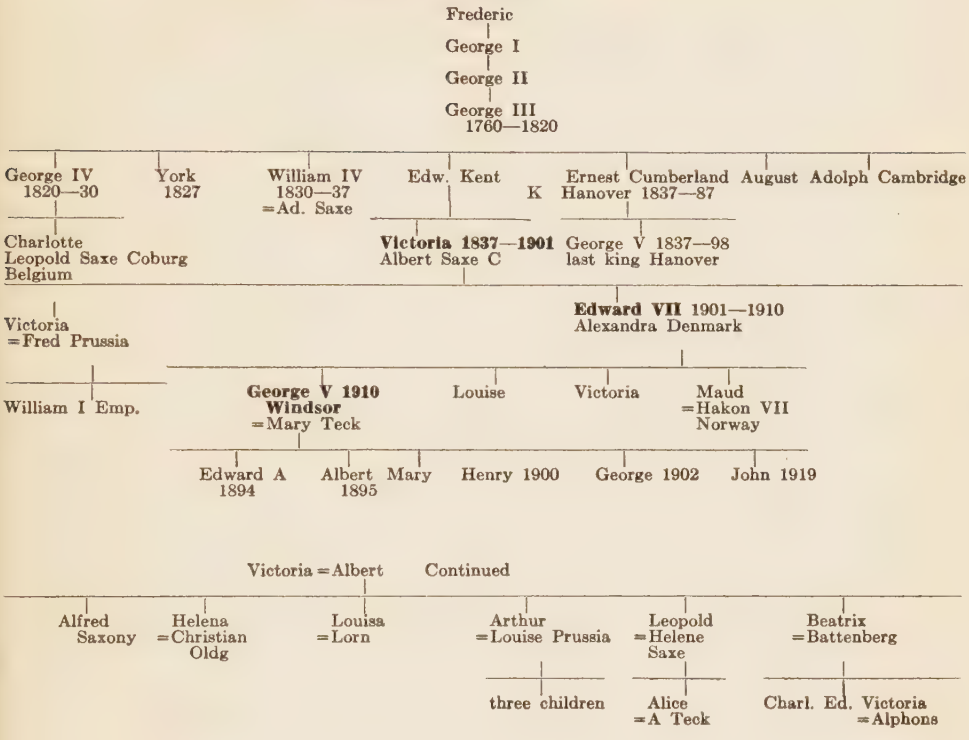


English Genealogies—Continued

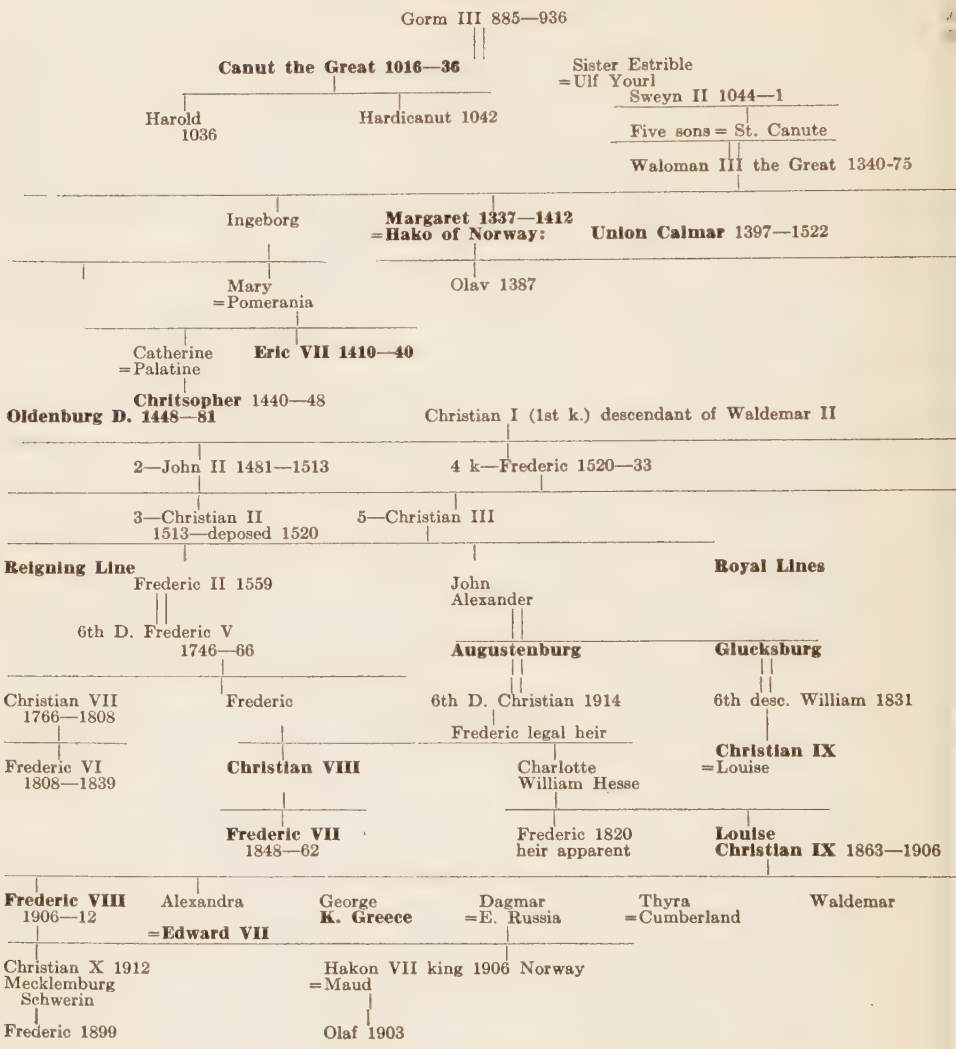


Guelf D 1714

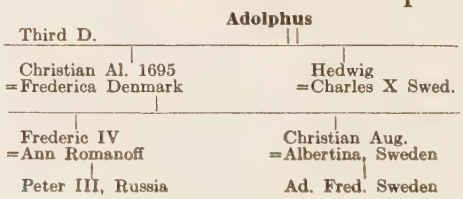
English Genealogies—Continued



Denmark



Holstein—Gottorp



Norway

I Dynasty 885—Harald reduces independent chiefs, who turn pirates and settle in the west. F. I. Rollo, k. St. Olaf is slain by Canute the Great of Denmark, who is dethroned by his son, Magnus. Retakes Noway.

II Dyn. 1147—1350. Harald III 1103. Three brothers reign. Sigurd survives crusader and conqueror. Dynastic wars. Hakon VII 1310. Dr. Ingeborg = Eric of Sweden, whose grandson, Hakon VII, marries Margaret of Denmark.

Sweden

1150—1250 **Dynastic Wars** between Gothic Eric and Swedish Swerker dynastics; alternation of ruler.

Folkunger D. 1250—1389. Great rulers. Waldemar

Birger 1290—1320 kills two revolted Brothers Waldemar and Eric

Eric = Ingeborg of Norway

Euphemie = Albert

Magnus Smek 1320—63 Sweden—Norway

Mecklembourg **Albert 1365—78** dep.

Eric Sweden 1359

Hakon VII 1380 Norway = Margaret of Denmark Calmar Union 1397—1522

Wasa Dyn. 1520

GUSTAVUS WASA

Eric XIV

John III

Sigismond deth.

Charles IX 1604—1611

Catharina John

Deux Ponts. D. 1654

Gustavus Adolphus 1632—1632

Deux Ponts D.

Christina 1632—54

Frederic

Albertina = Christian A. Holstein

Charles X 1654—60 = Hedwig Holstein

Charles XI

Charles XII 1697—1718

Christina 1632—54

Ulrica 1718—41 Frederic Hesse 1751

Holstein D.

Adolphus Fr. 1751—71

Louis Oldenburg

Gustavus III 1771—92

Gustavus IV abdicates 1809

Prince Wasa

Charles XIII 1809—18 adopts Bernadotte

Charles XIV 1818—44

D. Bernadotte

Oscar 1859

Charles XV 1872

Oscar II 1907

August

Eric

Gustavus Ad. = Margt. England

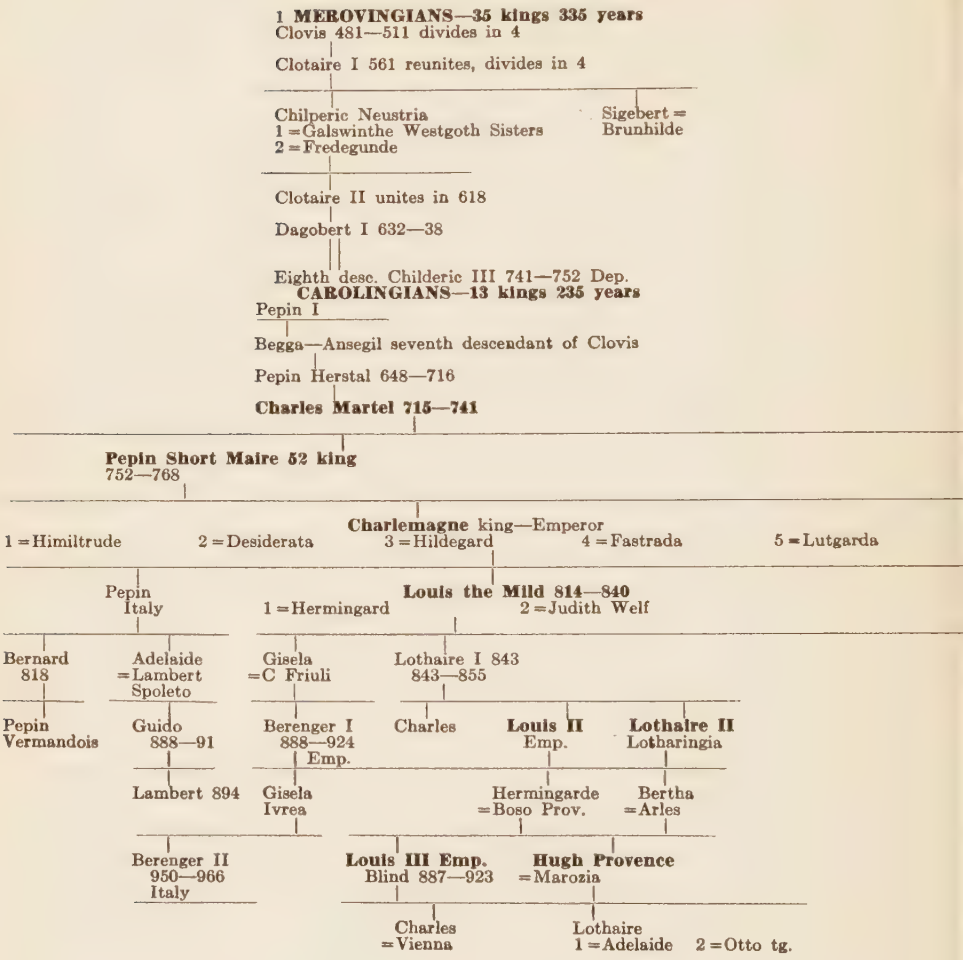
William

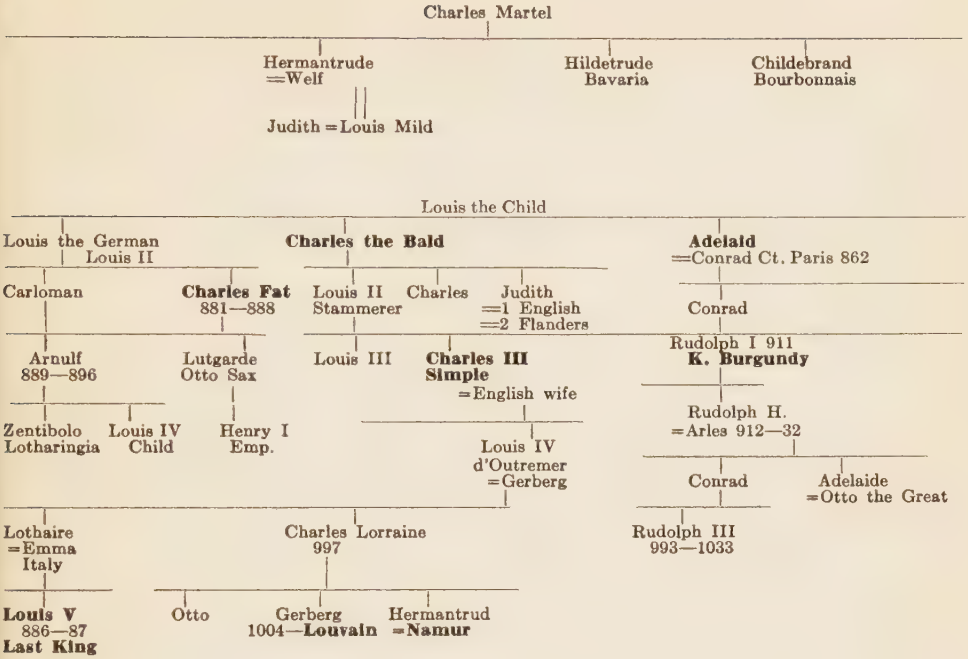
Gustave

Sigard

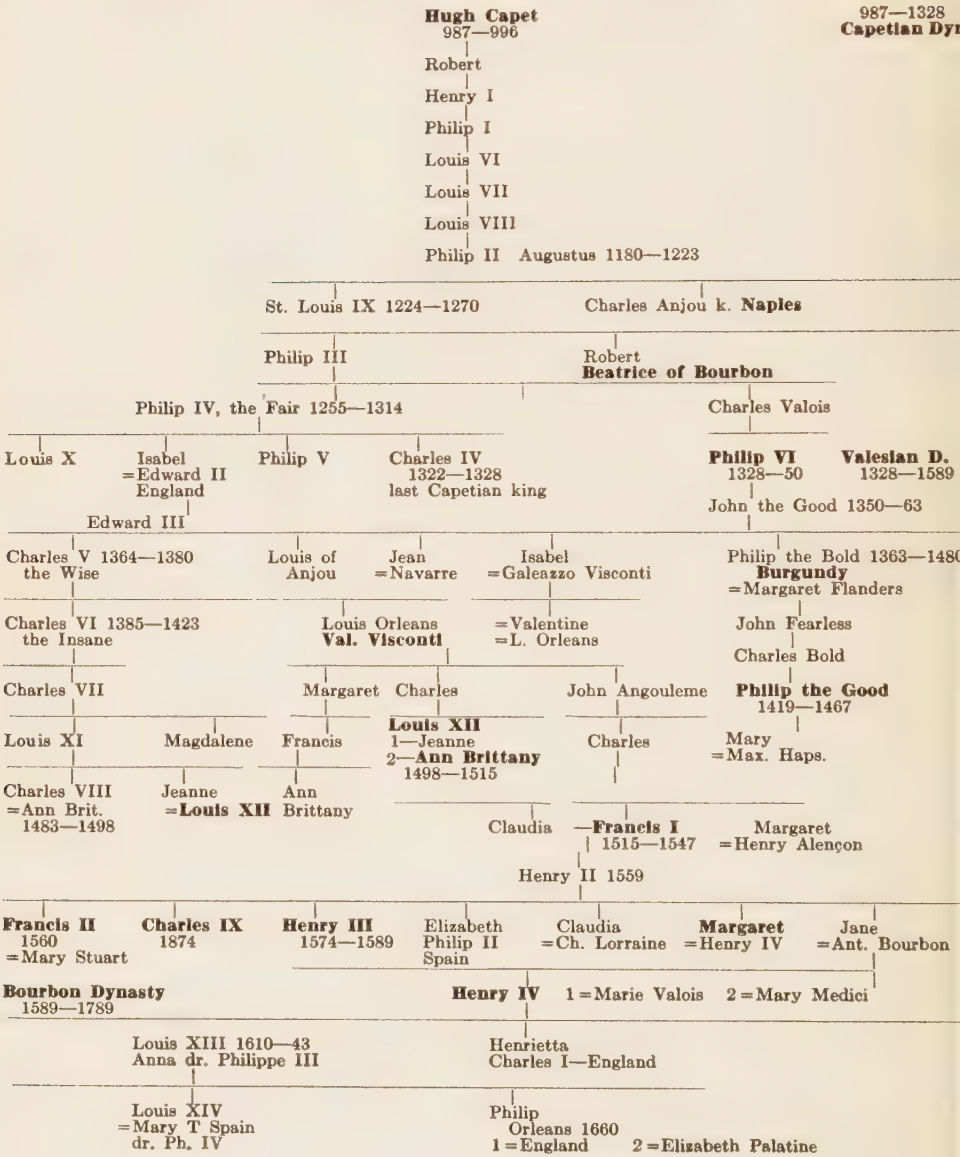
Wegride

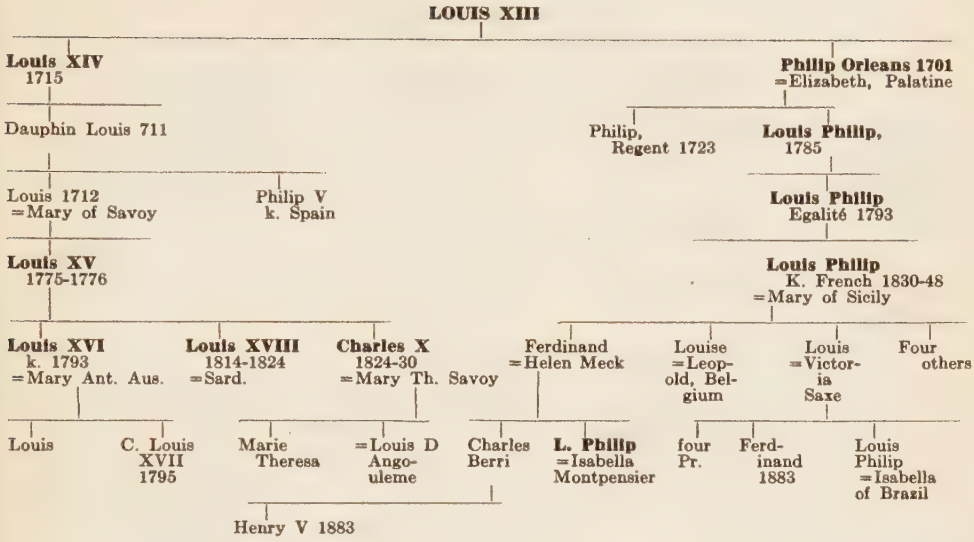
Frankish Dynasties

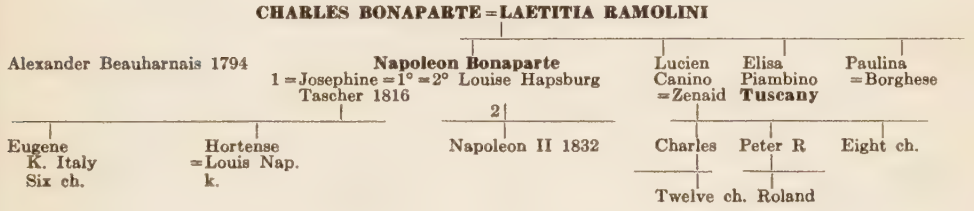


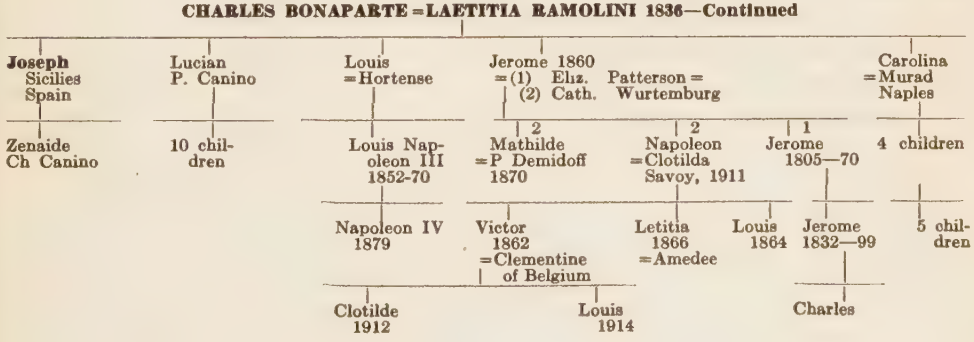

Charles Martel
Hermantrude
=Welf
Hildetrude
Bavaria
Childebrand
Bourbonnais
Judith =Louis Mild
Louis the Child
Louis the German
Louis II
Charles the Bald
Adelaid
=Conrad Ct. Paris 862
Carloman
Charles Fat
881—888
Louis II
Stammerer
Charles
Judith
=1 English
=2 Flanders
Conrad
Rudolph I 911
K. Burgundy
Arnulf
889—896
Lutgarde
Otto Sax
Louis III
Charles III
Simple
=English wife
Rudolph H.
=Arles 912—32
Zentibolo
Lotharingia
Louis IV
Child
Henry I
Emp.
Louis IV
d'Outremer
=Gerberg
Conrad
Adelaide
=Otto the Great
Lothaire
=Emma
Italy
Charles Lorraine
997
Rudolph III
993—1033
Louis V
886—87
Last King
Otto
Gerberg
1004—Louvain
Hermantrud
=Namur

France

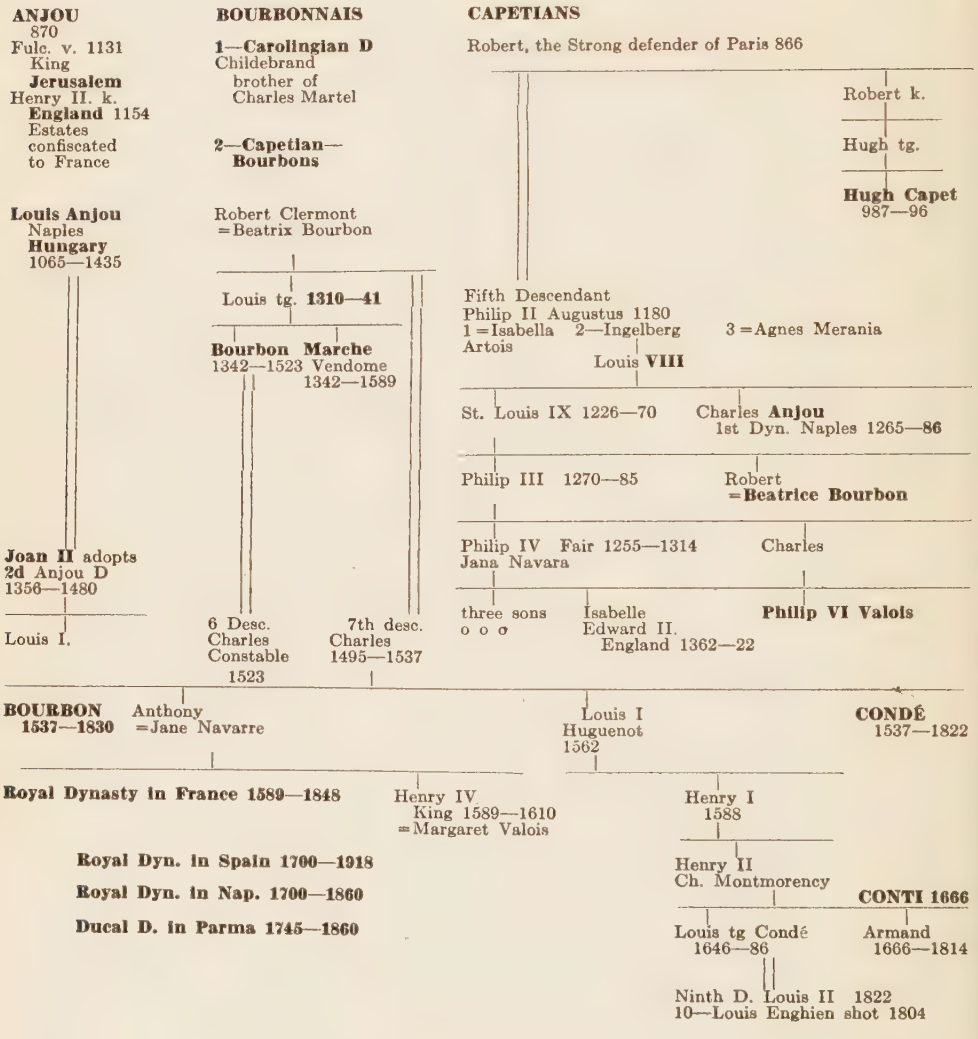

Hugh Capet 987—996
987—1328 Capetian Dyn
Robert
Henry I
Philip I
Louis VI
Louis VII
Louis VIII
Philip II Augustus 1180—1223
St. Louis IX 1224—1270
Charles Anjou k. Naples
Philip III
Robert Beatrice of Bourbon
Philip IV, the Fair 1255—1314
Charles Valois
Louis X
Isabel =Edward II England
Philip V
Charles IV 1322—1328 last Capetian king
Philip VI 1328—50
Valesian D. 1328—1589
John the Good 1350—63
Edward III
Charles V 1364—1380 the Wise
Louis of Anjou
Jean =Navarre
Isabel =Galeazzo Visconti
Philip the Bold 1363—1480 Burgundy =Margaret Flanders
Charles VI 1385—1423 the Insane
Louis Orleans Val. Visconti
=Valentine =L. Orleans
John Fearless
Charles Bold
Charles VII
Margaret
Charles
John Angouleme
Philip the Good 1419—1467
Louis XI
Magdalene
Francis
Louis XII 1—Jeanne 2—Ann Brittany 1498—1515
Charles
Mary =Max. Haps.
Charles VIII =Ann Brit. 1483—1498
Jeanne =Louis XII
Ann Brittany
Claudia
—Francis I 1515—1547
Margaret =Henry Alençon
Henry II 1559
Francis II 1560 =Mary Stuart
Charles IX 1874
Henry III 1574—1589
Elizabeth Philip II Spain
Claudia =Ch. Lorraine
Margaret =Henry IV
Jane =Ant. Bourbon
Bourbon Dynasty 1589—1789
Henry IV
1 =Marie Valois
2 =Mary Medici
Louis XIII 1610—43 Anna dr. Philippe III
Henrietta Charles I—England
Louis XIV =Mary T Spain dr. Ph. IV
Philip Orleans 1660 1 =England
2 =Elizabeth Palatine


LOUIS XIII
Louis XIV 1715
Dauphin Louis 711
Louis 1712 =Mary of Savoy
Philip V k. Spain
Louis XV 1775-1776
Louis XVI k. 1793 =Mary Ant. Aus.
Louis XVIII 1814-1824 =Sard.
Charles X 1824-30 =Mary Th. Savoy
Louis
C. Louis XVII 1795
Marie Theresa
=Louis D Angouleme
Henry V 1883
Philip Orleans 1701 =Elizabeth, Palatine
Philip, Regent 1723
Louis Philip, 1785
Louis Philip Egalité 1793
Louis Philip K. French 1830-48 =Mary of Sicily
Ferdinand =Helen Meck
Louise =Leopold, Belgium
Louis =Victoria Saxe
Four others
Charles Berri
L. Philip =Isabella Montpensier
four Pr.
Ferdinand 1883
Louis Philip =Isabella of Brazil

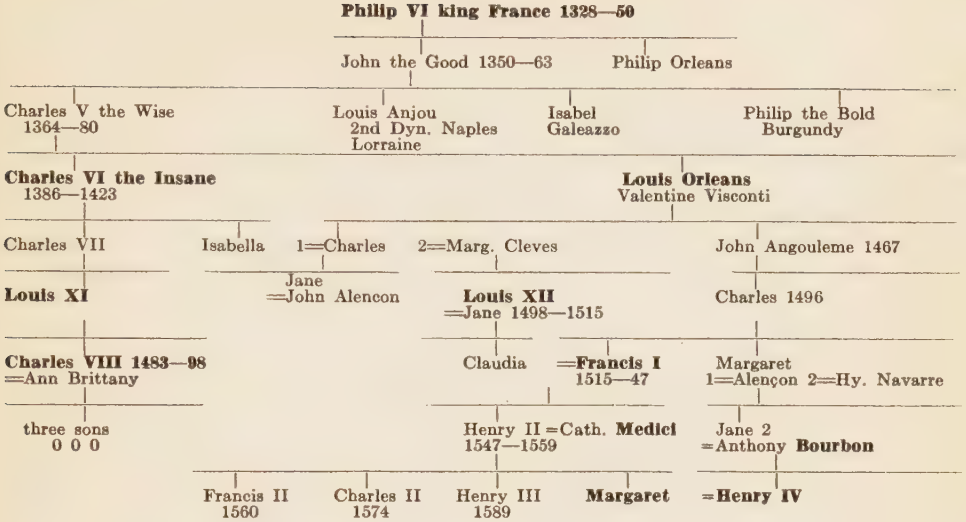

CHARLES BONAPARTE =LAETITIA RAMOLINI
Alexander Beauharnais 1794
Napoleon Bonaparte
1 =Josephine =1° =2° Louise Hapsburg
Tascher 1816
2
Eugene K. Italy Six ch.
Hortense =Louis Nap. k.
Napoleon II 1832
Lucien Canino =Zenaid
Elisa Piambino Tuscany
Paulina =Borghese
Charles
Peter R
Eight ch.
Twelve ch.
Roland


CHARLES BONAPARTE =LAETITIA RAMOLINI 1836—Continued
Joseph Sicilies Spain
Zenaide Ch Canino
Lucian P. Canino
10 children
Louis =Hortense
Louis Napoleon III 1852-70
Napoleon IV 1879
Clotilde 1912
Jerome 1860 =(1) Eliz. Patterson =(2) Cath. Wurtemburg
2
Mathilde =P Demidoff 1870
Victor 1862 =Clementine of Belgium
Louis 1914
2
Napoleon =Clotilda Savoy, 1911
Letitia 1866 =Amedee
1
Jerome 1805—70
Louis 1864
Jerome 1832—99
Charles
Carolina =Murad Naples
4 children
5 children

French Houses

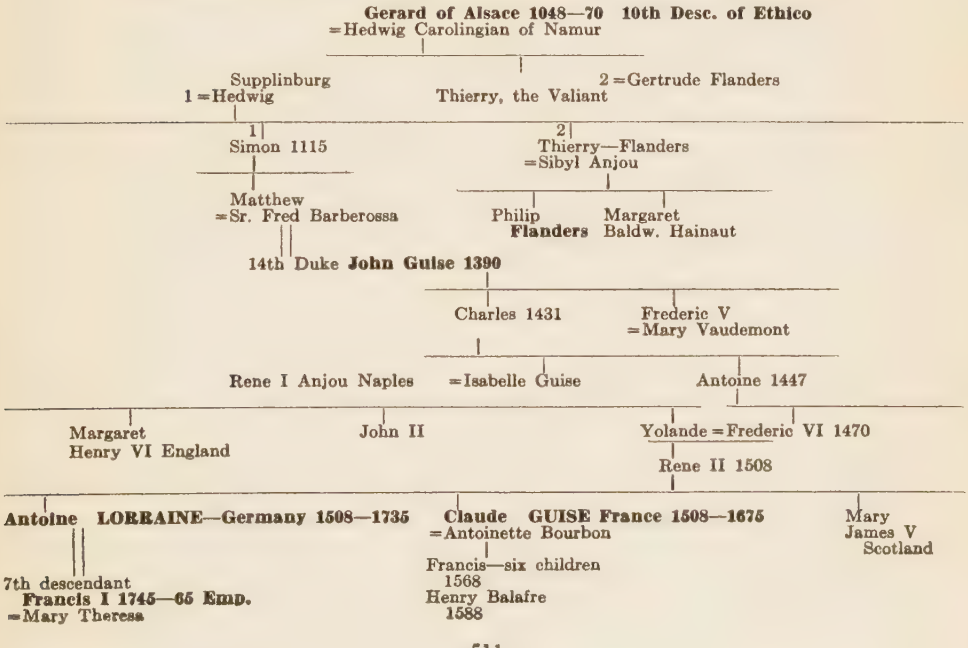


VALOIS



LORRAINE 1048—1508

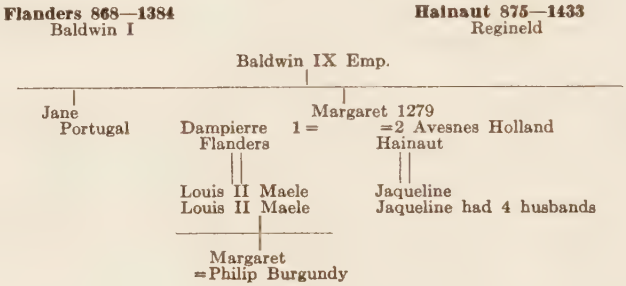
Intermarriage with Hohenstauffen, Valesian sovereigns, and local heirs and heiresses.



Belgium Feudal Period

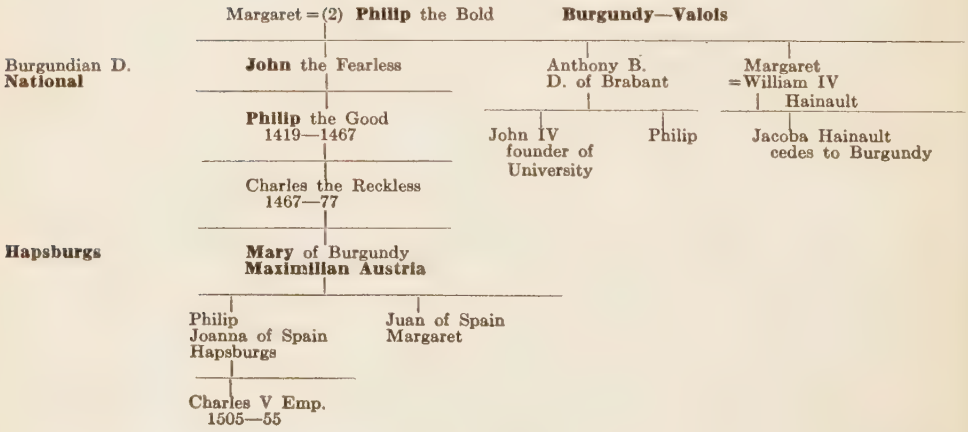
843 - 1430

Western Belgium was under French influence: Flanders; Flemish and French Flanders with Artois. Hainaut was sometimes united to Flanders. Namur was under a Flemish dynasty 1196—1418. Flanders 868—1384: nineteen counts. Hainaut 875—1433: eighteen counts. Both countries were united under the same rulers 1067—70, 1191—1279. The male descendants died out with Emperor Baldwin IX 1204, his daughters ruled till 1279. The descendants of Margaret: Dampierre reigned in Flanders, Avesnes in Hainaut; and soon after in Holland and Zealand.



Belgium Reunited

NATIONAL DYNASTY 1430—1555



Belgium Feudal Period

843—1430

Lotharingia or Eastern Belgium was under the vasselage of the Empire, 956 St. Bruno, brother of Emperor Otto I, divides it in upper and lower parts called Lorraine, and Brabant Luxemburg.

Lotharingia

1 Dyn. Carolingians 950—1005
Charles Lorraine at Brussells

Otto I 1005 | Hermingard Namur— | Gerberg Louvain

II Dyn— **Godfrey 1004—1106** | 4 Lamberts 4 **Henries**

Godfrey Bouillon
king of Jerusalem

III Brabant and Antwerp 1106—1430

Louvain d—1106—1355

3 Godfries 1106

3 Henries 1196

3 Johns 1261 wins Limburg

John II joyous entrance

John III

Burgundian D. 1404
1425 University

Luxemburg 963—1435

1 Dyn—Ardennes 963
2 Dyn—Namur 1136

3 Dyn—Limburg 1214—1443

Limburg lost at battle of Woeringen

Henry VI—1308 becomes Emperor (II VII)

John the Blind—Elizabeth Bohemia
Charles IV Emperor

John Gorlitz

Elizabeth Gorlitz 1409—1433
=Antony Burgundy

FOREIGN REGIMES IN BELGIUM 1555—1830

Spain	**Austria**	**French**	**Dutch**
1555—1713	1713	1794	1815—30

Kingdom of Belgium

onal D.

Leopold I Saxe Coburg Gotha —**Mary Louise d'Orleans**

Louise Philip Sax. Cob. | Leopold II 1865—1909 Henriette Hapsburg | Philip 1905 =Mary Hohenzollern Sigmaringen | Charlotte =Maxmilian Emp. 1867 Mexico

Clementine =Victor Napoleon | Stephanie =(1) Rudolph Austria =(2) Hungarian | **Albert** =Elizabeth of Bavaria | Henriette Emn. Orleans | Josephine =Ch. Hohenzollern

Leopold 1901 | Charles 1903 | Jose 1906

Holland

COUNTY HOLLAND

1 Holland Dirk D. 850—1299

Four centuries of sturdy male descendants:

7 Dirks—5 Flories

William II Emp. 1249—56

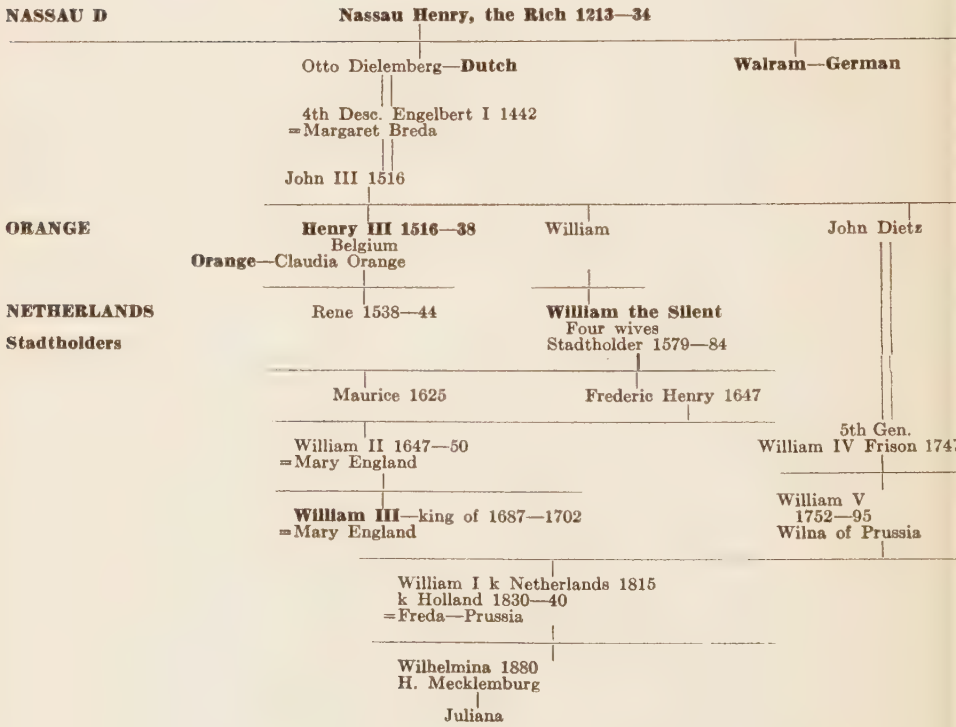
II Hainault D. Avesnes 1300

III Flanders—Burgundian D 1433

IV Hapsburg D—1482

V Orange Nassau—1579

William I Stadtholder

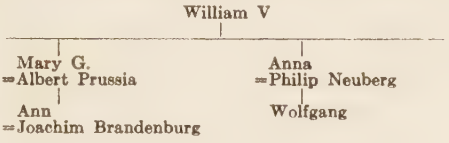


Germany

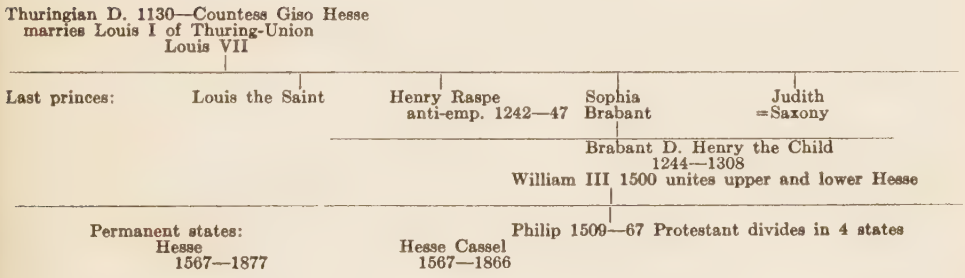
Lower Rhine Countries

In the South **Zulich and Berg** were united in 1423.
In the North **Cleves and Mark** were united in 1400.
William united Zulich and Cleves 1539—92

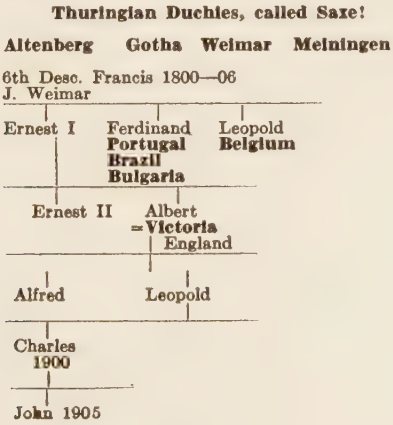
Daughters: Mary married a Heohnzollern; Anna a Palatine. Both houses claimed the inheritance. The contest was settled in 1666: The North went to the Hohenzollerns, the South to the Palatines.



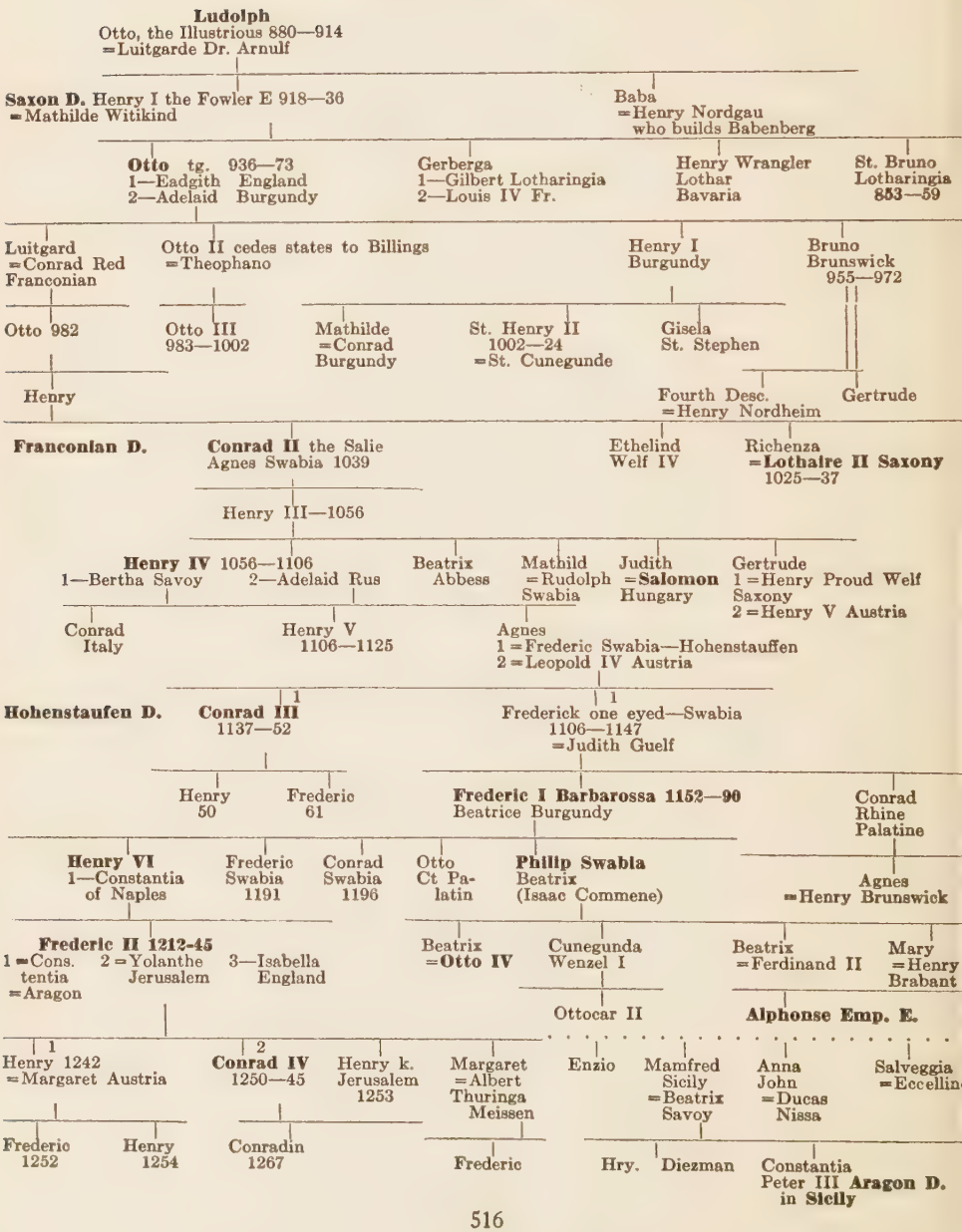
Hesse-Thuringia



Wettins in Thuringian Duchies

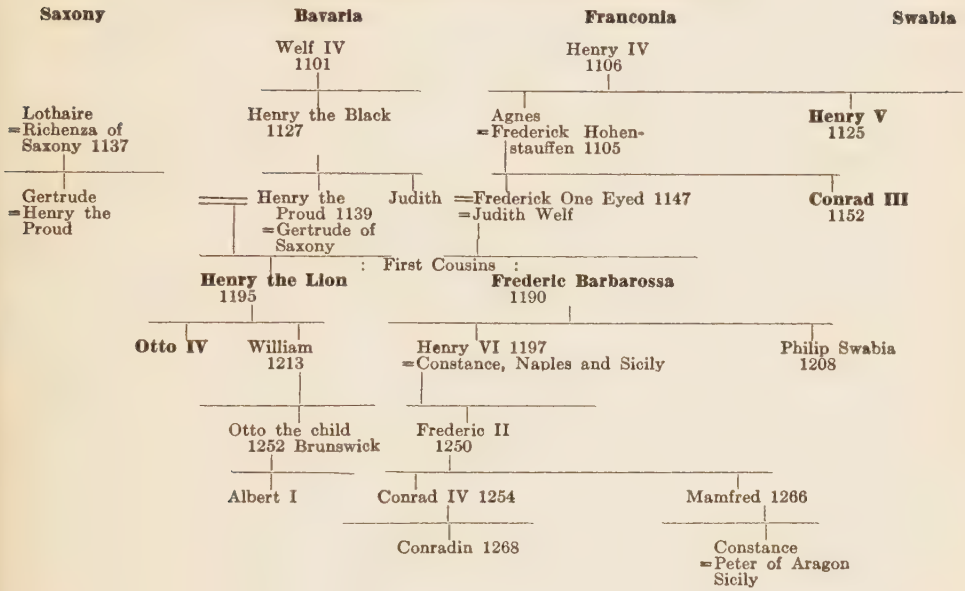


German Empire



Connection between

GUELFS AND GHIBELLINES, OR WELFS AND WEIBLINGS



Swabia

916-1268

Dukes 1079—1268, the Hohenstauffen sell titles, and exact taxes that exhaust the people — Anarchy and protective Leagues.

Baden

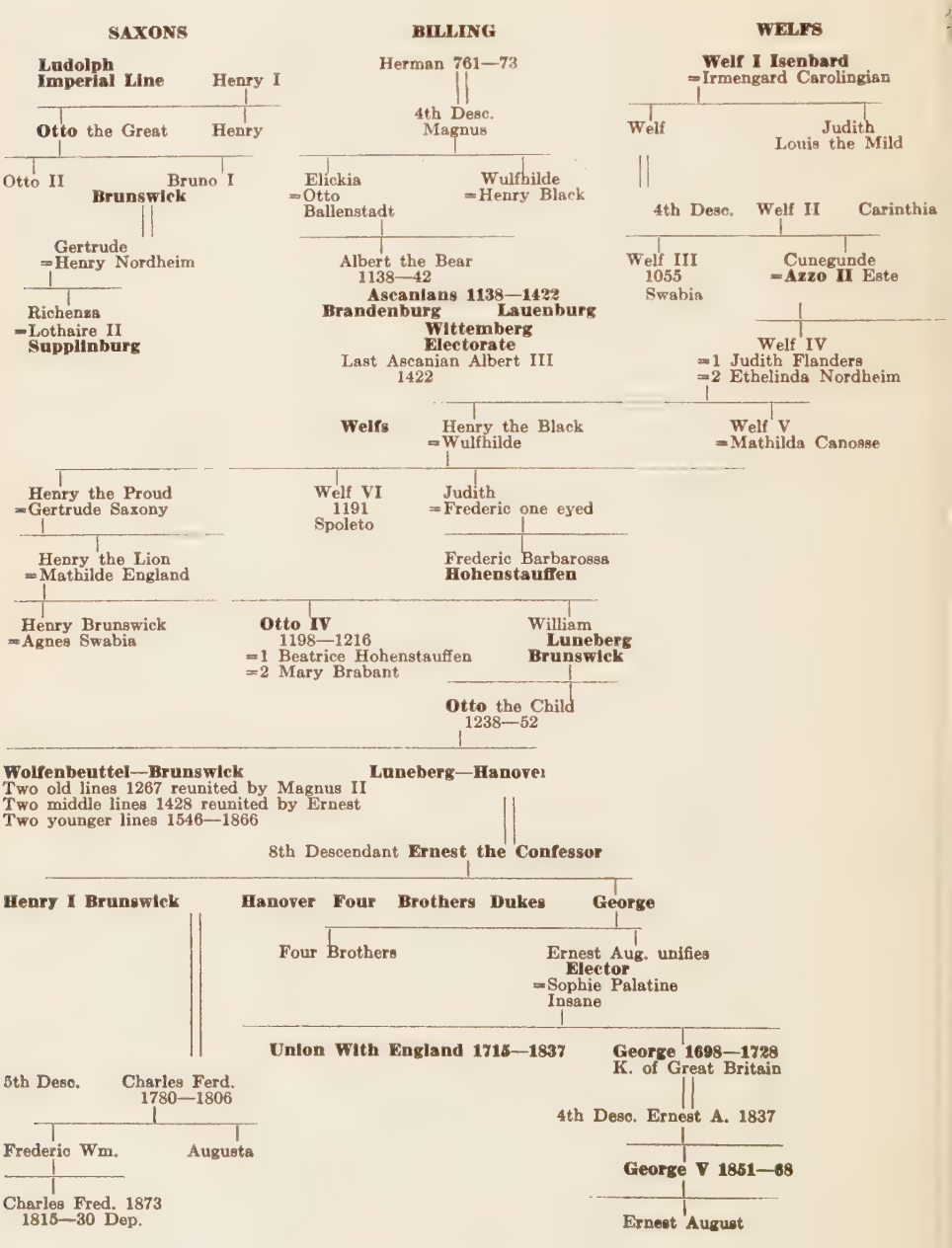
1024-1918

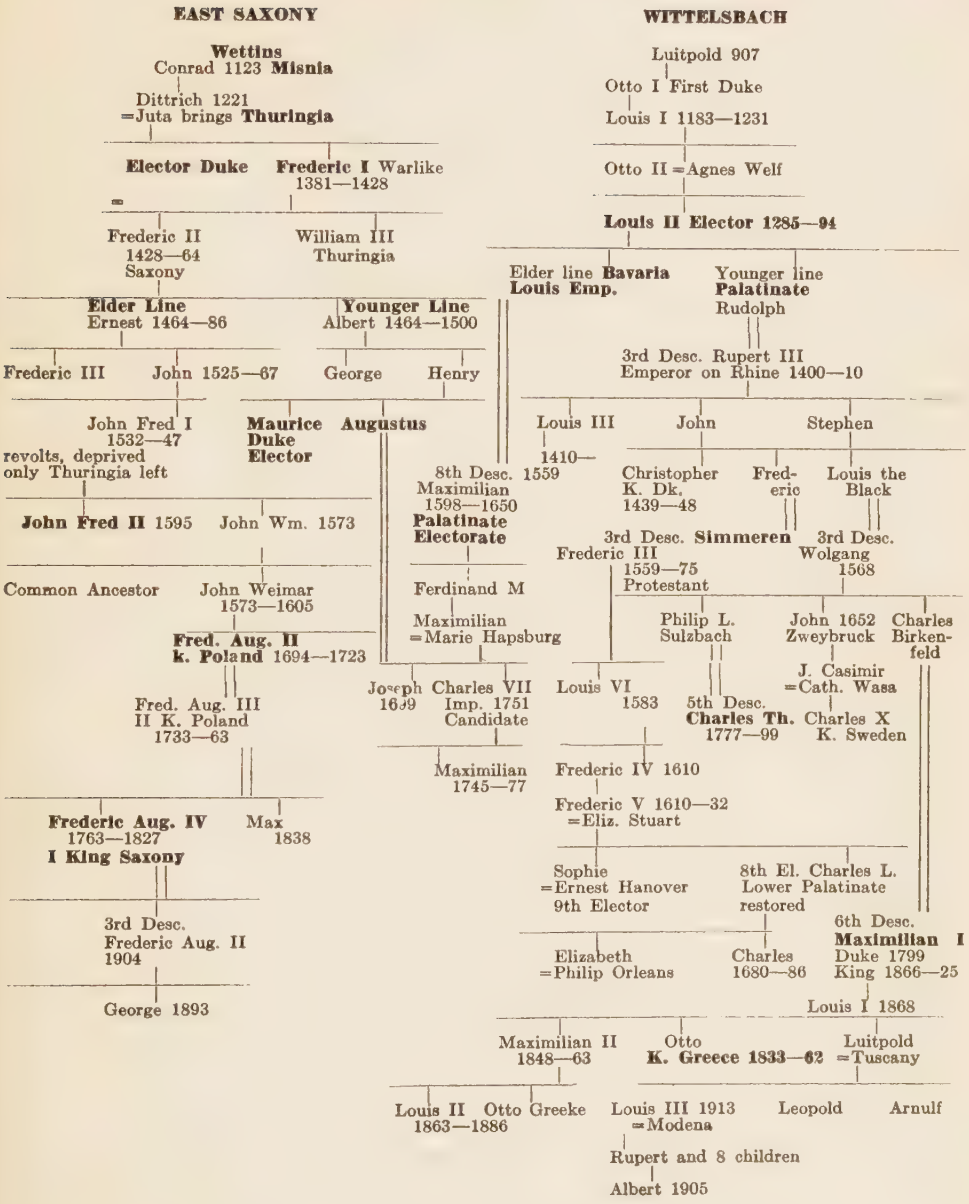
Branch of the early Hapsburgs 1527—1771 two lines.

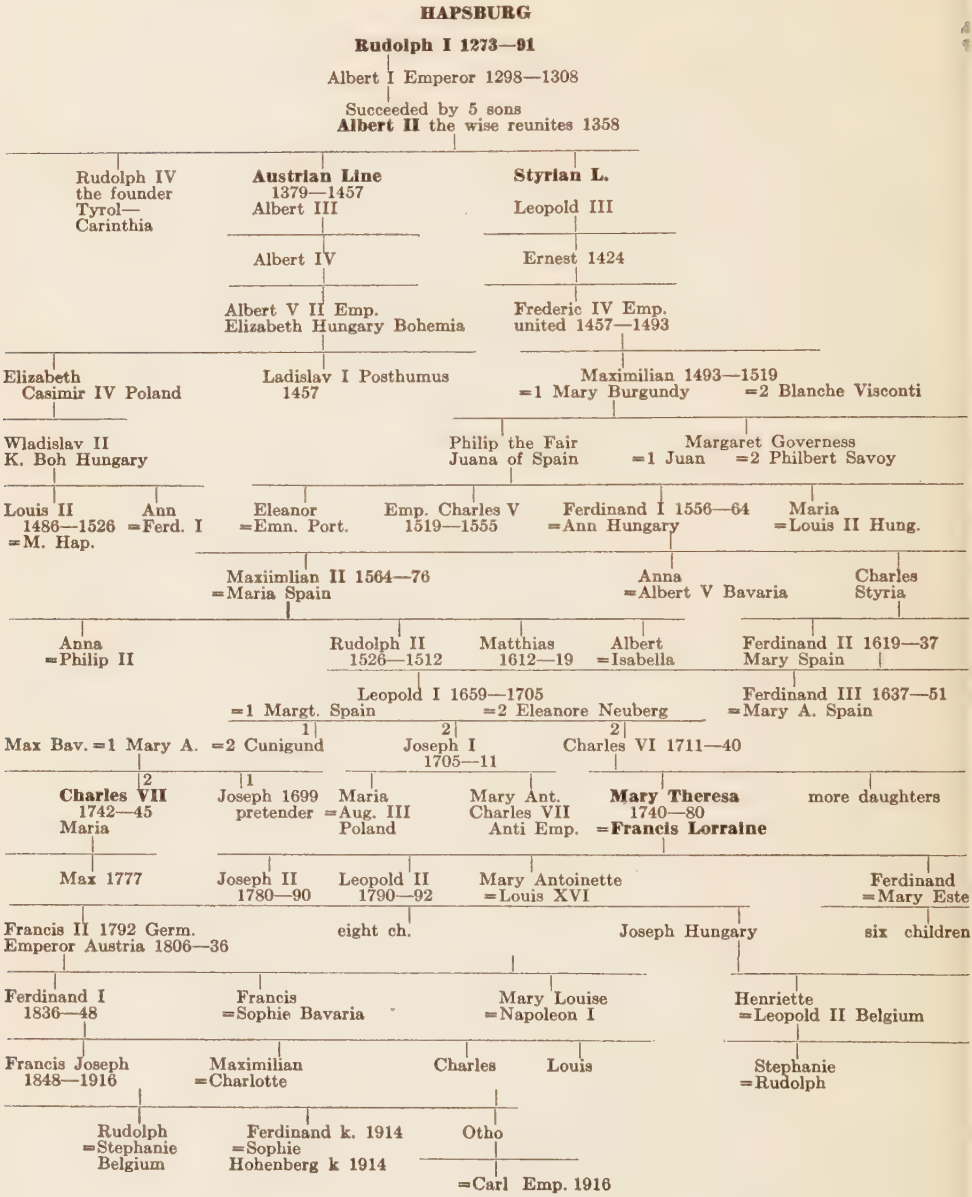
Wurtemberg

1268—1918

Ulrich—1498-1550 Violent in Protestant wars
Join Prussians in 1871


SAXONS
Ludolph
Imperial Line
Henry I
Otto the Great
Henry
Otto II
Bruno I
Brunswick
Gertrude
=Henry Nordheim
Richenza
=Lothaire II
Supplinburg
BILLING
Herman 761—73
4th Desc.
Magnus
Elickia
=Otto
Ballenstadt
Wulfhilde
=Henry Black
Albert the Bear
1138—42
Ascanians 1138—1422
Brandenburg
Lauenburg
Wittemberg
Electorate
Last Ascanian Albert III
1422
WELFS
Welf I Isenbard
=Irmengard Carolingian
Welf
Judith
Louis the Mild
4th Desc.
Welf II
Carinthia
Welf III
1055
Swabia
Cunegunde
=Azzo II Este
Welf IV
=1 Judith Flanders
=2 Ethelinda Nordheim
Welfs
Henry the Black
=Wulfhilde
Welf V
=Mathilda Canosse
Henry the Proud
=Gertrude Saxony
Welf VI
1191
Spoleto
Judith
=Frederic one eyed
Henry the Lion
=Mathilde England
Frederic Barbarossa
Hohenstauffen
Henry Brunswick
=Agnes Swabia
Otto IV
1198—1216
=1 Beatrice Hohenstauffen
=2 Mary Brabant
William
Luneberg
Brunswick
Otto the Child
1238—52
Wolfenbeuttel—Brunswick
Two old lines 1267 reunited by Magnus II
Two middle lines 1428 reunited by Ernest
Two younger lines 1546—1866
Luneberg—Hanover
8th Descendant Ernest the Confessor
Henry I Brunswick
Hanover Four Brothers Dukes
George
Four Brothers
Ernest Aug. unifies
Elector
=Sophie Palatine
Insane
Union With England 1715—1837
George 1698—1728
K. of Great Britain
5th Desc.
Charles Ferd.
1780—1806
4th Desc. Ernest A. 1837
Frederic Wm.
Augusta
George V 1851—68
Charles Fred. 1873
1815—30 Dep.
Ernest August


EAST SAXONY
Wettins
Conrad 1123 Misnia
Dittrich 1221
=Juta brings Thuringia
Elector Duke
Frederic I Warlike
1381—1428
=
Frederic II
1428—64
Saxony
William III
Thuringia
Elder Line
Ernest 1464—86
Younger Line
Albert 1464—1500
Frederic III
John 1525—67
George
Henry
John Fred I
1532—47
revolts, deprived
only Thuringia left
Maurice
Duke
Elector
Augustus
John Fred II 1595
John Wm. 1573
Common Ancestor
John Weimar
1573—1605
Fred. Aug. II
k. Poland 1694—1723
Fred. Aug. III
II K. Poland
1733—63
Frederic Aug. IV
1763—1827
I King Saxony
Max
1838
3rd Desc.
Frederic Aug. II
1904
George 1893
WITTELSBACH
Luitpold 907
Otto I First Duke
Louis I 1183—1231
Otto II =Agnes Welf
Louis II Elector 1285—94
Elder line Bavaria
Louis Emp.
Younger line
Palatinate
Rudolph
3rd Desc. Rupert III
Emperor on Rhine 1400—10
Louis III
1410—
John
Stephen
8th Desc. 1559
Maximilian
1598—1650
Palatinate
Electorate
Christopher
K. Dk.
1439—48
Fred-
eric
Louis the
Black
3rd Desc. Simmeren
Frederic III
1559—75
Protestant
3rd Desc.
Wolgang
1568
Ferdinand M
Maximilian
=Marie Hapsburg
Philip L.
Sulzbach
John 1652
Zweybruck
Charles
Birken-
feld
J. Casimir
=Cath. Wasa
Joseph
1699
Charles VII
Imp. 1751
Candidate
Louis VI
1583
5th Desc.
Charles Th.
1777—99
Charles X
K. Sweden
Maximilian
1745—77
Frederic IV 1610
Frederic V 1610—32
=Eliz. Stuart
Sophie
=Ernest Hanover
9th Elector
8th El. Charles L.
Lower Palatinate
restored
6th Desc.
Maximilian I
Duke 1799
King 1866—25
Elizabeth
=Philip Orleans
Charles
1680—86
Louis I 1868
Maximilian II
1848—63
Otto
K. Greece 1833—62
Luitpold
=Tuscany
Louis II
1863—1886
Otto Greeke
Louis III 1913
=Modena
Leopold
Arnulf
Rupert and 8 children
Albert 1905


HAPSBURG
Rudolph I 1273—91
Albert I Emperor 1298—1308
Succeeded by 5 sons
Albert II the wise reunites 1358
Rudolph IV the founder Tyrol—Carinthia
Austrian Line 1379—1457
Albert III
Albert IV
Albert V II Emp. Elizabeth Hungary Bohemia
Styrian L.
Leopold III
Ernest 1424
Frederic IV Emp. united 1457—1493
Elizabeth Casimir IV Poland
Ladislav I Posthumus 1457
Maximilian 1493—1519
=1 Mary Burgundy
=2 Blanche Visconti
Wladislav II K. Boh Hungary
Philip the Fair Juana of Spain
Margaret Governess
=1 Juan
=2 Philbert Savoy
Louis II 1486—1526 =M. Hap.
Ann =Ferd. I
Eleanor =Emn. Port.
Emp. Charles V 1519—1555
Ferdinand I 1556—64 =Ann Hungary
Maria =Louis II Hung.
Maxiimlian II 1564—76 =Maria Spain
Anna =Albert V Bavaria
Charles Styria
Anna =Philip II
Rudolph II 1526—1512
Matthias 1612—19
Albert =Isabella
Ferdinand II 1619—37 Mary Spain
Leopold I 1659—1705
=1 Margt. Spain
=2 Eleanore Neuberg
Ferdinand III 1637—51 =Mary A. Spain
Max Bav. =1 Mary A.
=2 Cunigund
Joseph I 1705—11
Charles VI 1711—40
Charles VII 1742—45 Maria
Joseph 1699 pretender
Maria =Aug. III Poland
Mary Ant. Charles VII Anti Emp.
Mary Theresa 1740—80 =Francis Lorraine
more daughters
Max 1777
Joseph II 1780—90
Leopold II 1790—92
Mary Antoinette =Louis XVI
Ferdinand =Mary Este
Francis II 1792 Germ. Emperor Austria 1806—36
eight ch.
Joseph Hungary
six children
Ferdinand I 1836—48
Francis =Sophie Bavaria
Mary Louise =Napoleon I
Henriette =Leopold II Belgium
Francis Joseph 1848—1916
Maximilian =Charlotte
Charles
Louis
Stephanie =Rudolph
Rudolph =Stephanie Belgium
Ferdinand k. 1914 =Sophie Hohenberg k 1914
Otho
=Carl Emp. 1916

HAPSBURG WINNING SOUTH DOMAIN

Hapsburg winning the Eastern part of Austrian Empire

Hapsburg

VIII Century Upper Alsace

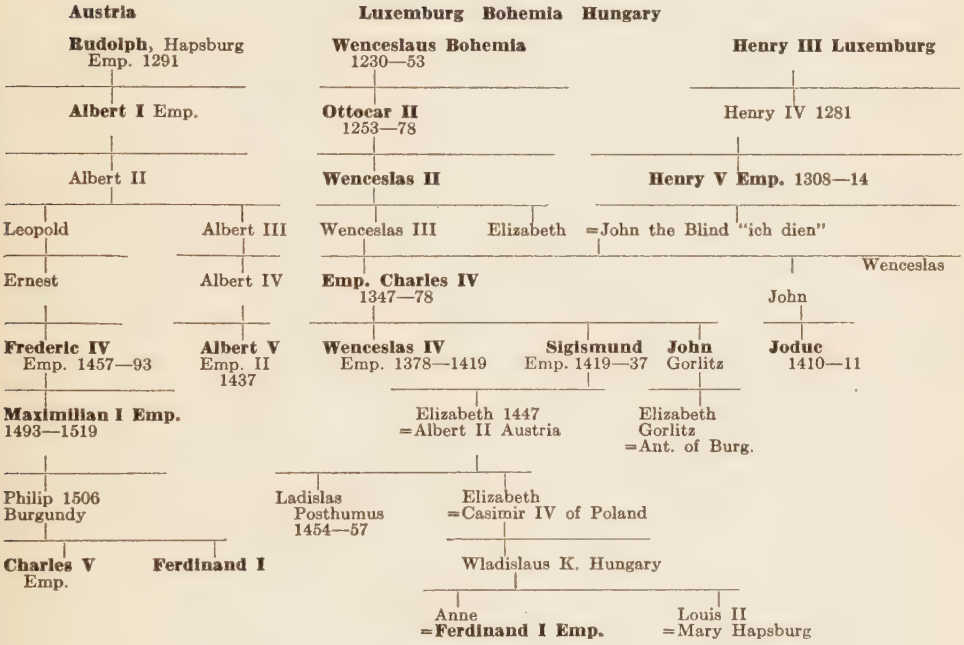
XI O. Werner I builds Castle Habichtsburg from which Werner II takes title

Austria

800 Margravate
983—1246 **Babenbergs D.**
1278—1918 **Hapsburgs D.**

Tyrol

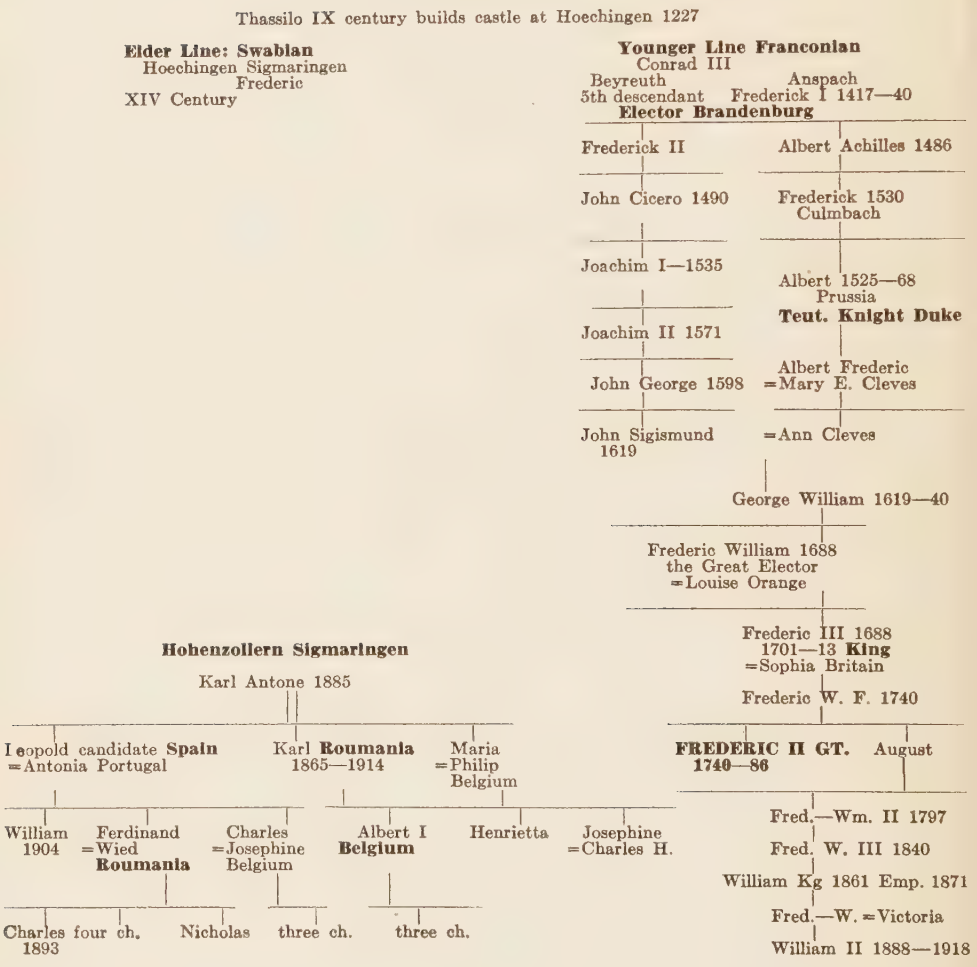
Margaret Maultasch married to Bohemian John is compelled to take Bavarian cedes Tyrol to Austria



HAPSBURG IN MEDITERRANEAN

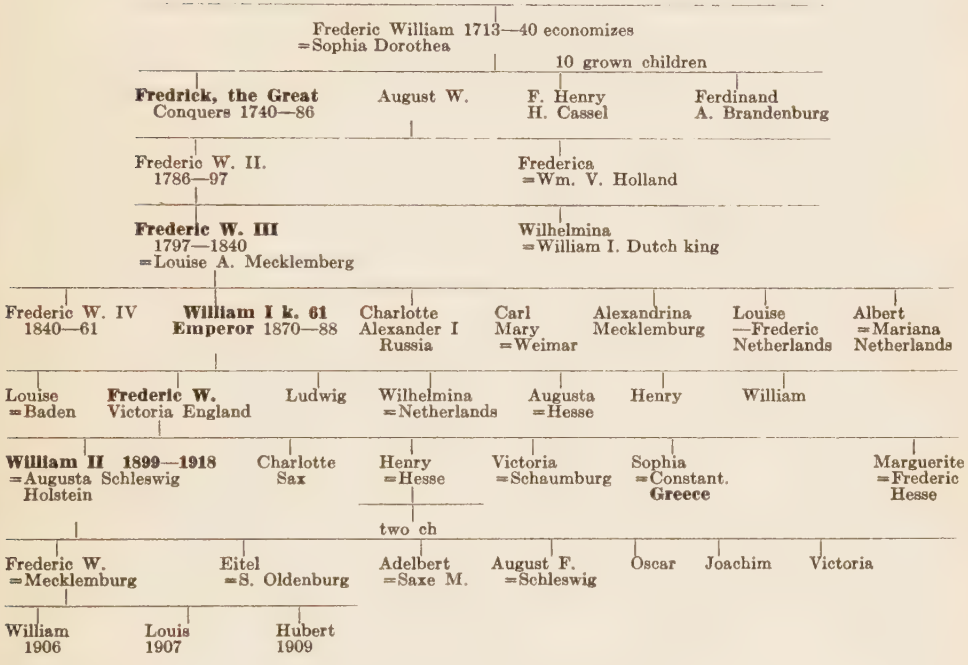
Spain Nap. =Emp. Charles V is King Charles I
Lombardy =Austrians 1717—1859
Tuscany—Francis I =Mary Theresa 1737—1860
Este Modena—M. Beatr. =Ferd. Austria 1808

Hohenzollern



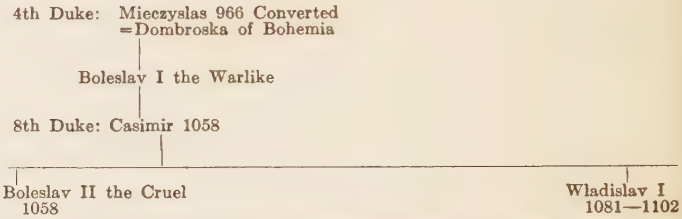
Prussian Kingdom, German Empire

1701 1871-1918



Poland

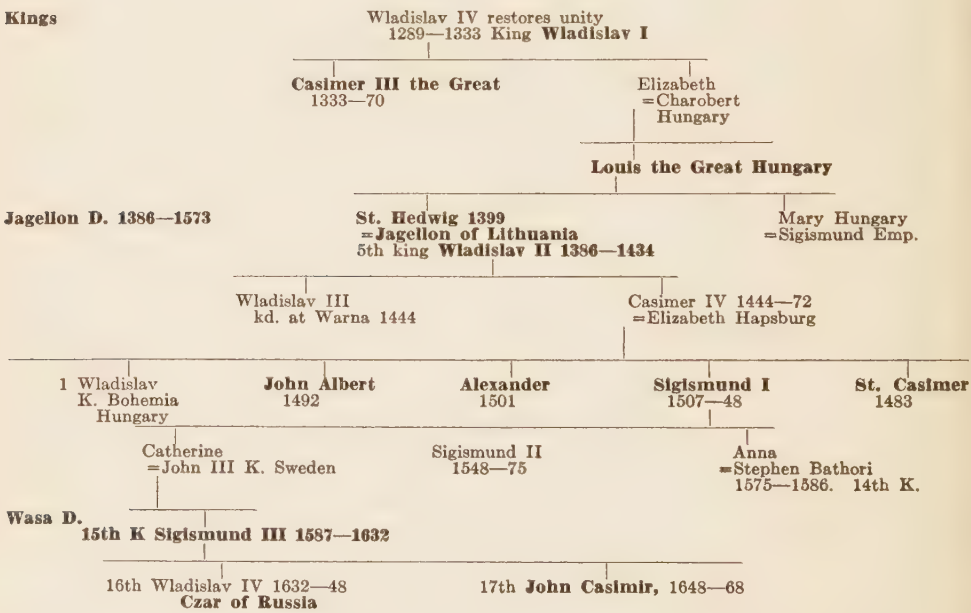
PIAST D. 840—1371: 20 Dukes 4 Kings



divides between two sons, who fight. The oldest Boleslav III wins and divides between four sons, 1131.

Civil wars and invasions of Mongols.

Kings



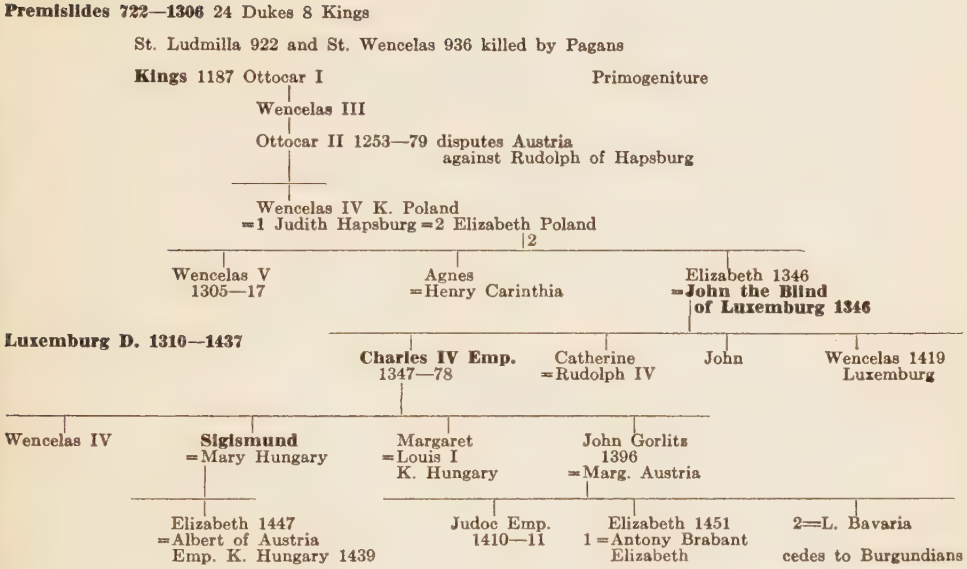
Saxons: 20th **Frederic Augustus** 1697—1733

22nd **Frederick Augustus II** 1736—63
opposed by Stanislas Leczinski

Elective Kings: 1572—1772

13. **Henry Valois 1570—73**
17. **John Casimir, 1668**
18. **Michael**
19. **John Sobieski 1674—96**
22. **S. Poniatowski 1763—98**

Bohemia


Premislides 722—1306 24 Dukes 8 Kings
St. Ludmilla 922 and St. Wencelas 936 killed by Pagans
Kings 1187 Ottocar I
Primogeniture
Wencelas III
Ottocar II 1253—79 disputes Austria against Rudolph of Hapsburg
Wencelas IV K. Poland
=1 Judith Hapsburg =2 Elizabeth Poland
2
Wencelas V 1305—17
Agnes =Henry Carinthia
Elizabeth 1346 =John the Blind of Luxemburg 1346
Luxemburg D. 1310—1437
Charles IV Emp. 1347—78
Catherine =Rudolph IV
John
Wencelas 1419 Luxemburg
Wencelas IV
Sigismund =Mary Hungary
Margaret =Louis I K. Hungary
John Gorlitz 1396 =Marg. Austria
Elizabeth 1447 =Albert of Austria Emp. K. Hungary 1439
Judoc Emp. 1410—11
Elizabeth 1451 1 =Antony Brabant Elizabeth
2=L. Bavaria
cedes to Burgundians

Russia

Rurik D. 862—1598 737 years 36 Sovereigns

Scandanavians—Rurik—two brothers and cousin

Grand Princes at **Kiev** 1054, at Vladimir 1167, at Moscow 1326

6th **Vladimir the Great 972—1015** Division

10th Vladimir II Monomach 1113—25. Schism from Rome

St. Alexander Newski 1245—64

Mongol Yoke 1238—1462 Overthrown by the last Rurics Iwan III and IV

Czarism 1462—1917

Iwan III
=Sophie Paleologa
|
Basil 1505—33
|
Iwan IV the Terrible 1534—84
=Anastasia
|
Feodor 1548—98

Romanoff D. 1613—1917

Michael Romanoff
1613—35
|
Alexis
|
=1 Miloslafski
|
1 Sophie 1704
1 Feodor III 1676—82
1 Ivan V 1682—89
=2 Natalia
2 **Peter the Great 1689—1725**
=1 Eudocia Lapu
=2 Catharina I 1625—27

Catherina
=Charles
Mecklenburg
|
Anna
=A Brunswick
|
Ivan IV
1741

Anne
1730—40
=Fr. Courland

Alexis exec. 1718
=Charlotta
Brunswick
|
Peter II
1727—30

Anna
=Frederic Holstein
Gottorp

Elizabeth
1741—52

Peter III 1762
=**Catherina II Anhalt 1762—95**
|
Paul I 1796—1801

Alexander I
1801—25

Constantine

Nicholas I
1825—55

Michael

Catharina
=Louis
Oldenburg

Alexander II
=Marie Hesse
Darmstadt
1855—81

Constantine

Nicholas

Michael

2 daughters

Alexander III
=Dagmar Denmark
1881—94

Vladimir

Alexis

Mary

Sergius
Hesse D.

Paul
=Alexandra Greece

Nicholas II 1895—1917
=Hesse D.

George
b. 1871

Zenia
b. 1875 5

Michael
b. 1878

Olga
b. 1882

ga

Tatiana

Maria

Anastasia

Alexis
b. 1904

Hungary

ARPAD DYNASTY 892—1302 Arpads—21 Kings

Fourth d't **St. Stephen 988—1033** First King

St. Emmerich dies 1031

Pagan revolts, violent successions

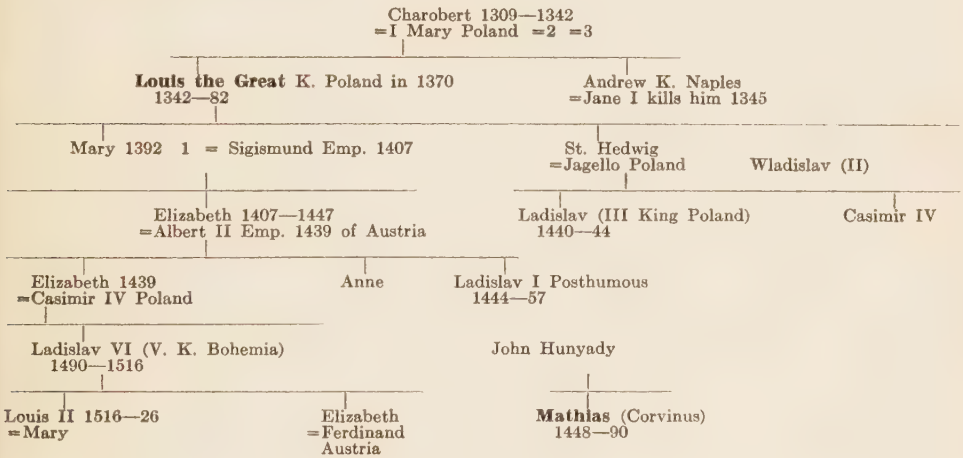
8th K. St. Ladislas 1077—1095 Restores peace

17th King Andrew II 1204—35 Crusade

21st King Andrew III 1290—1301

Bohemian, Austrian, Neapolitan relatives, claimants: succession war

Anjou D. 8 Kings—225 years 1309—1526



INDEX

Aachen, Aix la Chapelle, 76.
Aargau, 297, 376
Abbasside, 450, 475
Aberjian, 451
Abd er Rahman, Ommiads in Spain, 67, 95
Abd er Rahman I, 97
Abd er Rahman II, 97
Abd er Rahman, III, Caliph, 97, promotes Art and Science, 99
Abdul Aziz, 451, massacres Christians, 452
Abdul Medjid, 451
Aboukir, 188
Acadia, 187
Achrida, Kingdom of, 120
Adda River, 309
Adelaid of Luxemburg, 278
Adelaide of Savoy, 213
Adelaide of Tyrol=Meinhardt I, 373
Adelaide, Queen, 89, Empress, 303
Adelbert, Third Bishop of Lithuania, 397
Administration, 28
Adolph Nassau, 315, 348, 367
Adolph William, (1839-48) 367
Adolph Frederick, 130
Adrianople, 110, 449, 451, taken by Simeon, 120
Adriatic Sea, 50, 90, 109, 118, 353, 373, 403
Aedui, 132
Aegean Sea, 109, 116, 192
Aesir, Prince, 436
Aethelred the Unready, 187
Aetius, 86
Afghan, Afghanistan, 189, 425
Africa, 80, 86, 104, 112, 193, 298
Agilulf, 88
Agincourt, 185, 203, 240
Agnes, dr. of John the Fearless, 240
Agnes=Philip Augustus, 200
Agricola, 159
Ahmed III, 451
Aisne River, 238
Aistolph, 88
Aix la Chapelle, 254, 368, Peace of, 213
Akatzri, or Khazari, 439
Alamagro, 98
Alans, 86, 96, 194, 433, 435, 439
Alaric, 86, plunders Rome, 50
Albania, 109, 439
Alberoni, Cardinal, 100
Albert I, of Hapsburg, (1308) emperor 348, 376
Albert II, the Wise, of Hapsburg, 376
Albert III, of Hapsburg, (1379) 376
Albert IV, of Hapsburg, 376
Albert V, Duke, II, Emperor, Hapsburg (1439) 376
Albert of Brandenburg (1529-87) 364, 380, 411
Albert II, of Hohenzollern (1486) 365
Albert I, of Mecklenburg, 129
Albert Frederick (1568) 365
Albert, the Wise of Bavaria (1460-1508) 370
Albert, Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, 189
Albert the Bear, Margrave Brandenburg Elector (1170), 306, 395
Albert I, II, III, Ascanians, 360
Albert Azzo, Margrave d'Este, 369
Albert I, of Namur (908) 277
Albert=Isabella, Sovereigns of Belgium (1598-1624) 99, 279, 290
Albert I, the Brave (1909), King of Belgium, 267, 280
Albert, King of Poland (1492) 411
Albia (Scotland) 147
Albigenses, 224
Albingians, North, 68
Albion, 87, baptised, 357, 438
Albornez, 88
Alcantara, 95, military order of, 97
Alcuin, 71
Alea, 238
Alençon V, 204
Alexander III, Pope, 307
Alexander of Baden, 362
Alexander of Battenberg, 121, 426
Alexander I, Czar, 120, 422, 425, conquered at Austerlitz, 215
Alexander II, Czar, 425
Alexander III, Czar, 426
Alexander, Greek, partner Leo VI, 113
Alexander, King of Poland (1501) 411
Alexander III, King of Scotland, 147
Alexander I, King of Servia, 120
Alexander George of Servia, 120
Alexander, Farnese, 290

Alexandria, 307, 347
Alexis I, Czar, 424
Alexis, Czarowitch, 424
Alexis I, Greek Empire, 113
Alexis III, Greek Empire, 113
Alexis IV, Greek Empire, 113
Alfred, Duke of Edinburgh, 362
Alfred the Great, 183
Algiers, 97, 98, captured, 450
Ali Pasha of Egypt, 451
Allemania, 69, 138, 371
Allodial, Estate of Welfs, 358
Alltorff, Welf or Guelf of, 308
Almanzor, 97, wins Battles, 66, 95
Alphons I, Aragon VII, Castile, Uracca, 98
Alphons V, of Aragon, and I of Sicily, 90
Alphons X, Castile, 90, Emperor, 348
Alphons XII, Spain (1874-85) 101
Alphons XIII, Spain, 101
Alps, 3, 5, 28, 190, 309, the Julian, 87
Alsace, 29, 207, 213, 276, 329
Alsace-Lorraine, 244.
Altenberg, Saxe, 362
Alva, Duke of, 99, 289
Alzog cited, 36
Amaury, 200
Ambiorix, 252, 275
Amedeus of Savoy, 101
America, conquest in, 98
American, discoveries, 98, Colonies lost, 100, revolution, 291, war of Independence, 188, 220
Amonians, 487
Amsterdam, 281, coast defences, 291
Anachronism in Europe, Turkey, 107
Anarchy, five centuries of, 6, making of, 14
Anastasius, Emperor, 112
Anatolia, 352
Ancyra, 459
Andelot d' François, 242
Andechs, Counts of, 373
Andrew of Hungary, 90
Andrew II, 443, 445
Andrew III, 445
Andronicus II, 114
Andronicus III, 114
Andronicus IV, 114, 449
Angel Alexis Comnenus, 114
Angel D, 488
Angevins-Anjous, 90, 243, 248
Anglo-Saxons, 298, Genealogy, 485
Angora, 114, 449
Angus, son of Erc, 147
Anhalt, 363; Genealogy, 526
Anjou, Dukedom of, 236, 237
Anjou, Dynasty in Naples, 90, 481; Hungary, 110, 481, 510; Lorraine, 243; Genealogy, 497
Anjou, Foulques of, 200
Anjou, Henry of, and England, 200
Ann of Brittany, 150, 156, 203, 241
Ann Montmorency Marshall, 241
Ann, dr. of Philip III of Spain mother of Louis XIV, 228
Ann of Julich=Count, Palatine, 364,
Ann=Batori, 412
Ann, dr. Peter the Great=Holstein 424
Ann Boleyn=Henry VIII, 186
Ann of Hungary=Ferdinand I, Hapsburg, 445
Anna of Constantinople, 399
Anspach, 364
Anthemius, 86, 437
Anthony of Bourbon, 241
Anthony, Vendome, 241
Anti Emperors, Popes; IX and X century, councils, 366
Antioch, 113
Anton I of Oldenburg, 359
Antrim, 147
Antwerp, 258, 262, 268, 279, 280
Appenzel, 295
Apulia, Robert Guiscard, Duke of, 90
Aquileia, sacked by Attila, 437
Aquitaine, 196, 236
Arabs, 62, 66, 80, 93, 97, 112; threw off yoke of Turcs, 352; Arabian period, 437; world wide conquests, Spain-France repells, one monarchy, three empires, 474
Aragon, 90, 95, 97, 98; dynasties, 98, 248; Genealogy, 493.
Aragon, Catherine of, 188, 186
Araxes, 436
Arbitration, Court of, 85
Arcadius, 112
Archambault I, 240
Archipelago, 114
Ardennes forest, 276
Ardris, of Milesian dynasty, 134, 499
Argyle, 144
Arianism suppressed, 64, 87
Aristotle, master of logic, 81
Arles, 248, United Kingdom of, 246
Armagh, 137
Armada, 99; the Invincible, 186
Armagnacs, 376, the French called, 295
Armand, Prince of Conti=Ann Martinozzi, 241

Armenia, 113, 352, 425, 426, 436, 439, 451, murders in, 107, nearly exterminated, 480
Armorica, 137, Celts, 150
Arnulf, 89, 403, 345
Arpad, 120, 441, 443, Dynasty, 444
Arpads, genealogy, Hungary, 527
Arras, 238, 279, 296, confederation of, 285
Artevelde, James, 202
Arthur of England, 200
Artois, 99, 255, 276, 279
Arverni, 132
Aryan, 116, 131, 194 384, 433
Asan Brothers, Bulgarian heroes, 121
Ascanian, 361; dynasty, 360, 365; genealogy, 518
Asia, 103, 104, 114, 193, 400, 418, 422, 428, 434
Asia Minor, 113, 446
Asiatic, 189, 385; invaders, 192, 433
Asiatics, conquered, 79
Asparach, 120
Astrakhan, Khanate, 419
Asturias, 97
Asoka, 82
Ataces, King, 436
Ataulf, 86
Athelstan, King of English, 183
Athens, 83, 114, 252; Duchy of, 115
Atlantic Ocean, 5, 58; Celts on the, 131
Attrebatii, tribe of, 159; land of, 238
Attila, 50, 86, 437, 439
Aubuysson d', 111, 450, 460
Audenarde, 100, 207, 213
Augsburg, 383, 394, 441, confession of, 327; Peace of, 326
August II, Saxon, 412
Austerlitz, Battle of, 231
Australia, 188
Austria, 92, 243, 323, 354, 402; chronicles, 333; on the defensive, 322; dismembered, 343; isolated, 329
Austrian, 301; succession wars, 188, 330; empire, 317, 324, 353; breaking up of empire, 353; branch of Hapsburgs, 375; Genealogies, 520
Austro-Italian difficulties, 341
Austro-Prussian war, 354, 355
Authority, need of, 3, 11; lack of, central, 78
Autocrats shunned, 36
Autonomy for Ireland, 113
Avars, 53, 59, 67, 112, 117, 120, 389, 392, 402, 433, 435; Empire of the, 438
Avesnes, dynasty of, 275, 277
Avesnes, genealogy, Hainault and Holland, 514
Avignon, 224; Popes of, 315; residence of Popes at, 88, 247, 248; revolution annexes, 88
Avisa, House of, 101
Avis, 95, 97; military order of, 97
Azov, 436, 451

Babenbergs, 393; dynasty, 374
Baden, French wars, 372; Grand Duchy of, 244; dynasty, 517
Bagdad, 475
Bagomiles, 118, 119
Baian, 438
Bajacet, 110
Bajacet I, the Lighting, 114, 449, 450; threatens Rome, 459
Balafré, Henry the, 242, 244
Balamber, 432
Baldwin, genealogy, Flanders, Hainault, Namur, 514
Baldwin I, Iron Arm, repels the Normans, 275
Baldwin III, 114
Baldwin of Flanders, 238
Baldwin VI of Flanders, 275
Baldwin IX of Flanders, V of Hainault, 253, 275; Emperor of Constantinople, 121, 277; captured, 114
Belgae, tribe of, 159
Baliol, 146; John, 147, 184
Balkans, 4, 104, 110, 118, 120, 351, 441; Slavs settle in the, 80; crisis, 105; exploits, 106; heroic defence of the, 106; become wild in their warfare, 107; proof against fear and lust, 107; scourge of Moslem yoke, 107; emancipation of States, 109; wars, 109, 116, 452; fifth crusade, 444; dynasties, 524 crusade, 444; dynasties, 470
Balkan Peninsula, 389
Baltic Sea, 3, 70, 393, 403, 421, 425, 437
Bamberg, Diet of, 357
Banat, 393
Bangor, 137
Bannockburn, victory of Scotch at 146
Bar, 213, 408, 412
Barbarians, deluge of, 52; death struggle with, 85
Barbarossa, Frederick I, 98, 246, 306, 308, 357, 369; humiliates the Milanese, 309; crusade, 119

Barbarossa of Tunis, pirate, 450, 463
Barbary, pirates, 98
Bardas, 113
Barneveldt, 290
Bartholomew, Diaz, 101
Bashi Bazouks, plunder and slaughter, 121
Basil I, 113
Basil II, 113, 120; Greek Empire of Constantinople, 415, 440
Basle, 295
Basques, 67, 80
Batavia, 356
Bastile, 230
Batori, 412
Batu, 417; dynasty of, 418
Bavaria, 138, 301, 367, 369, 438; king of, conquered by Allies, 370
Bavarian, 392, 394; dynasty, 277, 370
Bazaine, 233
Beatrice=Robert of France, 240
Beatrix, Countess, Burgundy, 246
Beaubarnais, Eugene, 231
Beaubarnais, Josephine, 231
Beaux, of Province, 118
Bec, 183
Bela IV, 374, 445
Bela Uroch, 119
Belgians, 75, 196, 298; mixed nation, 5; regions, 243; love of liberty, 277, 249; deported, 271; provinces under Spain, 279; principalities, 275
Belgium, 4, 19, 99, 100, 191, 206, 207; battlefield of Europe, 20, 211; divided, 20; enslaved, 28; ceded to Albert, 99; offered to Bavaria, 219; art and science in, 250; barbarism fought in, 251; great colony of African Congo, 252; ancient and medieval history of, 252; cradle of Frankish dynasty, 254; feudal period of, 255, 275; fourth period of, 259; modern history of, 262; foreign regime in, 263, 279; independent kingdom of, 265, 280, 290; monograph, 267; plundered, 274; chronicles, 275; province of, 278; union of ancient, 278; genealogies, 512
Belgrade, 111, 121, 444, 449
Benevento, 88, 440
Ben Urb, 139
Berbers, 80
Berenger I, of Fruila, 89, 246
Bergen, 378, 395
Berlin, 128, 216, 333, 395; congress of, 422, 426, 451
Bernadotte, dynasty of, 130, 505
Bernard, Elector, 307
Bernard the Great, 362
Bernard III of Lauenberg, 360
Berne, joins league, 295, 296
Bernice, 182
Bernstorff, Ambassador, 348
Bertacides, 438
Bertha, Bertrade and Philip I, 200
Berthold, second Bishop of Lithuania, 397
Bessarabia, 425
Betica, 96
Beyreuth, 364
Billing, Herman, 357; Magnus, 357
Billing, genealogy, 515
Bipontine dynasty, 130
Birger, 129
Birkenfeld, 363
Bismarck, Blood and Iron Chancellor, 355; reptile press of, 329
Blaci, 116
Blanche, St. of Castile, 224
Black Prince, 225
Black Plague, 225
Black Sea, 3, 120, 192, 194, 218, 411, 415, 421, 425, 434, 437, 449
Blautand, Harold, 126
Bleda, 437
Blindheim, 214
Blois, treaty of, 91
Blois, Eudes de, 238
Blois, Stephan of, 235
Bodin, 119
Boesinghe, 268
Bogislav XIV, 381
Bogislav, Stephen, 117, 119
Bogoris, 120
Bohemia, 26, 71, 300, 303, 387, 393, 403; chronicles, 403; republic of, 403; genealogy, 505, 509
Bois Jules, p. IX, 212
Boleslav, 403
Boleslav I, the Great, 411
Boleslav II, the Cruel, 411
Boleyn, Anne, 186
Bolgari, 440
Bolsheviki, 12, 25, 426
Bologne, 88
Bonaparte dynasty, 231, 509
Bonaparte, Jerome, 231
Bonaparte, Joseph, king of Spain, 231
Bonaparte, Louis, 231
Boniface, General of Valentinien III, 86
Boris, Goudenoff, 424

Borvo, Gallic god, 240
Borzivoc, 402
Bosnia, 108, 109, 117, 118, 330, 426, 449
Boso, K. Provence=Irmengard, 246, 248
Bosphorus, 103
Bossuet, 206
Bosworth, 185
Bouillon, Godfrey de, 253
Boulogne, 238
Bourbon, 92, 130; dynasty, 203, 227, 230, 497, 493, 509
Bourbon, Anthony, 241; rules, 204
Bourbon, Antoinette de, 244
Bourbon l'Archambault, 240
Bourbon, Duke of, 204
Bourbonnais, 240, 280; genealogy, 510
Bourbons of France, 203, 508
Bourge River, 240
Bouvines, battle of, 224
Boyne, 207; in Ireland, 187, 213
Brabant, 213, 243, 255, 276, 277, 279, 315; line, 366; genealogy, 512
Braganza, House of, 101; genealogy, 494
Brandenburg, 349, 365, 390
Brankovich, 111
Brannibor-Brandenburg, 360, 395
Brazil, 296; Huguenot colony to, 242
Breda, 267
Bremen, 257, 358, 376, 378
Breslau, 377
Bretons, 150
Bretwalda, 182
Brian Boru, 125
Briesgau, 374
Britanges, ancient British tribe, 159
British Empire, of India, 32, 33; panorama of, 151; builds up colonies, 152; not built up by violence, 152; ocean policy of, 153; misrule of Ireland, 153; interior struggles of, 154; Kingdom of Britain or England, 160; Nomadic conditions of, 161; settlements and classes of, 162; invasion and anarchy in, 163; peace restored in, 164; autocratic period of, 165; agriculture protected, 167; democratic period of, 167; constitutional government of, 169; House of Commons, 172; House of Lords, 172; Parliament, 172, 179; imperial policy of, 181; chronicles, 182
British Isles, 122; conquest by Romans, 159
Brittany, 28, 126, 236, 241; Ann of= Kings, 150
Brittons, 147
Bruce dynasty, 148
Bruce, Marjorie, 148
Bruce, Robert, 148, 184
Bruce of Scotland, 146
Bruges, 258, 279, 378
Bruno I, 358
Brunswick, 307, 357, 358, 378; genealogy, 518
Bruxelles, 266, 271
Buckingham, 186
Buda, 443, 445
Budimir, first Christian king of Croatia, 117
Bulgaria, 109, 120, 426; slaughter and enslaving in, 107; attacked, 109; reaches sea, 109; Wallachian Kingdom of, 121; modern, 121
Bulgarians, 5, 53, 114, 117, 192, 388, 435, 441, 451
Burchard, 241
Burgundian, 243, 298, 437; house of, 101; dynasty, 288; genealogy, 496
Burgundy, 28, 225, 226, 278, 289; Duke of, 98; Henry of, conquers, 101; murder of Duke of, 203; new, 214; dynasty, 246; ancient kingdom of, 247
Burmah, conquest of, 189
Busirus, 439
Byzantines, 58, 86, 104, 119, 417, 423; public works, 112; genealogies, 487
Byzantium, 59, 86

Cabral, 101
Caesar, 275
Cairo Caliphate, 474, 475
Calabria, 90
Calais, 185, 225, 227
Calatrava, military order of, 97
Calixtines, 316
Caledonians, 147, 181
Caliph of Cairo, 450
Calmar, 126; union of, 129
Calugareni, 121
Calvin, John, 296
Cambray, league of, 203
Cambria, 160, 182
Campbell, 189
Campo-Formio, treaty of, 230
Canada, 188, 229
Candia, 451
Cannibalism in Mexico, 32
Canning, whig, 189
Canossa, 346, 496
Cantacuzene, John V., 114
Canterbury, 186

Cantii, the most civilized of tribes, 159
Canute, the Great, 125, 126, 128, 183
Cape Good Hope, 101, 188
Capet, Hugh, 223
Capetian dynasty, 194; fifteen kings, 223, 224, 345; genealogy, 508, 510
Capetian, Eudes, 223
Cape Verde Islands, 98
Capistran, St. John, 445
Cappel, victory of, 296
Capuchins, 296
Carantani, Slavs, 393
Carbonari, 93
Carinthia, 373, 393; Slavs of, 117; Sorbs of, 402
Carl VII, Emperor of Austria, 520
Carlos, 100
Carlowitz, peace of, 330, 451
Carl, Prince of Denmark, 128
Carniola, 320, 373, 374, 392, 402
Carnot, Prest. France, murdered, 233
Carobert, 411
Carolina, Queen, 188
Carolingians, 28, 71, 234, 237, 254, 302; extinction of line, 38; arose to power, 61; dynasty of the, 63, 223, 277; genealogy, France, Italy, Germany, Belgium, 506
Carpathians, Mountains or Carpaths, 3, 117, 120, 393, 401, 441
Carthaginians, 29
Casimir the Great, 404
Casimir, John, 406, 412
Casimir III, 411
Casimir IV, 411
Caspian Sea, 194, 422, 424, 428, 436
Castile, 95, 97, 98; genealogy, 439
Castlereagh, 188
Cataclysm, 48
Catalaunia, 97, 99, 114
Cateau, 204
Cathari-Albigenses, 118
Cathayans, 435
Cathelinean, 236
Catherine I, 424
Catherine II, of Anhalt, Czarina of Russia, 425; cuts Poland, 400, 427
Cartherine of Aragon, 185, 186
Catherine de Medici, 227
Catherine, dr. of Paul I of Russia, 359
Catherine of Portugal, 187
Catherine of Valois, 227
Catherine Vendome, 241
Catholic, Church, 47, 56; seat of, 80; Scots fight against, 146; blind hatred against the, 176; cardinals of, 204; league, 326, 327, 328
Catholics, boycotted, 177; excluded from English throne, 177; emancipation of, 189
Caucasus, 428, 436, 439
Cavour, 93
Celtic race, the, 131; traits of, 133
Celts, 4; conquered by Romans, 58; noble character of, 131; not strongly organized, 132; Cymric and Gaelic, 147, 158 B; Censii Crescentii, 498
Centralization period, 201, 224
Cerdic of Wessex, 182
Cerisoles, 242
Cerularius, Michael, 113, 416
Cesar Borgia, 88
Cesarin, Cardinal, 106, 111, 449, 460
Cettingue, 118
Cevennes, 206
Ceylon, 188
Chalons sur Marne, 57, 61, 86, 436, 437
Chamberlain the Great, 240
Champagne, 238
Charles Martel, 57, 62, 65, 66, 236, 240, 253, 254, 278
Charlemagne, 197, 254, 275, 278, 289, 411, 438; crowned emperor of the Christian world, 35; unites German nation, 36, 57, 59; conquers Lombardy, 62; character of, 64, 65; summary of deeds of, 66-70; statesmanship, 71; promotes religion, 72; house of, 198; twenty years war with Saxons, 356
twenty years war with Saxons, 356
Charles II, the Bald, of France, 223
Charles III the Simple, of France, 223
Charles of Lorraine, 223
Charles IV the Fair, of France, 225
Charles V the Wise, of France, 225
Charles VI the Insane, of France, 225
Charles VII, King of Bourges, France, 225
Charles VIII of France, 226
Charles IX of France, 227
Charles X of France (1824) 232
Charles the Rash, Duke of Burgundy, 111, 226, 247, 260, 276, 279, 289, 375
Charles III the Fat, Germany, 199, 345
Charles IV, Luxemburg, Bohemia

(1346); Emperor of Germany, 315, 402, 349
Charles V, Emperor of Germany, 350; fights division and stops Tures, Charles I, Spain, 91, 98, 112; Flanders, Austria—V, Emperor, 112, 204, 241, 246, 253, 261, 279, 289, 319, 326, 328, 450
Charles VI, Austria, emperor (1711-40), succession war, 352
Charles VII, Bavarian, anti-emperor (1714) 352, 370
Charles I of Anjou and Naples, 90, 236, 308, 313
Charles II, Naples (1328) 236
Charles II, the Bad, king of Navarre, 90
Charles III of Duras (1380) 90; called into Hnngary, 92; leaves Naples, 100
Charles III of Italy (1725) king of Naples, 92, 100; invades Hungary, 445
Charles II, Spain (1629) 99, 100
Charles III of Spain (1756) 100
Charles IV of Spain (1788) 100
Charles I of England, 140, 148, 174, 186
Charles II of England, 187; crowned in Scotland, 148
Charles Edward, Jacobite rising, 149
Charles IX of Sweden, son of Gustavus (1604) 129
Charles X, Bipontine = Zweybruck (1654) 129, 369, 412
Charles XI of Sweden (1660) 129
Charles XII of Sweden (1697) 125, 129, 361, 427; falls before Frederickshall, 130
Charles XIII of Sweden (1809) 130
Charles XIV of Sweden (1818) 130
Charles XV of Sweden (1859) 130
Charles Philip of Italy (1716) 93, 369
Charles Felix of Italy, 93
Charles Albert, Bavaria, 370
Charles Louis, 369
Charles Philip, 369
Charles Theodore, 331, 370
Charles I, Bourbonais (1434) 240
Charles I, Hesse (1670) 367
Charles de Blois, 150
Charles of Hohenzollern, Sigmaringen, King of Roumania, 117
Charles of Holstein, Gottorp, 425
Charles Leopold Baden (1849), 372
Charles of Mayenne, 244
Charles de Montpensier, Constable of Bourbon, 240
Charlotte, dr. of George IV=Leopold I, Belgium, 362
Charlotte de Montmorency, 241
Chartres, 239
Chassé, General, 265
Chatillon, Cardinal, 242
Chatillon sur Loing, 242
Chemnitz, 395
Childebrand, br. Ch. Martel, 240
Chile, 98
Chios, 115
Chivalry, 200, 233
China, 83, 218, 435, 436
Choczim, 404, 412, 446, 451
Choiseul, 229
Chouans, defend liberty, 236
Christ, Order of, 101
Christian I, Oldenburg, D. Denmark, 127
Christian II, Denmark, 127, 129, 326
Christian III of Denmark, divides, 127, 328
Christian IV, Denmark, 127
Christian VII, 127
Christian VIII, 127; King of Denmark, 359
Christian IX, Glucksburg D. (1863), 127
Christian strongholds arise, 97
Christianity, abolition of, 215
Christopher of Bavaria, 127
Christopher Columbus, 98, 261
Chronicles, 2; Merovingian dynasty, 61; Carolingian dynasty, 62; Italy, 85-93; Iberia, 96-102; of the Balkans, 110-121; Scandinavia, 126-130; Ireland, 144-145; Scotland, 147-150; British Empire, 182-189; French Monarchy, 223-233; French Houses, 236-248; Belguim, 275-280; Netherlands, 288-291; Switzerland, 295-297; German Monarchy, 345-355; German states, 356-384; Slavs, 388-399; Bohemia, 402-404; Poland, 411-13; Russia, 423-426; Mongolians, 435-441; Hungarians, 444-445; Turkish Empire, 475-480, 491
Church, estate of the, 88; in Ireland, 139; disestablishment of the, 189
Cialdini, 93, 218
Cid, Spanish hero, 95; war by, 98
Circassians, 121
Cisjurane, Burgundy, 246
Cistercians, monks civilize Slavs. 395

Civilization, Franks restorers of, 18, 19; defenders of, 61, eclipse of, 48
Claudia of Orange=Henry Nassau, 367
Clemence de Meille=the Condé, 241
Clement III, anti-pope, 305
Cleves, 289, 364
Cliton, William, Normand, 200
Clonfert, 137, 138
Clotaire I, 61
Clotaire II, 62
Clovis, 62, 236, 246, 254, 275; Empire of, 25; baptized, 57, 196; monograph of, 63; attacks Arian kings, 64
Cluny, 236
Coburg, Saxe, 362
Colbert, 206
Coligny, 204; Gaspard de, 242
College, Electoral, 38
Cologne, 215, 377; Archbishop of, 234, 382, 383
Colonization, rights and benefits of, 29; systems contrasted, 30; wrong opinions about, 31
Colonna, 495
Columbus, Christopher, 98, 261
Comans, 194, 433
Commune Paris, 233
Comneni, dynasty, 113, 488
Comnenus, Michael, Emperor, 118
Compensation for loss of ancient rights, 25
Compiegne, 239
Comtat of Venaissin, 248
Concordat restores Catholic religion, 219, 231
Condé, 205, 329; general, 212, 510
Condè, Louis, 241
Confucianism, 84
Congo, 252, 266, 280
Connaught, 135
Connemara, 142
Conrad I, King, Monarch (911), 303, 367
Conrad II, Emperor, inherits Kingdom of Burgundy, 345
Conrad III of Swabia, 346
Conrad IV, 348
Conradin, 90; beheaded at Naples, 310, 348, 472, 480
Conrad of Wettin, 360
Constance of Brittany=Geoffrey son of Henry II, 150
Constance, council of, 316
Constans II, 112
Constantia, 98; heiress of Naples, 311
Constantine III, 423
Constantine IV, 112
Constantine V, 113
Constantine VII, 113
Constantine VIII, 113
Constantine IX, Ducas, 113
Constantine XII, 114
Constantinople, 112, 113, 387, 403, 415, 425, 437, 438, 447; survival of, 83; imperial insigna sent to, 86; Greeks made slaves in, 96; Latin Empire of, 104, 113; wealth and culture of, 104; fall of, 111; dynasty, 487, 490; council of, 112; George II flees to, 118; Servians subject to Empire of, 119
Constituant, assembly, 229
Constitution of Medieval Europe, 34; of family of nations, 57; overthrow of ancient, 221
Consulate, 231
Continental Europe, the powers of, 190; Western, 190; Eastern, 191; Gauls of France leaders of Celts, 195
Contents XII, XXV
Conti sur Celles, 241
Copenhagen, 127
Copernicus, 405
Corbario, Peter, 315
Cordova, Emirate and Caliphate of, 94, 95, 97, 474
Corea, 426
Corfu, 450
Cork, 142
Cornwall, 182
Corsica, 60, 207
Cortes, 98
Corvin or Corvinus, Matthias, 445; the Hammer of Turks, 376
Cossacks, the, 420
Courland, 380, 381, 397
Courtrai, 240; battle of 258
Cracow, 410
Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, 186
Crescentius, 88
Crespy, 204, 238
Creta, 116; death struggle of, 425
Crimea, 425, 439
Crimean war, 218, 422, 451, 465
Croatia, 442; Kingdom of, 116
Croatians, 117, 388, 438
Cromwell, Richard, 187, 308
Cromwell, Oliver, 140, 175, 186, 187; tyranny of, 148
Croya, 111, 460
Crusades, Oriental, first, 460-63; States of Jerusalem, Constantinople, 463-64; Genealogies of Crusaders, 489, 496; Balkan Crusaders oppose Ottoman Turks, 477

Ctesiphon, capital Persia, taken by Greeks, 112
Cuba, 101
Culdees (Monks), 147
Culloden, 188
Culm, 398, Bishopric
Cumberland, 169, 182
Cumbria, 160, 182
Cunegunda, St.=Henry II, St., 304
Cunegunda=Albert Azzo d'Este, Welff, 369
Cunimond, 87
Custozza, 93, 333
Cuza Alexander, 117
Cymric, Celts, 147
Cymry, League of, 150
Cyprus, 112, 189, 426, 450, 451, 464; kingdom of, 74, 490
Cyrillic, language of the orthodox church, 388
Czar, Alexander, 121
Czars, 384; overthrow of, 426
Czechs, 71, 351, 388, 393, 401
Czecho-Slavs, or Slovak Republic, 351

Dacia, 116, 391, 403, 441, 444
Dalmatia, 93, 117, 351, 392, 445; population of, 116
Dalmatians, the, 388
Dalriada, 147
Damnonii, tribe of, 153
Damnonia, Celtic Kingdom, 182
Dampierre, 248, 275
Dane, George, 187
Danelaugh, 183
Danes, 67, 70, 128; in England, 183
Daniel, son of St. Alexander Newski, 416
Danillo I, 118
Danish period, 328; war, 334, 340; genealogy, 488
Danton, tyrant, beheaded, 230
Danube, 116, 120, 192, 303, 426; valley, 313; river, 437, 438, 441
Danubian, 437; countries, 4, 5, 49, 104; invaded by Finn tribes, 53; crusade, 105; expeditions, 449
Danzig, 376, 378, 410
Dardanelles, 428
Dathy crosses Gaul, marching on Rome, 144
Dauphiné, 28
David I of Scotland, 147, 183
David II of Scotland, 148
Dawes, Ch., 340
Debatable grounds, 4
de'Beust, Minister, 362
Declaration of American Independence, cited, 10; of all Nations, 16
Decretals, five books of the, 309
Deira, 182
Dengeric, 437
Denmark, 125, 333, 378, 437; rivality of Hansa, 126; chronicles, 126; Scandinavian union, 126, 127; dynasty, 127; Union of Norway, 127; genealogy, 503
Demosthenes, master of eloquence, 81
Dennewirk, 70
Dennis the Just, of Portugal, 101
Deruyter, 290
Desmica, or head Zupan, 117
Desmond, 139
Deux Ponts, genealogy, 505
Deva River, 95
DeWitt, Jan, 290; triple Alliance by, 213
Diana, dr. of Henry II, 242
Diaz, Bartholmew, 101
Diaz, Porfirio, Pres. Mexico, 31
Directory, 230
Dirk I, C. Holland, 288
Dirk III, 288
Dirks-Holland, genealogy, 498
d'Israeli, great minister, 189
Dissolution, cause of, 23
Dixmude, 268
Djem, in Italy, 450
Dmitri, 424; Donsko, 427
Dnieper, 120, 398, 404, 410, 413, 416, 420, 437, 441
Dobberau 395
Doge of Venice, Otto Orseolo, 442
Don, 426, 439, 441; Islands, 420
Don Carlos, 99
Donegal, 142
Don Juan of Austria, 106, 112
Dowry, 25
Drago, murdered, 120
Dragut, attacks against, 98
Drake, preys upon Spanish vessels 186
Drave River, upper, 117, 373
Dreyfus scandals, 218
Dreux, Pierre de, 150
Dualists, 118
Dubois, Cardinal, 207
Ducas Constantine IX, 112, 472
Duchan, Stephan, Emperor, 118
Dugueselin, 225; wins in 100 years' war
Dulcigno, Port of, 118
Duma (National Assembly) without power, 426
Duncan II, slain by Macbeth, 213
Dunstan reforms opposed by King, 183
Durazzas, dispute against, 90

Durlach line, 372
Dybbol, 360
Dyle River in Belgium, 303
Dynastic rights, 227
Dynastic wars and murders, 195; wars in France and Italy, 201
Dynasties in Eastern Europe, 484; Oriental, 485
Dynasty Merovingian, 61; Carolingian, 62, 197, 278; Amali, 87; D'Este, 93; Greek Empire, Heraclean, Justinian, 112; Isaurian, Iconoclasts, 113; Glorious Macedonian, Theodosian, Thracian, 113; Neman, 119; Oldenburg, 127; Holstein, 127, 425; Glucksburg, 127; Denmark and Norway, 128; St. Eric, 129; Folkunger, 129; Wasa, 129, 412; Bipontine, 129; Bernadotte, 130; Milesian, 134; Bruce, 148; Guelf, 149; Capetian, 199; Valois, 201, 225; Bourbon, 227, 241; Orleans, 232; Gerald of Alsace, 243; Burgundian, 246, 277, 288; Godfrey, 277; Louvain, 277; Hainault, 277, 288; Namur, 277; Luxemburg, 277, 403; Bavarian, 369; Hapsburg, 349; Hohenstaufen, 346; Ascanian, 365; Hohenzollern, 365; Babenburg, 374; Premislide, 402; Poland Piast, 404, 411; Jagellon, 404, 411; Saxon, 412; Ruric, 423; Romanoff, 424; Arpad, 444; Mohammedan, 70

East Anglia, 182
Eastgoths, 64, 298; new settlers in Italy, 80, 495
Eastphalians, 69
Eberhard, Duke of Wurtemburg, 372; quarreler, 378
Ebro, Spanish River, 67
Eccelino the Fierce, tyrannizes Lombardy, 309, 312
Ecclesiastical Principalities in Germany, 381, 383
Edgar, 183
Edmund, Ironside, 183
Edward I of England, 143, 171, 184
Edward II of England, 185
Edward III of England, 156, 185; in France, 202
Edward IV of England, conquers Towton, 185; in France and Belgium, 203
Edward V of England, 185
Edward VI of England, 186
Edward VII of England, diplomat, 189
Edward, Black Prince, 185, 202
Edwin, Christian King, slain by Pagan Penda of Mercia, 182
Edwy, opposes reforms of Dunstan, 183
Egbert, King, 182
Egmont, Count, executed, 289
Egypt, Napoleon invades, 188; protectorate of, 189; Mehemet Ali of, 218; Caliphate, 475
Eider, 70, 256, 259
Einsiedlen, 296; Zwingle, pastor of, suppresses Catholic worship, 296
Elba River, 69, 70, 190, 192, 298, 334, 356, 363, 385, 388, 393
Elbeuf, Marquis of, 244
Eleanor of Cleves, marries Albert of Prussia, 365
Eleanore of Poitou, marries kings of France, England, 25, 184, 236
Eleanor of Provence, marries Henry III, 184
Electoral College, 38
Elfrida, 183
Elizabeth, Queen of England, 186; Armade to punish, 99
Elizabeth of Bavaria, Queen of Belgium, 267, 280
Elizabeth of Bavaria, marries John of Luxemburg, 277, 315, 402
Elizabeth deGorlitz, 277
Elizabeth Farnese, 100
Elizabeth of Poland=Louis the Great, Hungary, 411
Elizabeth of Hapsburg=Casimir IV of Poland
Elizabeth, Princess of Wied, 117
Elizabeth Stuart, 369
Elizabeth of Hungary, marries Albert II of Hapsburg, 445
Elizabeth, dr. of Louis II, Hungary =Ferdinand I, Hapsburg, 403
Ellak, son of Attila, 437
Emmanuel the Great, 101
Emmanuel II, 102
Emperors, German, fifty-two legitimate, 37; peaceful rulers, 38; deposition of domineering, 39
Empire, not autocratic, 35; not hereditory but elective, 36, 38
Empire of Rome, 83; barbarians take, 47; agony of, 86; fall of, 48, 49, 85
Ems River, 289, 356
Enghien, Duke of, killed, 241
England, 137, 201, 298, 330; panorama of, 154; persecution of Irish, 138; Norman conquest in, 155; war of the Roses, 156; the great plague in, 156; Flemish weavers in, 156; literature in, 157; civil war in, 157; material progress in,

158; primitive history of, 158; democracy, 167; triple alliance, 206; genealogies, 500-502
English, civilize through commerce, 19
Engren, 68, 69, 356, 358
Enns River, 373, 438
Enzio, son of Frederick II, 309
Epirus, 106, 111, 114, 115, 116, 392, 450; defended by Scanderbeg, 450
Erfurth 383
Eric, of Pomerania, 126
Eric of Sweden=Ingeborg of Norway, 128
Eric XI, the Insane, murdered, 129
Ermeland, 398
Ermesinda of Luxemburg = Walran, Limburg, 277, 278
Ernak, Hunnish Prince, 437
Ernest Augustus of Hanover, 330, 358, 368
Ernest III of Coburg (1806), 362
Ernest IV of Coburg (1843), 362
Erzeroum, 449
Erzegebirge, 393
Espartero, 100
Essex, 172
Este D' dynasty, Italy, 93; genealogy
Esthonia, 126, 361; River, 379, 380
Estride, sister of Canute, 126, 237
Ethandan, 183
Ethelbert=St. Bertha, 182
Ethelwulf, 183
Ethnical scope, 4
Ethnography, 80
Etruria, 86
Etruscans, 80
Eudes, 223
Endocia Lapu, marries Peter I, 428
Eudoxia, 86
Eugene Beauharnais, 215
Eugene of Savoy, 100, 330, 451; Marlborough, 207, 214
Eugene IV, Pope, 105
Euphrates River, 352
European plains, 3; league against Louis XIV, 207; our interest in Europe, 44
Eutychean heretics, 112
Euxine Sea, 451; Ports, 114
Evesham, 184

Factions, 90
Fairfax, 187
Falkirk, 148, 184; victory of, 149
Fanaticism, 456
Farel, 296
Farnese, Alexander, 91, 99, 290
Faure, President France, 218
Fehrbellim, 365
Fenians, violence of, 145, 189
Feodor, 424
Ferdinand I, Naples (1818), 93
Ferdinand the Castilian (1412), 98
Ferdinand the Great, Castilian (1035), 98
Ferdinand, St., 98
Ferdinand I, the Catholic, Spain, (1458), 90, 91, 95, 98, 271
Ferdinand III, Spain (1668), 100
Ferdinand IV, Spain (1759), 92
Ferdinand VI, Spain, 100
Ferdinand VII, Spain (1813), 100
Ferdinand I (1556), emperor, 351
Ferdinand II, King of Bohemia-Hungary, emperor (1619), 326, 351; XXX years, war, 321, 351
Ferdinand III, Emperor (1637), obtains peace of Westphalia, 352
Ferdinand I, Emperor Austria, 354
Ferdinand, Austrian Crown Prince, murdered, 334
Ferdinand of Hohenzollern, Crown Prince, 117
Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg, 121
Ferdinand of Bavaria (1651), 370
Fergus the Great, son of Erc, 147
Ferrand of Flanders, 184, 258, 276
Ferrara, 88, 93
Ferry, 233
Feudal system, 41
Fiefs, 41
Finland, 352; Gulf of, 381, 398, 410, 440; conquered by Waldemar I, 129
Finns, 5, 389, 433; christianized, 34; Ugro, 192
Flanders, 213, 256, 275; wool markets of, 185; invasion of, 206; textile industries in, 256; house of, 277, 288; intestine wars as in Greece, 258; genealogy, 496
Flemish weavers, 156, 185, 255
Fleurus, 228
Fleury, Cardinal, 229
Flodden, 148
Florence, 90
Florida, 207; English conquers, 188
Floris V, 288
Flushing coast defenses at, 291
Foch, General, 270, 345
Folkunger, dynasty of, 129; genealogy, 504
Fontenoy Battle, 330
Foulques of Anjou, 236
France, 4, 20, 137, 166, 190, 193; I, stormy period, truce of God, 199; II, Chivalric period, Louis

IX, 200; III, centralizing period, 201; dynastic wars abroad and at home; IV, religious wars, 202; V, struggle for world domination, Louis XIV, 203; monograph, 206-11; VI, revolutionary, 204; revolution, 211; reign of terror, Empire of Napoleon, 218-20; dynasties, 506-511; chronicles, nation, 223; states, 236; northwest, center, east. Franks, reconstruction power, 56; outlines, 61, unite Gaul, conquer Germany, Empire, chronicles, 62; monographs Clovis, Charlemagne subdues Saxons, emperor, French genealogies, 506-11.

Franchimontois, Walloon heroes, 258

Francis 1 of Austria (1806), 323

Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria (1848), 354

Francis I of France (1540), 91, 226, 350

Francis II King of France, 148, 204

Francis I of Naples (1818), 93

Francis I, Lorraine=Mary Theresa (1735), 243; Emperor, 245

Francis Guise, 204

Francis Sforza, 91, 243

Franconia, house of, 345, 369; genealogy, 516

Frankfort-on-Main, 333, 376

Frederick I, Hohenstaufen (1079), 372

Frederick II, Hohenstaufen (1105), 372

Frederick III, Hohenstaufen, 372; Barbarossa, I, Emperor, 1152-1190; wars on Lombard league, 347; Saxony broken up, 341

Frederick IV, Hohenstaufen, II emperor, 1214-1250, 302-10; Pope Innocent III, wars in Holy Land, revolt of sons, 347-348

Frederick II, Austria, fighter, 374

Frederick III, Austria (1342), opposes Louis IV, 348

Frederick IV, Austria (1455), Emperor, 349

Frederick I, Duke, Hohenzollern, Brandenburg, 365

Frederick II (1440-70), Hohenzollern, 365

Frederick III, Duke, Hohenzollern (1703), as Frederic I, King of Prussia (1701), 366

Frederick II, the Great, King of Prussia (1730-80), 327-28, 367, 404, 367

Frederick William I, Duke (1648-88), 336, 365

Frederick William I, King (1713-40), 365

Frederick William II (1786), 366

Frederick William III (1797), 354, 367

Frederick William IV (1840-61), 355

Frederick William, Baden (1852), 372

Frederick II, Denmark (1527), 127

Frederick VI, Denmark (1808), 127

Frederick VII, Denmark (1848), 127, 360

Frederick I, the Warlike, Saxony (1423-28), 361

Frederick II, Saxony (1428-64), 361

Frederick III, the Wise (1486-1525), 327, 361

Frederick August II, Poland, 361

Frederick August III (1732-63), King of Poland, 361

Frederick August IV (1763), King of Saxony, 361, 362

Frederick William I, Hesse (1847), 367

Frederick of Hesse Cassel (1720-1751), 130

Frederick III, Palatine (1559), 369

Frederick IV, Palatine (1606), elector, 349

Frederick V, Palatine, anti-emperor, 321 (1618)=Elizabeth Stuart, 369

Frederick, Empty Pockets (1411), 375

Frederick II, Anjou (1435), 243, 246

Frederick Ernest, the Confessor, of Brunswick, 358

Frederick of Zolre, 364

Fredericksshall, 130

French, 195; alliance, 147; monarchy, 197; character of the, 198; win at Fleurus, 213; revolutionary storms, 214, 222; panorama of states, 234; houses, 236; genealogy, 506-511

Friburg, 295, 297

Friedland, 216

Friesland, East, 359; West, 289, 290

Frisians, 289; revolt, 288; subdued by Charles V, 289

Fronde, 205, 208, 212

Friuli, 392, 374, 438

Fulda, 383

Fulk, 236

Fulk V, King of Jerusalem, 236

Funfkirchen, 444, 445

Fusillades, shootings, 224

Galeaz, John, 91
Galicia, 398, 399, 413
Gallicans, 228
Gallipoli, 110, 114, 446, 449
Gallixtus II, Pope, 306
Galloway, 144
Galway, 142
Gama, Vasco de', 101
Gambetta, 233
Garibaldi, 93, 233
Garonne, 150, 236
Gascogne, 200
Gaston of Orleans, 240
Gauls, 5, 196, 210, 235, 252, 298
Gearon, Ambrose, 7
Gerbert, 304
Gembloux, 290
Genealogies—Brevity methods, abbreviations, idioticons, 481; Oriental genealogies, 485; Byzantine Empire, 487; Crusades and Latin States, 487, 490; Turcs, 491; Mongols, 492; Spain, 492; Portugal, 494; Navarre, 494; Italy, 495; Irish, Scottish, 499; English, 500; Scandinavian, 503; France, 505; Belgium, 511; Holland, 513; Germany, 514; Slavs, 523; Mongolians, 526
Kingdoms of Jerusalem and Cypress and Constantinople, 374
Germany, ethnology, 298; Fatherland Germans, outside Germans, character. Empire elective, 38; beneficent, 40 Nation and monarchy, 1st period stormy, 302; Barbarians weaken the Carolingians, 2nd period, chivalry, 303; some Kaisers want world rule thwarted by the Popes, 304; Hohenstauffen, 305; Frederick I Barbarossa, Frederick II Interregnum; 3rd period, centralization, Hapsburgs successful, 311; 4th period, religious and civil wars, 320; thirty years' war; 5th period, weakening of Austria by neighbors, 322; 6th period, Austria supplanted by Prussia, France beaten, 322; Frederick II the Great, 326; Bismarck, unification of Germany, 329-33. William I, William II, world's war, 331; Treaty of Versailles, 338; financial war, 339; results of world's war, 340. *Chronicles* 340; houses, Carolingian, 345; Saxon, 345; Investiture quarrel, 346; Predatory wars, 346; Interregnum, 348; Protestantism 30 years' war, 350-352; attacks against Hapsburgs, 352-53; revolutions, 353; Austria supplanted by Prussia, France conqueror; Genealogies 516-523; states, 356, very independent, 4 transformation periods; chronicles, north, 357; middle, 367; south, 372; corporate powers, 377
Geneva, 296, 297; home of the Red Cross Society, 292
Genoa, 460
Genseric, plunders Rome, 51, 86; crosses into Africa, 96
Geographical, scope, 3
Geoffrey of Anjou, 183, 238
Geoffrey, Plantagenet, 236
Geoffrey I, Duke, 150
George I, King of England, 149, 187, 369
George II, 188
George III, 188
George IV, 189
George V, England, 189
George V, Montenegro, 118
George I of Saxony, 361
George, Dane=Ann Stuart, 187
George of Denmark, King of Greece, 115
George William Hohenzollern (1619), 365
George Alexander of Servia, 120
Georgevich, Kara, 120; Peter, 120
Georgia, 439; conquered, 451
Gepidae, 50, 87, 389, 437, 438
Gerald of Alsace, 243
Gerhard I, 288
Gerhard of Holstein, 359
Gerleva of Falaise, mother of William the Conqueror, 237
Gero, Margrave, murders Slavic chiefs, 395
Gertrude, dr. of Lothaire II of Saxony, 306; marries Henry the Proud, Welf, 369
Getae, 434
Geysa, King of Hungary, 441; baptised, 444
Ghent, 258, 261, 276, 279, 290
Ghibellines, 90, 346; genealogy, 517
Ghuzzes, 440, 441
Gibralter, 100, 187
Girondistes (Moderates) execution of, 230
Gisella of Bavaria=St. Stephen, 442

Gladstone, efforts for Ireland, 145; land act and league, 189
Glagolitic, alphabet, 387
Glaris, joins Swiss league, 295
Glencoe, Jacobites massacred at, 149
Glucksburg, 359; dynasty, 127
Glycerius, 86
God, truce of, 199
Godfrey V of Bouillon, 253, 377
Godfrey the Hunchback, 91
Golden Bull of Charles IV, 38, 349
Golden Bull of Andrew II, 443, 445
Golden Fleece, Order of, 260, 279
Golden Spurs, Battle of, 201, 259, 276
Gonzaga, 92; dynasty, 480
Gorden fights the Madhi, 189
Gorm, the Ancient Denmark, 126
Gortschakoff, 425
Gothrum, Dane, conquered, 183
Goths, 425
Gottfried, King, vanquished by Charlemange, 357
Gottorp, 127; Holstein, 130
Goudonoff, Boris, 424
Government, stable, monarchial and political, 11, 13; republican, 197; constitution, 46, 169; ideal and practical, 13
Gran Metropolitan, 442
Granada, capture of, 95, 98
Granson, battle, 203, 295, 375
Gratton, 145
Great Britain, conquered, 53
Greece, 81, 96, 110; increase of territories, 110; mixed race, 114; war for independence, 115, 451; kingdom of, 115
Greek Empire, 82, 103, 113, 437; fine arts and sciences, 81; struggle with Islam, 103; reduced to slavery, 96; rampart of Eastern Europe, 103; divided in three, conquered, 114
Greenland, 128
Gregory VII, Pope, 305
Gregory XVI, Pope, 93
Grevy, President, 233
Grimoald of Lombardy, 87, 438
Grisons, 297
Griewe, High Priest, 397
Gruet, executed, 296
Guelderland, 288
Guelders, 276, 279, 290
Guelf, or Welf, 346; dynasty, 149; league of, 307, 357; division, 347; genealogy, Germany, 517, 501; England, 503
Guelf II, Count of Swabia, 369
Guelf III of Swabia, 369
Guelf IV of Bavaria I, 369
Guelf V=Mathilda of Canossa, 369
Guelfs, Naples, leader of the, 90; oppose Ghibellines, 357
Gueux, 284
Guggenberger, cited, 106
Guibert, Clement III, antipope, 305
Guienne, 236
Guilhen of Auvergne, 236; Guilhen X, 236
Guillotinades, 216
Guiscard, Robert, 53, 54, 89, 90, 306
Guise, 28, 243, 244; capture of Calais by, 227
Guise, Francis, 204; murdered Henry Balafré, 242
Guise, genealogy, 511; Dukes, Kings, England
Guise, Isabella, 237
Gustavus Wasa, 120
Gustav Adolph, or Gustavus Adolphus, of Sweden, 125, 129, 326, 412
Gustavus III, 130
Gustavus IV, 130
Guy of Dampierre, Count of Flanders, 258, 275, 277
Gyula of Transylvania, 446

Haakon or Hakon I, of Norway, 128
Haakon V, 128
Haakon VI, marries Margaret of Denmark, 128
Haakon VII, 128
Hague, The, 349; congress of, 426
Hainault or Hainaut, 213, 276, 279; dynasty in Holland, 288
Hakim II, 97
Halle, 71
Hamburg, 358, 376
Hanover, 289, 330, 334; House of, in England, 187, 189; Dukes of, 358; genealogy, 503
Hansa, 126; Hanseatic League, 300, 390, 398, 416; of Germany, 126, 128; origin of, 377
Hapsburgs, 91, 314, 443; expansion through marriages, 26; dynasty, 37, 288, 374, 521; French attacks, 204; chronicles, 315-327, 349; world power, 316; achievements, 317; genealogy, 493, 496, 519, 520
Hardicanute, 126, 183
Harold I, 128
Harold III, 128
Harold, son of Canute the Great, 126, 183
Harold, Saxon, crushes Danes, slain by Normans, 183, 237

Hastings, Battle of, 237
Hastings, Warren, denounced by Burke, 179, 188
Havelberg, Fortress, 395
Havelock, 189
Hedwige, St. dr. of Louis the Great of Hungary, 404; marries Jagellon of Lithuania, 311; Queen of Poland, 444, 445
Heinsius, opposes French, 290
Helen, dr. of Romanus I, 113
Hellas, Ancient Greece, 115, 392
Helsingford, Finnish Capital, 433
Helvetia, Ancient Switzerland, 138, 215
Henrietta of England, 240
Henrietta of France, 186
Henry I, Beauclerc, of England, 183, 237, 238
Henry II, Plantagenet of Anjou, king of England, marries Eleanor of Poitou, 25, 138, 150, 167, 184, 200, 236, 238
Henry III of England, 150, 170, 184
Henry IV of England, 185
Henry V of England, 185, 238
Henry VI of England, 183
Henry VII of England, 90, 150; Tudor, 185
Henry VIII of England, 139, 148, 174, 175, 186
Henry II of France (1556-59), 226
Henry, King of Poland, 204; returns to France as King Henry III, 406, 412
Henry IV of France, 202, 227 244, 277; war in Belgium, 290
Henry V Comte de Chambrod, last Bourbon, 218 327
Henry I, Bourbon (1552), 241, 227
Henry II, Bourbon (1588), 241, 246
Henry I, Montmorency (1614), 242
Henry II, Montmorency (1632), 242
Henry I, Guise Balafré, 242; head of Catholic league, 244
Henry I the Fowler, Emperor, 99, 345, 360, 395, 441
Henry II, St., Emperor Germany, 345
Henry III, Emperor, 346
Henry IV (1056), Emperor, fights investure war, 346
Henry V, Emperor (1106), forces Pope Pascal II, 346
Henry VI, Emperor of Germany, (1190)=Constancia of Naples, 347
Henry VII, Emperor (V of Luxemburg), (1308), 348
Henry I the Proud, Welf, 357, 359
Henry II the Lion, Welf, 306, 357, 369, 374, 381,i 395
Henry the Black, 357, 369
Henry the Illustrious, 360
Henry II Trastamare, 98
Henry III, Duke of Champagne and King of Navarre, 239
Henry IV of Spain (1454); scandals of, 98
Henry V the Child, landgrave of Hesse, 366
Henry X, Jasomirgott ((1142), 347
Henry XI, 369
Henry of Bavaria, Bishop of Utrecht, 289
Henry, Brunswick dynasty (1634), 359
Henry of Mecklenburg=Wilhelmina of Holland, 291
Henry of Nassau=Claudia of Orange, 248
Henry the Rich of Nassau, 367
Henry Nordheim, 358
Henry the Pious (1539), 362
Henry Raspe, of Thuringia, emperor-elect, 307, 364
Heraclean, dynasty, 112, 487
Heraclius, Emperor, 112, 117, 392, 438, 439, 440
Herbert I, Vermandois, 238
Herbert II, Vermandois, 238
Herbert IV, Vermandois, 238, 239
Herman II of Baden, 372
Herman of Luxemburg, 305
Hermanneric, starved himself, 87
Hermanstadt, Turks beaten at, 111
Heruli, 87, 437
Hesse, 215, 367; genealogy, 515
Hesse, Cassel, 367
Hesse, Darmstadt, 367
Hesse, Provinces, 366
Herzegovina, 108, 109, 118, 426
Hetaeries, Greek societies, 115
Hilarion, 416
Hilda=Attila, 437
Hildesheim, 359, 383
Hindenberg, 345
Hinduism, 84
Historical, struggles past and present, 2, 3; scope of book, 6
Hoche, 188
Hochingen, 364
Hochstadt, 100, 207, 370
Hogue, 207
Hohenstauffen, house, 374; dynasty, 305-310, 346-348; genealogy, 501
Hohenzollerns, 1, 336; rise of, 363; dynasty, 365, 372; fomented divisions in Poland, 408; genealogy, 522-523

Hohenzollern, Charles, King of Roumanians, 117; Ferdinand, 117
Holland, 4, 19, 20, 191, 255, 276, 277, 289, 290; lost, 99; Sweden alliance with, 127; triple alliance, 206; invaded, 213, 290; chronicles, 288; genealogies, 514
Holland, William of, German Emperor, 348
Holstein, Count of, 358
Holstein, 126; dynasty, 127, 425
Holstein, Gottorp, 130; genealogy, 503; in Russia, 411; Sweden, 505
Home rule for Ireland, 142, 145
Hong Kong, 189
Honoria, sister of Emperor Valentinian, 437
Hoover, Herbert, 274
Hosius, Cardinal of Ermeland, 405
Hospitallers, 450, 462; six wars against Turks, 111; knightly order of, 382
Hugh Capet, 223
Hugh O'Neil, 139
Hugh of Provence, 246
Hugenots, 202, 227, 242; fight the Catholics, 243
Humbert, 93
Hundred years' war, 26, 27, 201, 225
Hungarian, crusades, 110; kingdom, 106, 442; panorama, 442; chronciles, 44; genealogy, 527
Hungarians, 5, 26, 393, 441, 303; see Magyars
Hungary, 351; devastated, 111, 112, 417; seven wars against, 111, 450; reduced by czar, 354
Huns, 384, 433
Hunyady, John, 106, 111, 316, 445, 449-450, 460
Hussite war, 349
Hyder Ali, 188
Hyrcanians, 436

Iberia, 58, 80, 94, 147, 158, 196
Iceland, 124, 127, 128
Iceni, ancient tribe of, 159
Iconium, 449
Iconoclasts, 113
Ideletta, VanBuren=Calvin, 296
Igor I, 441
Igor, attacks Constantinople, 423
Ile-de-France, 239
Illyria, 116, 437
Imperialism versus Provincialism 18
Imperialists versus Populists, Italy, 90
India, 83, 188, 290; British Empire of, 32; colonies of, 207
India, Viceroys of, 101; empire, 188; trade, 290
Indians, Latin American, full citizens, 31; southern, not mild, 32
Indo-China, 288
Ingeborg=Philip Augustus, 128, 200
Ingeborg of Norway=Eric of Sweden, 129
Ingelgar, 236
Ingria, on Baltic, 380, 381
Inn Basin, 373, 374; valley, 392
Innocent III, Pope, 88, 95, 347
Inquisition, establishment of the, 96; royal, 98; keeps division out of Spain, 99
Interests, class, 23
International law, 16
Introduction, 1
Investiture quarrel war, councils, 346
Interregnum, Great, 348
Iona, 147
Ionian Sea, 392
Iranians, 435
Ireland, home rule, autonomy, 133, 143, 165; legends of, 134; fights for liberty, 134; right of self government, 134; four kingdoms, 135; two principal dynasties, 135; clan system of, 136; invasion of, 136, 138, 144; educational institutions in, 137, 144; four centuries of martyrdom in, 138; deportations, 109, 140; population reduced, 139; potato blight in, 140; progress hindered by England, 140; adverse legislation in, 141; oppressed by England, 142; chronicles, 144; pagan, 144; Christian, 144; famine in, 183
Irish genealogy, Milesian, 499
Irene regent, 113
Irminsul, 68
Iron age in Italy, 54
Isaac II, 113; Comnenus, 113
Isabella of Castile=Ferdinand, 98
Isabella II, Spain (1832-40), 100
Isabella of Bavaria, 202
Isabella=Albert Sovereigns Belgium, 279
Isabella and Ferdinand the Catholic, 261
Isabella of France=Edward III of England (1307), 185
Isabella of Portugal, 98, 376

Isaurian dynasty, 113, 487
Isidor, patriarch of Moscow, 423
Islam, 104, 105; ultra military, 451
Island of Maita, 282
Israelites, 194
Istria, 392
Italy, 20, 26, 83, 112, 191, 298; settlement of Lombards in, 80; plays many roles, 80; garden of Europe, 85; school of the world, 85; republics in, 85; interior struggles in, 88; Frankish rule in, 89; anarchy in, 89; trade centers of, 91; French wars in, 91; changing regimes, 498; kingdom of, 93; revolution in, 93; sides with allies in world war, 93; French in, 190; fatuous wars in, 203; war in, 307; colony, in, 440; genealogies, 495-499
Ivan III the Great, 420, 423, 425
Ivan IV the Terrible, 416, 420, 421, 424
Ivrea, 90

Jacobins, 230
Jacobites, British, 316; three risings of, 187
Jacquerie, the, 225
Jacqueline of Hainault, 277, 288
Jagellon of Lithuania, 404, 410, 411, 444; dynasty, 404, 405, 411, 412; genealogy, 524
James of Scotland, I, II, III, 148
James IV of Scotland, 148, 185
James V of Scotland, 244; reformation opposed, 148
James VI of Scotland, 148; I king of Great Britain, 140, 148, 174, 175, 186, 187
James VII, 149; James II of England, 176, 187, 207, 213
James VIII, 149
James Artevelde, 202
James of Marche, 241
Jane Grey, 186
Jane of Albrets, Navarre, mother of Henry IV, 241
Jane of Navarre=Phillip the Fair, 201, 239
Jane of Spain=Philip, 261, 316
Jansenists, 229
Japan, 422; trade, 290; war, 426
Jaroslav, 423
Jasomirgott, Henry, Duke of Austria, 375
Java, 287
Jaxartes, 435
Jan DeWitt, 290
Jena, 216
Jenghiz Khan, 193
Jerusalem, 379; kingdom of, 474; genealogy, 490
Jesuits, 294, 296; missions, 101; suppressed, 100, 208; colleges attacked, 297; open schools, 405; called to Poland, 411
Joachim I (1499), 365
Joachim II (1608), 365
Joanna II of Naples, 90
Joan of Arc, 201, 226
Joan, heiress of Franche-Comté, 247
Jodoc of Moravia, emperor, 349
Johannitsa, 121
John I, Bourbon, 240
John I, Scandinavia, leaves Sture regent in Sweden, 127, 129
John Weiner (1573-1605), 362
John II the Good, captive, 202, 225
John I of Portugal, Avisa D., 101
John II of Portugal (1481), 101
John III of Portugal (1521), 101
John IV of Portugal (1640), 101
John V of Portugal (1705), 101
John II, Comneni (1118), Greek, takes Antioch, 113
John IV, Infant, Greek Emperor (1341), 114, 449
John V, Cantacuzen, 114, 449
John VII, Greek Emperor (1425), 114
John I of Poland, 407, 412
John III, Sobieski, 407, 412
John III of Sweden Wasd D., 129
John IV of Brabant, erects University of Louvain, 277
John, King of France (1355), captured, 202
John Baliol of Scotland, 146, 147, 184
John Calvin, 296
John de Montfort, 150
John the Steadfast, Wettin, 361
John Frederick I the Magnanimous, Wettin, 361
John Hampden, 186
John Hunyady, 106, 111, 316, 445, 449, 450, 460
John Huss, 316
Jerome of Prague, 316
John Lackland, King of England, 150, 168, 184
John Lauenberg, 360
John of Austria, 99, 100
John Parricida, murders Emperor Albert I, 375
John Russel, 189
John Sigismund of Brandenburg, 365

John the Blind of Bohemia and Luxemburg, 277, 373, 402
John the Fearless, Duke of Burgundy, 240, 278
John Vataces, Greek Emperor, 114
Joseph I (1705), II (1780), Emperors of Germany, 352, 353; Spanish succession, 100, 107
Joseph I of Portugal, 101
Josephine Beauharnais=Napoleon I, 216
Joyeuse Entrée, 258
Juan Juan, Empire, 436, 438
Juan of Austria, 290, 450
Judith, dr. of Charles the Bald, 183; marries English and Flemish rulers, 238
Judith of Hapsburg, 374
Jugo-Slavs, 5, 117, 351, 391; republic of, 393
Julius II, Pope, 88, 203
Julian, traitor, 97
Julian Alps, 87
Julian the Apostate, 371
Julich or Juliers dynasty, united with Berg, 364
Julius Caesar, 252
Jungaria, 440
Justin I, Greek, 112
Justinian II, Emperor, 112, 439
Justinian dynasty, 112; genealogy, 487

Kaiser Karl, the Ghentenaar, 261
Kalka River, 417, 423
Kansu, China, 436
Kara George, or Black George, Kara Georgevich, 120
Kara Mustapha, 464
Karakorum, Mongol Capital, 418
Karelian, 440
Karluk Turks, 438, 441
Kars, 451; capture of, 426
Khazars, 389
Kent, 182
Keshko, Natalia, 120
Kettler, Gothard of Courland, 397, 411
Khanate, Astrakhan, 419; Kazan, 419; Krim, 419; Ssarai, 419
Khan, Akbar, Mongol, 32; Bulan, 439; George Tsudan, 440; Jenghis, 193; Kurya, 441; Ogatai, 418; Zuebal, 439
Khans of Kiptschak, 423
Khartoum, 189
Khazars, 113, 194, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441
Khorassan, 446, 449
Khosrau I, 439
Khosrau II, of Persia, 438
Kiel, 376, 394
Kiev, 399, 413, 415, 416, 419, 440, 441; Patriarch of, 387, 419
Kilkenny, 142
Kingdoms: Italy, 93; of the Langobards, 87; Eastgoths, 87; Westgoths, 96; of Greece, 115; Bulgaria, 120; Achride, 120; Bulgarian Wallachian, 121; of Center between France and Germany, 242; United, of Arles, 246; of Belgium, 265, 290; Holland, 288, 291; Petchenegs, 441; Comans, 441; of Hungary, 445
Kings: Desiderius, 66; Duart, 101; John Zapolya of Hungary, 111; Miguel, 102; Sigismund of Hungary, 111; St. Stephan, 53; Wladislav, of Poland, 111
Kiptschak, 411, 423, 441, 446; of the Golden Horde, 418
Kitchener, 189
Klauwaart, Flemish Patriot, 257
Kniprode, 380
Knox, banished, 148
Koenigsberg, 377
Komans or Comans, 417, 434, 441
Koprili, Viziers, 451
Koppah, heathen, Hungarian, 442
Koran, 193
Kosova, or Khossova, 110, 111, 116, 118, 119, 120, 121, 449
Kosciusko, 408, 413
Krok, 402; Kubrat, 120, 440; Bulgarians
Krum, 120

Labor, factor in history, 10
Lackland, John, King of England, 150, 168, 184
Ladislas, 120; son of Charles III, of Duras, 90
Ladislav III (Wladislaw III of Poland), perishes at Warna, 446, 412
Ladislav VII, the Posthumous, 375, 403, 446
Ladislav VIII (Hung-Bohem I), 377, 412, 446
Lafayette, 229
La Hogue, 213
Lancaster, House of, 185
Langobardia, 67, 69, 87, 298
Langton, Stephan, 168
Languedoc, 244, 247

Lateran I, Council, 306; third Council, 311
Latin Empire, annihilated, 51
Latin Principalities, 114
Lauenburg, 127, 360
Laws of History, 8-44
Laws Salic, 25
Laybach, Congress of, 333
Lazar of Serbia, 110; Prince, 119
League: of Nations, 10, 17, 43, 349; in France, 99; of Cambray, 203; Catholic, 204; of Augsburg, 207; European, 207; Swiss, 295; of Hanse, 308; Rhine, 378
Lebanon, 451
Lech, 129, 303, 328, 392, 441
Lechfeld, 373
Leczinski, Stanislas, 129, 207, 244, 301, 330, 412
Legislative Assembly, 230
Legnano, 307, 310, 357
Lehnin, Monastery, 395
Leignitz, 402, 404, 417, 423
Leine, River, 356
Leinster, 135
Leipsic, 129, 231, 328, 395, 402
Lemberg, 399
Leo III, Greek Emperor, 112
Leo V, the Philosopher, 113
Leopold I, Emperor of Germany, 352; attacks by Louis XIV
Leopold II, Emperor (1782), 352; beats Turcs, wins Belgians back, 321
Leopold IV (1138), 374
Leopold V, Babenberg, (1192), of Austria, 373
Leopold VI, Babenberg, (1200), 374
Leopold III, Austrian, (1379), falls at Sempach, 295, 375
Leopold IV, D. Hapsburg (1411), 295; falls at Nafels, 375
Leopold D. of Saxe-Coburg, I, King of the Belgians (1831), 266, 280, 362
Leopold II, King of the Belgians, (1870), 266, 280
Lepanto, 99, 112, 115, 446, 464
Letts, 381, 410
Lewellyn of Wales, fall of, 150
Leyden, 290
Libussa, daughter of Krok, 402
Lichtenburg, Ernest III, sells, 362
Liege, 258, 267, 278; Bishop of, 171
Lille, 213, 228
Lilliards, Lilly Partisans, 257
Limburg, 266, 278, 290,
Limerick, treaty of, 140
Lippe-Detmold, 363; Schaumberg, 363; River, 356
Lisbon, 101
Lithuania, 352, 388, 394, 396, 410; Union with Poland, 398; Chronicles, 411
Livonia, 130, 378, 380, 381, 397, 411, 412
Loarn, son of Erc, 147
Loire, 225, 241
Lola, Shah, 110
Lombard League, 307
Lombards, 66, 393, 438; threaten Papacy, 80; defeated, 402, 495
Lombardy, 91, 246; king of, 89; war in, 306
London, 127, 188, 378; treaty of, 278
Lorraine, 19, 28, 138, 242, 243, Duchy of, 243; Upper, 276; Lower, 276, 279; genealogy, 511
Lorraine, Francis de, 353
Lothaire 1 63, 89, 242, 276
Lothaire II, 200, 242, 276, and Louis II, holy, 242
Lothaire of Supplinburg, 357
Lothaire II, of Saxony, Emperor, 346
Lotharingia, 275; annexed to Germany, 263, 245; lower, 276
Loubet, President of France, 233
Louis, the Mild (814-40), Carlovingian, 223; Evangelizes the Barbarians, 62
Louis the German, 243, 303
Louis II the Stammerer, 223
Louis the Child, 345
Louis II, Emperor, 89, 246
Louis III, Blind, Emperor, 89
Louis IV, D'Outre-Mer, 223
Louis V, 223
Louis VI, the Fat, 224
Louis VII, 242
Louis VIII, of France, 224
Louis IX, St., 200, 224
Louis X, of France, 225
Louis XI, Dauphin, King, 226
Louis XII, of Orleans=Ann of Britanny, 90, 91, 203, 226; war in Milan, 226, 350
Louis XIII, 205, 208, 239
Louis XIV, the Great, 100, 203 204, 206-210; coalitions against wars of conquest, 228
Louis XV, 204, 229
Louis XVI, the Saintly, 204, 229; executed, 230
Louis XVIII, 232
Louis I, the Great or Lame (1310), Bourbon, 240

Louis II, the Good, Bourbon (1356-1410), 240
Louis I, Condé, Bourbon, 204, 241
Louis II, the Great Condé (1686), 241
Louis Henry, last Bourbon, 241
Louis, of Hesse Darmstadt (1780), 367
Louis II, Hesse Darmstadt (1830), 367
Louis III, of Hesse Darmstadt (1848), 367
Louis, the Springer (1130), 363
Louis, the Saint of Thuringia (1180), 363
Louis II, of Bavaria (1253), 369
Louis IV, of Bavaria (1314-47), 315
Emperor, 348; rival elected
Louis I, King of Bavaria (1825), 370
Louis II, (1886), 370
Louis I, of Anjou, Naples, 90, 237
Louis III, of Anjou, Naples, 90
Louis the Great of Hungary (1342), 90, 411, 443, 445
Louis II, of Hungary and Poland, 111, 403, 444, 445, 450; killed, 463
Louis XI, Palatine (1610-23), marries Louise of Orange, 368
Louis of Brunswick (1830-54), 358
Louis LeMore or Louis Moro, 91,
Louis of Orléans, 202
Louis Philip I (1785), 240
Louis Philip, King of France (1830-47), 232
Louise of Hapsburg=Napoleon I, 231
Louise of Orange, 368
Louisiana, exchanged by French, 227
Louvain, 271; Dynasty, 277; Catholic University opened at, 280
Lower Rhine, Dukedoms, 515
Lubeck, 358, 376, 378
Lucerne, joins League, 295, 296, 297
Lucknow, Indian British Empire, 189
Ludolph, Herzog of Nordalbingia, 357; Ducal Dynasty, 357
Luneberg, 357; genealogy, 518
Luneville, Peace of, 231
Luther, Martin, 351
Lutter, 127, 351
Lutzen, 129, 351
Luxemburg, 207, 255, 266, 276, 290, 443; wins at Fleures, 213; house of, 277, 278; Grand Duchy of, 291; of Lux-Bohem, 1347-1437; genealogy, 525
Lyons resists, captured, 216
Macbeth, 147
Macedonia Dynasty, 113, 116, 117, 488; plundered, 117, 392
Machiavelli, Utilitarian statesman, 17
Mackensen, 335
McMahon, 232
Madagascar, 218
Madhi, the, 189
Maesia, 87
Maestricht, 278
Magdeburg, 71, 328; Archbishop of, 357, 358
Marengo, 231
Magento Solferino, battle, 93, 332
Magna Charta, 156, 168-169
Magnus the Good, 128
Magnus III, perishes in Ireland, 128
Magnus VII, 128, 129
Magnus Norwegian, 126; King of Norway and Sweden, 128
Magyars, Hungarians, 53, 89, 113, 192, 246, 302, 303, 392, 402, 403, 434, 440, 444
Mahmud II, 479
Hahomet I, 477
Mahomet II, 106, 111, 444, 445; the conqueror, 106, 449, 478
Mainotes, 392
Mainz, 215; Archbishop of, 382
Malaysia, 287
Malcolm III, 147
Malplaquet, 100, 207; reverses at, 214, Marlborough, 228
Malta, 188, 450, 463
Mamelukes, 188, 215; of Egypt, 450
Manchuria, 422, 426, 428
Mamfred, son of Frederick II, 90, 308, 313
Mantua, 92
Manuel II, Greek, 113, 114
Manuel III, Greek, 114
Manx, Irish settlement, 144
Maramount, house, 118
Marattes, 188
Marche, 240
Marches, 378; taken by Cialdini, 93
Marchfeld, 374
Marcian, Greek=St. Pulcherie, 112
Marcomanni, German tribe, 393
Margaret of Anjou, 185
Margaret of Denmark, 129
Margaret of Dampierre, 275
Margaret of Maele, Countess of Flanders and Burgundy, 247
Margaret Maultasch, 373; heiress of, Tyrol, 315
Margaret of Tudor, reduces Nobles, 148
Margravates German, 57, 390

Maria da Gloria, 101
Marie Louise of Orleans=Leopold I of Belgium, 362
Marienburg, 380
Marie of Portugal=Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg, 362
Marignano, 241, 244
Maritime Powers, 281; occupied in other parts of world, 75; cities disputed, 118; nations of Northern Europe, 122, 123; Southern Europe, 72, 119
Maritza, 110, 118, 449
Marko, 110, 119
Marlborough, 100, 187, 228
Marne River, 239, 268, 345
Marriages, dowries accruing or losing through, 26; vitality of Spanish dynasty destroyed by debilitating, 99
Marshfield, 402
Marston Moor, defeat of Charles I, at, 187
Martinozze, Anna, Mazarin's niece, marries a Conti, 241
Marozia, 88, 495
Mar Valley, 392
Mary Ann of Austria, 100
Mary Adelaide, Bourbon, Ponthievre=Philip Egalité, 240
Mary Antoinette=Louis XVI, 216
Mary Guise, 148
Mary Stuart, Queen, 148, 186, 204
Mary Tudor=Philip II, 186
Mary Therese, Empress of Austria =Francis of Lorraine, 92, 353; succession war
Mary Teresa of Spain marries Louis XIV, 99, 205, 213
Mary of Berry, Auvergne=John I, Bourbon, 240
Mary of Burgundy, marries Maximilian of Austria, 261, 279, 316, 374, 376
Mary of Hungary=Sigismund, Emperor, 349, 444, 445
Massagetae, 434
Mathilda of England, 236=Plantagenet, excluded from throne, 147
Mathilda daughter of Baldwin V, =William the Conquerer, 237
Mathilda, daughter of Henry II, England=Henry the Lion, 357
Mathilda of Canossa, 88, 92, 369
Matthias Corvin, King of Hungary, 349, 403
Maupertuis, 202
Maurice of Saxony, 362
Maximilian I, Emperor=Mary of Burgundy, 261, 279, 288, 295, 316, 350, 375, 376, 445
Maximilian II, Emperor (1564), indifferent, 328
Maximilian I, Duke of Bavaria (1612), 328, 370
Maximilian II (1679), 370
Maximilian IV, Duke; I, King of Bavaria (1825), 370
Maximilian II, King of Bavaria (1864), 370; fails, 218
Maximus, 86
Mayenne, 204; Charles of, 244
Mayfield or general review, 68
Mayors of Palace=Ministers, 62
Mazarin, 99, Cardinal, 227, 228, 239
Mazzini, 93
Meath, or middle of Ireland, 135
Mecklenburg, Henry of=Wilhelmine of Holland, 291
Mecklenburg, 126, 328, 378, 381
Mecklenburg, Albert of, 129
Media, 436, 437
Medici, 91, 244; Genealogy, 496
Medici, Catherine de, marries Henry II, of France, 227
Medici, Mary de, marries Henry IV, France, 227
Medieval Europe, 34
Mehemet Ali, 115, 451
Meille, Clemence de, 241
Meinhard, first Bishop of Lithuania, 397
Meinhardt of Tyrol, 375
Meinhardt I, Count of Gorz (1248), 374
Meinhardt II (1257), 374
Meinhardt III (1361), 374
Meissen, 360, 395
Melk City, afterwards Vienne, 392
Menace of Militarism, 19
Menelik, 93
Mennonis, Anabaptist, 327
Mercia, 182
Mercier, Cardinal, 274
Marengo, Victory of, 215
Mergentheim, 380
Mermillod, Bishop, Geneva, 294
Merinides Moors, 95, 97
Merseburg, 441
Merovingians, 25, 61; sluggard kings, 23; chronicles, 61; dynasty, 275; genealogy, 506
Mesopotamia, 113, 352, 450
Metternich, 232
Metz, 61, 243, 245, 246, 334
Meuse, 4, 190, 218, 243, 252; middle, 276, 278
Mexico, 98
Michael I, of Russia, 423
Michael II, the Drunkard, 113

Michael, son of Stephen Bogislav, given title of Rex Slavorum, 119, 120
Michael VI, 113
Michael VII, 113
Michael VIII, 114
Michael IX, 114
Michael the Brave, 121
Middle Ages, 34, 39, 253
Mieczyslas, 411
Migration, 54
Miguel, 102
Milan, 90, 91, 100, 307, 347; capitulation of, 306; rebuilt, 310, 496
Milesian Dynasty, 134, 144, 499, 500
Military System, menace of, 11, 19
Milosh, 110, 119
Mircea, 121
Mithridates of Pontus, 436
Modena, 93
Modern, Ages, 91, 203; systems, 17; political arrangements, 42
Mohacz, 403, 445; Louis II, slain at, 450
Mohammed, religious projects of, inspires blind obedience, relentless warfare of, ruins agriculture, created little, battles of, 552-556
Mohammed II, conqueror, 451
Mohammedan Caliph, 439
Mohammedans, 33, 57, 59, 61, 112; states, 95
Mohammedanism, 84, 419; unholy wars of, 7, 193; polygamy, slavery, ruin, 455
Mohammedan Spain, dynasty, 492
Moldavia, 115, 121, 391, 404, 425, 450
Monastir, 115
Mongolians, 47, 191, 194; Huns of, 49, 51; Slavs harassed by, 54; assault by, 192; invasion of, 399; character, 433; settlers, invaders, mixed, 439; Ugro-Fins, 434; Alani, 436; Huns, 437; Moors, Khafirs, Bulgars, Hungarians, 443-447; Mongols, Turcs, 441
Mongolic Genealogy, 492
Mongols, 384, 416, 433; yoke, 417; Empire, 44
Monmouth, 187
Monographs, 2; bases of society; men, order, safety, 8; balance of power, 43; Belgium, 267; of Franks, 60; Clovis, 63; Charlemagne, 64; Colonial Systems, 29; Communes, 256; English Colonial world, 32; Flemish Communes, 257; reconstruction by Franks, 60; French revolution, 220; Hapsburg power, 316-325; Hohenstaufen, 306; Hohenzollern, 335, 354; Impearialism, Provincialism, 19; Irish Institutions, 120; Louis XIV, wars, 208; Medieval political system, 35; Mohammedan world power, 450-483; Nomadism, 42-56; stable political systems, 15; Independence of Nations, 15; Napoleon's European wars, 226-233, race suicide, 9, 10; Rome two-fold Empire, 83; Romanoff, 427-431; stable government, 10; Spanish Colonial power, 32; world powers just and predatory, 18, 19
Monophysite, schism, 112
Monothelite, 112
Montecuculli, 330
Montenegro, 109, 117, 118, 451
Montfort, John de, 150
Montfort, Simon de, 170, 184, 247
Montmorency, Noblest house of Europe, 241; Ann Marshall, 241; Marguerite marries Henry II, Condé, 241; Louise of, 242; Charotte de, 241
Montpensier, 240
Moorish, invasions checked, 95; ten years war against the Moors, 98; genealogy, 492
Moorish Spain, growth, decline, struggles and conquest of, 93; ten states of, 97
Morat, 295, 375
Morava, 111, 118
Moravians, 387, 393, 401, 402; republic, 403, 428, 441
Moravides, Moors invasion of, 95, 97
Morea, 114, 115, 330, 392, 451
Morgarten, battle, 295, 296
Moriscoes, 99
Morocco, conquered, 97
Mortimer, 185
Moscow, 413, 416, 419
Moselle, 243, 276
Moulins, 240
Moyomir, 403
Moyomir II, 403
Muhlberg, Victory of Maurice at, 350
Muhldorf, 315
Muhlhausen, 296
Mundzuk, 437
Munster, 135, 327, 383; Congress of, 329
Murad I, 110, 119, 186, 449, 459
Murad II, 111, 141, 316, 449; enters Danube Valley, 478
Murad III, Murad IV, 479
Murat, 231

Murom, 417
Murray J., Dr., p. VI
Muscovite, 387, 428

Nafels, 295
Namur, 213, 268, 276
Nancy, 245, 295, 375
Nantes, 205, 208; Edict of, 227
Naples, 90, 215; conquest, 226; genealogy, 497
Napoleon I, Bonaparte, 19; annexes Roman states, 88, 218, 230-232; ten wars, 237; invades Egypt, 451; estimates, 218
Napoleon III, Louis, 93, 232, 239, 218
Napoleon, Joseph, 100, 231
Napoleon, genealogy, 510
Naseby, defeat of Charles II, 187
Nassau, 277, 367; house of, 295; Maurice of, 295; genealogy, 514
Nations, imperishable, souls of, 5; League of, 10, 17, 43; Federation of, 44; enforce laws of, 16; family of, 16; free, 20; Democratic, not to be disturbed, 21; colonizing, 30; conversion of, 34; Irish, 47; new family of, 57; Maritime and Continental, 75; liberty of, threatened, 76; character of Ancient, 81; a crusading, 94
National Convention, 230
Natural life, basis of society, 8; National life of peoples, 76; imperishable, 78; different West and East
Naumburg, treaty of, 362
Navarino, 115, 451
Navarre, 98; Joanna of, 224, 494
Nedim Pasha, butchery under, 121
Neerwinden battle, 228
Nelson destroys French fleet, 188
Nemanya, Stephen, Servia, 119
Nestorian heresy, 112
Netad, 437
Netherlands, 28, 99, 242, 259, 264, 278, 298; feudal epoch of, 281; first republic, 283; stern governments in, 285; United Kingdom of, 286; chronicles, 288; neutrality during world war, 291
Neuchatel, 296, 297
Neva, 413, 434
Newfoundland, 100, 207, 214
Newski, St. Alexander, Russian, 416
Niall, captures St. Patrick, 144
Nice, 113
Nicea, Greek Empire of, 104
Nicephorus, Phocas, 113
Nicholas I, Czar of Russia, 425
Nicholas II, 127, 426
Nicholas I, secularizes Montenegro, 118
Nicopolis, 111, 114, 121, 444, 445, 459; defeat of third crusade at, 449
Niebelungen Lied, 395
Niessen, 315
Niewport, Belgium, 268, 290; Sluices opened, 269
Nihilists, conspire, 425
Nimwegen, 299
Nish, Servia, 111, 120
Nomadic, 6; life of tribe, 47, 51; habits, 52
Nomenoe, Brittany, 150
Noricum, 392
Normandy, 236, 237, 238, 279
Normans, 237; repelled by Baldwin, Iron Arm, 275; conquer the Sicilies, 89; genealogy, 501; England, 501; Naples, Sicilies, 497
North Sea, 3, 28, 281, 283, 356
North, tax on tea imposed by, 188
Northumberland, Percy of, 185, 186
Northumbria, 147, 182
Norway, 125; dynasty, 128, 489; Kingdom of, 128; Charles XII, attacks, 130; genealogies, 505
Notaris, Constantinople, High Admiral, 160
Novara, 333
Novgorod, 378, 415, 423, 440; Republic of, 416
Noyades, drownings, 217
Nuremburg, 327, 378; Burgravate of, 364

Obadiah, 439
Obotrites, 30, 71
Obrenovich, Milosh, 120
O'Connell, Liberation of Ireland, 145, 189
Octarhan, 437
Oder, 4, 5, 70, 192, 298, 303, 388, 393, 395, 398, 403
Odoacer, King of Italy, 86, 87, 443
Oecolumpad, revolutionizes Basle, 296
Offa, 182
Ogurs, 439
Oise River, 239, 244
Olaf I, and III, 128
Oldenburg, Count of, 358; dynasty, 127; genealogy, 504
Oliva, 395
Olivarez, 99
Oliver Cromwell, 186, 187
Olmutz, 417
Omar, 457
Ommyad, 97

O'Niall, captures St. Patrick, 144
O'Neil, Hugh, 139; Roe, 139; Shane, 139
Orange, 248; Dynasty, 278, 285; Princes, 283; House of, 291; Genealogy, 514; Orange, Nassau, 498
Order of Golden Fleece, 260, 279
Orestes, Italy, 86
Orient, Russian advance into, 426
Orleanais, 239
Orleans, 61, 232; House of, 239; Duke of, 204, 207; murder of, 203, 278; genealogy, 493
Orleans, Gaston of, 242; Philip of, 369
Orlogschiffe, 378
Orseolo, Otto, Doge of Venice, 442
Oscar I, 130
Oscar II, 130
Osmanli, 104, 446, 447
Osnabruck, general uprising at, 69
Ostend, Belgium, 291
Ostrogoths, Eastgoths, 391, 437
Oswiu, 182
Othman, Turk, the Bonebreaker, 477
Otto, or Otho I, the Great, of Saxony, 90, 126, 246, 276, 303, 345, 358, 359, 383, 402, 444; crowned by Pope as head of Holy Roman Empire of German Nations, 36; restores order in Germany, 57; Holy Empire restored in person of, 89
Otto II, 304; Emperor, 345
Otto III, Emperor, 88
Otto IV, Emperor, 184, 307
Otto II, of Bavaria the Insane (1886), 370
Otto of Wittelsbach, Bavaria, 358
Otto of Bavaria, Greece (1832), 115
Otto the Gay, Austrian Duke, 375
Otto the Rich (1157-90), Wettin, 360
Otto of Dielemberg, Dutch Nassau, 367
Otto, of Nassau (911), 367
Ottocar I, of Bohemia, 402
Ottocar II, of Bohemia, 308, 348
Ottoman-Turks, 92, 446, 449, 459; Empire, 106; I, furious offensive, 466-477; Constantinople taken, 467; Solyman's campaigns, 7, 469; Balkan crusade, 478; II, reverses, 476; Lepanto Vienna, 472; genealogy, 491
Oudenarde, see Audenarde
Ouglicha, in Serb League, I; I, Balkan crusade, 110
Ourcq, River, 239
Ouroch, Serb Princes, 119
Outlines of history, 2, and through the work
Overyssel, 290
Owen Tudor, 150
Oxenstierna, 129, 351
Oxford, 184

Pacific Ocean, 422, 434
Pacorus, King, 436
Palatinate, 207, 368; Elizabeth, succession claimed, 213-240; genealogy, 503
Palatine, 320, 328
Pale, English, 139
Paleologi, 104, 114; genealogy, 485
Palestine, 113, 168, 368; oriental crusades into, 443, 463, 476
Palmerston, 189
Panama Canal, 218
Pannonia, 392, 403, 441, 444, 437
Panoramic view, 2, 47
Papacy, 90; an arbitration power, 35; protection of, 36
Paris, 61, 199, 203, 204, 209; Peace of, 188, 207; capitulates, 218; Council of, 224; surrendered, 334; Treaty of, 445
Parliament, history of English, 173, 175; Eclipse of Freedom, 174
Parma, 92, 215, 313, 330
Parnell, obstructions by, 145
Parthenopian, Republic, Naples, 215
Parthia, 436
Partition, 2-6
Pascal II, Pope, forced, 346
Passarowitz, Peace of, 479
Passau, Bishop of, 393, 394
Pau, General, in World War, 345
Paul I, Czar (1796), 359, 425
Pavia, Ghibellin city, 90, 306, 310
Pedro III, of Portugal, 98, 101
Pedro V, of Portugal (1834-53), 102
Pedro the Cruel (1350), Castile, 98
Peking, taken, 189
Pelagius or Pelayo, 73, 94, 95, 97
Penda, heathen King of Mercia, England, 182
Pennafort, St. Raymond de, 309
Pepin, Count of Valois, 239
Pepin the Short, 62, 66; conquers the Lombards, 62, 88
Périer, President of France, 233
Persia, 425, 428, 439, 440, 450; six wars against Constantinople, 111
Peru, conquered by Pizarro, 98
Petchenegs, 415, 423, 433, 440, 441

Peter I, Bourbon elder line, 240
Peter II, 240
Peter, Georgewich, Servian, 120
Peter of Courtenay, Crusader, 277
Peter I, the Great, 125, 129, 384, 387, 400, 408, 421, 424, 426, 427, 429
Peter II, 424
Peter III, 424, 425
Peterwardein, defeat of Turks, at, 451
Phanariots, Greek, officials, 121
Phenomenon, 1
Phidias, master of sculpture, 81
Philip, Duke Bourbon, 207
Philip I, Duke of Bourbon, 240
Philip I, King of France, 223
Philip Augustus, Philip II, King of France, 224
Philip III, King of France, 224
Philip IV, the Fair, King of France =Joanna Navarre, 201, 224
Philip V, King of France, 225
Philip VI, of Valois, King of France, 226
Philip II, of Spain, 91, 101; marries Mary Tudor, 186, 204, 279; in Belgium, 376, 464
Philip III, of Spain, 99
Philip IV, of Spain, 99, 100, 205
Philip V, Bourbon, Spain, 92, 100, 207, 214, 279
Philip II, Egalité, Duke of Orleans, 240
Philip of Hesse (1509), 366
Philip of Orleans (1680), 369
Philip de Rouvre, Duke of Burgundy=Margaret, Flanders, 247
Philip the Good of Burgundy= Margaret, Flanders, 185, 202, 203, 260, 261, 275, 276, 277, 279, 288, 289
Philip the Bold of Burgundy (1366), 247, 278
Philip of Swabia, Emperor, 347
Philip William, Duke Bavaria (1698), 369
Phoenicians, 29, 80
Photius, Schism, 118
Piast, Polish Dynasty, 403, 404, 411; genealogy, 524
Picardy, 238, 241
Picts, 147, 189
Piedmonteze, 89
Pierre de Dreux, D. Brittany, 150
Pisa, city of Italy, 90
Pitt, 188
Pius IX, Pope, attacked, 93
Pizarro, 98
Placentia, 92
Placidia, Empress, 86
Plantagenets, 166, 184; Henry II, 238; genealogy, 501; England
Plettenburg, 379; Walter of, 381
Plevna, 426, 451
Podiebrad, King of Bohemia, 349 376, 445, Regent, 403
Plan, pp. X-XI
Podolia, 411, 412
Pogonat, Constantine IV, 112
Poissy, 204
Poitou, 225, Eleanor of, marries two Kings, 236
Polabians, 388
Poland, 193, 405; King of, 106; Turkish attacks repelled by, 112, 300; Liberum Veto of, 406, overthrown, 407; rebirth of, 409; statistics, 409; genealogies, 524
Poles-Lithuanians, 396
Political, principles, 3, 15; governments, 10; arrangements of middle ages, 34; modern ages, 42
Polygamy, 450
Pomerania, 126, 129, 329, 365, 382
Pomosami, 398
Pompadour, Marchioness, 229
Poniatowski, Stanislas, 412
Popes: Adrain IV, 310; Alexander III, 304, 307, 310, 311; Benedict VIII, 53; Benedict XV, 15, 42; Boniface VIII, 224; Clement V, 202; Clement VII, 200, 327; Crescentius III, strangled by Otto III, 88; Eugene IV, 105; Gregory St. VII, 118, 119, 304; Gregory IV, 309, 311, 312; Gregory XVI, 93; Honorius II, 304, Honorius III, 311; Innocent II, 311; Innocent III, 88, 121, 163, 347; Innocent IV, 307, 311, 313, 348; Innocent XI, 465; John X, 50; John XII, 345; John XXIII, 375; Julius II, 350; Julius III, 91; Leo, St., I, 88, 437; Leo, St., III, crowned Charlemagne, 35, 36; Leo IV, 53; Leo X, 350; Pascal II, 183; Paul III, 226; Pius II, 105; Pius V, 464; Pius VII, 230; Pius IX, 89, 93; Sylvester, 442; Urban II, 346
Popes, the leaders, 84; sovereignty of, 88; only protectors of Italy, 88; as guardians of Europe, 193;
Populists against Imperialists, 90
Port Arthur, 422, 426, 428
Porte, Sublime of Turkey, 109, 119; orders massacres, 115
Portugal, 95, 99, 101, 214; chronicles, 101; missions, 101; under

Spanish rule, 101; prosperity and decline of, 101; expel French from, 188; colonies conquered, 290; genealogy, 494
Power, abuses of 42; balance of, 43; unity of Frankish, 62
Powers, beneficent world, 18, 19; predatory, 76; medieval, distinct but harmonious. 34; minor and major powers, 78; maritime, 75; continental, 189-194
Prague, 349, 393
Predatory world powers, 76-77 164-165
Premislas, Premysl, 402
Premyslide, dynasty, 402; genealogy, Bohemia, 525
Premonstratenses, Monks, civilize Slavs, 395
Preparedness, necessity of, 14; moral and physical, 15
Presburg, Peace, 215
Prim, 101
Procopius, or Prokops, 316, 403
Protestant Division: Huguenot, 202, 220; Schmalcaldians, 350, 351
Propaganda, German for world war, 343
Provence, Hugh of, 89, 246
Provincialism. 20
Prussia, Silesian wars, seven years wars, 366; incorporation of Schleswig to, 127; war against Denmark, Austria, 354; chronicles, 354; world power, 354; Knights of, 379; Prussian wars, XIX century, 188, 354, 367; genealogies. 523
Pruth, 425
Przemysl. diocese, 399
Pskof, 416
Public Safety Committee, 230
Pultowa battle, 125, 129, 424
Puniab, conquered by England, 189
Putchef, Russian, 425
Pyrenees, 3, 64, 99, 209; crossed, 97; Peace of, 352

Quatemado, conquerer of New Granada, 98
Questions, many of the day, 1

Raab, 330, 373
Race suicide, fatal, 9; exhausts Roman Empire, 9
Races, overlapping one another, 5; difference of, 49
Racine, French poet, 206
Radetzky, 333
Radzivil, Skrzynecki, 425
Raoul, Vermandois, 238
Raoul, 239
Rascia Mountains, 118
Rascia, Zupan of, 119
Ratibor, Slavonic, called Ratzenburgen German, 395
Ratislav, Count, 387, 403
Ravenna, 88
Raynald III, of Gueldren, 288
Raymond of Toulouse VI and VII, 246, 247
Reccared, the Catholic Westgoth, 96
Reding, Swiss general, 296
Red Sea, Italian colony on, 93
Reformation, 197, 202-203
Regensburg, 178; diet of, 330
Reginald, Longneck, Hainault, 277
Religion, sincere, 33
Renaissance, 76, 81, 84, 197, 312
René I=Guise, 237; René II, 243
René of Anjou, adopted by brother Louis III, 90
René of Nassau, 367; Stadt holder of Netherlands, 248
Rennes, 225
Reptile Press, 329
Republics, in Italy, 78; of Venice, 92; Radical, 102; in France, 197
Requesens, reconquers Belgium, 290
Retz, Cardinal de, 228
Reuss-Gera and Griess, 363
Revolution, in Italy. 93; in Naples, 93; Seranno, 101; American, 291; French, 205, 211, 220, 229, 230
Rex Slavorum-Michael, 119
Rhetia, 135
Rheinfeld, 296
Rhine, 29, 69, 72, 190, 210, 228, 244, 289, 334, 393, 437, 438; confederation of, 232; league of, cities of, 378; lower Rhine countries, 499; genealogy, 515
Rhodes, 111, 450, 462
Rhone, 64, 190, 437; tainted with blood of victims, 216; Basin, Valley of the, 246
Richard I, Coeur de Lion, 168, 184, 238, 358
Richard II, 185
Richard III, 185
Richard Cornwall, 348
Richard of Glocester, kills nephews, 185
Richard of York, killed by Queen Margaret of Anjou, 185
Richelieu, Cardinal, 99, 227, 351

Richenza, daughter of Henry Nordheim, 357; marries Lothaire II, of Saxony, Emperor, 358
Richilde of Hainault, 275, 277
Rights, declaration of, 10; of asylum, 199
Rivoli, 215
Robert, the Strong, stem of Capetains, 239
Robert, Capetain Anti-king (922), 223
Robert I, King of France (994), 223
Robert, of France, marries Beatrice Bourbon II: house of Bourbon, 240
Robert, the Devil, divorced father of William the Conqueror, 237
Robert Guiscard, Sicilies, 53, 90
Robert of Naples, 315
Robert Bruce, 145
Robert II, Stuart, 148
Robespierre, bloody tyrant, 217, 230
Rochelle, captured, 227
Rocroy, French victory, 228
Roderic, last King Westgoths, 97
Roderic the Great, of Wales, 150
Roe O'Neil, 139
Roger I and II, of Sicilies, 90
Roland of Roncevalles, Basque Hero, 67
Rollo, Duke of Normandy, 237
Roman Empire, 35, 47, 49; provinces conquered, 51; end of, 80
Romanoff, 400, 408; dynasty, 424; world empire, 426; monograph, 427; overthrown and republic established, 431; genealogy, 526
Romans, 29; practical people, 82
Romanus I and II, Byzantine Emperors, 113
Romanus Diogenes, Byzantine Emperor, 113
Rome, 218, 252; childless, without defenders, 9; after fall of, 11; seat of model religion, 84; Iron Age in, 88; Tusculans control, 88; Germans besiege, 204; capture of, 350
Romulus Augustulus, 86
Roncaglia, diet, 309
Roosevelt, race suicide branded by, 9
Rouen, 237
Roumania and Roumanians, 1, 109, 196, 351, 451; mixed origin, 116
Roumelia, 426
Rousillon, 99, 205
Rousseau 229
Rouvre, Philip de, Duke Burgundy, 247
Rovina, 121
Roxalani, 435
Ruas, Hun general, 437
Rudolph I, Burgundy (923-36), 199, 246
Rudolph II, of Burgundy, 246
Rudolph III, bequeaths Burgundy to Empire, 246, 247
Rudolph I, (1273-91), of Hapsburg, 88, 348, 375, Emperor
Rudolph II, Emperor of Germany (1576), 351
Rudolph IV, the Founder, Duke of Austria, 375
Rudolph of Swabia, anti-Emp., 346
Rufus, Norman, son of William II, 183
Rugen Island, 397
Ruhr River, 356
Rupert, Palatine, Emperor, 369
Ruric, dynasty, 423; Scandinavian, 399; genealogy, 526
Ruric's, Cousin Oleg, 423
Russell, John, 189
Russia, 189, 194; wild Mongol hordes hold, 193; general survey of, 414; barbarism, 416; principalities, 416; Mongol yoke in, 418; Cossacks in, 426; wars ruin the people of, 422; chronicles, 424; genealogy, 526
Russian, 4, 14, 440; Empire, breaking up of, 352
Russo-Turkish war, 109, 121, 426, 451
Rutheni, of Galicia, 394
Ruthenians, 5, 388, 410, 413
Ryazan, in Russia, 416
Ryswick, treaty of, peace of, 279, 228

Saale, 71, 393
Saalfield, 363
Saccae, Aryan, 434; Kangka of, 436
Sadowa, Austrians routed, 333
Saints: Adelbert of Prague, 997, 380; killed, 442; Alexander, Newski, 417, 419; Anselm, 183; Ansgar, 128; Augustine, 182
Blanche of Castile, Queen of France, 226; Boniface, martyed, 63; Bruno (1108), killed by Prussians, 379, 397; Bruno, Archbishop of Cologne, 276
Canute, 126; Columbkill, 147; Cyril, 118, 403
Edward the Confessor, 183; Elizabeth, 101; Emmercik, 442
Ferdinand, 98; Francis Xavier, 101

Gall, 297; Gregory the Great, 88
Hedwige, 410
Iago, or James, 97; Ignatius, 118
Joan of Arc, 203; John, 95; John Capistrano, 106, 111, 445, 450
Ladislas, 445; Louis IX, 200, 234; Ludmilla, 402
Margaret, 117; Methodius, 119
Olaf, 128
Patrick, conversion by, 144; captured by Niall, 144; Peter, 88; church, 327; Pulcherie, 112
Remy Clovis baptised by, 63
Stanislas, 411, 443; Sava, Monk, 119; Stephen, King, 434, 441, 442, 445
Theodora, 113; Thomas a Becket, 184
Wenceslas, 402; Willibrord, martyred, 289
St. Bartholomew, execution, 204
St. Eric dynasty, 129
St. Gothard, victory on Raab at, 330, 451
St. James Cemetery, 275; beaten at, 276
St. Quentin, Gaspard capture at, 242
St. Sophia, 112
St. Yust, retreat at, 98
Salic Sussession Law, 25, 201, 278; extended, 127
Saladin, 475
Saloniki, 116
Samland, 398
Samo, unites Slavs, 395
Samogitia, 398
Samoyedes, 435, 438
Samuel, King of Bulgaria, 120
Sancho III, 98
San Domingo, exchanged for Louisiana, 231, 227
San Stephano, treaty of, 451
Santiago de Compostella in Galicia, 97
Saone River, 190
Saracens, 89, 236, 242, 246, 247
Sardinia, 93, 98, 100, 218, 307, 498
Sarmatia, 439
Sarogurs, 439
Save River, 117
Savoy, 90, 93, 246; Adelaide of, 113; Amadeus of, 101; Ann of, 114; Duke of, 214; Eugene of, 214, 228, 451; genealogy; Dukes, Kings, 498
Saxe, 409; genealogy of Wettin, 519
Saxe-Altenburg, 363
Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, 363
Saxe-Coburg, Leopold I, of, 266; genealogy, Belgium, 513
Saxe-Meiningen, 363
Saxe-Weimer-Eisenbach, 363
Saxo Grammaticus, legend of, 295
Saxon, genealogy, 516, 518, 519; Portugal, 494; Belgium, 513
Saxons, 69; war with, 57; foes of Franks and Christians, 68; line, 364; dynasty, 413
Saxony, old Dukedom, 356, Eastern, 360
Scanderbeg, Prince of Epirus, 450, 460; harasses the Turks, 106; escapes prison, 111
Scandinavia, 124, 125; literature of, 124
Scandinavians, 124, 298; invasion of England, 125; of Germany in thirty years' war, 125
Schaffhausen, 295
Scheldt, 4, 190, 243, 252, 262, 275, 290, 377
Schleglerkrieg, 372
Schleswig, 126, 127
Schleswig-Holstein, 128, 333, 340
Schley River, 359
Schmalcalden or Smalkald, Protestant League of, 320; wars, 350
Schwartzburg - Rudolstadt, 363; Sonderhausen, 363
Schwyz, 295; league of, 296; Uri, 297
Scindia, annexation to British Empire, 189
Scone, Kingdom in Scotland, 147
Scope of work, 37
Scotland, 137, 165; free and independent nation, 145; quarrelsome, 146; activity, 146; universal education a law in, 146; chronicles and statistics, 147; French alliance with, 147; struggle for independence, 147; under English administration, 148; opposes Cromwell, 148; Jacobite revolt in, 149; independence of, 184
Scots, 147; Ayacha of, 147
Scottish, genealogy, 500
Scythians, 194, 435; Agathyrsae, 439
Sebastapol, 425, 451
Sectarianism, divided Germany, 24
Sedan, 232
Siebenbergen, German colonists in, 393
Seine River, 150, 236, 239
Selim III, the Grim, 450, 451
Seljukian, tribe of Turks, 440, 447; Empire, 475; crusade, 460
Seltz, peace of (779), 70
Sempach, 395
Semender, Khazar capital, 439

Seneffe, battle, 213
Sepoy, rebellion, 189
Septimania, southern Gaul, 247
Sequanians, 80
Serbia, 106; defeated, 69
Serrano, 101
Servet, executed, 296
Servia, 436, 451; increases its territories, 109; divided in two, 118; church of, 119; wants hegemony, 120
Servians, 117, 438; start revolt, 109
Seymour, 186
Sforza, 204; Frances, 91; Maximilian, 91
Shah, Lola, 110
Shane O'Neil, 139
Shiites, 450
Siberia, 352, 400, 420, 427
Sicily, 66, 67, 87, 97; secession of, 90; pagan laws of ancient, 316; genealogy, 497
Sienpi, Dardjegwe, 436
Sigeth, 463
Sigiburg, camp stormed by Charlemagne, 68
Sigismund I (1507-48), King of Poland, 398, 412
Sigismund II, Poland, 405, 411
Sigismund III, Wasa (1587), 405, 412
Sigismund of Hungary, Luxemburg and Bohemia, Emperor of Germany, 349, 444, 445; grants Brandenburg to Hohenzollern, fights Turcs, 444, 445
Sigismund, son of Zapolya of Transylvania, 450
Sigmaringen, 368
Sigurd, crusader, 128
Silesia, 330, 401, 403
Silures, ancient British tribe, 159
Simeon of Bulgaria, 120
Simon de Montfort, 200, 247; starts practice of representation, 170
Simon of Valois, 238; retires, 239
Sinn Feiners, demand Autonomy, 145
Sips, mountains colonized, 393
Sischman or Sisman (976-1018), 120
Sischman (1389-95), Czar of Bulgaria, 110
Skrzynecki, Radzivil, 425
Slavs, 67, 70, 191, 192, 298, 435; face character of, 385; lack of political and religious unity, 386; in East yoke of Barbarians, in West struggle with Germans, 389; Germanizing the northwestern, 394; Poles-Lithuanians, 396, 410; Prussians, 397; Russians, 399; panorama, 401; Poland, 404; Jugo-, 117; Czecho-, 5, 351
Slavery, 23
Slivitzna, Bulgarians defeated at, 121
Sloveni, 117, 387
Sluce, 202
Smolenks, 416, 424
Snorre, Sturlson, Scandinavian historian, 124
Sobieski, John III, 105, 330, 404, 420, 449; Turkish army crushed by, 112; last and greatest Pole, 407, 412
Society, foundation of, or the basis of, 8
Solferino, French victory at, 93
Soluthurn, Swiss, 295
Solyman the Magnificent, 98, 111, 112, 321, 444, 446, 450, 462, 463; death of, 112
Somerset, 180
Somme River, battles in world war, 28, 252, 255, 345; valley, 238
Sophia of Brabant, 360; stem of Hesse dynasty, 366
Sophia, capital of Bulgaria, 426
Sophia, Dorothea of Calenburg=George Louis of Hanover, 358
Sophia Palatine Stuart=Ernest Augustus Hanover, 358
Souwaroff, 425; frees Italy, 215
Spain, 28, 81, 92, 112, 193, 298, 435, 436; expeditions into, 67; rewarded by freedom, 96; Moorish, 97; ten states, 97; genealogy, 493; Spain, at Naples, 497
Spanish, 19; rule of, 90; Peninsula, 93; monarchy, 98; succession wars, 100, 207, 210, 214
Spire, 377-383; diet of, 327
Spoleto, 118; Guy of, 88
Ssarai, 418, 423, 446; Khanate of, overthrown, 419
Stambouloff, Prime Minister, murdered, 121
Stamford, battle of, 128
Stanislau, diocese of, 399
Stargard, Slavish, called Oldenburg, 395
Starr, Frederic, Dr.
Statehood, what is required for, 27
States, have rights, old, 22; what constitutes, 22; large versus small, 23-26
Steenkerke, 207, 213
Stenkils, dynasty (1055-1629), 128
Stephen, King of England, 147, 239

Stephen II, Servia (1195-1224), 111, 119
Stephen Bogislav, Servia, 117, 119
Stephen Dushan, 119
Stephen Langton, fights for liberty, 168
Stephen Nemanya, 119
Stephen of Blois=Adele, daughter of William the Conquerer, 183, 238
Sterling, victory of William Wallace, 148, 184
Stettin, 382
Stilicho, saves Rome, 85; executed, 86
Strasburg, 28, 228, 279, 297
Strathclyde, part of Ancient Scotland, 147
Strelitz, 381, 424
Stuart, Elizabeth = Frederick the Palatine, 328
Stuart, Mary, Queen of Scotland, 148, 186, 204
Stuart, dynasty (1370-1714), 109, 148; genealogy: Scotland, 500; England, 502
Sture, regent of Sweden, 127, 129
Styria, 320, 328, 373, 374, 392, 393, 402; Hapsburg of, 295
Succession Wars, Palatine, 328; Spanish, 228; Austrian, 229; England gets seaports and routes, 229
Sudetic mountains, 403
Suevi, 86-96, 298, 371, 436; movement
Suevus, Ricimer, 86
Suger, government of, 200
Sulla, 205
Sunderbund, Catholic stands up for rights, 297
Sussex, Kingdom, 182
Suwaroff, 231
Sviatoslav, 440
Swabia, 303; old, 371; league of, 378; peoples league, 379; genealogy, 517
Swatopluk, 395
Sweden, 125; withdraws from Union, 127; union with Norway, 128; alone, 130; triple alliance, 206; third period of thirty years war, 328
Swedish, 389, 440; genealogy, 505
Swein, nephew of Canute, 126
Swein, of Norway, son of Canute, 126, 128
Swend, conquers England, 183
Swerkers, Swedish dynasty, 129
Swingle, Ulrich, 295
Swiss, defeat troops at St. James cemetery, 350
Switzerland, 4, 191, 242, 399; panorama, 292; self government, 293; statistics, 294; chronicles, 295; French influence in, 295; revolutions and struggles for liberty, 296; constitution modified after United States, 297
Swordbearers, order of, 381, 397
Syria, 113 450, 451; murders in, 107
Syrmia, 119
Systems, political, modern, 17; class, 24; feudal, 41
Szegedin, Murad II, signs truce of, 111
Szegeth, 112, 450

Table of Contents XII-XXVI
Tables of Genealogy, 482-527
Tacitus, Byzantine, expels Goths, 436
Taggenburg, war against Catholics in Switzerland, 296
Tagus, 97
Tamerlane, Mongol Conquerer, 419
Tanais, 436
Tancred de Hauteville, father of Sicilian Crusaders, 89
Tannenberg, 380, 398, 404
Tara, Ireland, 135, 144
Tarik, Musa conquers Spain, 97
Tartars, 418
Tassilo, Duke of Bavaria, 97
Tassilo II, revolts against Charlemagne, 369
Tatra, 401, mountains of Carpathian Chain, 394; republic, 403
Tchernigoff, 416
Templars, 101, suppression of, 225 Knightly Order of, 382
Teriolis, Ancient Tyrol, 372
Terror, Reign of, 214, 230
Tetzel, Dominican, 350
Teutonic, Order, 379, 381, 404; Knights, 375, 417
Teutons, stop Roman Eagles, 298; war of one thousand years against Slavs, 300; warlike character of, 301; chronicles, 303
Teygete, in Greece, 392
Thames River, 290
Theiss River, 120, 438
Theobald of Blois, 238
Theodelinda, 88
Theodora, 494
Theodora, daughter of John V.= Ukhan, Sultan, 113
Theodore, Lascaris, 114
Theodoric, the Great, Eastgoth, 87
Theodosian, Byzantine dynasty, 112, 487

Theodosius II, 112
Theophanie, 113
Theophano, the Greek, 304
Theresa, daughter of Alphons VI, 101
Thermopylae, 437
Thessalonica, 114, 121
Thessaly, 115, 120, 392
Theutberga=Lothaire II, 242
Thibet, 428
Thiers, President of France, 233
Thirty year war, 24, 156, 227, 321, 351, 355, 361, 365, 368, 381, 403
Thorn, treaty of, between Poland and Order, 380; conference of, 412
Thrace, 110, 116, 117, 120, 392, 437; Avars invade, 438
Thracian Byzantine dynasty, 112, 487
Thuringia, 263, 353, 362, 394, 437; genealogy, 515
Thurgau, 296, 297
Thyrsagetae, 435
Tiberine, republic, 215
Tiberius, Emperor, East Roman, 438, 439
Ticino River, 297
Tigris River, 113
Tilly, General, 326, 370
Tilsit, 216, 425; peace of, 334
Timour Link, or Tamerlan, 114; Mongol conquerer, 449 459
Tipu, Hindu patriot, 188
Tiridates, 436
Titus Oates, 187
Tolosa, the ancient name of Toulouse, 95, 96, 97
Torstenson, 127, 329
Totila, 87
Toul, 243, 245, 246
Toulouse, Count of, 200; council of, organizes inquisition, 201; ancient city of, 247; Raymond of, 246
Toulon, destruction of life at, 224
Tournay, 213, 254
Towton, victory of Edward IV, at, 185
Trafalgar, 188, 215
Transalbanians, 70
Transalbingia, 356, 357
Transjurane, Burgundy, 246
Transylvania, 110, 330, 391, 443, 450; Voivode of, 111
Trautmansdorff, divides Swedes and French, 329
Treaty of Peace, between Allies and Germany, 349
Trebisonda, or Trebizond, 114, 450 460; Greek Empire of, 104
Trent, council of, 244
Trentino, 93, 351
Treves or Trier, 215, 243, 363, 383; Archbishop of, 382
Tribes, Saxon war against single, 68
Triest, 93, 351, 394
Trinidad, acquired by England, (1802), 188
Trinobantes, ancient British tribe, 159
Tripoli, Italian colony, 93
Truce of God, 305
Tudor, Owen, 150
Tudors, 185; genealogy, 502
Tuilleries, palace, 230
Tunis, 98, 240, 328, 451
Turanians, opposed to Iranians, 435
Turenne, French general, 228, 351
Turin, 90
Turkestan, 425, 428; western, 422
Turkey, 189, 382, 425; beaten, 452
Turkish, Empire misrule, 103; revolt of population against, power, 108; conquering period of, Empire, 466; masters in Asia, 447; massacres in Empire, 479; decline of, 479; chronicles, 477; monographs, 452; Bell, the, 462
Turks, 17, 433, war against, 98; crushed at Lepanto, 99; Mongolo, 192; genealogy, 494
Tuscany, 88, 92, 215, 244, 245, 330, genealogy, 496
Tusculans, control Rome, 88
Tvertko, of Bosnia, 110
Tyrol, 272, 392; genealogy, 521

Ugrians, 5, 444
Ugro-Finnic, tribes, 435
Ugro-Magyars, 389; Finns, 433
Ugurs, tribe of, 438
Ukraine, 5, 352, 413, 424
Ulad of Wallachia, 111
Ulf, Jarl of Denmark, 126
Ulkan, Zupan of Rascia, 119
Ulm, 366
Ulrica, Sweden=Frederick of Hesse, 130
Ulrich I (1550), 372
Ulster, country in Ireland, 135, 139, 186
Ungaria, heiress of the Picts, 147
Unterwalden, league of, 295, 297
Uracca, Queen Castile, divorce, 98
Ural, mountains, 427, 434, 436; river, 437
Urban II, Pope, first crusade, 302
Urban IV, 308
Urban V, Balkan crusade (1358), 110

Urkhan, 114, 446, 449; captures Gallipoli, 459
Uri, league of, 295
Ussuns, 432
Utraquists, civil war of, 403
Utrecht, 279; peace of, 207, 214, 330; union of, 289, 290; Bailiwick of Teutonic Knights, 380

Valais, Swiss Canton, 297
Valentia, Spanish March, 97
Valentinian, 437; III, 86
Valesians, 26, 243
Valois, 225; Margaret, 227; genealogy, 508, 511
Van Artevelde, 258, 276
Vandalusia, or Andalusia, 96
Van Slingelandt, 291
Varchonites, 438
Vardar basin, 116
Varna, 411
Vasaig, in Hungary, 111
Vauban, 228
Vaud, 297
Venaissin, Comtat, Papal domain, 248
Vendes, Slavs of Caranthia, 117
Vendee, 150; La, 230
Vendome, Anthony, Bourbon Duke, 241; Catherine of, 241
Venetia, 93, 355
Venice, 88, 92, 218, 262, 330, 443, 445, 450; wars, 91, 111; Republic of, 92; Cyprus taken from, 112; league of Cambray, against, 112; Italy gets, 333
Venezilos, 109, 452; unites Balkan people, 111
Verdun, 214, 243, 245, 246, 345; treaty of, 76, 190, 394
Vermandois, 238, 239
Verona, 87; congress of, 353
Versailles, 188, 209, 221, 223, 335; peace of, 339
Vexin, Count of, 239
Viatka, 416
Victor Emmanuel I, 93
Victor Emmanuel II, 93
Victoria, of England, Empress of India, 189
Vienna, 248, 328, 404, 446, 449, 450; besieged, 105, 112, 330; congress of, 130, 216; treaty of, 353
Vilayet of Saloniki, 116
Villars, 214
Vilmergen, Switzerland, 296, 297
Vineis, de Peter, 307, 312
Visconti, 90, 91; Mary of, 91; genealogy, 496
Visigoths, Westgoths, 85, 236, 437
Vistula, 4, 49, 300; river, 385, 410
Vitiges, 87
Vladika, 118
Vladimir, principality, 416, 419
Vladimir II, Monomach, 417
Vladimir, the Great, Grand Prince Vladimir=Ann of Constantinople, 399, 415, 423, 441
Vladislav II, 404
Voitsburg, 394, 402
Voivode, Mircea, 110; of Transylvania, 111
Volga, 398, 413, 418, 425, 434, 439
Volhynia, 411
Voltaire, 212, 327
Von Hertling, 355
Von Molkte, 355
Von Salza, Grandmaster, 380; Herman, 398
Vosges, 243, 244, 276
Voukachine, King of Servia, 110, 119
Vouk, Prince of Serbia, 110
Vound, leader of the Alans, 436

Waldeck, 363
Wagram, 231
Waldemar I (1201), 126; conquers Finland, 129
Waldemar II, 126, 360
Waldemar III (1340), father of Margaret, 126, 378
Waldemar of Schleswig, King of Denmark (1326-1330), 359
Waleran III, of Limburg=Hermesinda, heiress of Luxemburg (1190), 278
Waleran the Old, of Arlon, 278
Wales, 150, 165; Irish settlement in, 144; Danes ravage, 150; literature in, 150, 182
Wallace, William, hero of Scotland, 146, 148, 184
Wallachia, 110, 116, 392, 411, 445
Wallenstein, General, 326, 328, 361
Wallia, the Westgoth, 86, 436
Walpole, 188
Walram, of Nassau, 367
Walter VII, Stuart=Margaret Bruce, 148
Walter of Croneberg, Teutonic Grandmaster, 380
Walter, of Plettenberg, Teutonic Knight, 381

Warna, 114, 445, 449, 460; crusaders, slain at, 111
Wars, thirty years', 24, 156, 205, 211, 403; hundred year, 26, 156, 166, 185, 201, 226; wars for supremacy: Hapsburgs-Bourbon wars, 203, 226, 228; Protestant wars, 202, 227; religious, 76; of independence, 100; succession, 100, 430-450; Carlist, 101; dynastic, 166; of the Roses, 166; 185; Zulu, 189; with Spain, 212; Spanish, 216; some consequences of, 353; Hussite, Holy war, 450; Crimean-Russo-Turkish, 422; Greek war of independence, 451; Balkan, 452
Wars, Solyman wages thirteen, 111; two Balkan, 116; worlds, 116, 189, 218, 291, 331-334, 426; Denmark, 128; Great Northern, 129; China and India, 189; of conquest, 206; Spanish succession, 207
Warsaw, 410
Wartburg, refuge of Luther, 327, 362
Warwick, Kingmaker, 185
Wasa, Gustavus, 127, 129; dynasty, 129, 412, 505; in Poland, 524
Washington, 188
Wasili I, and IV, 423
Waterloo, 188, 230
Weiblingen, Ghibellines, 306
Weimar, 329, 362
Weinberg, battle of, Welf-Weiblingen, 306, 374
Welch, or Vlaques, Wallachians, 116
Welfs, or Guelfs, 91, 306, 369, genealogy, 518; German, England, 503
Wellington, 100, 188, 189
Wenceslas, the Slothful, Emperor I, of Germany, King of Bohemia, IV, 402, 349
Wenceslas II, Luxemburg, 271
Wends, 393
Weser, Valley Engren country, 356
Wessex, 182
Westeras, 129
Western or Roman Empire, chonicles, 85
Westgoths, 64, 298; new settlers in Spain, 80; Alani conquered by, 96; chronicles, 96, 495
Westminster Hall, 171
Westphalia, conquered by Charlemagne, 68, 69; peace of, 321, 352; Kingdom, 216
Wetterau, 379
Wettin Dynasty, 361
Wettin, genealogy, 515, 519
Wettins, divide their country, 25
Whitlock, Brand, philanthropist, ambassador to Belgium, 274
Wied, Elizabeth, Princess of, 117
Wild nature, of savages tamed by the church, 37
Wilhelmine, Minor Queen of Holland, 291
William I, Kaiser of Germany, 355
William II, 341, Kaiser, 230, 348
William I, Elector Brandenburg, 367
William I, the Conqueror, 125, 147, 237; character of, 163, 183, 237
William II of Holland, Emperor of Germany, (1246), 368
William I, the Silent, Stadtholder, 99, 248, 265, 279, 283, 284, 286, 289, 290, 291, 367
William II, Holland (1652), 290, 291
William III, of Orange, 149, 176, 187, 283, 288; Stadholder, 290; King Britain, 213
William I, King of Holland, 280, 287
William II, (1840), 291
William III, King of Holland (1840), 291
William IV and V, 189, 288, 291
William of Hesse, 367
William Cliton, Norman, 238
William of Juliers, 289
William the Pious, Bavarian (1508), 370
William Tell, legend of, 295
Wilna, capital of Lithuania, 410
Wilson, Woodrow, President of U. S., 16, 21, 349; champion of International rights, 42, 43
Wilzes, 70, 71
Windish, 374
Windhorst, proposes social reforms, 335
Wisby, 378
Witichin, Norman chief, 239
Wittelsbach line, 368, 369; genealogy: Bavaria and Palatinate, 519
Wittelsbach, Otto I, 307, 369; Otto II, 368, 369
Wittikind, 68, 69, 356; asks baptism, 70; struggles against Charlemagne, 357
Wladimir, see Vladimir
Wladislav I, King of Poland (1319-33), 411

Wladislav II, 411
Wladislav III, slain at Warna, 411, 460
Wladislav, eldest son of Casimir IV, being King of Bohemia (I) and Hungary (VIII), passed over, 412
Wladislav IV, also Czar (1632), 412
Woeringen, battle of, 278
Wolfenbuttel, 358; genealogy, 518
Wolsey, English Cardinal, 186
Woman, 448
World powers, 281; beneficient predatory, 19, 43, 76
World war, 116, 189, 218, 291, 351, 426, 452
Worms, 68, 305, 377, 383; Concordat of, 306; Diet of, 327
Wrangel, Swedish General, 129, 329 329
Wratislas II, 402
Wulfhilde, daughter of Magnus Billings, 357
Wurtemberg, struggles for liberty, 372; Count of, 379; genealogy, 517
Wurzburg, 383
Wycliff, 185

Xeres de Frontera, 97

Yalovatch, victory Hunyady, 111
Yaroslav, King, 416
Yermark, starts conquest of Siberia, 420, 424
Yolande of Namur=Peter Courtenay, 277
Yolanthe of Lorraine=Frederick II. 243
York, 185
Youssouf, 97
Ypres, destroyed in world's war, 265
Ypsilanti, 115
Yser River, in world's war, 252, 263, 267, 345
Yuechi, Aryan people, 436
Yurii, fixes patriarchate at Moscow, 423
Yziaslaf, Grand Prince, 416

Zahringen, Count of, 372
Zapolya, appointed to Transylvania by Turks, 111, 112, 328, 450
Zaporogian, Cossacks, 420
Zarah, 443, 445
Zealand, 275, 277; chronicles, 288, 290
Zeno, Emperor, 112
Zenta, 330, 451; Turks beaten at, 451
Zerbst, Dessau, in Anhalt, 363
Zimisces, Byzantine Emperor, 113
Zimmeren, branch of Wittelsbach line, 368, 503
Ziska, Hussite, 403; destroys churches, 316
Zoe, Byzantine Empress, 113
Zolverein, 278
Zug, joins Swiss league, 295, 297
Zulu-Boer, war, 189
Zupan, Servian head at Desmica, 117; of Rascia, 119
Zurich, joins Swiss league, 295; treasures taken to France, 296, 297
Zuyderzee, flooded, drained, 281, 287, 289
Zyonimir, King of Croate, 188
Zweybrucken, or Zweybruck, Deux Ponts House, 129, 369, 370, 505